



VALHALLA SAGA

BOOK 01

Chwiriyong

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Valhalla Saga

(발할라 사가)

by

Chwiryong

(취룡)

Synopsis

A professional gamer dies unexpectedly during an E-Sports tournament and is sent to Valhalla, a heaven reserved for only the greatest of warriors.

The warriors of Valhalla are pitted against a struggle for survival in the face of a common enemy. Fortunately, within each warrior lies the roots to their own saga, a legendary tale of their ascendance to fame and feats of great achievement alike.

Witness the birth of an epic saga as this gamer challenges legends and carves a path toward the ultimate glory.

The story itself revolves around Nordic mythology and incorporates a gaming system alongside magical wizards and mighty warriors.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Tsubak, edits by Raigh @ [Myoniyoni Translations](#)

Translation Edit by Lucas @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Episode 1/Chapter 1: Immortal Warrior (1)

“Enter!”

“Enter!”

“Waaaaaa!”

The bulky warriors that were lined up in front of the door blew their horn trumpets as the door opened. The Valkyries raised flags of various colors and urged the warriors, that entered through the door with thunderous cheers.

“Kuk! Ugh! Wait! Wait!”

Tae Ho wasn't even thinking of entering the door, but he didn't have a choice. As the huge sea of bodies started pushing him, there was no way he could resist. If he tried to go the other way or stop, he would fall down and get trampled over.

Tae Ho got pushed forward tens of meters in an instant and looked at the only Valkyrie he knew; she was the one that had brought him here. He wanted to beg for something, but the black-haired Valkyrie put on a refreshing smile and said, “Warrior! Welcome to Valhalla! Let's hope we meet again at the night banquet!”

“Night banquet?”

He asked a question but no reply could be heard. No, in the first place, his question was drowned out by the voices around him.

Tae Ho gave up on trying to talk to the Valkyrie and just looked to the front. As the strength pushing behind him was still great, if he became careless for even a moment, he would die on the spot.

‘Wait, am I not already dead?’

He thought that, but for now Tae Ho was focused on moving his feet because that was what his instinct was telling him to do. If it hurt when people pushed him, it was obvious that it would also

hurt if he fell.

The place beyond the door was so big that it was able to hold hundreds of people at once. The high ceiling was made out of rocks, the pillars were tall, and the place itself gave a big impression.

There were also some Valkyries wearing armor inside the door, but they weren't warriors so they were lined up on another side of the wall. A high platform was placed in front of them.

‘Is someone going to perform over there?’

As Tae Ho was walking and observing his surroundings, a rough voice spoke right next to him.

“Which battle did you die in?”

Tae Ho flinched, but fortunately, the question wasn't directed at him but at another man. The man that asked the question and the one that was asked looked like bears.

The red-bearded man that was questioned started explaining his situation. Then the blue-bearded man sharply opened his eyes.

“You were the one that killed me!”

‘What?’

Tae Ho was surprised and so he turned to look back at them. Were they enemies that stood on the same battlefield?

Tae Ho shrank back because he thought that a fight would occur, but nothing happened. The red-bearded man patted the shoulders of the other man and stirringly said, “Kuhahat, know that you were able to come to Valhalla because of me.”

“Kuku, that was a good fight. But seeing that we are together, did you die after that?”

At the blue-bearded man's question, the red-bearded one frowned as if it was regrettable.

“I got done in by a young man with five braids. He pierced my stomach while yelling ‘Father!’.”

“Ah....Bjorg! You avenged your father!”

‘What is with this story.’

Simply put, the red beard killed the blue beard, and the son of the blue beard killed the red beard.

He thought that a battle was obviously going to start, but once again nothing happened.

The red beard patted his belly and said while laughing: “Man, you raised your son really well! For him to pierce my belly like that. He will become a great warrior! No, he’s already one!”

“Kukuku. Thanks.”

The red beard and blue beard patted each other’s shoulders and laughed. If you just looked at them you would think that they were lifelong friends instead of enemies.

Tae Ho decided to stop thinking at that point. It seemed like this place really was the Valhalla that appeared in myths from northern Europe.

‘But why me?’

Tae Ho had never held a sword, nor a dagger. He had never experienced a battle where he had to put his life at stake, why was he dragged here?

‘It’s surely a mistake. Right? A mistake?’

While Tae Ho was in grief, the sound of the horn trumpet rang again. The warriors that were chatting amongst themselves became silent and turned to look at where the Valkyries were. A Valkyrie with long, blonde hair was on the platform that was empty until moments ago. Perhaps she had a high status among Valkyries, as her armor and helmet were different from the others.

“Warriors! I welcome you to Valhalla!”

“Uooooo!”

“Odin!”

“Thor!”

The hundreds of gathered warriors let out cheers. The sound was so loud that it seemed like the entire hall was shaking.

The Valkyrie standing on the platform put on a satisfied smile and then raised the sword that was resting on her waist.

“I am the Valkyrie Reginleif! I have prepared a banquet to welcome you!”

“Ohh!”

‘Banquet? Is it that night banquet they spoke of before?’

Tae Ho remembered the words of the black-haired Valkyrie. First, he would have to sit down and ask some questions to know what his situation was like.

“But unfortunately, something has happened. Exalted warriors, are you ready to fight for Asgard and the nine linked planets?!”

At Reginleif’s words, Tae Ho abruptly opened his eyes.

‘Did something happen? Ready to fight?’

‘You don’t mean...?!’

“Wicked enemies have invaded us with a huge army! You all are already excellent and exalted warriors to be invited to Valhalla! Grab your weapons and let us go to the battlefield!”

“Let’s go!”

“Uooo!”

“Let’s go!”

“Wait, wait, wait!”

That last one was Tae Ho, but his voice was mixed in with the confusion from the other cries.

Reginleif turned her sword over her head with a cool motion and then pointed at the huge door.

“Go! Get on the ships! They will lead you to the battlefield!”

“Uoooo!”

“Odin!”

“Let’s go!”

The warriors started to move in unison. Tae Ho was just like a pebble in a stream — he couldn’t get out.

&

‘This is crazy!’

Tae Ho was sat in a corner of the big deck.

It was absurd enough to be dead and be dragged to Valhalla, but he even had to go to the battlefield as soon as he had arrived. The warriors that were on the ship were enjoying the cloudy sea, but Tae Ho couldn’t do so at all. He would like it if someone explained what was happening to him, even if it wasn’t a pretty Valkyrie.

It was right then when someone said something to him: “Young man.”

A big shadow was cast over his head. Tae Ho raised his head and saw a tall man with ash colored hair. The man smiled when he made eye contact with Tae Ho and then lowered himself to his eye level.

“You are overly nervous. Don’t worry. These battles are not that different to what you were doing until now. I have already been on this battlefield numerous times.”

The man spoke like that and then pointed at his chest. There was one accessory made of feathers and it looked like it was a kind of medal.

Tae Ho reflexively asked, “What are we fighting against?”

“Wicked demons, giants, devils.....They are all enemies threatening Asgard and the nine planets.”

The man answered with a gallant face. It was doubtful if he could even fight against a person, but to top that off, demons and giants? And even devils?

Tae Ho breathed in and out as he started to feel dizzy. Only after that could he barely ask a question:

“If you die, what happens?”

Tae Ho was already dead. So what would happen if he died once again in this state?

“Young man, is that really a question? Didn’t we obtain a new body here in Valhalla? If you die this time, it will mean death for real.”

He had his doubts, but it really was the case. As Tae Ho’s expression became grim, the man laughed and added,

“But don’t worry too much. We have at least one insurance.”

“An insurance?”

“Can you see those friends?”

As he turned to look in the direction that the man was pointing at, he could see big overall armors lined up.

“The warriors of Valhalla that die in the battlefield — the souls of the warriors are moved to the steeled soldiers. The Einherjar. So you can keep fighting in that state! What’s more surprising is that the steeled warriors don’t feel pain or exhaustion. They only exist to fight!”

He spoke as if it was cool, but for Tae Ho, it wasn’t cool at all. To exist just to fight without having any senses. What was the difference between that and a piece of metal?

He had to live. He couldn’t afford to die. He couldn’t die like this.

While Tae Ho was making a pledge by himself, the man turned to look at Tae Ho again.

“Above that, don’t you use a saga?”

“Yes?”

‘Saga?’

“You are a warrior worthy of being called to Valhalla. You surely have amazing prestige or a great achievement. The saga is the song of the warrior, the strength of magic. The more it is transmitted and believed in, the strength of the warrior becomes stronger. Think of your own saga. It will surely give you strength to enable you to fight on the battlefield.”

“My.....saga?”

Story. Transmission.

“Also, my saga is ‘The rock fist that caught a bear’. My fists are a bit hard.”

The man smiled and clenched his fist. It was really as big and hard like a rock.

But it didn’t end there. It seemed like the fist of the man was shining. Then, it became twice as big.

“You try it too, young man. Think of the achievements you have accomplished.”

The man smiled and extended his fist. However, it was merely a perplexing thing for Tae Ho.

An achievement as a warrior? A feat?

There was no way a pro gamer would have those kinds of things.

‘No, wait.’

Tae Ho certainly wasn’t a warrior.

But he was the world’s best pro gamer. The dragon knight Kalsted, which he used in the world of Dark Age, was the legend

itself.

His achievements.

His story.

All of the achievements dragon knight Kalsted had made.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior]

A shining sentence appeared in front of Tae Ho's eyes.

Episode 1/Chapter 2: Immortal Warrior (2)

‘What is this?’

Tae Ho blinked. However, the words in front of him didn’t disappear. No, more words appeared instead.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior] [Synchro rate: 1%]

[–]

[–]

‘Synchro rate?’

He could somewhat grasp what was happening. The reason was simple.

Immortal Warrior.

It was the dragon knight Kalsted’s nickname. It was also the nickname he had received when he made an ace by killing all 7 enemy characters at the 6th world championships.

Synchro rate.

Didn’t this mean that Tae Ho was becoming one with Kalsted?

It was an absurd thing to say, but coming to Valhalla after death was an absurd thing itself.

“Oh, so you do have a saga.”

Tae Ho raised his head. The man put on a warm smile and looked down at Tae Ho. Tae Ho rolled his eyes and looked at the empty slots below the synchronization.

“Um, I do. But the slots below are empty.”

“That’s obvious. A saga is a song and a story at the same time! Big stories are made up of many small stories!”

‘So it’s still an empty slot?’

Then he could just think of it as being fillable content. Just like a

subtitle below a main title.

“The saga is the strength of magic. Just like rune magic, there’s always an order and a system to a mystery.”

The man laughed as he explained. His body was the same as the other warriors, but it seemed like his knowledge was completely different.

As Tae Ho started to look at the man with admiring eyes, the man smiled once again.

“Ha, I know the meaning of those eyes. I am a druid. I know how to use rune magic and elemental magic besides the saga.”

It seemed like there were other types of magic aside from the saga!

‘Anyways!’

First, he would have to learn how to use this saga. Tae Ho stood up and was about to ask more questions when some warriors began shouting.

“I can see the battlefield!”

“Get ready to fight!”

As the Valkyrie at the bow of the ship blew the horn trumpet, the warriors started to yell one after another.

“The time has come. You should also grab your weapon.”

“Wa-wait!”

“Survive. Let’s keep talking at the night banquet!”

The man smirked and then went off to where the other warriors were gathered.

Tae Ho, who was looking at the man’s back with perplexed eyes, slapped himself. It was time to get a hold of himself.

“I can do it.”

Tae Ho looked at the sword that was by his feet. It was something he received after getting forcefully pushed onto the ship.

“You can do it, Lee Tae Ho.”

Tae Ho took in a deep breath and then slowly raised his sword. He didn't know if it was his imagination but it felt lighter than when he first received it.

Immortal Warrior.

Tae Ho breathed out. It felt like his palm was stuck to the hilt of the sword. He felt himself getting more comfortable, just like when he grabbed his computer mouse.

Kalsted was a knight that had the blood of a dragon. He was a real superhuman that could beat hundreds, if not thousands of enemies by himself.

If this synchronization was what Tae Ho was thinking it was...

It was enough even if it was 1%. He could do it.

‘Good!’

He would survive. Then he'd participate in that night banquet or whatever it was called and listen to the story!

He had finally prepared himself when the ship suddenly trembled with a banging sound.

“Uok?!”

Tae Ho, who narrowly avoided a fall into the water, turned his head toward the sound. The warriors were jumping off the ship as soon as it hit the rocks.

“The reinforcements have arrived!”

“Protect the port!”

A loud voice was heard from beyond the ship. The sounds of weapons clashing, yells and cries of beasts rang on the battlefield.

“Hurry up! The magic maintaining the ship will disappear!”

Someone pushed Tae Ho's back. Tae Ho jumped off the ship instead of looking back to see who it was. It wasn't because he was eager to fight though, it was because the floor of the ship was becoming more transparent by the second.

A few moments after Tae Ho jumped, the ship disappeared completely. Tae Ho gripped his sword and looked at his surroundings. The battle had already started. In addition, this place wasn't a dock for ships but a complete battlefield. He wondered why there wasn't any strategy, but it was obviously a situation that didn't need any. It was a dogfight.

‘Stay calm. Calm yourself.’

His breathing became rough. There was nowhere to hide on this wide battlefield. The warriors he came with from Valhalla were fighting humanoid monsters that had dog heads. Even at first glance, their numbers easily passed the hundreds.

Tae Ho forced himself to steady his breathing.

It wasn't that different to a game. It was actually quite similar.

You just had to use your skills and abilities to beat the opponent.

“Kuo!”

‘Similar my ass!’

A dog-headed monster cried out loudly as if threatening Tae Ho and charged towards him.

At that moment, Tae Ho's body reacted. It wasn't an action he did consciously. He tilted his body to dodge the blade and then swung his sword. Even though it was his first time swinging a sword, the arc was really sharp.

“Kukuk!”

The dog-headed monster that had its neck cut let out a breathtaking cry. Tae Ho got a hold of himself and gritted his teeth before swinging his sword to slash the monster's side. Rather than

slashing, it was more like thrashing, but it had an effect. The condition of the monster worsened.

“Die!”

Tae Ho yelled unconsciously and then struck the monster’s back with the tip of his sword. The monster flinched for a moment, then fell.

Tae Ho huffed and puffed.

He plucked his sword. Now he was certain. Pro gamer Lee Tae Ho would never be able to do this. But it was different for the legendary dragon knight Kalsted.

Saga.

The effects of Immortal Warrior.

‘You can do it. Lee Tae Ho, you can do it!’

A bit calmer. A bit more cool-headed.

Tae Ho kept reminding himself. Actually, this was something he always did. What could he do to win? How could he get the best results?

Tae Ho looked towards the front. He made eye contact with another monster. Then it came running towards him while making a strange cry. Tae Ho glared at it and thought:

The slots below the saga.

There were two.

Then could he make more than two little stories?

Or was that his limit?

The monster was approaching. It opened its mouth widely and... Tae Ho drew his arms back to be able to swing his sword more broadly.

It felt like time slowed down, but Tae Ho had an idea about what the weird sensation was. He breathed out roughly, pulled his

sword, and then made another saga.

‘Ah! Player Lee Tae Ho! He’s fast! He’s three times faster than normal players! He’s a storm! A storm!’

The voices of the yelling commentators were still fresh in his ears.

A saga is a story and a song.

The more people that relate to the story and the more they believe in it, the stronger it becomes.

Everyone went crazy when they watched Tae Ho charging with amazing speed during the qualification round.

Everyone cheered at Kalsted’s rush.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior Is Just Like a Storm]

Tae Ho charged forward. He closed in on the monster faster than it could swing its blade.

‘What?!’

Tae Ho became surprised at his own speed. Although it was only a few meters, it was like he really crossed it at the speed of light.

The breath of the monster reached his cheek. His sword pierced its stomach.

He felt something at the tips of his fingers. Tae Ho twisted the sword before he started to feel something. The monster struggled to break free while roaring.

Its claws were scratching his shoulders. Rather than pain, it felt hot. Just like being burned with fire.

“Uoooo!”

Tae Ho yelled once again and twisted his sword. He didn’t stop there. He violently pulled the sword back.

“Kakak!”

The monster fell on the ground. Tae Ho stabbed its neck to make sure it was dead, and only then did he start to relax.

“Kuhuk. Haah.”

He felt dizzy. He felt like his nose was paralyzed from the smell of blood. But instead, his eyes were clear. He could also hear well.

‘A buff.’

It was different for the Immortal Warrior. ‘The charge of a warrior is just like a storm’ was closer to an active skill.

‘Do I become faster when I use it?’

It was important to understand a skill. You had to know how much power it had and how to activate it to be able to use it well.

Tae Ho instinctively knew that his saga wasn’t finished yet.

The origin of his saga became an anecdote. The best highlight of the world championships was Kalsted’s charge.

It wasn’t only that. Kalsted’s charge wasn’t just fast. It was a storm that swept over the battlefield.

He was certain that it had room to grow, just like the Immortal Warrior.

Tae Ho gritted his teeth and looked at his surroundings again. It was still a dogfight, but there were many warriors from Valhalla, so no more monsters charged at Tae Ho. He felt like they were pushing them back.

The warriors of Valhalla were strong. They all seemed to be using their own sagas. Some had light shining in their bodies and some made flames arise from their weapons.

‘Huh?’

But there was something that caught Tae Ho’s attention. One warrior was placing his hands on top of the corpse of a monster he just killed.

Something like red smoke started to rise from the corpse of the monster and then got sucked in by the palm.

The warrior that finished the process smiled in satisfaction and then started to charging towards another monster.

Tae Ho looked back at the monster he killed. He hurriedly extended his hand and placed it on the monster's back.

Red smoke started to soar up from the monster followed by a clicking feeling.

‘Rune.’

It appeared naturally in his head. It was hard to explain what exactly happened, but he felt like he had gotten stronger.

‘Fight with your saga to beat the monsters and increase your strength.’

He thought of the general outline. It had the same method as a game.

Tae Ho also approached the first monster he killed and placed his hand on it. This time he felt something being transmitted to him as well.

He unconsciously clenched his fists. Tae Ho tried to calm his breathing and then gulped.

‘You can do it. You can do it.’

Just like in games, there are also rules here.

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

Suddenly, yells exploded from the soldiers. Tae Ho quickly stood up while grabbing his sword and turned to look in the direction the warriors were yelling at. Then he understood why the soldiers were calling the name of a God.

“The God of Thunder has descended!”

He really had. There was someone standing in the sky of the battlefield. It was a huge man with blue lightning flowing through his body. When he raised his giant, golden hammer, the warriors started to cheer and in response to them, he flipped his red cape and started to soar through the sky.

“Mjolnir!”

“The God of Thunder!”

Bang!

Thunder appeared in the sky. No, it was made from the golden hammer. The thunder swept over the monsters.

“Uooooo!”

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

The warriors went wild. Tae Ho also felt his heartbeat speed up. The thunder that came from above turned hundreds of monsters to ashes. But it didn't stop there. It also made a huge explosion. The ground shook like an earthquake.

“Go! Warriors of Valhalla!”

The one holding the hammer yelled at the warriors. The Valkyries that were by his side charged to the front of the battlefield, and the warriors also charged across the area that the thunder had swept through.

Tae Ho could only acknowledge it.

It was a God. It really was Thor.

And then he realized once again.

Where he was.

He turned to look at the sky. He could see monsters. He could see warriors fighting against them.

Tae Ho breathed in and gripped his sword with more strength

after cursing at himself saying that he was crazy.

It wasn't his style to fight an enemy head-on with his body. Fighting against monsters was dangerous. But he couldn't just sit back and watch. Now that they had the momentum, he had to kill more monsters to get stronger so that his chances of survival for the next battle would increase.

It was an instinctive calculation.

“Let-let's survive first.”

Tae Ho, with his contradicting words and actions, smiled bitterly. He let out a battle cry just like Kalsted in game and charged forward.

.

..

...

[Synchro rate: 2%]

Episode 2/Chapter 1: Legion (1)

The battle had concluded.

The battle finished as suddenly as it had started. After breathing roughly because of having killed the sixth or seventh monster, the sound of the horn trumpet was heard along with the cheers.

And how many hours have passed after that?

Tae Ho returned with the ship and was sitting in front of a big round table. The table was filled with alcohol and meat, and the warriors of the same table were busy eating, drinking and talking to each other.

‘Is this.....the night banquet?’

Tae Ho looked at his surroundings. He could see the men with really big frames that were all sitting close to each other and felt like the temperature rose by 5 degrees.

It was certainly a banquet. Because it had alcohol and meat.

‘Although it really only has alcohol and meat.’

It felt quite simple for it to be Valhalla’s banquet, that the Gods participated. And he couldn’t even see the Valkyries around. The only things he could see were the smelly and muscled men.

Tae Ho looked at his surroundings and drank alcohol. It wasn’t that he particularly liked alcohol, but he could only drink it as it was the only thing on the table. He thought that he wouldn’t have an appetite after the first battle of his life but that wasn’t the case at all. After he put some meat on his mouth, it kept going in well.

‘Let’s eat first.’

It wasn’t that delicious as it was merely grilled, but it was still meat. He had to fill his stomach first.

‘But where do I sleep?’

Will he eat and drink all night and then go to the next battlefield?

Even if this was the case, Valhalla was a place that had sent him to the battlefield without any explanations. He wondered, but it wasn't that there were no probabilities.

‘But even so.’

“Young man.”

A voice was heard. As Tae Ho turned his head he saw a familiar face. It was the man he saw at the ship.

“So you survived. Then you can teach me your name now. I am called Bjorn.”

The man-Bjorn smiled and sat next to Tae Ho. He was so tall that Tae Ho had to raise his head to look at him in the eyes.

“I’m Lee Tae Ho.”

As Tae Ho revealed his name, Bjorn tilted his head.

“Huh? You have a peculiar name. Now that I see you are also wearing peculiar clothes.”

Bjorn opened his eyes sharply and then looked at Tae Ho from head to toes. Tae Ho wanted to yell that he realized that only now, but he forced himself to calm down and said with a calm voice.

“Something’s wrong. I’m sure there was a mistake.”

Actually he spoke these words without expecting for much. Because if these words did work, he wouldn't have gone to the battlefield at all.

But unexpectedly, Bjorn nodded and agreed.

“It seems so. People with similar names to yours are supposed to go to the next town.”

He was right. Something was wrong even when looking at it with this place’s standpoint.

But most of all, the last words picked Tae Ho’s interest.

“Next town?”

“That’s right. Didn’t I tell you at the ship? About Asgard and the nine planets. People with similar names to yours shouldn’t be supposed to gather at Valhalla but at another place. What was the place called.....temple?”

Tae Ho blinked. And then drank some of the beer.

If Bjorn’s words were true, then there were nine more planets aside of Valhalla, and the place called temple was the place where people with names similar to Tae Ho’s gathered at.

But that was everything.

‘No. At least’ it’s possible that there are Koreans over there.’

Of course, that may not be the case. Because it was only similar for Bjorn.

“Well, having come here is also fate, don’t you think? You are even able to write your saga. I’m certain you were destined to come here.”

Bjorn smiled as it was complicated at all. He wan’t to refute back but his words seemed right.

“Most of all, it looks like you have accomplished quite the merits. You have quite a bit of runes.”

“Can you see something?”

Bjorn laughed as Tae Ho asked back reflexively.

“Um, right. You didn’t even know what a saga was. Then I will explain it to you.”

Bjorn paused for a moment and then touched his chin as if he was choosing the correct words.

“You should also know it, but all of the existences that have life have mana in their bodies. Be it small or big. And that’s also the same for the enemies of Valhalla.”

The dog headed monsters were certainly living creatures. But even so, he didn't feel rejection at the thought of having killed something right because it was a monster. In the first place, Tae Ho's life was at danger.

As Tae Ho nodded slowly, Bjorn kept explaining.

“When the warriors of Valhalla defeat the enemies, they can take their mana and convert it to magical runes. Think of the time when you thought of your saga.”

It was an unreasonable request, but Tae Ho closed his eyes and tried it. And in the end exclaimed.

“Oh.”

[Lowest rune : 7]

A new shiny message appeared below the saga category.

Bjorn pinched Tae Ho's chest with his big fingers and said.

“You can use the runes and strengthen your abilities. There are some conditions but you will be able to learn magic and a new saga.”

‘Simply put, you upgrade your stats and level up your skills right?’

He felt like he knew what he had to do. Bjorn kept speaking.

“First is physical abilities – and among them I recommend you strengthening your stamina. Your body is the first thing that will get spent on the battlefield.”

Tae Ho nodded but he didn't use the runes immediately. He had too little information right now. If he had to go to the battlefield again he would have used the runes, but he still had time.

“Um, but why aren't the Valkyries here?”

The black haired Valkyrie that led Tae Ho to Valhalla. She had certainly told him to meet at the night banquet again.

At Tae Ho's question, Bjorn clicked his tongue and then patted Tae Ho's shoulders.

"The Valkyries aren't here. They are at another banquet."

"Another banquet?"

"This is the lowest banquet where the lowest class warriors and newcomers gather at. That's why the food and the alcohol is like this. If you want to drink with the Valkyries you will have to work hard. Because you will have to at least climb to the intermediate banquet."

So that was why the food was like this. For there to be ranks at the banquets.

'How petty. They discriminate with food.'

Anyways, it seemed like the privileges of a high class wasn't only the banquet. Perhaps you may receive better equipment or get a special technique.

"What about you?"

Bjorn said that this was the place for newcomers and the lowest class warriors. Then was Bjorn also a lowest class warrior?

At Tae Ho's question, Bjorn laughed.

"I just came down to see you."

In other words, he wasn't a newcomer.

"I'm really thankful."

Tae Ho bowed towards Bjorn. It wasn't a face action, but his true feelings. If Bjorn hadn't taught him the saga at the ship, he would have died in today's battlefield.

"You do know some manners. I like you."

Bjorn nodded and placed a hand in Tae Ho's shoulder.

"You have talent. You will be able to climb up fast. If you have to fight anyways, isn't it better to get good treatment and then

fight?”

He was certainly encouraging him, but why was strength leaving his body? Tae Ho forced a smile and then asked another question.

“Um, but where will I sleep today?”

He was curious about many things, but for now, he had to take care of his basic needs the most urgently.

“Ah, you were sent to the battlefield as soon as you came so you wouldn’t know. It will be announced later on anyways, but your lodging will depend on what legion of a God you follow.”

“A legion?”

“Yeah, the Valkyrie warriors are all under a legion of the Gods of Asgard.”

He thought of something. Tae Ho opened his eyes sharply and asked.

“I’m just asking but do the blessings differ regarding on what God you follow?”

“Oh, you are quite fast to catch on. That’s right. It’s the same for the affiliated Valkyries.”

He was right. He still didn’t know what blessing gave each God, but he felt like it was up to luck.

“It’s starting now.”

Bjorn pointed to the middle of the hall with a gesture of his chin. He turned to look reflexively and then saw a gold haired Valkyrie. It was Reginleif.

“Warriors! I have seen today’s performance well! Valhalla welcomes you, exalted warriors!”

“Ohh!”

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

The warriors raised their cups and claimed the name of the God of thunder. Reginleif put on a proud smile and then raised her voice again.

“Starting from now, I will teach you your affiliation! Everyone, look at your cups! Now, you will remember the name of the you will believe and follow!”

Reginleif swung her sword on the air after she finished speaking. Then, light started shine and was poured over the heads of the warriors after having split to hundreds and thousands of pieces.

“Hurry up. Check it.”

Bjorn urged. The warriors at his surrounding also looked at their cups.

Tae Ho, that was amazed at the particles of light, looked down at his cup. Shiny words started to appear where there was nothing before.

‘Please! Please!’

Although he only knew about Odin, Thor and Freya in norse mythology, Tae Ho still had a legion he wanted to be affiliated.

Odin or Thor.

A strong God!

“Odin!”

“Ohh! Thor!”

The warriors started to talk among themselves. Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and then looked at his cup. It was the first time he had seen these symbols, but he could clearly read it.

“Iðunn?”

Obviously, it was a name he didn’t know. And because of that, Tae Ho turned his head and looked at Bjorn.

And then, Bjorn clicked his tongue and patted Tae Ho’s shoulder.

“Cheer up.”

What did he mean with that?

Tae Ho wanted to ask when he already knew the answer.

Episode 2/Chapter 2: Legion (2)

It was when Tae Ho and Bjorn were exchanging gazes of unluckiness and sympathy when Reginleif looked at the warriors in the banquet with a gallant face and raised her sword again.

“Warriors! Have you checked your own legions?!”

“Yes!”

“Ohh!”

“Yeah!”

The warriors yelled excitedly. They were yelling so much that you’d think they’d damage their ears or throats. Reginleif laughed in satisfaction.

“Then, today’s banquet ends here! Follow the Valkyries that will be leading you to your legions! A warm and comfy bed will be awaiting you! You will truly be entering Valhalla!”

“Ohh!”

“Valhalla!”

The warriors got excited again. Their faces were those that had come to the place they were dreaming of.

Tae Ho felt a distant difference in temperature between him and the warriors. He then let out a long sigh. Bjorn patted Tae Ho’s shoulders again.

“Hm, I will be going now.”

“Thanks for all you have done.”

Tae Ho thanked him. Bjorn stood up and said, “I belong to Tir’s legion. Let’s meet again.”

Tir.

It was a name he didn’t know either. However, it felt nice as it sounded similar to Thor.

As Bjorn left with soft steps, Tae Ho, who had been looking at his back dumbfoundedly, looked at his surroundings once again. Soon, Valkyries were lined up at the entrance.

“Thor!”

“Odin!”

As the Valkyries started to shout the names of the Gods, the warriors yelled and ran towards the Valkyries. They filed into lines and the lines on Odin and Thor’s side were overwhelmingly long.

“Tir!”

“Heimdal!”

The other lines in front of the Valkyries also became long. Tae Ho slowly got up and then waited for Idun’s name to be called, but he couldn’t hear it.

‘Shall I go a bit closer?’

There were hundreds of warriors lined up but half of them were at Odin and Thor’s lines. On top of that, they were all respectful and waited for their turns so it wasn’t that difficult to approach the Valkyries.

After passing by the Valkyries that were shouting the names of Gods, he could finally hear the name he wanted.

“Idun~ Idun~”

It was a spiritless voice but she was clearly calling for Idun.

Tae Ho turned his gaze to the place where the voice was coming from and could see a red-haired Valkyrie that was seated in the corner on a carton box.

She was a real beauty that would outstand even the other Valkyries, but she had a dull expression. She was chewing on a branch of a willow tree and her seated posture was also slouchy.

In addition, she was the only Valkyrie that had no one in her line.

He felt uneasy about that but he couldn't do much. Tae Ho approached the Valkyrie.

“What do you want?”

As Tae Ho approached, the Valkyrie frowned and questioned him. It seemed like she really was asking though.

“Um, I belong to Idun's legion.”

“Huh? There's a newcomer?”

The Valkyrie just blinked as if she was surprised. After that, she stood up and unfurled a small scroll.

“Wow, it's true.”

Tae Ho unconsciously closed his eyes tightly. Then, the Valkyrie put back the scroll on her waist and then patted Tae Ho's shoulder with an awkward face.

“Yeah. Anyways. Cheer up.”

Why did they keep comforting him?

Tae Ho opened his eyes instead of asking a question. The Valkyrie who seemed to be languid, smiled and said, “I'm Heda.”

“I'm Lee Tae Ho.”

He was wondering if she'd show a similar expression to that of Bjorn's, but she just seemed to accept it and nodded.

“Right, then shall we go?”

Heda pushed away the box she was sitting on with her feet and hurriedly asked Tae Ho.

“Um, is there no one else?”

The number of the warriors gathered at the hall amounted to hundreds. But Tae Ho was the only one belonging to Idun's legion among them?

Of course, looking at Heda's expression, it seemed like that was

true. However, he still wanted to confirm that. Heda replied with a sincere expression.

“Yeah. You are the last. But you are also quite peculiar. What were you thinking when you desired to come to our legion?”

“Yes? Desired?”

A desire. So it wasn't a forced assignment?

At Tae Ho's question, Heda tilted her head and then smiled brightly.

“Ah, you were a merry-go-round? Well, your name is kind of peculiar.”

“Um, what do you mean?”

“Normally, they enter the legion of the God they worshipped when they were alive. That's why our legion is always lacking members, because Idun isn't a battle God. What warriors like our battles, right? Wow now that I think about it, how long has it been since a newcomer has entered our legion?”

Heda looked at Tae Ho as if it was marvelous.

Tae Ho felt really distant after hearing the words 'newcomer' and 'long'.

“Anyways, guys that didn't worship any particular God spin the merry-go-round. Um, welcome anyways. So cheer up.”

Heda patted Tae Ho's shoulders once again.

‘I remember the old times.’

The pro gaming team he first entered was really a ditch.

“Hey, hey. Stop staring and feeling so miserable. Let's go.”

Heda talked brightly and then pulled Tae Ho's hand. As he was being dragged by her, they went out of the hall and saw a port that had quite a lot of ships.

“We are getting on the ships here to go to our respective legions.”

As soon as Heda finished explaining, the Valkyries and the warriors came pouring out.

“Warriors of Odin! Follow me!”

“Let’s go! For Thor!”

The Valkyries, who had great military discipline, led the warriors and got on the ship. The other Valkyries that had many members had tens of members, and the ones that had a few only had around ten members.

‘I will at least travel comfortably since there’s nobody else.’

He was thinking rather positively when Heda pulled his hand again.

At the end of the port there was only one wooden boat next to the lined ships.

“Hey, get on.”

Heda made a hand gesture after jumping into the boat. Tae Ho looked at the ship that was next to them instead of getting on immediately.

“We don’t have that many members. So what do we need a big ship for?”

Heda’s answer was reasonable. In the end, Tae Ho got on the wooden boat.

“Do you want to smoke one? You look like you need one.”

Heda smiled while grabbing the oars and then touched the box that was next her with her foot. Inside it was a tobacco pouch and a pipe.

“We are departing!”

The sound of the horn trumpet erupted with a big yell. The big ships departed one by one, starting from the one on the left.

Heda filled the pipe with tobacco, either to give it to Tae Ho or to

smoke it herself.

“Hey, it’s fine. We also have one strong point that’s not a shortcoming compared to the others.”

Even so, it was still a God’s legion, so blessings would also exist.

“What is it?”

As Tae Ho asked a bit expectantly, Heda put the pipe in her mouth and said,

“That is.....”

Episode 2/Chapter 3: Legion (3)

“What is that?”

“Why, you have no superior that abuses you and no one below you that will gradually rot you. Isn’t that complete heaven?”

Heda sucked on the unlit cigarette to save the fire and then gave it to Tae Ho after coughing. Tae Ho received the pipe, but instead of smoking it, he frowned even more.

“Am I really the only one?”

It was still a legion of a God. The other legions had tens and hundreds of people in it.

At Tae Ho’s disappointed and uneasy eyes, Heda shrugged her shoulders, but it was only for a moment. Then she smirked and said, “There are a few more, but they are all superior-ranked warriors. That’s why they aren’t in the place that you will be going to. Starting from the superior rank, another lodging is given.”

The ships that had departed along with them had all disappeared. It was because they each took their own routes.

The warriors of Valhalla were classified into 5 classes.

Lowest rank, inferior rank, intermediate rank, superior rank, and top rank.

According to Heda’s words, Tae Ho was the only one from the bottom three ranks. Since she also said that there were ‘a few’ in the superior rank, there wouldn’t be that many.

‘Can it really be like this.’

Could you call it a legion with just these numbers?

As Tae Ho’s eyes started to cool down, Heda spoke after clicking her tongue a few times.

“Fine, I will tell you one more strong point Idun’s legion has. It’s

me.”

She said it proudly while beating her chest, but Tae Ho’s expression remained the same.

“What is that expression.”

“Then what expression should I display?”

Was she boasting that she was a beauty? Or was that a baseless testament?

As Tae Ho’s eyes started to lose even more light, Heda hurriedly opened her mouth.

“Tae Ho, what do you think is the role of the Valkyries of the legions?”

“Uh.....Administration and supply?”

Leading the warriors, informing them of this and that, and fighting at the front lines on the battlefield. If it was up to what he could see on the surface, she would be just like a non-commissioned officer from an army.

Although you wouldn’t really know if there were administration and supply jobs in Valhalla, or if she just let that pass by, Heda nodded in response.

“Well, it’s kind of similar. Anyways, we are also in charge of tutoring the warriors. Because warriors of the mortal world are less accustomed to saga or magic. But think about it. If there are hundreds of warriors, will the Valkyrie be able to teach them meticulously one by one?”

There were hundreds of newcomers in Odin and Thor’s legions. Although they had a few more Valkyries to lead them, it couldn’t be compared to the number of the warriors.

“So.....personal tutoring is possible in Idun’s legion?”

“That’s right.”

Heda clapped her hands.

‘Certainly.’

If Tae Ho had been the only warrior, he could have received all of the tutoring by himself. Also, his tutoring time would also be much longer than in other legions.

“Hm, I certainly do think that it’s a strong po.....int.”

Tae Ho, that was starting to think positively, looked at Heda’s stupidly smiling face and changed words. Thinking about it, the one that would be tutoring him was Heda.

It wasn’t that long since they had met but how could you put it. She didn’t give the same strong feeling Reginleif gave. If you had to be concise, you’d say that she wasn’t reliable?

At Tae Ho’s gaze, Heda pouted her lips. Then she spread her chest and said, “Trust me. The superior warriors of our legion were also taught by me. I teach well.”

Tae Ho nodded for now. It seemed like Heda’s mood loosened up and she spoke in a cool voice while looking far into the distance.

“Elitism in minority. That’s the particularity of Idun’s legion.”

It sounded cool, but rather than being spontaneous, wasn’t it more forced?

“Before that, aren’t you going to smoke that?”

He glanced at the pipe. Tae Ho nodded immediately.

“Smoking is a bit...”

“Then give it back. I have to put off the fire.”

It was unexpected as he thought that she was going to smoke it. Anyways, Heda put off the fire very thoroughly and then put back the tobacco pouch. It seemed like she was the thorough type, compared to how she looked.

“We’ve arrived.”

It was a dock that suited a boat. He didn't know how Valhalla was composed, but for now, it would be good to say that it was like a ship.

While Tae Ho was looking at the few wooden huts and a stone building, Heda jumped off the ship and said, "Then, shall we go and greet the goddess?"

"Are we really going to see her?"

Tae Ho was surprised. It was because he had directly seen Thor on the battlefield.

The God of Thunder that rode the skies and poured thunder.

Although Idun and Thor were different Gods, in the end, the both of them were Gods. So thinking that he would face an existence like that, his heart started to beat.

He didn't know if it was good or not, but Heda shook her head.

"No, not directly, but at a distance? This is the place for the lowest ranked warriors. The Goddess is high up there."

Heda pointed at the sky. Tae Ho turned to look up and also nodded. That place certainly seemed to be appropriate.

"This is the temple. Starting from here you should go alone."

It was a refined but strongly built stone building. At Heda's urging, Tae Ho went inside and the candles were lit automatically.

"Have a good time."

Heda patted Tae Ho's shoulders playfully before going outside and closed the door. Tae Ho looked at his front in the middle of the silence. Just by looking at the beautiful statue of the goddess made his heart beat quickly.

'Come closer, my warrior.'

A voice rang in his head. Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and then approached the statue. And then, the world changed. In the middle

of the dark sky and earth, a golden light started to pour from the sky.

“Lee Tae Ho. The warrior that has entered my legion.”

There was a big apple tree in front of him, and a goddess in front of that.

Her hair was golden. Aside from that, he could only know that she was beautiful. The light hid the goddess as if it was forbidden to look at her directly.

Tae Ho kneeled in front of the goddess and showed his manners. The action was as natural as water flowing from a high place.

“I will now give you the blessing of me, Idun.”

The goddess smiled. At that moment, the golden light that was pouring down from the sky covered Tae Ho’s body.

The blessing of a God.

Tae Ho closed his eyes. When he opened them again he was already outside the temple. He could see Heda smiling.

“So you received the blessing.”

Tae Ho nodded. As he thought of the blessing of the goddess like when he thought of the saga, golden messages started to appear in front of him.

[Idun’s Blessing]

[Sentence of Life]

“Then, I will teach you the real strong point of our Idun’s legion.”

Heda fixed her posture and then even fixed her expression. She was looking at Tae Ho with a completely serious face.

“Idun is the goddess that represents life and youth and her symbol is a golden apple. That’s why the warriors that join Idun’s legion receive the blessing of life.”

The Gods in the Nordic mythology weren't immortal. They had to consume golden apples regularly to maintain youth and their strength.

Idun was the goddess that maintained those golden apples.

The blessing of life was given by Idun.

Heda returned to her playful expression and said, "Although there may be many cases where it will hurt on the battlefield, you won't actually die because you will have the life blessing with you."

An unyielding endowment of life.

Persistency that keeps you alive in situations where you would normally die.

"Although the level of the blessing is still low, it will grow along with you. Why do you think the nickname of our legion is zombie legion? Ah, but even so don't get too overconfident. You are only hard to kill, if you get beheaded you will really die, do you understand?"

Heda winked at Tae Ho at the end and then patted Tae Ho's shoulders.

"Anyways, you are tired, right? I will lead you to your lodging. Rest today."

Maybe it was because of Heda's words that he seemed to become more tired. It was obvious as the things he had faced today were already incredible. Didn't he even stand on the battlefield?

The sun was already setting. Heda pointed at the wooden houses and explained in the middle of the dusk.

"That is the toilet and that's the bath. That is your lodging."

Just like it was for the lowest ranked banquet, the lodging really did look like the lowest graded one. It felt like it just had the basic things.

“We will train starting tomorrow morning so sleep early. Ah, I will also answer your questions tomorrow. You have a lot of questions, right?”

He obviously had a lot questions: how to use the saga, what is a rune, what were the enemies he fought today, etc.

But after she said it like this it seemed like he would have to wait til tomorrow.

As Tae Ho nodded, Heda took one step back and waved her hand.

“Then let’s meet tomorrow morning. Sleep well.”

Heda turned back and got on the wooden boat. The orange sky started to turn darker.

Tae Ho looked at Heda getting farther for a moment before entering his lodging and laid on his bed. The bed was made with straw, but it wasn’t that uncomfortable.

Night.

And sleep.

Truly a time to be alone.

‘I died today.’

He didn’t feel it real. He was at an unfamiliar place called Valhalla, but he was alive.

But it was the truth.

What would be happening by now? Would they be holding Tae Ho’s funeral? What would his parents be thinking? What about his teammates, his coach, and his fans?

What would have happened if the Valkyrie hadn’t appeared?

And.....

‘Will I be able to return?’

He was alive right now anyways.

Tae Ho closed his eyes and opened them again. He saw shining sentences.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior] [Synchro rate: 2%]

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior Is Just Like a Storm]

[–]

He thought of the first battlefield he had faced in his life, and the battles that had occurred there.

The place he now had to keep standing on.

“Let’s sleep.”

Tae Ho talked to himself and then closed his eyes. Maybe it was because he was really tired, but he soon fell into a deep sleep.

&

When he woke up, Heda had already arrived. She urged Tae Ho to get up and then started to prepare for the lessons after giving him two pieces of small bread and beer porridge. There was a big chalkboard and a table in the place you could call the classroom.

“Then let’s start with the basic lessons. That’s the most important thing.”

Heda cleared her throat once and then hit the chalkboard.

“Who are we fighting against, and why?”

Episode 2/Chapter 4: Legion (4)

When he woke up, Heda had already arrived. She urged Tae Ho to get up and then started to prepare for the lessons after giving him two pieces of small bread and beer porridge. There were a big chalkboard and a table in the place you could call the classroom.

“Then let’s start with the basic lessons. That’s the most important thing.”

Heda cleared her throat once and then hit the chalkboard.

“Who are we fighting against, and why?”

It was unreasonable to tell him to just go and fight. He had to at least know who they were up against.

As Tae Ho showed interest, Heda breathed in and then started to draw on the chalkboard with a chalk. There were 10 circles. She drew three circles horizontally and vertically to make 9 circles and then added one extra circle at the left side.

“This is Asgard and the nine planets. Asgard and Midgard are here. Valhalla is also in this place.

Heda drew a ‘V’ on the circle that was next to the extra circle and above that and said.

“The one above Asgard is the temple, and below that is Olympus. These three are on the front lines.”

The temple was one thing, but the word Olympus caught his attention more. Will Gods like Zeus, Hera, and Athena be there?

‘No one says that they aren’t.’

Because Gods like Thor and Odin already existed.

Because of that, Tae Ho asked one more important thing.

“What about that planet?”

The circle that was next to Asgard.

If Asgard and the planets above and below were at the front line, it meant that that planet was outside of that.

At Tae Ho's question, Heda smiled bitterly and drew an X on that circle.

"It got destroyed. Actually, there aren't ten planets but nine. Because one got destroyed. So should we call it as Asgard and the eight planets?"

Actually, that planet was at the forefront. but as it got destroyed, Asgard, the temple, and Olympus became the front lines.

Heda placed her chalk next to the extra circle in the left and said.

"Beyond this place exists Muspelheim, the planet of giants. That's where the giants, demons, and devils enter from."

An arrow was drawn that went from the left to the right. Heda then pointed at the circles that were at the right of Asgard.

"You came from one of the rear planets and not of the front lines. Perhaps, it may be proof that the devastation of the war started to take effect at the rear too. Well, it's not that there weren't cases like you so it may be pure coincidence."

She said it lightly but he couldn't just take it easy. Especially about the part of the devastation of the war.

"Anyways, what's important is that we are fighting. Against the world's enemies that want to destroy our worlds."

The Valhalla from the myths was a place meant to train and give rest to the warriors, to prepare them for the fight to come. But this Valhalla was different. The warriors were already battling and a destroyed planet already existed.

"Ragnarok."

Tae Ho said unconsciously. He didn't know much about Norse mythology but it was still something he knew.

The dusk of the Gods.

The last war you could even call it the ending of the Norse mythology.

“Right. Right now we are carrying out Ragnarok, that has the fate of our worlds at stake. That’s why we have to fight. To protect our world, or to be honest, to live.”

Because if we lose the world would get destroyed. It wasn’t only Asgard, but also the planets behind that.

Tae Ho gulped dry saliva. And then, Heda that was smiling pathetically, shrugged her shoulders and said.

“There’s no need to be that afraid. We have been in this state for hundreds of years already. Let the great ones do the big battles and let us focus on the fight in front of us.”

Heda winked slightly and then approached Tae Ho after putting down the chalk.

“Your rank is still low so you won’t be going to the big battles. You can think that you will only be going to small battles like yesterday’s.”

“Small battles?”

The battle from yesterday? In addition, even Thor himself stepped out.

At Tae Ho’s question, Heda blinked her eyes for a moment but then nodded as if she understood.

“Thor likes to stand at the front lines. On top of that, the battle of yesterday was one which the newcomers got sent suddenly, right? He would have been worried. Even if he looks like that, he has a really gentle side.”

Tae Ho remembered the image of Thor he saw yesterday. It was hard to connect that amazing sight of blue thunder pouring that with that of gentleness but he still felt a bit better. Because it meant that the Gods also had a human side.

“Um, Heda.”

“Yes?”

“Can I ask you one thing?”

“Anything.”

Heda brought her chair and sat in front of Tae Ho. He breathed in and then started to ask the questions he had yesterday.

“Will I.....be able to return to the place I lived someday?”

He had died once, but he was given a new life.

Heda nodded slowly.

“If this war ends someday, just like you say. And of course, that will only be if our side wins.”

Because when the war ends, rest will come after that for the warriors.

Tae Ho was satisfied. You could think that it was vague, but it was enough to answer him for the moment.

“Anyways, you understand the reason we have to fight right? Then let’s start with the class immediately. You have to get strong quickly so your rank becomes higher and you can get better treatment. You are doing the same thing, but now that it comes to this shouldn’t you get treated better?”

Heda spoke cheerfully and then went to the chalkboard again.

“First, I will teach you how to use the runes you obtained yesterday. The Gods have made a growth system for the warriors of Valhalla. It’s a simple method of investing runes to strengthen your abilities.”

Heda drew a pentagon.

“The abilities are divided into five big things. Strength, stamina, agility, mana, concentration. The first three are obvious and mana is related to magic. If you get stronger your magic also gets

stronger and so does your resistance to it. Should we call concentration as willpower? If you increase it your concentration or resistance towards mental attacks increase.”

It was a simple system just like Heda said. Tae Ho remembered the words he heard from Bjorn yesterday and asked.

“Is mana related to the saga?”

Because however much he thought of yesterday’s fight, the most important thing was certainly the saga.

Heda frowned as if it was hard to answer.

“Saga is a really special magic, so even if it gets as strong as your mana rune it doesn’t also get as strong. Rather than mana, it sometimes gets influenced by concentration. Should you say that it changed depending on how it originated?”

Bjorn also said something similar.

Heda kept speaking.

“A saga is a story. A transmission. The more people know about it, and the more they believe in it the stronger your saga becomes. There are really rare cases but sometimes the strength of the saga becomes stronger than what it originally was. Just like how it’s broken in the process of transmitting.”

It was as saying that the story of having caught a big snake became a legend of having caught a dragon.

“But most of that can’t even bring out the original power properly. And that’s because they couldn’t understand the saga properly.”

Heda paused a moment there and approached Tae Ho.

“The sagas of the lowest ranked warriors and inferior ranked ones is simple. The majority of them make them stronger or faster. Of course, that’s also an amazing strength but it lacks too much to call it the proper strength of a saga.”

Bjorn's saga made his first bigger and stronger. And Tae Ho's saga also made his body faster for now.

"The saga is the materialization of a legend. A recreation of a story. Because of that, the effects of a saga are plentiful. In addition, several abilities may be generated in only one saga."

Heda lightly spread her palms while speaking. And then, yellow flames appeared in her palm and then became a flaming sword.

"You can make a weapon like this or can even transform it. You can even summon a monster or an army."

Heroes aren't the only ones that appeared in the sagas.

Tae Ho remembered the legend of Excalibur. If the saga of King Arthur existed, won't he be able to summon Excalibur?

Heda grabbed the flaming sword and approached Tae Ho a bit more. She pinched Tae Ho's chest with her finger and said.

"Remember. The saga is a story belonging only to you. It's a record of your life and a legend that will be made from now on. The one that can bring out the strength of the saga and develop it the best is none other than you."

The story of the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho.

The legend of the dragon knight Kalsted.

Tae Ho started to feel his heartbeat. He felt like the strength of his saga was becoming stronger.

Right at that moment.

A bell tower that was at the center of a small island rang its bell. It was a fast and noisy sound.

As they reflexively turned to look at it, then they exchanged gazes. Heda frowned and said.

"You kind of know what it means, right?"

"It's an order to go to battle."

Heda nodded. And then, took out some things in a big box that seemed like she had already brought it here beforehand.

“Take it. It’s your equipment.”

A really simple helmet and leather armor. A round shield that had the symbol of Idun engraved on it and a sword.

They weren’t any legendary equipment or the sort but it was obviously better than what he got the day before.

Heda wore the leather armor to Tae Ho and quickly got out of the classroom.

“You can see the violet door over there, right? If you pass that you will be able to see the waiting station. You will be gathered there and go out to the battlefield together.”

He could see the big violet circle that was below the bell tower and the current it had. It was just like the portals he saw at games.

Tae Ho thought of the battle he faced yesterday. It was a lie to say that he wasn’t afraid to go back, but he had no way to not go. It was something he realized instinctively.

Tae Ho breathed in and then went towards the Violet door. Heda grabbed the arm of Tae Ho and made him turn to look at her.

“Don’t die.”

They were simple words. But it also meant that she wasn’t joking and was earnest. Because of that Tae Ho forced a smile and said.

“You said that we didn’t die well.”

“Even so.”

Heda smiled awkwardly and then fixed her expression. She stood in front of the violet door along with Tae Ho.

“Will you also be going?”

“I’m going to a different battlefield than yours. The order came down like this.”

Heda took out the necklace she had hidden by her clothes. The violet jewel that was hanging at the tip was shining dimly.

“Heda, don’t die.”

“Care for yourself. Don’t get hurt.”

She said it sharply but her face was smiling happily.

The two of them looked at the front again. The two of them started to walk towards the violet door at the same time.

Episode 3/Chapter 1: The dragon knight (1)

Tae Ho took in a deep breath after passing through the door. He did that because of the countless warriors that were filling up the wide place. Even when counting roughly they seemed to be over the thousands.

Even though he and Heda got in through the same place, it seemed like they came out in different places.

‘What do I do now?’

He couldn’t see anyone that could guide him.

After looking for a while he realized that they seemed to be gathering with their own legions. It was easy to distinguish them because the symbol of each legion was engraved on their warriors and shields.

‘And I’m the only one for Idun.’

Did he just have to be standing here?

Tae Ho realized why Bjorn and Heda cheered him up. Wouldn’t he have to be alone every time he came to this place?

‘Um, so I’m the solitary wolf?’

Tae Ho looked at his surroundings.

“Oh, young man! We meet again.”

“Bjorn!”

A pleasing voice was heard at his back. Tae Ho unconsciously elevated his voice and welcomed Bjorn.

“Kuku. It seems like it was awkward to be alone. So, how is your Legion?”

Bjorn smirked and asked with expecting eyes. Tae Ho shrugged and answered.

“It wasn’t that bad.”

He wasn't lying. Just like Heda said, as he didn't have anyone above or below him, it was a bit comfortable.

"Oh? Really? It seems like it is because the Valkyrie in charge of you is quite the beauty. Well, all the Valkyries are pretty. And their bodies are also stunning."

As Bjorn laughed and spoke with a loud voice, the warriors at their surroundings showed some interest.

"What, which legion does he belong to?"

"Whichever it is, the Valkyrie of our legion is the prettiest."

"Nonsense. I'm sure that our Valkyrie is the prettiest. She even said that she would be expecting from me in this battle."

"How funny. She was saying that to me. Why don't you clear your ears?"

Everyone said one or two words and soon, the warriors started to glare at each other.

"Come at me!"

"Ohh, it's a fight!"

"I'm betting on the blonde one!"

And a fight really did start. The other warriors cheered and spectated.

"Hoho, what a warm sight."

Bjorn nodded while crossing his arms. It seemed like he really did think that it was a warm scene.

'Um, the Ragnarok is happening right now, right?'

The great war that had the fates of the planets on the line.

But thinking about it, this place was like this since yesterday. As Tae Ho started to watch the fight with a rather resigned face, Bjorn said.

“Well, I’m glad that it isn’t too bad. But should I say that it’s a cultural thing each legion has? You know, there are many things like that. We don’t have much information as to what place Idun’s legion is as they have really few warriors.”

Looking at his face, it seemed like he was asking what place it was. But Tae Ho also didn’t have any particular words to say. Because a culture existed when many people gathered. As Tae Ho was the only one, the standards of culture didn’t exist.

“It’s normal. What about you?”

Although there may be a big difference in what Tae Ho and Bjorn called normal, Bjorn smiled after listening to that and replied.

“Tir is the God of courage. Thanks to that, our legion is really hot. But the warriors aren’t the only ones, the Valkyries are also the same.”

‘So can I think of it as being a hot-blooded legion?’

Tae Ho remembered the athletic clubs he saw on mangas and movies. So thinking about the atmosphere of the Valhalla he saw for two days, it was comparatively common.

“Is Idun’s legion’s blessing related to life?”

“Yes, they say that it’s harder to die.”

Tae Ho could only reply like this for now as he hadn’t experienced it directly. But Bjorn’s eyes shone with just this and then he nodded.

“Oh, that’s a really cool blessing.”

Because it would be hard to find a better blessing than one that makes you hard to die.

It seemed like Bjorn’s amazement was sincere, so Tae Ho felt a little bit better. Because whatever the case, he had already received the blessing.

“What about Tir’s legion?”

“They gift the warrior’s courage which doesn’t know fear and a strong mental strength.”

“Oh.”

It was a blessing suitable of the God of courage. Tae Ho looked at the warriors that were still fighting and asked.

“Bjorn, can you tell me about the other legions?”

“You really are curious.”

Bjorn laughed and then looked at the warriors like Tae Ho did.

“Odin’s legion is proficient at using rune magic and are also immune to several kinds of magic. Thor’s legion receives a strong blessing of thunder, and for Heimdal’s legion they can see and hear from a really long distance.”

They all had their own strong points, but the thunder of Thor he saw yesterday had a really strong impression. A blessing of thunder. Do their bodies get covered in thunder?

Tae Ho waited for Bjorn to keep explaining with really curious eyes. But Bjorn smiled and then shook his head.

“It will get really long if I explain one by one, so get to know it little by little. You will get to know it if you stand on the same battlefield even if you don’t want to.”

Those weren’t wrong words. Tae Ho also didn’t need this information immediately so he decided to ask other things.

“Bjorn, so will we be fighting together like yesterday?”

Although they were gathered by legions, it didn’t mean that it had an order.

Was doing a dogfight like yesterday a common thing here?

But fortunately, Bjorn shook his head.

“No, originally they go to the battlefield by legions. That way it’s easier to distinguish the merits of each legion, and they will also be

able to unite better that way. But aren't their legions that have few members like yours? That's because they can't just fight by legions."

"It seems like the legions with few members make an alliance."

"That's right. You really are fast to catch on."

Bjorn laughed as if he liked him and then kept explaining.

"Compared to yesterday, we will have a commander today. Normally, an inferior ranked warrior or a lowest ranked warrior with a lot of experience gets to become the commander."

It seemed like the fight from yesterday was special.

'Well, it's not that they have been at war for a few days.'

If they had fought without a commander, the Ragnarok would have ended a long while ago with Asgard's defeat.

"Warriors! Gather!"

It was then. A familiar yell filled the entire hall. It was certainly Reginleif's voice.

"Our Valkyrie has come. Let's meet on the battlefield."

Bjorn patted Tae Ho's shoulders and disappeared with quick steps. Looking at how he spoke, it seemed like Reginleif belongs to Tir's legion.

'But where do I have to go?'

The warriors that were cheering and watching all started to move as they were told to gather.

Tae Ho looked at his surroundings and saw that there were flags with symbols engraved on the walls. It seemed like they were gathering in front of those flags.

'Idun is over there.'

He saw Idun's symbol, a golden apple. The other legions had several flags lined up, but as Idun's legion had only one, it was

more showy.

After passing by the warriors that went en masse, he could see the warriors lined up below their respective flags. It was amazing to see that the warriors that act as if they didn't have an order respected their order this well.

As Tae Ho stood in front of Idun's flag all alone, the gazes of the warriors all gathered in him. They had marvelous faces.

‘Wasn't it more marvelous yesterday?’

Because he was wearing proper armor today, but yesterday he was wearing the uniform of his pro gaming team.

‘Anyways, I really am a solitary wolf.’

Tae Ho just looked at the front after he straightened his expression. If he started to mind those gazes, only he would be the one to feel more complicated. He was practicing the wisdom he obtained in his long pro-gamer life when he felt that the gazes of the warriors started to turn to another place. As he reflexively turned his head, he could see a strong and big warrior getting in front of him.

“I'm Ragnal of Heimdal's legion. I will be leading you guys in this battle.”

He was wearing his helmet firmly and had a round shield at his back.

When you added Tae Ho with the surrounding warriors, the number would roughly amount to a hundred. And as the warriors in other legions were also similarly gathered, it seemed like there were only tens of commanders that were like Ragnal.

Ragnal looked at everyone with serious eyes and explained in a low voice.

“The objective of this battle is to recover the territory we lost at the gnolls. So we will be an attacking squad.”

He didn't really explain what a gnoll was, but it seemed like the other warriors knew what it was.

‘Is it the gnoll I know?’

A dog-headed monster that appeared often in games. Now that he saw, the things he fought yesterday also were dog-headed.

“The front line has already started attacking. We will descend in the middle of the battlefield.”

It was a similar situation to yesterday. Ragnal looked at the warriors again and said.

“I will always be at the front. Just follow me.”

His smiling face at the end seemed really reliable.

“Prepare to charge!”

“Prepare to charge!”

The sound of the horn trumpets was heard with the voices of the Valkyries. A huge violet door appeared behind Ragnal.

Ragnal raised his axe and yelled.

“Let's go warriors of Valhalla. For Asgard and the nine planets!”

“For Asgard!”

The warriors cheered. Maybe it was because of the atmosphere, but Tae Ho also raised his sword and yelled.

“Warriors! Follow me!”

“Uoo!”

“Let's go!”

The warriors charged towards the violet door with Ragnal at the front. Tae Ho also ran towards the door while holding his sword tightly. He remembered Heda's words, that told him not to die.

‘Let's live!’

He didn't think of dying. He had already died once, but he was

living and breathing in this moment.

He passed through the door. The cold air penetrated his lungs. He could see the white plains and black smoke, and the blood splattered everywhere and heaps of ashes.

“Allies have come!”

“Push them!”

It was the same dogfight as yesterday. Tae Ho made a firm resolution and then placed his eyes on the front. It was to find Ragnal, that said to just trust in him and follow him.

“Let’s go! Follow me!”

Ragnal yelled at the front. He really seemed reliable. He was always at the front, as to keep what he had said. He felt excited just looking at his back.

But it was also only for a moment.

“Kuooo!”

A roar that seemed to shake the whole battlefield was heard and then the earth rang. A huge and white dog-headed monster was charging from the front. Even at first glance, it seemed to be 5 or 6 times bigger.

It was really fast. And its sword was even faster.

Ragnal disappeared from his sight. He couldn’t know if his body became torn to pieces or if he was sent flying. The important thing was that the commander disappeared and that the monster had reached in front of the warriors and was swinging his sword.

‘The boss appeared right off the bat!’

And Ragnal is really weak!

He didn’t even have time to complain. Tae Ho perceived intuitively the moment the warriors close to Ragnal became mincemeat.

He made eye contact with the monster.

And it threw its body towards Tae Ho.

Episode 3/Chapter 2: The dragon knight (2)

It was impossible to stop it.

He realized that as soon as he saw it. That everything would end the moment he allowed even one hit to get him.

Tae Ho invested all of his runes in agility. Meanwhile, the monster kicked the ground once more and after Tae Ho blinked once, it was already in front of him.

Bang!

The sword that fell from above was like a thunderbolt. But Tae Ho didn't even know how he dodged it. He rolled on the ground and after distancing himself, he raised his head to look at it.

He could feel its gaze. After he saw it up close, he got to know that it was bigger than his imagination. Even though it was lowering its posture, it seemed like its head reached 5mts.

He felt numb. It seemed like its gaze was piercing him. The teeth he could see from its open mouth was terrifying.

However, Tae Ho didn't cower down and faced him. He breathed roughly. Although it was a single breath, his body stopped trembling. And rather, strength returned to his legs.

[Saga: Immortal warrior]

And at that moment, the two of them moved. The sword he swung at a low height passed in front of Tae Ho's eyes. Tae Ho charged forward instead of falling back and then swung his sword to slice its thigh.

It was shallow.

Its skin was tougher than he thought and his muscles were hard. Tae Ho wanted to step back when it moved again. The low swing of the sword passed in front of Tae Ho again.

Tae Ho dodged it once more by pulling back. And as soon as his

feet reached the ground, he rolled sideways. Thunder fell once again in the place Tae Ho was at.

Bang!

He dodged its attack three times by now. He could feel the gazes of the warriors near him. And he could also feel the rage of the monster.

‘Stay calm. Concentrate.’

He would counterattack after dodging. Attack the leg and break his stance.

It was like a game. The method was similar to when he caught a boss monster.

He had only one life. And his opponent had plenty of hp. And its attack was really tremendous.

But he still had to do it.

“Kuoooo!”

The monster cried. And at the same time, the gnolls near it came charging while crying. The warriors that lost their commanders acted on their own. A part of them charged towards the gnolls and another part charged towards it, the giant gnoll.

“Aim for its leg!”

One of the warriors yelled. And at the same time, three of the warriors that charged aimed for the leg of the giant gnoll. However, the monster didn’t stay still. He jumped to the air and dodged the attacks.

“Kuo!”

It cried and swung his sword widely after landing. The warriors retreated hurriedly, but one of the three got hit in his shoulder and his neck was also sent flying.

The smell of blood spread. The two warriors that dodged the

attack, raised their weapons again to attack the leg of the gnoll once again.

And Tae Ho thought. That the legs were no good.

Tae Ho was thinking about attacking his leg to lower its posture and then attack his vitals like his eyes or neck, but he became certain with the recent clash. That this strategy was now pointless, now that it was already guarding his legs.

Then how?

The giant gnoll jumped towards Tae Ho suddenly and swung his sword. It wasn't only the gnoll, but his sword also looked like a dump truck.

Tae Ho also barely dodged its attack this time. After the sword passed right above his head, Tae Ho's eyes chased the head of the giant gnoll.

It was still high. It was a height he wouldn't reach by jumping. But hitting its legs was pointless.

Tae Ho rolled on the ground. The monster turned quickly. And right then, Tae Ho charged forward again.

Heda had said.

That the saga is a reproduction of the original. But the ones that can use it properly are few.

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is just like a storm]

His body became fast.

But it was still lacking. When he was playing the game that was meant for picking the members of the national team, Kalsted's charge was really like a storm and it swept the battlefield. There was no one that could stop Kalsted, that was riding the skies and pouring thunder.

Reproducing that was still impossible. But it was fine even if it was just a single step.

If he could step on the sky.

If he could kick on the air!

He jumped. And then, jumped even higher by kicking on the air.

The monster turned completely. But he couldn't see Tae Ho. Because Tae Ho was higher than its head.

“Uoooo!”

Tae Ho yelled while falling over its head. The monster raised its head reflexively and Tae Ho's sword aimed for its eye.

“Kuooo!”

The tip of the sword pierced its eye. Bright blood splattered, and the monster cried loudly.

Tae Ho, that was holding on his stuck sword, got grabbed by the gnoll and got thrown to the ground. The moment he fell on his back he felt pain and shock that seemed to break his body, but maybe it was because of Idun's blessing that he didn't lose consciousness.

“Pant. Pant.”

Tae Ho raised his body with difficulty. He could see the gnoll that was in pain.

The senses of the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho said. The legendary dragon knight Kalsted ascertained him. That this was the time to kill it.

Tae Ho gritted his teeth and endured the pain. He kicked the ground once again and ran towards it. He didn't have a weapon right now, but it didn't matter.

Another thing Heda had told him.

The saga isn't simply meant for strengthening your body.

It could do things beyond that.

[Saga: The sword of the warrior]

Tae Ho gripped the air. The start of 'Dark Age'. He could start to feel the sword he used to kill the first named boss monster, the orc warrior Graksha, on the Korean server.

“Uooooo!”

Tae Ho kicked the ground once more. And then, he jumped high and cut off the neck of the monster that was grabbing his head in pain.

The neck split and blood flowed like a fountain. Tae Ho couldn't land properly and rolled on the ground, and then used his sword as a cane and rose. And at the same time, just like a coincidence, the huge body of the gnoll fell down with a loud noise.

The surrounding warriors gulped air. Even the warriors that were still in the middle of fighting were looking at Tae Ho. And then, all of them started to yell loudly.

“Woohoo!”

“Idun's warrior!”

“The monster has died!”

The gnolls lost morale. And the warriors yelled more loudly. Tae could feel his heartbeat. He raised his sword unconsciously and roared. And then, red smoke started to get out of the corpse of the giant gnoll's corpse and got absorbed by Tae Ho.

He had more than ten lowest runes and two inferior runes. Energy overflowed from his body.

Tae Ho breathed in and then looked at the sword in his hand. It was the sword Kalsted used when he was low leveled. Although it was merely low ranked as it only had the basic rune magic engraved in it, it was one of the few strong weapons when it came out on the server.

The third saga, the sword of the warrior.

He was certain that it was could recreate the weapons Kalsted

used.

Tae Ho then thought of the strongest sword in the global server and at the same time the personal sword of Kalsted, the 'dragon sword Astellone' but it was impossible as of now. It was impossible to recreate Astellone with Tae Ho's current level.

'But one day.'

Tae Ho clenched his fists tightly and raised his head. The warriors that had cleared the gnolls at his surroundings were looking at him. And one of them said.

"The enemies are still coming. We have to keep attacking."

The warrior with the horned helmet pointed at the direction the gnolls were coming at with his axe. The gnolls were charging from beyond the white plains. And the attack objective was sure to be over there too.

The warrior looked at Tae Ho again. Some shrugged their shoulders and some made gestures with their chins as if urging him.

Tae Ho could guess why they were acting like that. And that's why he clenched his weapon once again.

Because there had to be a someone leading a group. And Tae Ho also didn't like to break the momentum.

"Warriors! Charge!"

Tae Ho's cry spread in the air. His ears started to get red at the embarrassment but there was no one that cared about that small change. The warriors yelled loudly and charged towards the gnolls. Tae Ho was next to them.

Tae Ho's eyes looked at the enemy. Every time he took a step, he became stronger. It wasn't because he invested his runes.

[Synchro rate: 5%]

Tae Ho's sword transformed and became sharper.

Episode 3/Chapter 3: The dragon knight (3)

The Valkyrie Rasgrid was glaring at the sky.

Although it may only seem like it was filled with dark clouds, it was different for Rasgrid's red eyes. There were several vessels that represented the warriors and monsters over a map that was made with light.

The warriors deployed in this battle amounted to 2.000. It was estimated that the number of the dog-headed monsters was 1.500. So more than 3.000 troops were fighting in a single battlefield.

Although it wasn't a small number, Rasgrid couldn't feel that much interest. It was because this battle was a really small one among the ones Asgard was facing.

The number of the warriors in Valhalla numbered to hundreds of thousands. The force of 2.000 that was mostly composed of lowest ranked warriors wasn't a force that could be sent to a proper battlefield.

Of course, even if that was the case, it wasn't that this battle itself was meaningless. It was just that she wasn't interested that greatly.

"We are winning."

Rasgrid closed her eyes once and the color of her eyes returned back to be blue when she heard a voice behind her. And as expected, a big crow was sitting on a branch.

The name of the crow, that had violet feathers that were close to black, was Hugin.

Hugin twisted its beak and then said with a different voice.

[Rasgrid, how is the frontline?]

It wasn't the voice of Hugin, that was more similar to that of a kid, but that of a thick and upright man. Rasgrid kneeled and

showed courtesy. Her short black hair that reached her shoulders blew gently.

“Valkyrie Rasgrid greets Odin.”

[It’s Hugin that is here, not me.]

Rasgrid was still bowing down when she started to report instead of accepting his joke.

“The attack is smooth and the damages are minimal. This land will return to Asgard’s protection before the sun sets.”

Odin, the lord of Valhalla and the king of Gods, had two crows that acted as his eyes and ears.

The crows that were called as Hugin and Munin roamed parts of the world and not only gathered several secrets, stories, and information but also sent word to Odin.

[It’s a fairly easy victory.]

“It’s a small battle.”

As Rasgrid said in a low voice as if it wasn’t something worthy to get excited about, Odin burst out of laughter.

[Even so, there’s still victory and defeat. Right, was there someone that caught your attention?]

The warriors that participated in this battle were mostly the newcomers. At Odin’s question, Rasgrid couldn’t answer immediately and started to ponder.

[What’s wrong? Was there no one?]

There wasn’t even a trace of disappointment in Odin’s question. They were the lowest ranked warriors anyways, and Rasgrid had really high standards from a long time ago. It was hard to get her attention.

As Hugin tilted its head and asked, Rasgrid shook her head and said.

“There was only one.”

[I want to know who he is. Which legion does he belong to?]

As it was an evaluation from none other than Rasgrid, Odin couldn't help but be interested. Rasgrid said carefully.

“He...”

&

“We won! It's our victory!”

“Uooo!”

“Glory to Odin!”

As the horn trumpet started to make noise, all of the warriors raised their weapons and cheered.

Tae Ho, that had already experienced the same thing in the first day, put on a smile with difficulty.

“Whew... Ha.....”

They had won. He had survived this time too.

All of his body hurt and his exhaustion was amazing, but it was still better than the first day.

As Tae Ho was breathing in, some warriors nearby approached him and said.

“It was a cool battle.”

“Treat us well in the battles that are to come.”

“That's a nice sword.”

Tae Ho, that just nodded to answer them, turned to look at his sword. He had slain about 10 monsters with it, but it didn't even have a trace of blood in it.

‘I should be able to do it, right?’

Tae Ho asked himself and then shook his hand lightly. And then, the sword started to become light and disappeared.

‘Again.’

As he thought of the saga: warrior’s sword, he could start feeling the sword in his hands again.

Tae Ho put a satisfied smile while looking at the manifested sword and then sat on a nearby rock.

‘Let’s calculate.’

[Saga: Immortal warrior] [Synchro rate: 5%]

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is just like a storm]

[Saga: Sword of a warrior

[–]

[Lowest ranked runes: 27]

[Inferior ranked rune: 2]

‘The synchro rate increased. And there’s one more slot for the saga.’

The number of runes he earned wasn’t small either.

‘Aren’t I going to become strong in an instant like this?’

As he had invested some runes and the synchro rate had also increased, he felt like he had gotten much stronger. A bigger satisfaction than when he leveled up in games filled him up.

“Young man, why are you smiling like that? Are you perhaps thinking of a Valkyrie?”

“Bjorn!”

As he turned his head when he heard the voice that was playful, he saw Bjorn as he expected. He approached Tae Ho and smiled brightly.

“You survived this time too.”

“You too.”

“That’s obvious to me.”

Bjorn laughed and patted on Tae Ho's shoulders.

"I heard this while coming here. They say that performed excellently?"

"Well, a bit."

Because he had slain a giant gnoll alone and led the warriors.

As Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders as if it was embarrassing, Bjorn looked at the sword Tae Ho had in his hands.

"Young man, it seems like you got better at handling your saga."

"It is thanks to you."

Actually, he wanted to thank Heda even more. Because even if it was a few bits of advice, it was thanks to her that he was able to manifest the warrior's sword.

Tae Ho waved lightly and made his sword disappear, and Bjorn's eyes opened widely as if it was marvelous and said.

"Now that I had seen your face, I will be returning now."

"Ah, it seems like you also returning back to your legion?"

Because Bjorn and Tae Ho also came separately.

But Bjorn tilted his head as if he had heard something wrong.

"Huh? What are you saying? You still haven't heard?"

"Sorry?"

"We will be staying here for a while. Our final objective is to recover the fortress we lost. You could say that today's battle was the opening."

Bjorn pointed far beyond the plains. However, Tae Ho's interest was put in another thing.

"We are sleeping here?"

In these plains that could be called ruins?

"Captain!"

Right then, a loud voice was heard. It was certainly calling for them.

Tae Ho reflexively turned to look at Bjorn, but he shook his head.

“I’m not a captain.”

Then, the only one that remained was Tae Ho. Tae Ho pointed at himself with an awkward face and asked.

“Me?”

“The Valkyrie’s looking for you captain! Hurry, come with me!”

The warrior that called him warrior made a big hand gesture and said. Although he did lead a troop temporarily, Tae Ho still didn’t know the faces of the warriors. And the warrior that yelled just now was also a new face for him.

“So you really succeeded.”

Bjorn laughed and patted Tae Ho’s shoulders, and then turned back and left. Tae Ho also followed the warrior that was urging him and left.

On the place he had arrived, the warriors were setting up the tents and lit up the campfires. The reason the Valkyrie sought him was simple.

“I heard that the commander of your troop died and so you temporarily led them. Are you still planning on being the commander? Or I will put you in another troop.”

“I will join another troop.”

Tae Ho answered immediately. He didn’t want to lead 100 warriors whom he didn’t even know the faces of when it was still hard to take care of himself.

‘I succeeded for a little while.’

Was it 2 hours?

As Tae Ho said with a fresh expression, the flabbergasted

Valkyrie just blinked her eyes.

“Uh.. really? Becoming a commander is a glorious thing.”

“I’m still lacking.”

“Mm, if that’s what you wish, I can’t force it upon you.”

The Valkyrie nodded with a regretful face and then pointed at the warriors that were preparing the camp.

“I entrust you the task of preparing the camp until you join another troop. You will be able to join a new commander tonight, or at most tomorrow morning.”

“I understand.”

“Then, I will see you later.”

The Valkyrie hit her left chest with her right hand twice and turned back. He didn’t know well, but it seemed like it was an etiquette.

‘But even if I have to command them on preparing the camp....Is there anything particular I should do?’

Having come to Valhalla meant that you were already a veteran warrior. Although no one was particularly commanding, they were proceeding on the preparations by themselves really well.

‘Let’s just see.’

It seemed like that would be better than sloppily step in.

Tae Ho put on an expression that rather suited a commander and started to look at his surroundings. Now that it became like this, he was planning to memorize the faces of the warriors he would be fighting with.

But it was then.

“Warrior Lee Tae Ho!”

“Yes!”

A loud voice called Tae Ho. As he turned back reflexively, he saw the Valkyrie from before standing.

Did he already get appointed to another troop?

But what came out from the mouth of the Valkyrie was completely different.

“Warrior Lee Tae Ho, you are exempted.”

“Sorry?”

Tae Ho asked back unconsciously. He could only do so.

To get exempted so suddenly.

There was someone finding him?

‘Uh, don’t tell me.’

Tae Ho approached the Valkyrie with a doubting face. And then, a red-haired Valkyrie extended her face from behind the other Valkyrie, just as if she was hiding, and smiled brightly.

“Hi.”

Valkyrie Heda.

It was her.

&

‘Ah, so this is what it feels like.’

Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders while getting out of the camp. What was this situation? It was similar to when your girlfriend came looking for you in the army. The warriors all looked at Tae Ho with jealousy and envy, and Tae Ho just walked next to Heda as if nothing had happened.

‘Did I do something more amazing than what I thought?’

Because Tae Ho was the only one that got exempted directly from a Valkyrie. He could already get a feeling when looking at the eyes of the warriors that looked like they were going to eat him.

“Huhu.”

“Why?”

As Tae Ho smirked and laughed, Heda tilted her head and asked. Tae Ho shook his two hands as if it was nothing.

“No, it’s nothing. But first of that, what’s going on?”

“I came because I was worried about you. You are the only warrior I’m in charge, right?”

After listening to her, it seemed like the Valkyries of other legions had too many warriors they were in charge of that they just didn’t request an exemption like this.

‘It really is a good point that we are few on people.’

Tae Ho nodded after looking at Heda from head to toe.

“Are you okay?”

Because Tae Ho wasn’t the only one that got out to battle today. Although he didn’t know much, it was obvious that Heda went out to an even bigger battlefield.

At Tae Ho’s question, Heda smiled and shrugged her shoulders.

“I’m fine. But I heard that you made quite the performance? You even got to command even if it was for a moment.”

“That somehow happened.”

He was being modest, but it really did happen somehow. Heda smiled after listening to Tae Ho’s.

“Fortune came looking for our legion.”

Because a performance of a warrior resulted in elevating the name of the legion.

After speaking of this and that, they had already reached the exemption place. In the first place, as exemptions were rare, the only ones at this place were Tae Ho and Heda.

“It doesn’t feel that right to leave like this, so let’s finish what we were doing in the morning.”

“What we were doing in the morning?”

“We were in the middle of classes. Don’t we have to investigate how to develop your saga, and to know what it is in the first place?”

They were appropriate words. The reason he was able to beat the giant gnoll today was that he had developed his saga.

“So first, show me your saga.”

Heda sat on a boulder and said. Tae Ho sat at the opposite side of Heda and scratched his cheek as if it was hard.

“Uh....But how do I show you my saga?”

Did he just have to read it?

It was nothing to read the title, but a saga was a story. There were outlines below the saga, but it was also written how it became known.

Heda took out one feather made of steel from her waist as if she knew he was going to ask, and gave it to Tae Ho.

“Grab this and think what you want to show me. I won’t be able to see as much as you, but I will be able to see the general outline.”

The texture of the steel feather was cool rather than cold. Tae Ho gripped the feather with one hand and frowned.

“I will start.”

“Okay.”

Tae Ho first thought about showing her the ‘immortal warrior’. And about 5 minutes later.

Heda blinked with a dumbfounded face and asked Tae Ho.

“You, what did you do before kid....no, person.....no, sir?”

Episode 3/Chapter 4: The dragon knight (4)

Defeated the grand orc warrior Graksha.

Defeated the Ogre Lord Gandoll.

Defeated the three troll brothers, the triple blue flame.

Conquered the Giant Hill.

Rescued the princess of Emelord.

Defeated the black dragon Ankelonia.

Fell down the fortress of Magino.

Suppressed the demon world.

Defeated the army of a dragon.

Etc.

The achievements that were arranged simply seemed to have no end.

He defeated strong monsters alone and rescued the kidnapped princess. He defeated an army by himself, even defeated the demon lord, and rescued the world.

That was the dragon knight Kalsted.

Of course, that was all in a game though.

However, this saga was a ‘truth’ for Heda.

A saga could certainly become distorted, but manipulating it from start to end was impossible.

So even if these stories were distorted, the man in front of her, Tae Ho, was a legendary existence that could really be called as the hero.

“No, well..... um..”

Tae Ho scratched his head and faced Heda. He felt burdened by Heda’s eyes, which were filled with embarrassment, respect,

perplexion, and etc, but at the same time, he enjoyed it.

As he just stuttered, Heda put on a teary face. She started to twist her body before lowering her head slightly and said, “I’m sorry for having been insolent until now. I was a..... No, no. Anyways.”

She had seen the achievements of the legendary knight.

Heda had seen quite a lot of warriors until now but had never seen someone with achievements as amazing as his. If Tae Ho was a human from Midgard, all of Asgard would have paid attention to his entrance.

However, that kind of warrior was asking about the basics of fighting!

“Hm, well. Mm.”

Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders as if behaving imprudently. As he turned to look down at Heda silently, Heda’s face, which was red due to embarrassment, flinched again.

“Ah, I can’t stand it anymore.”

Maybe it was because of the gap there was from her usual self and now that she seemed cuter, but everything still had its limit.

If these kinds of misunderstandings carried on, it would be harder to clear them up later. It might be different if you wanted to trick her, but if you wanted to state the facts just as they were, it would be better to clear it up.

“Heda, doesn’t something strike you as strange? The truth that I’m the legendary knight?”

“Eh?”

Heda blinked while looking at Tae Ho as if he were implying something. Tae Ho smirked once again and then whispered in Heda’s ear.

“I’m telling you just because it’s you.”

Heda flinched once more at the unnecessary close distance and Tae Ho began to tell his story.

“So.....it was a game?”

“Yes, Dark Age was the biggest MMORPG game in the world. All of the achievements you saw were quests accomplished by my character, Kalsted.”

Tae Ho didn't hide anything. The reason was simple: it would more helpful for him.

Heda was the teacher who had taught Tae Ho how to use his saga. He wouldn't be able to learn to use the saga properly with Heda if she misunderstood everything like this. Because the saga was no different to Tae Ho's lifeline, it was absurd to learn it sloppily.

‘Also.’

What would happen if they sent him to a huge scale battlefield with the misunderstanding that he was the legendary warrior? In addition, the synchro rate was at a mere at 5%. Right now, being in the lowest ranked class was the most suitable for him.

Of course, Tae Ho had also done some calculations on his part. He could trust Heda. Although it was barely more than a day since they had met, he was certain about trusting her. You could say that it was his senses that told him that.

‘Of course, I may be backstabbed like this.’

Would Heda properly understand what Tae Ho had said?

Tae Ho waited for Heda's reaction while hiding his anxiousness.

Heda frowned and groaned as if she was thinking hard and then laughed sloppily.

“Mm, I don't know, but that does seem true. If it's like you said, the achievements you have accomplished were quite famous in your world. Anyway, all of that did actually happen.”

Heda's explanation was like this.

Although she didn't know about games too well, the battles themselves did occur.

Although they were existences created by a program composed of zeros and ones, Kalsted and the monsters did exist. Their battles weren't just setups either, they were real.

Kalsted was famous. The dragon knight Kalsted, Tae Ho's character, had a really high recognition, be it in the game or the real world. To speak in Valhalla's terms, countless people knew of Kalsted's achievements and legends.

Tae Ho was also convinced. If it was as she said, everything made sense.

"Heda, you seem relieved."

"Shut up."

Heda pouted but her eyes were smiling. After that, she actually smiled brightly and then shrugged her shoulders.

"Well, whatever. This is a really amazing case. I have never heard of a case like this while working as a Valkyrie."

It wasn't simply about the thing that was related to the game.

Was there a warrior that had a saga as great as this? One that achieved all of this all alone?

"If you can materialize all of the stories in your saga....."

Heda unconsciously gulped dry saliva. It was also the same for Tae Ho. The two of them looked at each other as if they had made a promise, and the one that moved first was Heda.

"You really were a lump of luck!"

Heda hugged Tae Ho. A beauty hugging you was always a happy thing, but Tae Ho unconsciously made a painful groan. Because of the armor that Heda was wearing, instead of feeling the softness he was expecting, he only felt a hard and shapeless thing.

However, Heda didn't seem to know about Tae Ho's pain and embraced him with even more strength.

'I like it, but at the same time, I don't.'

It was a bit weird, but Heda's scent was really pleasant.

After Heda finished her short and thick embrace, she patted Tae Ho's shoulders and then put on a harsh face.

"Anyways, you should take care of your body. Don't overdo it. Heroes with amazing sagas can lose their lives with just one mistake on the battlefield."

The scariest thing about a battlefield was an arrow coming from a long distance; it was something that made your awareness useless.

"Don't worry about that. I was planning to even if you didn't tell me."

He answered with a playful tone, but Heda smiled as if she was satisfied.

"Tae Ho, are there more people like you in your world?"

If it were like this, it was highly probable that the pro gamers would have really amazing sagas, but Tae Ho shook his head.

"There are....but I don't think there are more like me."

"Why?"

"Well, because I was the best in the world."

He said that naturally. It was just as he had said so.

"Ugh, I don't like you."

Heda frowned, but it only lasted for a moment. Rather, she nodded as if she were convinced.

"I think that you are right. You seem special in various ways. How should I put it.... this are just my feelings, but I don't think another person from your world with the same kind of

achievements would be able to manifest a saga like yours.”

“Well.....probably.”

Most of Tae Ho’s achievements were ‘the first in the server’, or ‘the first in the world’, or ‘solo’. Compared to clearing a quest normally, people could only recognize them.

“Um, can you also show me your other sagas?”

“Of course.”

Tae Ho closed his eyes while Heda’s eyes shined with curiosity at the thought of his sagas.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior Is Just Like a Storm]

[Saga: The Sword of the Warrior]

After examining the two sagas, Heda let out a sigh.

“The two of them seem useful, especially the sword of the warrior. It seems like a cheat.”

The number of weapons recorded in the sword of the warrior wasn’t one or two. Most of all, each of them were magic weapons capable of growth. He would be able to summon those weapons with his saga. On top of that, the strong point of the sword of the warrior wasn’t simply just ‘summoning a weapon’.

‘A weapon I need for each situation.’

He would take out a weapon based on the opponent he faced. For the ones that were weak towards fire attacks, he would take out the heat sword, Ifrit. For opponents that were strong against weapons that had blades, he would take out the thunder hammer.

He didn’t need to carry the countless weapons he could use in each situation. If this wasn’t a cheat, then what was it?

“I will have to develop it well.”

Tae Ho dismissed the conception he had in his head and smirked.

Heda also smiled and continued talking.

“Hm, the higher your synchro rate becomes, the more sagas you’ll able to use? This is quite stable.”

“Heda, how many sagas can you normally use?”

“There’s no particular limit to sagas. High ranked and superior ranked warriors each possess more than 10 sagas. It will be easy to think of it as the stronger you become, the more sagas you will be able to use. If you don’t become strong in the first place, it’ll be hard to produce the anecdote that will become the root of your saga.”

It was a rather convincing explanation. To make a saga, you had to accomplish feats. Strong people would accomplish feats and make sagas, and use those sagas to become even stronger.

“There’s not much time left so let’s go to a resting place.”

Heda linked arms with Tae Ho and said this.

“You still have one empty slot in your saga. It’s good to make a saga that’s suitable for the battle you are in, but that won’t be too certain. A coarse one might appear because you made it hastily. Actually, making a saga in the middle of a battle is an abnormal thing.”

“So let’s make a thoroughly thought out saga?”

“That’s right.”

Heda smiled brightly and lifted up three fingers.

“Tae Ho, you already have three sagas. There’s a high probability that you won’t be able to make a new saga after making this one. So think well. A saga that protects you and is as useful as the other two should be good, right? And of course, it should be a saga that you are capable of making with your current level.”

All of the things she said were right. And because of that, Tae Ho asked questions like a diligent student.

“So what about teacher Heda’s answer sheet?”

Heda was more of an expert at sagas than Tae Ho.

However, Heda shook her head.

“That won’t do. The saga is your story. The best thing is for you to do is to think about it yourself. I will just listen to you.”

After she told him to think about it himself, Tae Ho nodded and looked up the sky.

If Tae Ho had to classify the sagas he possessed right now, it would be like this: One general buff.

One movement saga.

One saga that provided you with equipment.

‘Looking at it normally, I would want an attack skill.’

If he had an attack skill, he would then have an all-around saga.

However, Tae Ho thought of another thing.

What would be of immediate use to him on the battlefield? What could be of more help for an inexperienced warrior like him?

There was something he thought of as it flashed across his mind. Right as it connected, he thought of a saga that seemed to be the most suitable.

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon Sees Through All Things]

Tae Ho looked at Heda. He took a step back, looked at her, and then said with a flushed face, “I can see it.”

< Episode 3 – The dragon knight (4) > End

Episode 3/Chapter 5: The dragon knight (5)

“Oh, you came only now?”

It was about five minutes after he had finished his business with Heda.

Tae Ho stood in place. It was because a warrior whom he had never seen before was talking to him.

He was a handsome man whose nicely grown black beard suited him well.

The man, who was seated on a rock, stood up slowly and said, “Don’t be that defensive. We are on the same side. But first, did the Valkyrie go to another place?”

The eyes of the man moved beyond Tae Ho’s back. At the eyes that were filled with curiousness, Tae Ho questioned him with even more caution.

“Who are you?”

Maybe it was because his voice was slightly sharp that the man raised his two hands to calm him and quickly said, “My name is Rolph. I belong to Ullr’s legion, and I’m a warrior of Siri’s troop that will be joining Ragnal’s troop.

‘It’s true.’

Tae Ho was inwardly impressed. It wasn’t because of Rolph’s dignified appearance or the name of a God he had heard of for the first time.

[Wolf Hunter]

[Ullr’s legion: Rolph]

He could see green words shining above Rolph’s head. It was the result of activating [Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon Sees Through All Things].

‘Is the thing showing the nickname and his current state?’

He saw different things when he looked at Heda.

Tae Ho decided to reveal more his saga’s power. Then, many words were added in several places of Rolph’s body.

[Man]

[Skilled at using a bow and dagger]

After he concentrated a bit more, he could see a red aura that was like smoke. He thought that it was the runes he had accumulated until now.

‘I can certainly see more than when I tried with Heda.’

Back then he could only see her name and her state.

‘The logical reason is that my level is still low.... So is it obvious that I can see a lot more with Rolph than with Heda?’

The difference between a lowest ranked warrior and a Valkyrie was huge.

‘And is it his weakness?’

Light shone on Rolph’s shoulders, chin, heart, and abdomen.

The ‘Eye of a Dragon’ was a skill that all dragon knights had in Dark Age. It didn’t only show the state of the enemy and their weaknesses, but also served as a scanning tool. Its usefulness was quite important.

It was possible to make a skill into a saga.

It was a really important point. It seemed like he could only make skills that had an anecdote to it into a saga, but even if he limited it like this, there were still a lot of useful skills.

‘I’m done with the scanning mode.’

This ability was meant to check the condition of the enemy’s equipment in the first place, so it was impossible to see everything he wanted.

‘Even if that was possible, there’s no reason to use it right now.’

“Hey, can you listen to me? Have you been hurt anywhere?”

He got a hold of himself when Rolph called him and then he saw that he was looking at himself with an awkward face. Tae Ho nodded and answered.

“Ah, I’m fine. I’m Lee Tae Ho. And....Rolph, what happened?”

Rolph was waiting for Tae Ho at the entrance of the camp. It didn’t seem like he was doing this for nothing.

“I have been waiting for you because I have something to transmit. All of the warriors from Ragnal’s troop have moved to our camp. It’s not that they completely moved the camps but it’s because of things like transmitting the merit awards and such things.”

“Then I should also go there.”

“That’s right. Aren’t you hungry though? We don’t have any food right now....It seems like our side and yours too devoured everything.”

Rolph said this with a troubled face. It seemed like the warriors that had a huge appetite had gotten rid of everything.

He had fought all day and he also had to keep fighting tomorrow, so not eating a meal was a devastating thing. He wouldn’t be able to fight properly if he was hungry.

“I’m fine. I have this.”

Tae Ho raised the basket he had in his hands with a calm face. There were sandwiches made with several vegetables and prettily placed meat.

“Huk, did the Valkyrie?!”

Rolph asked with wide eyes and Tae Ho answered slyly as if this much was a common thing.

“Well, yeah.”

At Tae Ho’s answer, Rolph looked at Tae Ho with jealous and envious eyes mixed with admiration.

Actually, it was obvious, because realistically speaking it was like an idol singer had come to meet you and gave you a packed lunch.

‘Heda really is the strong point of Idun’s legion.’

Tae Ho, who was satisfied, nodded once again. Rolph, who was looking at the basket more than Tae Ho, let out a sigh and said, “I heard that the Valkyrie would come at sunset, so there’s still time. You should eat for now. After that, I will lead you.”

Rolph pointed at the sky with his eyes. It was nearly nightfall, but not yet.

“Thank you.”

“There’s no need to thank me.”

Rolph smirked and then extended his hand. It was a big and hard hand.

“We will be fighting together starting from tomorrow. Let’s get along well.”

“Same here.”

After shaking hands, Tae Ho chose a nearby rock and sat on it.

If they were going to move anyways, there was no need to enter the camp.

Tae Ho decided himself and then took out a sandwich from the basket. It was nice to see that it seemed like Heda’s cooking skills were quite good.

“Thanks for the meal.”

Tae Ho said a short sentence and then took a big bite. It really was a cool flavor.

‘Is the sauce special? It’s really delicious.’

He felt thankful towards Heda once again and took one more bite.

“Hey.”

He turned his head at Rolph’s sudden call. His handsome face was completely flushed.

“Can you give me a bite?”

Tae Ho glanced slightly upwards before answering. The green words above Rolph’s head had changed.

[Got anxious because he wanted to eat]

[Ullr’s legion: Rolph]

Tae Ho laughed inwardly and nodded.

&

“It’s over there.”

The camp for Siri’s troop wasn’t that far. Rolph laughed while pointing at the tents that were lined up and then Tae Ho nodded.

‘Is this the strength of a bribe?’

Even if he called it a bribe, it was merely half a sandwich. But the effects were great.

‘Should I ask Heda to make me more?’

Although it may be an excessive request, he thought maybe Heda would listen to him. How would you put it? She was going to play hard but would listen to you in the end?

“What are you thinking about?”

“No, nothing. There’s something I’m curious about.”

Tae Ho walked towards Siri’s troop and turned to look at Rolph. Rolph tilted his head as if asking what was wrong.

“Speak.”

“What’s the blessing of Ullr’s legion?”

Tae Ho's eyes moved to the broach that was on Rolph's chest. It had the shape of a bow and an arrow. It seemed like it was the symbol of Ullr's legion.

‘This much should be fine, right?’

They were on the same side, and looking at Bjorn's attitude, it seemed like the blessing of a legion wasn't particularly a secret.

Tae Ho knew very little about Valhalla. He didn't know about the areas each God was in charge of, and their names even less so.

‘I need information.’

Knowing was strength. Even if it was a trivial thing, everything would have their uses when gathered together.

In addition, it wasn't an exaggeration to say that information about the people he would be fighting with was essential.

Tae Ho forced a calm face and looked at Rolph. He tilted his head once but then smiled as if it wasn't much.

“You should also know this, but Ullr is the God of Hunting. His blessing is everything related to that. The warriors of our legion can choose a blessing between tracking and stealth. Of course, you are able to obtain the both of them later on however.”

Whenever a warrior's rank increased, the blessing they could receive was either increased or strengthened. Tae Ho thought of the words that were above Rolph's head, which was ‘Wolf Hunter’, and nodded.

‘Is hunting Rolph's specialty?’

After thinking that, he saw different weapons on Rolph's side compared to the other warriors. He had small daggers on his waist compared to the other warriors that had big swords or axes and he was carrying a big crossbow on his back.

“So what is your blessing?”

Rolph answered Tae Ho's question this time too.

“It’s stealth. I’m still lacking now, but I heard that when you become a superior-ranked warrior, you are able to disappear in front of other’s eyes.”

“Oh...Cloaking.”

If it was as he had said, it was a really an impressive blessing.

“What about now?”

“Uh....If I put all of my efforts in hiding, you won’t be able to find me that easily. Probably.”

His blessing was merely at the lowest rank.

“It’s still impressive.”

If the warriors of Ullr’s legion made an ambush, they would have the highest chances of succeeding.

Contrary to his expectations, Rolph found that Tae Ho was amazed. As if he became more spirited, Rolph added, “The blessing of tracking is tracking just like its name implies. All of the hunters learn to track, but if you get the blessing you become even more impressive. You are able to track someone even if there are no footprints.”

“Maybe.”

Tae Ho nodded and admired the blessing once again. Actually, there was no need to be that amazed, but this was also a conversation technique. Wasn’t Rolph happy right now?

After speaking of this and that with Rolph, they soon arrived at the camp. As one troop had about 100 warriors, when two troops were gathered in one camp, it seemed like the entire place was filled with warriors of Valhalla.

“It seems like this is the only hot place.”

“Yeah.”

After they smiled bitterly, the sound of a horn trumpet was heard

in the center of the camp.

“We entered right on time. It’s the signal to gather.”

It wasn’t only Rolph, but the other warriors also started to move.

‘Don’t they distinguish the troops?’

They had joined together anyways, so maybe that was the reason why it didn’t give him the feeling that they had separated the two troops.

‘Well, it’s good for me.’

It meant that he should just follow Rolph like this.

After following Rolph’s back, he could see a big place that was at the center of the camp. The warriors that came first were already in place in front of a wooden platform.

As he stood near the center, Rolph gestured above the platform with his eyes.

“Can you see that? That person is our commander, Siri.”

He could immediately recognize him as he was the only person above the platform. But Tae Ho’s eyes unconsciously widened.

‘A woman?’

[Human Hunter]

[Ullr’s legion: Siri]

It was the first time he had seen a woman in Valhalla besides the Valkyries.

‘But of course, it’s still only the second day for me.’

Siri had her long blonde hair tied up — her body was covered with a grey cloak and her eyes were closed. It was really a strong and cold impression.

‘She’s an inferior ranked warrior.’

She may have been the most veteran warrior among the ones

that went out to battle today.

“It’s the Valkyrie!”

“Ohh! Valkyrie!”

The warriors raised their voices. The reason why they raised their voices even when they could see a Valkyrie frequently was simple. It was because she came down from the sky.

The sunset was behind her and she was stepping down as if there were stairs. That scene really looked like a movie.

[Ice Princess]

[Odin’s legion: Rasgrid]

Tae Ho shut his mouth in an attempt to not burst out in laughter. Ice Princess. It did suit her, but he was curious as to who had given her that nickname. Did the warriors in her legion give her that nickname?

He didn’t have long to guess. It was because the Valkyrie had stepped on the platform and had started talking.

“I’m Valkyrie Rasgrid. I belong to Odin’s legion. I’m in charge of this battlefield.”

It was a low and calm voice, but the voice mystically spread across the entire field. It was as if she was whispering right next to you.

“You should already know but Ragnal’s troop has lost its commander and will be joining Siri’s troop. The commander of the two troops is the inferior ranked warrior, Siri.”

The warriors all concentrated on Rasgrid’s words. What she was saying was important, but it was also because of her voice. It made you want to keep listening to it as if there was magic behind it.

“Inferior ranked warrior Siri, I will entrust it to you.”

“I will follow your order.”

As Rasgrid turned to look at Siri, Siri hit her left chest with her right hand.

“I will believe in you.”

Rasgrid also hit her chest as if it was a manner, and then spread a piece of paper towards the warriors.

“I have seen your performances. So I will proceed with the merit awards for the ones that had the biggest merit. The ones I call should come to the front.”

Rasgrid’s eyes moved to the paper, and the warriors raised their ears while shutting their mouths. It was small, but nervousness flowed on in the area.

“Warrior Lee Tae Ho.”

“Yes?”

Tae Ho realized his mistake when the other warriors turned to look at him. As he approached the platform hurriedly, Rasgrid turned to look at the warriors and said, “He beat the giant gnoll that had killed the commander of his troop alone. He outstandingly fulfilled his revenge, and he’s a good example for a warrior of Valhalla. I will give you a pocket of gold coins and runes each as a reward and I will also give 10 points to your legion.”

“Oh. Glorious avenger.”

“He’s more amazing than he looks.”

The warriors admired him with low voices. In Tae Ho’s place, it wasn’t particularly a revenge, but he could somewhat understand this situation.

‘When the source of the saga becomes an anecdote.’

Rather than just having slain the giant gnoll, having taken revenge for his commander was more glorious and valiant of a story.

‘Well, is this how it works?’

Tae nodded and then received the two leather pockets. They were fist-sized, but they were heavier than he thought.

“He has a normal body, are his skills the real deal?”

Meanwhile, the warriors were still speaking among themselves. Then, someone broke the flow.

“There’s something more amazing than that. A Valkyrie came to exempt him.”

“What? Really?”

The voices of the warriors grew louder. The eyes looking at Tae Ho began to be filled with admiration.

“Ohh, he really was amazing.”

“He’s no joke.”

“I’m jealous, so jealous.”

They were really heated reactions. It wouldn’t be strange if a saga like ‘The Warrior That Had a Valkyrie Exempt Him’ was made.

However, Tae Ho could only make an awkward expression. It was because Rasgrid’s cold eyes were looking right at Tae Ho.

“That’s all. Everyone return to your places.”

Tae Ho hurriedly returned back. Then, the warrior next to him laughed and said, “Tell me your secrets later.”

‘The secret is to play roulette.’

Tae Ho answered inwardly and then looked at Rasgrid.

A few more warriors were awarded and after the merit awards were finished, Rasgrid took a deep breath and looked at the warriors.

“Starting from tomorrow, we will be doing a siege warfare to take back our fortress. We will be especially using the ‘Rain of Steel’ in this battle. Think of it as an honor as you have been chosen to ride in that rain.”

“Ohh!”

“Valhalla!”

“Rain of Steel!”

The warriors started to cheer. However, Tae Ho didn't know what that was. Just what was the Rain of Steel? In addition, why did she use the expression, 'ride'?

“What's the Rain of Steel?”

He grabbed the arm of the warrior right next to him that was cheering even more than others. He turned to look at Tae Ho and laughed loudly.

“I also don't know! But doesn't it sound amazing?!”

At that moment, Tae Ho was dumbfounded; but he then remembered that this place was Valhalla. This place was originally like this.

“Rolph, you don't know either?”

With a bit of hope he asked Rolph, but Rolph just smiled bitterly and raised his thumb towards Tae Ho.

“It's a killer.”

With what meaning was it a killer?

The next afternoon.

Tae Ho found out.

< Episode 3 – The dragon knight (5) > End

Episode 4/Chapter 1: Rain of Steel (1)

“Kill them!”

“Odin!”

“Thor!”

The sun was high and the wind was strong. The yells and the sound of weapons clashing from far away seemed to shake the entire field.

The number of warriors Rasgrid commanded was 2.000.

The group of warriors was composed of 19 troops, and 12 of them were attacking the front of the huge and black fortress. Although the number barely passed the thousands, each of them was the cream of the crop, and the siege weapons they were using also weren't normal. The sight of several siege towers made of steel charging at the same time was really overwhelming.

The 5 reserve troops were hiding at the rear for the attack that would follow that. One troop, that had the task of escorting Rasgrid's commanders, were observing the reserve troops at their back.

And the remaining one.

Siri's troop, that was composed by 200 warriors, was located even farther than Rasgrid's commanders beyond a small hill.

The commander Siri was glaring at the fortress while being on top of the hill alone. Her eyes were those of looking at her prey rather than the enemy.

It was time.

Siri took in a breath and then looked at the warriors that were lined up below the hill. She spoke with a low but clear voice.

“The siege battle has started. When the enemies are focused on defending the front, use that opportunity to attack their rear.

Securing the rune magic control room and opening the gates is our task.”

“Ou!”

“Hou!”

The warriors hailed with a loud voice. They had already heard about it yesterday night and this morning. All of the warriors in Siri’s troop had studied the insides of the fortress really thoroughly.

‘But how?’

Tae Ho looked at Siri with nervous eyes.

It was because the most important thing, the method to reach the rear, wasn’t revealed yet.

‘Are we using something like magic?’

The probabilities were high. Because they had used mystical magic like a magic ship and a portal when he had been deployed to the battlefield twice.

‘Right, that should be it!’

Tae Ho talked to himself and tried not to look at the things that were lined up next to the warriors. But it was hopeless.

“The rain of steel has been prepared! Warriors! Get on!”

“Waaaa!”

The warriors cheered with an even louder voice at the Valkyries yell.

Rain of steel.

As he turned his head, he could see an alcohol barrel that was stuck on a black and long steel pole that looked like a firing device.

There were 10 altogether.

The alcohol barrel, no, the structure that looked like an alcohol

barrel had its doors opened, and inside of it were chairs that had safety devices like the ones you would see at theme parks.

‘That shouldn’t be..’

Tae Ho talked to himself once again. But however he saw, that seemed to be far from being magic.

“Get on!”

“Waa!”

“I will get on first!”

“Odin!”

The warriors charged towards the metal structure. Most of them should be riding it for the first time, but they entered it without any fear.

Tae Ho got on almost by force like the first time he came to Valhalla, and after seating on an empty seat he closed his eyes.

“Oh Idun.’

He had only seen her once, but Tae Ho thought of the name of the really beautiful and mystical Idun he wouldn’t be able to forget and prayed.

And then, regardless of Tae Ho’s praying, the Valkyrie outside of the structure yelled again.

“The safety devices is coming down! Don’t move from your seats!”

“Ohh!”

At the safety device that came down automatically from over their heads and pressed their shoulders, the warriors got amazed. At this point, it should be obvious but still, Tae Ho didn’t lose the last thread of hope.

‘It shouldn’t be.’

“Ohh! It’s moving!”

“It’s tilting!”

“Everyone grit your teeth. You can get your tongues bit.”

Siri’s voice was heard from behind him. It seemed like she got on the same structure as him.

“Huhu, it’s a real killer.”

Rolph, that was next to him, smirked and said. And Tae Ho accepted the reality with a surrendering face.

“Rain of steel! Fire!”

When the Valkyrie outside of the structure yelled, the ten structures started to get fired from the steel posts. It was similar to a cannon.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

“Uaaaaaaa!”

“Ohhhhhhhh!”

Although there were no windows, he could know what was happening. The steel structures were soaring to the sky at an amazing speed.

Most of the warriors yelled and threw a tantrum, but they weren’t cries. Most of them were cheering like middle schoolers riding on a ride.

But the time to cheer was short.

At most a few seconds.

Following the principle Newton proved, the head of the structure changed directions. Obviously enough, it wasn’t towards the sky but to the ground.

“Remember me!”

“Valhalla! I’m going for you!”

‘We are already at Valhalla!’

The warriors yelled, and Tae Ho also yelled inwardly.

The steel structures that were fired like cannons drew a track of the howitzers and passed over the fortress. It really was a rain of steel.

“Uwa! Ullr!”

“Heimdal!”

“Hedaaaa!”

While each of them was yelling the names of their Gods, only Tae Ho yelled the name of a Valkyrie. And a few seconds later, the shock arrived.

Baaaaaaang! Bang! Bang!

Thundering sounds were heard continuously. But still, it seemed like magic was activated at the last moment that the warriors and Tae Ho only received a shock similar to being thrown to the ground strongly instead of dying.

“Uak!”

“Uk!”

“I bit my tongue!”

While the Warriors fell to a groggy state, the safety devices automatically got up. And the voice of Siri was heard again.

“Prepare for battle! The walls will open soon!”

Siri didn't lie. As soon as she had finished speaking, the walls of the steel structure started to crumble.

Fresh air entered the space. And at the same time, the smell of the dog-headed monsters pierced their noses.

They were certainly inside the fortress. The gnolls fell into a state of panic and a group started to run towards them.

“Let's go!”

“Let’s fight!”

“Glory to Ullr!”

The warriors raised their weapons and stood up. Rolph charged his crossbow instead of drawing a sword.

‘They have things like this, but why are they using swords and crossbows!’

They should rather use artillery!

Even if that was possible, it made no sense whatsoever. Their objective was to take back the fortress, not to destroy it.

Because of that, Tae Ho yelled inwardly again and then unsheathed the new sword he had received. Although it was a little, it was a waste to activate the warrior’s sword that consumed your concentration continuously.

The fight between the warriors and the gnolls started. Siri fired her crossbow to get rid of two gnolls in an instant and then they saw brown monsters running towards them from afar.

“They are giant bugs! First get rid of the one commanding them!”

The monsters that were giant bugs just like its name moved into groups of five and one commanders. Actually, as the commander acted as the head for the other five, it was possible to greatly reduce their battle power just by getting rid of them.

But the problem was that the commanders looked exactly the same as the normal ones. Because of that, not even Siri that had given the order expected for much. Because it was impossible for her, the most veteran warrior, to differentiate the commander at a glance.

But just only one.

There was only one person that could differentiate them.

“I can see it.”

[Saga: The eyes of a dragon sees through anything.]

Tae Ho's eyes moved over the heads of the giant bugs.

&

< Episode 4 – Rain of steel (1) > End

Episode 4/Chapter 2: Rain of Steel (2)

&

[Hard]

[Giant bug]

[Fast]

[Giant bug]

He could see words above the head of one bug. As bugs, that were more extraordinary than the normal ones that were mixed, it was obvious that they were the commanders.

‘So it really is red for the enemies!’

Maybe it was because it was made with the skill as the base that differentiated the colors like the foes and allies, similar to that of the Dark Age.

Anyways, the important thing was that Tae Ho could distinguish the commanders. Because of that, instead of charging towards the giant bugs that looked like a mix of an ant and a mantis, Tae Ho grabbed the Rolph’s arm next to him and said, “Rolph! I can distinguish the commanders!”

“I also can’t distinguish.....what?!”

Rolph was about to answer reflexively and then looked at Tae Ho surprisedly. Tae Ho faced Rolph’s eyes that were filled with many doubts and then yelled again.

“I can distinguish them! I have a saga!”

And fortunately, it seemed like it worked. The veteran warrior Rolph didn’t ask anymore and then loaded his crossbow and looked towards the giant bugs. Tae Ho also understood what Rolph meant. He pointed at one of the giant bugs that was running towards them instead of explaining.

“That one! The second one from the left!”

At that moment, Rolph took in a breath and pulled the trigger. The arrow flew with a sharp sound and then hit the head of the giant bug. But that wasn't the end of it.

Babang!

The arrow exploded and sent the giant bug's head flying.

“Wow!”

Tae Ho was in awe. Actually, rather than the arrow being special, it seemed like the explosion attack was a saga of Rolph's.

“I can't use it a lot! Next?!”

Rolph loaded the second arrow and looked towards the bugs. The movements of the giant bugs that were near the one that had just died became clearly dull.

“It was true!”

Even when he was urging him for the second target, it seemed like he had a bit of doubt.

But as it was something obvious, Tae Ho tried to point out the next one instead of complaining. But then...

“Point them out for me!”

It was Siri. She, who had thrown away her grey cape, had her entire body covered with weapons. She had a small, machine-like crossbows on her wrists, and there were things like daggers and shurikens on her waist, thighs, and hip.

Siri closed in on Tae Ho and then quickly turned away to raise a big crossbow. If you saw them from the sides, you would see that Siri was leaning her back on Tae Ho's chest and head.

Rolph was perplexed but Tae Ho noticed why Siri did that. He extended his arms beyond Siri's shoulders and then pointed at the commanders.

“That one! That one! That one!”

The position Tae Ho’s fingers were pointing at and the direction Siri’s eyes were looking at overlapped. Siri fired the crossbow with a thunder-like speed.

Puk! Puk! Puk!

Three arrows precisely hit the head of a giant bug. It didn’t explode like Rolph’s arrows, so the giant bugs yielded for a moment but didn’t die.

However, her actions still had a meaning. Siri raised her voice and yelled, “Warriors! Concentrate your attacks on the ones that have arrows stuck on them!”

“Ou!”

“Let’s go!”

The commander monsters didn’t look ordinary anymore. They all had a large sign on their heads.

“Keep pointing them to me!”

The battle between the warriors and the bugs became fierce. The warriors swung their swords and axes in between the bodies of the huge giant bugs that were several meters long.

The number of the warriors was approximately 200. And the number of the giant bugs was in the tens.

They had to eliminate at least one more commander to lessen the damages that the warriors would take.

“That one! That one!”

Tae Ho pointed at two bugs consecutively and then waved his hand widely. It was to fasten the pace.

[Saga: The Sword of a Warrior]

The thing Tae Ho gripped in the air wasn’t a sword but a crossbow. It was the weapon he used in Dark Age before receiving

Runefang.

“Siri! That one!”

Tae Ho pointed at one bug with his empty left hand and at the same time, Siri pulled the trigger when he looked at another place. Then she pulled the trigger again.

Shuak!

The arrow shot out sharply and protruded out of a giant bug’s head. A small and blue spark flew out from the tip of the arrow.

“Good!”

It was the crossbow Thunderbolt, and that had a bit of a paralyzing effect. It was merely a rumor, but this weapon was famous for having a really good name for being an early game weapon that the developers lamented about.

‘Anyways!’

That wasn’t the important thing right now. Tae Ho fired two more arrows with Thunderbolt and then pointed to Siri.

“That one!”

Siri’s marksmanship was precise this time too. Tae Ho retrieved Thunderbolt and yelled, “There are no more!”

The number of commanders was 8, and the number of the giant bugs amounted to 40.

The warriors exterminated the clearly weakened giant bugs and yelled, “Impressive! He’s really the warrior that a Valkyrie came to meet!”

“There was a reason for that!”

“It’s understandable!”

The warriors were really obsessed about their meeting.

‘If I leave for a night with Heda, the entire troop will turn upside down.’

To leave with Heda. Though, it was more probable that Tae Ho would be the one to get turned upside down first.

“Indeed.”

Right then, Siri nodded with an admiring face. Was Siri also obsessed about that?

That wasn't the case. She put on a sharp smile that was suitable for a warrior, got out of Tae Ho's chest, and quickly said, “Rolph! We will mobilize a detached force! Take warrior Lee Tae Ho.”

“Understood!”

“A detached force?!”

The last one was Tae Ho. Wasn't Siri's troop itself the detached force? Would they be splitting once again?

Siri smiled sharply instead of explaining.

“I'll entrust it to you, Idun's warrior.”

Then, she turned around and joined the warriors. They had almost gotten rid of all of the giant bugs, but then the gnolls were flocking like a herd of dogs.

“Tae Ho! It's over here! I will use Ullr's blessing!”

Rolph grabbed Tae Ho's shoulders and yelled this to him. Hearing ‘Ullr's blessing’, Tae Ho could understand what Siri and Rolph were about to do. It was fine if it was even instinctive.

“Detached troop! Move!”

As Rolph yelled with a loud voice, about ten warriors from Ullr's troop covered their heads with their cloaks. Rolph also pulled Tae Ho towards him and covered themselves with a cloak.

Ullr's blessing, stealth.

The warriors of Ullr's legion mixed down on the surroundings. Normally, they would be able to distinguish it instantly, but this was a battlefield. It was enough with this level of stealth.

“While captain Siri is grabbing their attention, we will take over the control room.”

‘Indeed!’

Tae Ho nodded at Rolph’s explanation. Even if it was Valhalla, they didn’t just fight thoughtlessly. And didn’t pick a commander however they pleased.

Tae Ho and the ten warriors belonging to Ullr’s troop moved quickly. The gnolls couldn’t notice the movements of the stealth warriors because of Siri and the troop.

“Over here! There’s a hidden path here!”

Rolph manipulated a device that was stuck on the wall, and a hidden door appeared. At first, it looked like the landing spot of the rain of steel was designed to be this place because of the hidden path.

The hidden path was no different from a cave. Maybe it was because they hadn’t used it for a long time after being made that it was full of spider webs and dust.

“Let’s go!”

Rolph made a torch instantly and then started to run at the front. The path split on some occasions, but Rolph didn’t hesitate even once and chose a path.

He was really reliable. He must have put the entire map in his head.

But after running for five minutes like that, however...

“Uak!”

A cry was heard at the rear. They couldn’t grasp immediately the situation because they were inside the dark passage.

“It’s a wolf spider!”

“It moved through the ceiling!”

They yelled at the same time. Tae Ho and Rolph raised their heads urgently. A huge spider that had bitten a warrior was right above their heads.

“Dodge!”

Rolph yelled and Tae Ho gulped down what he was about to yell. The moment the warrior fell to the ground, the wolf spider threw itself towards Tae Ho.

“Fuck!”

If a black, disgusting, and haired spider came charging towards you, it was impossible to not curse. In addition, the bastard was huge.

He had barely blocked the first attack with his sword, but pushing it back was impossible. The spider that was much bigger than Tae Ho pushed him back towards the wall.

“Kuhok!”

His back hurt a lot. But it would be the end if he closed his eyes or lost strength. Looking at the state of the warrior that was hurt by the monster, it was obvious that it had some kind of poison.

[Specialty: Paralyzing poison]

[Weakness: Fire]

“Tae Ho!”

It seemed like Rolph had attacked the wolf spider as it roared out and fell back. In that moment, Tae Ho threw his sword and gripped at the air.

[Saga: The Sword of a Warrior]

He grabbed Runefang. Tae Ho stabbed at the wolf spider from below. He aimed for the head, but unfortunately, he hit its chest.

‘It’s enough with this.’

That really was the case. The flames that surged from Runefang

burned the wolf spider from the inside and from the outside. The wolf spider cried out and struggled, and Tae Ho rolled on the ground to distance himself from the wolf spider.

“Haa. Haa.”

The wolf spider that was on fire hit the wall and then burned down with the spiderwebs. Rolph helped Tae Ho.

“Tae Ho! You were a magician?! And what about the sword?!”

The last question meant that he had to retrieve the sword. But that was unnecessary for Tae Ho.

“It’s fine!”

He just had to get rid of that and make it again!

As it wasn’t an appropriate situation to explain, Tae Ho started to move. However, Rolph grabbed Tae Ho.

“At least retrieve the rune! You just have to extend your hand!”

While Tae Ho and Rolph were exchanging words, it seemed like the other warriors had killed the wolf spider. Tae Ho extended his hand as Rolph told him and then, red smoke started to get sucked onto Tae Ho’s palms.

“Let’s go now! It seems like there are more monsters!”

Crunching sounds could be heard from behind them. Tae Ho wondered why it decided to face them alone when there were several of them, but it seemed like they were following it.

“Run!”

Rolph took the lead again. The warrior carried the poisoned warrior on its back and followed him, and the others also started running. The crunching sound became closer.

And how many minutes had passed again? Rolph pointed to a door that was at the end of the passageway and yelled, “We just have to get past that door!”

The magical control room which you could call the core of the fortress.

Tae Ho opened the door.

< Episode 4 – Rain of Steel (2) > End

Episode 4/Chapter 3: Rain of Steel (3)

&

“Get in quickly!”

“Close the door!”

“Kyak! Kyak!”

The ones that spoke were a warrior whose name wasn't known, Rolph, and the unknown wolf spider.

The door of the control room was a sliding door and it was really heavy since it was made of marble. So they obviously needed time to open it and close it.

“Close it!”

Rolph yelled while firing arrows through the space of the closing door. The warriors closed the door from both sides with all their strength, and a wolf spider that got hit with an arrow cried.

Bang!

The door closed. Rolph placed down his crossbow and let out a sigh of relief and Tae Ho also did the same. He took a peek before the door closed completely, and the number of the wolf spiders that chased them seemed to be about 10.

“Whew.....Hu.....”

Cold sweat flowed down. Tae Ho sat on the floor and breathed in. Only then did he observe his surroundings.

“Is this the control room?”

It was a wide stone chamber that was as high as a two-floored building. There were cloths that had symbols of several colors engraved in it, and you could see a big door of marble that seemed to be the front gate. There were also complicated lines drawn on the floor.

‘Is this something like a hidden back door?’

At first glance, you could tell that the front gate was a door, but the back door looked like a wall.

Tae Ho looked at the front door again.

There were three stone pillars that were placed on the platform that was in the middle of the room.

Rolph also looked at the room once and then nodded.

“If it’s like the map, then it is. More accurately, it’s the second control room that’s used for emergencies. It’s one of the hidden places of the fortress.”

“Ah, so that’s why.”

Even if it was the back door, the place they came through was harsh and did look like it hadn’t been used. On top of that, he wondered why there weren’t any enemies guarding this place, as it seemed to be the most important, even when they were in the middle of a siege. But he then understood when he heard that it was the provisionary room.

“Anyway, let’s hurry. We have to open the gates even a second faster so that we can diminish the damages that our allies take.”

As Rolph said this with a serious face, Tae Ho unconsciously admired him.

“Wow.”

To be able to hear something so normal from a warrior of Valhalla. Normally they would act to kill one more warrior instead of decreasing the damages.

“Why?”

“No, just. Let’s hurry.”

Rolph tilted his head as if it was strange but that didn’t last long. He ordered the warriors to check the room with a signal and then

moved to the platform with Tae Ho.

There was one complicated crack in one of the stone pillars. Rolph took out one golden decoration from his chest and then inserted it into the crack without any hesitation.

‘Is it something like a key?’

Maybe his guess was right, a faint green light started to appear from the crack.

‘It looks like a computer is booting.’

It seemed to be making noise for a moment and then a voice that was a bit harsh for a woman sounded.

[Place your hand and insert magic power]

Two hand shapes appeared next to the decoration that Rolph had inserted. Rolph gulped once, and after placing one hand, gestured Tae Ho with his chin.

“I will ask you for that side.”

It seemed like two people were needed. However, Tae Ho couldn’t immediately place his hand on it. It wasn’t because he was scared however.

“How do I insert magic power?”

“You just have to place your hands. Probably.”

He spoke without much confidence but Tae Ho nodded, because doing would have more meaning.

‘Hot. No, is it warm?’

He felt like he had put his hand on warm water and felt exactly the opposite of when he had absorbed runes from a monster.

[Confirmed auxiliary key]

[You can now take off your hands.]

Tae Ho and Rolph looked at each other and then took off their

hands. Then, a stream of light started to surge from a part of the decoration and then a woman took form.

[Nice to meet you. My name is Black Fortress.]

[Give me an order.]

She looked like a Valkyrie that had long black hair.

“It turned out well, right?”

“It seems so.”

Only then did Rolph let out a sigh of relief, and spoke to the hologram Valkyrie with a nervous voice.

“Black Fortress, open the door.”

[Understood. I will open the door.]

It was a simple task. Rolph laughed towards Tae Ho. Tae Ho was also about to laugh, but then he hurriedly yelled,

“Not that door! The gates!”

It was because the doors of the control room had started to open.

Originally, it would have ended at a small mistake, but the situation was different. It was because the warriors of Ullr’s legion started to shout.

“Close the doors!”

“Fire! Push them back!”

“Kyak! Kyak!”

“Black Fortress! Close the doors!”

The doors closed! But fortunately, no wolf spiders that got into the room. It was because they were also perplexed that the door opened suddenly.

[There aren’t enough orders. Give me another order.]

“Open all of the gates of the fortress. Not the doors, but the gates!”

[Understood. Opening the gates.]

After listening to Black Fortress' answer, Tae Ho looked towards the doors. Fortunately, it didn't seem like it would open.

[I have opened the gates.]

Black Fortress said again. As something in the room didn't move or the sound of the doors opening wasn't heard, Rolph looked at Tae Ho with a suspicious face.

“Is it.....done?”

“It should?”

There was no reason for Black Fortress to lie.

Tae Ho and Rolph let out sighs of relief at the same time. And the warriors of Ullr's legion that were waiting at the back door also wiped off the sweat from their foreheads or sat on the ground.

“Task completed. Now we just have to protect this place until our side conquers the fortress.”

That was because it would be troublesome if the gates closed again. In addition, to get out of this place, they had to use the back door that was infested with tens of wolf spiders. So there was a big risk in fighting.

Rolph told Black Fortress to seal the doors tightly and then gave a bottle of water to Tae Ho. The bottle was half-filled with fresh water.

“Thank you.”

The warriors of Valhalla were strong. And now that the gates had opened, the fortress wouldn't be able to serve as one, so they shouldn't have to wait for too long.

As he was resting and drinking water that tasted like honey, he could see that the warriors of Ullr's legion were moving. They piled up adornments and furniture on the doors to make a barricade.

Although this place didn't have that many things, it would be better than not doing anything.

The warriors finished making the barricade in an instant and then started talking in hushed voices.

"We made quite the achievements."

"The day we become inferior-ranked warriors isn't that far."

"If we return back, will the Valkyrie of our legion see me in a new light?"

"No chance. Look in the mirror."

"What, why are you discouraging my kid?"

"When did I become your kid?"

"Anyways, who among the Valkyries?"

"I like captain Siri. She seems cold but has a rather gentle side."

"Oh, after this battle ends, confess to her. You don't know if she will accept you."

"I will get hit in the head by her crossbow."

Everyone started to laugh with dead voices. Tae Ho, looked at them, laughed unconsciously, and said, "They are all rather bright."

"You won't be able to endure it if you are always serious. Even more if.....it's none other than this place."

For the warriors of Valhalla, a war was a daily thing. Just like Rolph had said, if you were always serious, you wouldn't be able to endure it.

"Before that, what's the name of the Valkyrie that came to meet you?"

Rolph approached Tae Ho and asked him that question. Tae Ho smirked at his intimate eyes and voice.

“Heda.”

“Heda....Is she pretty?”

‘This place is indeed an army.’

Why was the question after the name ‘Is she pretty?’

If it was another warrior that had asked the question, Tae Ho would have just ignored them, but since it was Ralph, he just nodded.

“She is pretty. She’s the prettiest among the ones I have seen.”

He was being honest. Because Heda was a beauty even among other Valkyries.

However, the warriors that started to listen to their conversation, started to ridicule him.

“Eii.”

“That’s too much.”

“You really fell for her.”

“How many Valkyries have you seen? One?”

“There’s one Valkyrie in our legion...”

They all said some words as if this was the opportunity and approached Tae Ho. How many minutes had passed since then?

[There’s a lifeform approaching this place.]

[Prepare for battle.]

Black Fortress spoke, and this time they certainly knew the sign for that.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A loud noise approached even closer from beyond the door. The warriors reflexively stood up and the door started to shake.

“Damn it! They knew of this place?!”

“Prepare for battle!”

Rolph and the warriors yelled. Tae Ho also stood up and looked at the front. Right at that instant, the door was destroyed.

Bang!

It was good to say it was an explosion. The thing that had broken through the marble door and the barricade was a giant gnoll that was holding a really big hammer.

“Rats of Valhalla!”

It cursed while rolling its red eyes. Its voice was so big that the room seemed to shake.

“Red Eyes!”

Rolph yelled reflexively. Tae Ho also knew this name thanks to the report he received yesterday. It was the right arm of the giant gnoll that had taken over this fortress.

You could hear that more gnolls were approaching them from behind Red Eyes. Red Eyes roared once more.

“I will tear you all up! I will break your bones and.....Kuak?!”

Red Eyes stopped speaking and then let out a painful groan. It was because of the flickering arrow that hit his shoulder.

“Fire!”

Tae Ho yelled and pulled the trigger again. The warriors got a hold of themselves only then and also raised their crossbows. There was no need to listen to the opponent’s speech.

“You cowards!”

Red Eyes swung his hammer widely and bounced off some arrows. Then, Tae Ho yelled towards the warriors instead answering it.

“Push him to that wall!”

The warriors didn’t ask back. They moved immediately and Tae

Ho yelled towards Black Fortress.

“Black Fortress! Open the back door!”

“Kyak! Kyak!”

As soon as it opened, the wolf spiders poured down into the room. The first thing they discovered was Red Eyes and its 10 underlings.

The wolf spiders charged towards the gnolls and the gnolls faced them.

“Bastard!”

Red Eyes got angry once again at the chaotic situation. It blasted away the head of an incoming wolf spider and then charged towards Tae Ho and the warriors.

“Rolph! Cover me!”

The original plan was to escape while the wolf spiders bought them time, but it seemed like that would be impossible. Because of that, Tae Ho glared at Red Eyes instead of escaping.

It was big. It seemed even bigger than the giant gnoll that he had defeated yesterday.

That gnoll was charging towards him while gripping its huge hammer. It yelled as if it would kill them immediately.

He was scared and afraid, but he didn't look away.

“Heda!”

He yelled the name of the Valkyrie instead of the yet unfamiliar God. Tae Ho gripped Runefang and charged towards Red Eyes.

&

< Episode 4 – Rain of Steel (3) > End

Episode 4/Chapter 4: Rain of Steel (4)

The room was big, but it was still a room in the end. It wasn't as wide as a plain.

The gnolls were fighting against the wolf spiders. Red Eyes charged towards the wolf spiders as if trampling on them and then crossed almost half of the room with just two steps in an instant.

The weapon Red Eyes was holding was a big hammer. It was even bigger than Tae Ho's torso. And the handle of the hammer seemed to be at least 3 meters.

Because of that, Tae Ho chose to close in instead of making some distance. The strong point of a long weapon was that it had a long reach, but that was only when there was some distance with the opponent. If you closed the distance, then the attack range became limited, and the attack speed would also drop. And even more, if the weapon was that long hammer. It was impossible to grab it shortly and fight.

The first attack came. If he couldn't evade this attack, he would die before even fighting.

Will it attack from below or above?

He made the decision in an instant. And the time Tae Ho had to make a decision was also an instant.

It attacked from below. The giant gnoll utilized the long handle of the hammer the best it could to sweep up a wide range.

And Tae Ho jumped at the right moment. Although Red Eyes swept the hammer rather high as to prepare for Tae Ho jumping, Tae Ho jumped even higher than that.

The hammer ripped the air. And Tae Ho jumped high. So naturally, the distance of Red Eyes that was charging became shortened.

He would fight it now. He would need time to retrieve the hammer. Tae Ho also needed to charge again after landing, but it was different if he could charge in the air.

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is just like a storm]

He kicked the air. But in that moment, Red Eyes did something Tae Ho hadn't expected.

Red Eyes dropped the hammer and then swung his fists that became free.

It missed the mark.

But it was fatal. Tae Ho got thrown to the ground. Rolph shouted something and fired his crossbow consecutively, and the other warriors also did the same.

Red Eyes lowered his posture and swung his left hand. Some of the arrows missed, and some hit its fur. The giant gnoll let out a pained groan and then extended his hand towards Tae Ho that was on the ground. It grabbed Tae Ho and then threw him towards the wall.

“Tae Ho!”

Rolph's voice was heard again. An explosion was heard and then the cry of Red Eyes was also heard.

Tae Ho hit the wall and then fell down as if sliding down. Blood flowed from his broken head, and there was also blood left on the wall.

Heda's words were right. That you didn't know what could happen on the battlefield.

He wanted to close his eyes. He didn't even feel pain.

No, it hurt like hell. And because of that, Tae Ho could reassure Heda's words once again.

‘It will hurt so much that you will want to die, but you won't die easily.’

Idun's blessing.

It hurt like crazy. To the point that he didn't know why he was still alive. But Tae Ho got a hold of himself. He started to hear once again through his numb ears and his faint vision returned to normal.

A bloodshed was happening. The gnolls were fighting for their lives against the wolf spiders, and Red Eyes that had some arrows stuck in its body swung its hammer. Blood and flesh that seemed to be from the warriors of Ullr's legion were in his hammer.

He had to fight.

Because this place was Valhalla.

No, because if he didn't fight everything would end here.

The dragon knight Kalsted said.

And the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho agreed.

Tae Ho forced himself to get up. There was no one focusing on him.

He breathed once. He saw Red Eyes that was completely showing his back.

He could do it.

He could still move his body.

But he had to wait. The perfect moment would come soon.

Bang!

An arrow exploded near Red Eye's shoulders. Thanks to that, the shoulder plate it was wearing flew off. As Red Eyes cursed and swung its hammer, you could hear that the air got split. Rolph rolled on the ground to dodge the attack and then raised his crossbow again. And in that moment Tae Ho charged forwards.

He didn't yell. He just ran low and quickly with the strength of his saga.

The dragon's eyes had found its weakness. Rolph noticed Tae Ho and then fired another exploding arrow towards Red Eyes instead of being happy. He had completely taken its attention.

Bang!

This time, its right arm exploded. The arm became a bloody mess but it wasn't cut off. It cursed and tried to swing its hammer.

Tae Ho saw its back. But he didn't jump at it. He rather went to its left and charged in front of it when it was about to swing the hammer towards Rolph.

Red Eyes saw Tae Ho. But it was already late. Red Eyes swung its left fist reflexively and Tae Ho dodged that by ducking and then took out a beginner's dagger and grabbed it inversely. And then he stabbed it in its groin without mercy.

“Kuaaaak!”

Red Eyes let out a terrible cry. However, Tae Ho didn't stop there and transformed the dagger into Runefang. And then, its reproductive organ that had become a bloody mess fell with a thudding sound. Rolph and the warriors yelled inwardly.

Red Eyes lost strength in its legs and kneeled. Tae Ho jumped with a yell and then stabbed at its neck with Runefang.

It stabbed deeply. Instead of pulling Runefang with difficulty, he just let go of it. After he landed on the ground he removed Runefang.

“Kuhak!?”

After Runefang, that worked as a stopper, disappeared blood started to flow down like a fountain. Red Eyes couldn't yell anymore and was gasping for air. It pressed on the wound with one hand and bent its torso. Its head became so low it seemed like it would touch the floor.

It was just like Tae Ho wanted.

Tae Ho activated the sword of the warrior once again. But this time a hammer came out. The one the Orc Great warrior Graksha used. He had used it a few times as a commemoration, but it had a different for his saga. The weapon you took from your enemy would become memorable.

Skull Buster.

A huge hammer fell down on the head of Red Eyes. The sound of bones breaking was heard, and Red Eyes couldn't endure it anymore. It completely fell to the ground.

The noise the huge body made was unexpectedly low. But all sound in the room disappeared.

Rolph and the warriors and even the gnolls that were fighting against the wolf spiders looked at Tae Ho.

Tae Ho, that got covered with the blood of Red Eyes, didn't fall. He leaned down Skull Buster and then let out a long sigh. And then, Skull Buster returned back to being Runefang.

“Glory to Idun and her warrior.”

Rolph said in a low voice. Joy and marvel were seen in his eyes.

“Idun!”

“Idun!”

“For Idun!”

The warriors started attacking the remaining gnolls. A part of them fired arrows towards them and the others raised their axes and swords.

Tae Ho didn't close his eyes. He glared at the gnolls and the wolf spiders that were fleeing as if being chased by the warriors and then extended his hand towards the corpse of the giant gnoll. A big red smoke arose and started to get sucked in Tae Ho's palm. He was exhausted because he used his saga continuously, but he felt like he was recovering a bit.

[Synchro rate: 7%]

[-]

The synchro rate that increased. A new empty slot for a new saga.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly while feeling the power of the goddess that was still covering his body and said as if he was whispering.

“For Idun.”

In addition, for Heda too.

The battle didn't end yet. Tae Ho charged on the ground.

&

The crow Hugin flew on the sky. Blood and death filled on Black Fortress when seen from above.

The warriors of Valhalla fought valiantly. A number that wasn't low died, but they killed even more enemies. The warriors that survived accumulated experience and obtained more runes, so they became stronger.

Hugin flew a bit lower. It was to see the warriors that were cheering for victory a bit more closely.

Bracky, that belonged to Thor's legion, had killed the leader of the enemy. Bracky, that had a huge body that resembled that of a giant, was even famous when he lived in Midgard.

Siri, of Ullr's legion, completed her task successfully. The reward hunter, that was famous for not missing her target, showed her skills even in Valhalla.

Even aside from them, several others performed excellently. They had made a new story on the battlefield.

Rasgrid, that was standing on top of the castle wall, turned to look at Hugin. Her hair fluttered and her blue eyes shone like a jewel.

Hugin also looked at Rasgrid. But it flew even higher instead of sitting on her shoulders.

Who was the one with the highest merits today?

Whose story will spread the farthest? Who would the people glorify?

‘Lee Tae Ho.’

The warrior Rasgrid had paid attention to. How did she name Lee Tae Ho instead of Bracky? What had moved her heavy heart? What kind of stories had he made in this battle?

Hugin twisted its beak and smiled. That smile resembled that of the king of Gods, Odin.

< Episode 4 – Rain of steel (4) > End

Episode 5/Chapter 1: Night Banquet (1)

The battle had ended.

However, the warriors of Valhalla were clearing up the battlefield instead of celebrating their victory and resting comfortably. They searched the fortress in case there were any enemies left, gathered the corpses and treated the wounded.

The battle itself had ended late in the afternoon, but when they were finally finished with everything, it was already dusk.

The Valkyries and Rasgrid gathered the warriors that had finished cleaning up in front of the fortress. There were quite a few altars made of piled lumber behind the Valkyries and the corpses of the warriors that had fallen today were on top of it.

Rasgrid faced the warriors but instead of stepping forward, she went to the side. It was because there was someone more suitable to be at that position.

The one that stepped up was the golden-haired Reginleif.

She stepped onto the platform and after facing the warriors, she raised her sword and yelled, “Exalted warriors! We attained victory once again because of your courage and efforts! You have contributed to defending Asgard and the nine planets!”

“Uaaa!”

“Odin!”

“Thor!”

The warriors cheered. Besides Odin and Thor, the names of other Gods were also called but it was impossible to beat the yells towards the two Gods that had the most members from their legions.

Reginleif waited until they stopped cheering and said, “The losses we suffered today weren’t low either. But warriors, do not fear or

worry. The souls of the warriors will remain by our sides!”

Boom!

The flag men that were in front of the warriors hit the ground with the flags that had the symbols of a God engraved on them. The loud noise made everyone stiffen.

“Warriors, we will remember your stories. We will remember your names.”

The Valkyries blew the horn trumpets. Those sounds reached high to the sky.

Reginleif smiled. She slowly raised her head and looked at the sky.

“The exalted Odin will lead the souls of the warriors and they will be reborn anew as steel warriors. They will stand up shoulder to shoulder on a new battlefield!”

“Odin!”

“Father!”

The warriors yelled together.

The king of the exalted Gods.

The one that resisted the fate of mortality!

“Light them on fire! Let Freya, who rides the night sky on her cat chariot see the bright path!”

The Valkyries lit the altar on fire. The big flames shone in several colors.

“Warriors! Let’s toast for them! Let’s toast for ourselves!”

“Valhalla!”

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

The warriors raised their pints of beer that were made of horns high. And in that moment, within the fire of the altar that had

turned the corpses to ash in an instant, light surged up.

They were the souls of the warriors. They were heading to Valhalla.

“Warriors! Enjoy this night! The ones who achieved victory have that right!”

“Reginleif!”

“Valhalla!”

The ritual ended. The warriors started to grill their meat and take out the alcohol. Perhaps the Valkyries had spread magic in the altar, so that a nice scent spread and made the warriors have fun.

“What a sight.”

Tae Ho, who was seated in a corner, said, while looking at the lights that were surging to the sky. And Rolph, who was right next to him grilling pork meat, smiled.

“Is your body fine?”

“I feel like I will die.”

He really felt that way. He looked completely fine aside from his head, but that was just the external appearance.. He was just sitting still, but all of his bones and muscles seemed to be screaming.

“Huhu, I’m glad you survived anyways. I really panicked when you were thrown into the wall.”

“Me too.”

If he was an ordinary warrior, his body would have exploded and died.

‘Thank you, Idun.’ Tae Ho prayed to Idun and then relaxed his body a bit. It was also like this yesterday, and today too was a chaos.

‘The start was the Rain of Steel’

He was in doubt of what they meant with Rain of Steel, but for that to be what he had in mind.

Tae Ho told himself that it would all become a memory and thought of when he rode on the Rain of Steel.

‘It seems like it’s still too early for that.’

Tae Ho gave up completely and then tried to drink some alcohol. But it was then that he was interrupted.

“Ah, I’m telling it’s the truth!”

“It’s this friend here!”

Two warriors from Ullr’s legion whom he knew the faces of had brought two more warriors.

The warriors that saw Tae Ho for the first time opened their eyes widely.

“Ohh, so this is the friend that had a Valkyrie visit him!”

It was only that he didn’t know their faces, but it seemed like they belonged to Siri’s troop. As Tae Ho didn’t even have the strength to answer back, the two warriors that brought the other two started to speak, even spitting.

“That’s right! You know, this friend here entered Red Eye’s reach! And then – !”

“And then?”

“Stabbed his dagger in its groin!”

“Gasp?!”

“So he did that, and then...”

His hands trembled as if any more than that was hard to describe. At his manner,, the other warriors started to eye Tae Ho in a different light.

“You were a really brutal guy, my friend.”

“Merciless.”

“He’s not even human. It’s the first time I’ve seen someone as brutal as him.”

“Did the Valkyrie fall for him at his heartlessness?”

“If that’s the case, the Valkyrie are also something else.”

“Idun’s legion...I didn’t know that place was like that. Isn’t Idun the Goddess of Youth?”

As their conversation started to make a weird turn, Rolph stepped in.

“What are you saying in front of him?!”

“What do you mean? We don’t do something as cowardly as speaking behind his back! Right?”

“Whatever! Just go away!”

The warriors looked at each other and laughed.

‘Just do it at my back, please.’ Tae Ho laughed inwardly and then relaxed his body a bit more. And then a glad voice was heard behind him.

“Understand them. They are like that because they are jealous of you.”

“Bjorn!”

He smiled at Tae Ho’s call and then made a place for him from between the warriors.

As soon as he sat, he toasted with Tae Ho and after drinking beer he said, “Young man, it seems like you performed excellently this time too. They say that a Valkyrie came to meet you.”

“Um, you were talking about that?”

Just how far had the rumors spread? Bjorn was from a completely different legion.

He didn't particularly ask, but Bjorn answered him.

"You are the hottest topic of conversation. All the warriors in this fortress should know about it."

"What, how?"

Heda had come yesterday, and only Siri's troop knew of it. The battle had started today, so when did the rumors spread?

"It's not me."

"Me neither."

"I don't know what he's talking about."

The warriors of Ullr's legion played dumb. Seeing that they were evading Tae Ho's eyes, it was kind of obvious who it was.

"They seem to be dying of jealousy, so think of it as something cute. Even if they look like that, they all respect you. That's because you performed greatly today and yesterday. Don't forget that we also love and respect exalted warriors, just like Valhalla."

Tae Ho nodded as Bjorn said it as if consoling him. It was certainly something to be jealous about. Just like Bjorn had said, their actions really were cute, because this was much better than staring murderously from behind.

"You really are someone amazing."

"You are all generous."

"It's not that we said empty words."

The warriors laughed and offered to toast with Tae Ho. He wanted to hit them once because they were too sly, but it also meant that they were that friendly.

It was just when he was about to cheer.

"Captain Siri," Rolph stood up and said.

Siri, who had come while holding a big bottle of alcohol, approached the group and then put on a bright smile that wouldn't

be seen on the battlefield.

“You have done well. The merits your stealth troop achieved are big.”

Actually, the warriors that were in this place were the ones that had entered the control room. The warriors put on awkward and shy smiles and then Siri raised the bottle.

“I don’t have anything in particular to give you, so will you receive some alcohol from me?”

“That would be an honor.”

“I have always wanted to.”

The warriors spoke quickly after emptying their cups and then they extended their cups towards Siri. She smiled and after filling up all of the cups, she raised hers.

“For you and Valhalla.”

“For Captain Siri!”

Siri drank the cup and then went somewhere else while holding the bottle. It seemed like she was going to offer alcohol to all the troop.

As Tae Ho was looking at Siri’s back, Bjorn smiled and said, “What’s wrong?”

“She’s too different from when she’s on the battlefield.”

Siri in the battlefield was like a sharp knife. But now, she was showing a more friendly side.

“That’s obvious. There’s no need to put on a heavy air here.”

Because yesterday, they were about to go to a big battlefield, and right now they had already won the battle. In addition, they had contributed towards defending Asgard and the nine planets, just like the Valkyrie Reginleif had said.

The words he had shared with Rolph were also similar. Tae Ho

noded and asked Bjorn another thing..

“Now that I see, Bjorn, are female warriors rare in Valhalla? There’s only Captain Siri here.”

“Um, actually they are. But this is an extreme case. When looking at all of Valhalla, the ratio of the female warriors is 1 to 30.”

“There are that many?”

It was good to say that the majority of them were men, but right now Siri was the only female warrior. 1 in 2000 and 1 in 30 had a huge difference.

Bjorn laughed. “That’s right. When you are a lowest ranked warrior, men stay with men and women stay with women. But starting from the inferior rank, they all stand in the same place.”

It made sense then. The majority of the persons in this place were the lowest ranked warriors. It was obvious that there were only men.

“But Siri, that friend looks like a hunter.”

“That’s right. Captain Siri isn’t a Shield Maiden,” Rolph said.

Tae Ho tilted his head and asked Bjorn. “Shieldmaiden?”

“Saying it simply, that means warrior. They go to the battlefield while holding big shields like the men. How should I put it? That shield means that you are able to put up a shield wall. It means that she’s a reliable warrior that can stand shoulder to shoulder with you.”

“Ah, so that’s why everyone had shields.”

There was also a shield in the weaponry Heda gave him.

‘Wait.’

Tae Ho nodded and then thought of the battlefield he had faced recently. It was because thinking about it, Siri’s troop really had few people holding shields.

“Ullr’s legion has many hunters in it. That’s why they use other supportive weapons rather than shields.”

Rolph touched his crossbow even now. Now that he saw, there was almost no one with crossbows in Ragnal’s troop. It seemed like the weapons everyone received was set in a special manner.

“Anyways, we have taken back the fortress. Are we returning?”

As Tae Ho asked, Bjorn shook his head. “It will take a few more days. It doesn’t end just because we recaptured it. There are also some places nearby that we need to check.”

“Places we need to check?”

“Mm, the reasons that there’s a big fortress like this in the middle of desolate plains are two. The first, it serves as a base that’s located on the frontlines, and the second is to protect the mines of the dwarves that are nearby.”

“When you say dwarf, is it that dwarf?”

Bjorn smirked at Tae Ho’s question.

“I don’t know what that dwarf is, but there are really small guys with excellent handicraft skills. The armors and weapons they make are all excellent. There are also many things the Gods use that were made by them.”

“Ohh.”

Tae Ho admired unconsciously. For there to be real dwarves! He wanted to meet them.

“Before that, why do you want to return that badly? Do you want to see that Valkyrie that much?”

“Eh?”

As Bjorn started to say something logical, the warriors that had been silent butted in.

“He’s right. So there was a reason like that for why a valiant

warrior like you wanted to return that badly!”

“How good for you, how good.”

“You are saying that meeting you wasn’t enough!”

It seemed like they were also people that liked to drive others to a corner. Tae Ho knew that it was pointless to refute at this point, so he just smiled bitterly and drank beer.

But just when he drank two sips, he gates that were closed opened up. They were talking and enjoying themselves, but as the big gates opened up, they could only focus immediately.

The one that had appeared from the gates was a Valkyrie. She faced the warriors looking at her and after rolling her eyes for a bit, she placed her eyes on one area.

“Warrior Lee Tae Ho!”

“Yes!” Tae Ho answered reflexively and then flinched. It was because the Valkyrie that was standing in front of the gates was certainly the one he had seen yesterday in the camps.

The warriors that were near Tae Ho began to be perplexed.

“Wait! Wait wait!”

“No!”

“Don’t tell me!”

The warriors looked at the Valkyrie, and the Valkyrie cleared her throat as if she was also perplexed and said, “Someone came to meet you.”

“Nooooooooooooo!”

“Boooooooooooooo!”

“Odin!”

While the warriors were crying, a red-haired Valkyrie extended her head just like she did yesterday.

“Uh...Hi, again?”

Her voice was lower than yesterday, perhaps because she felt burdened at the two thousand pairs of eyes.

&

< Episode 5 – Night Banquet (1) > End

Episode 5/Chapter 2: Night Banquet (2)

“Something is not right. Why are they all looking at us?”

Heda said in a whisper, her face flushed. The place they were standing at was behind the gates that had been designated as the meeting place. At Heda’s remark, Tae Ho glanced back at the gates. He felt as if he could feel the gazes of the warriors looking through the walls.

“Are you really asking because you don’t know?”

“Uh...”

As Tae Ho glared down at her with sharp eyes, Heda cleared her throat and then changed the subject.

“Anyway, are you fine? You aren’t hurt?”

Heda’s eyes moved over Tae Ho’s head. It was obvious for her to be worried because he had his head covered with bandages.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly and then shrugged his shoulders.

“Honestly, no. I’m alive because of Idun’s blessing.”

“Explain it in detail.”

Tae Ho told her about the battle he had faced today. Heda opened her eyes roundly at the part when he hit the wall and when they got to the point about how Tae Ho killed Red Eyes, Heda cut short his words and approached him.

“Let’s look at your wounds.”

“Ugh.”

As Heda started to touch his shoulders, arms, hips and other parts of his body, Tae Ho let out a groan. It was because nowhere on him was safe.. After Heda placed her hands on his chest and recited some runes, she shook her head.

“You really are a mess. Wait a moment.”

Heda stepped back and then took out some white things from the pocket at her waist. After she opened one, a clean white rolled cloth came out, and after she spread that, four small white pieces, each about the size of a small pill, appeared.

Heda extended her hand and said, “Eat one. You will feel much more comfortable.”

It was a request from none other than Heda. After eating the piece that was to the left, he felt that it was crispy and sweet.

‘Apple?’

He wasn’t certain. He felt as if it was an apple, but it was so much more delicious that it wasn’t comparable at all to the ones he had eaten up until now.

“How is it?”

Heda smiled playfully and asked. Expectation filled her eyes.

“Is it maybe...”

Tae Ho paused for a moment and then looked at himself. Energy started to fill his body. Reflexively, he started to touch his body, but he didn’t feel hurt at all. As Tae Ho opened his eyes widely, Heda smiled with satisfaction and then whispered in Tae Ho’s ear in a low voice.

“Right – that’s a piece of a golden apple.”

The golden apples that the Goddess of Youth administered – a treasure among treasures that gave eternal life to the Gods.

“Not anyone can eat this, so you have to keep it a secret. Understand?”

Heda’s expression and voice were more serious than playful. It seemed like he really had to keep it a secret.

“Is it fine?”

‘If you give me this?’

At Tae Ho's question, Heda looked at their surroundings and then said in a low voice, "It's a really small piece, and you are Idun's warrior. It's fine, you just have to don't tell it to others. Idun also permitted it."

None other than the one that administered the golden apples was the one that had permitted it.

'But it will still have to be a secret.'

If the golden apples were things meant only for the Gods, then Idun having permitted it was secondary, but the fact that it was exposed could make a fuss. Just like Heda had said, it would be better to keep quiet about it.

'Unexpectedly, Idun's legion has more good points.'

Tae Ho nodded to himself and then looked at his body again. His body had been hurting until now, but now he was overflowing with strength.

"It's really marvelous."

"Well, it's the essence of life. Although the effects are weak because it was merely a piece, it will still cure you of curses and heal you easily. It also has an outstanding ability for beauty."

"Ah, so?"

"So what?"

As Heda tilted her head, Tae Ho just laughed it off.

"No, nothing. Anyway, thank you."

Anyway, it certainly was a precious thing. He was thankful towards Heda that she wanted to take better care of him a little better than she could.

"Eat it only when you need it, and take it with you at all times. This pocket has preserving magic in it, so you just have to put it in."

Heda put back the folded white cloth in the pocket and then placed it on Tae Ho's waist herself.

“Ah, you are keeping your saga a secret, right?”

“Yes, although no one asked me about it.”

It was something he had decided with Heda the day before.

He would keep the saga, Immortal Warrior, a secret.

The stories recorded in the Immortal Warrior were all too outstanding. With a saga like this, persons like Odin and Thor would certainly become interested in him.

The interest of Gods could become poison at times. And especially more so if Odin was the one interested.

What would happen if he placed Tae Ho on an unreasonable battlefield, saying that he would awaken his saga? The warriors of Valhalla had to always stand on the battlefield. There was nowhere that was not dangerous, but there was no need to bring danger to yourself.

And this was also something that Idun wanted.

“Right, be careful,” Heda warned him once again and then looked up at Tae Ho and said, “Well, today we should also continue with what we were doing.”

“You mean the classes?”

“Yeah. But as we are in the middle of the banquet and the night is deep, I will keep it short and concise,” Heda said as if asking what else was there to do and then looked Tae Ho up and down.

“You earned a lot of runes this time, right? And also received the reward. Did you already invest them?”

“Yes, I was in a hurry to strengthen myself.”

He had to become even a little bit faster and stronger to survive on the battlefield. There was no reason to keep them stored.

Heda nodded. “You did well. Can I see how you invested them?”

“As you wish.”

As Tae Ho agreed, Heda placed her palm on Tae Ho’s chest again. She closed her eyes and seemed to be reading the runes, and then smiled brightly and said, “You invested them in an equal manner?”

“It seemed like I needed all of them.”

“You thought well. What should I say; you are a warrior that’s more like an all-rounder, so it’s better to do what you did instead of focusing on one thing.”

In games, one would go with the Damage tree or the Tank tree, looking at the effectiveness, but this was the reality. In addition, Heda was thinking of a slow growth that implied raising all of your abilities equally instead of a dramatic growth.

“Actually, after what I faced yesterday I was thinking of doing an all-in in my health.”

Because if your health became stronger, it seemed as if your resistance towards shock also became stronger. However, Heda shook her head.

“That’s not too bad at the beginning, but don’t invest all of your runes in that. You always have to keep in mind that you will be fighting alone. If your attacks don’t even work on your opponent, it will be useless how much you can endure, right?”

She was right. And in the first place, that was the reason Tae Ho invested his runes equally. To go with the Extreme tree, he needed an ally to fill his weak points. He did fight with Rolph and the warriors of Ullr’s legion in the battlefield, but that wouldn’t always be the case. And the fights were rather more like repeated one on ones.

That meant that he needed all of the abilities. Strength, health, and agility influenced your battle strength directly, and concentration and magic power influenced your saga. Of course,

this method was slower than investing all of your runes to one stat, but it still had a solution.

‘I just have to earn a lot of runes.’

It was the same as farming exp in games. He just had to earn a lot of runes and invest them.

In addition, Tae Ho had the Immortal Warrior. Every time the synchro rate increased, he became more like Kalsted. Saying it briefly, all of his abilities increased. Now, even Tae Ho was expecting it. He could already imagine himself becoming stronger than Kalsted someday.

As Tae Ho nodded with an excited face, Heda also nodded spiritedly.

“And this, this is a reward from Idun.”

“Idun’s?”

“Yeah. It increases your recovery rate. It’s a special thing.”

What Heda took out was a golden necklace. There was a golden apple at the end of the necklace.

Heda hung the necklace on Tae Ho and said, “Idun was really happy. It has been a while since the warriors of Valhalla shouted Idun’s name. She says she will be awaiting your performance.”

Looking at how he had spoken, it seemed as if Idun didn’t directly see how he fought. It seemed like there was a kind of system that could know when the warriors yelled their names.

‘Uh...mmm...Idun? Next time, I will certainly yell your name.’

Tae Ho, who yelled Idun’s name instead of Heda’s, cleared his throat and then placed his hands on his waist as if he remembered.

“But Heda, what do I use the money on?”

“You can donate it to the legion, and you can use it for yourself,” Heda answered. And it was his feeling but it felt as if she had

emphasized the first part.

Tae Ho laughed in a low voice and kept asking, “Is there a place I can use it?”

“Of course there is. Starting from the inferior rank, you are able to go to the stores that are in Valhalla. There are people that order weapons and armors for themselves, and there are also people that spend it on gambling places or in the red light district. There are various kinds of people. And of course, there are people that just donate it to their legion.”

Heda shone at the last part.

Tae Ho asked instead, “Where will you use the donations?”

“Improvement of living conditions for the members?”

“Okay. I will think about it.”

Even if she said that Tae Ho was the only one.

As Tae Ho stepped back, Heda put on a regretful face but it was only for a moment.

“Wherever you use it, you just don’t have to waste it. It seems like you still haven’t received your reward; looking at the merits you have achieved today, you will also get rewarded tomorrow. I’m telling you that you are amazing.”

“Ah, well.”

Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders and smirked. He had heard it many times when he was a pro gamer, but it was always nice to hear compliments.

‘Anyways, the lowest ranked warriors really are treated as ordinary ones. You can’t even go to the store alone.’

He understood why the warriors of Ullr’s legion made that fuss with the inferior rank.

“I should be going back.”

Heda seemed to have a method to check the time when she looked up at the sky and approached Tae Ho.

“Lower your head for a moment, I will bless you.”

As Tae Ho lowered his head, Heda got on her toes and placed her lips on Tae Ho’s forehead.

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.”

Heda stepped back after that and laughed and then waved her hand as she always did.

&

“So, did you have fun?”

“Bjorn, why do I feel murderous intent from your words?”

It wasn’t only in his words but also in the arm that was placed on Tae Ho’s neck.

“It’s just your feeling.”

Bjorn opened his eyes sharply and smirked and then the warriors in Siri’s troop put on the same smile.

Tae Ho got out of Bjorn’s arm for now and then said, “I just had some classes, classes.”

“A one on one class with a Valkyrie?!”

The warriors gulped some air. It seemed like they had completely misunderstood. It was also like this when he came to Valhalla, but the warriors here were professionals when assuming things.

“No, so...”

“Tae Ho, captain Siri is calling you.”

While everyone was focused on Tae Ho, Rolph stepped in and called him. His face was red because of the alcohol, but his expression was serious.

“I understand.”

There were warriors with familiar faces behind Rolph. It seemed like they were similarly called.

“Let’s hurry.”

As Rolph turned back and started to walk away, the warriors of Siri’s troop started to say words like ‘so what happened!’ but he could only leave.

“Over there.”

The place Rolph pointed at was near a burning Altar. And as they arrived there, there were a few more people beside Siri. And there was also someone even Tae Ho knew.

Valkyrie Rasgrid.

She, who was responsible for all of the warriors, looked at the gathered members and said, “I’m sorry to call you in the middle of the banquet, but I have something to tell you. It’s related to a special task.”

< Episode 5 – The night banquet (2) > End

Episode 5/Chapter 3: Night Banquet (3)

Rasgrid spread a map on an empty table that was next to the altar. Black Fortress occupied a big part of the map, as if the map wasn't that big.

“We are currently here. Originally, our objective should only have been taking back the fortress, but the situation has changed.”

Rasgrid moved her fingers that were over Black Fortress to her left.

“There's an enemy army coming from the west. Due to their speed, we will engage in a battle in a few days.”

“Are we going to scout?”

Rasgrid shook her head as one of the warriors asked. “No, our Valkyries will be in charge of that. Reginleif has just departed.”

It seemed as if they had recently received the information that an enemy army was approaching. As he turned his head towards the gates, he could see Reginleif leaving the fortress.

“What I want to entrust you with is the dwarves' mine.”

Rasgrid's finger moved again. The mine was at the right of Black Fortress – so to say, at the east.

“After the gnolls took over the fortress, they sealed the mine of the dwarves and besieged it. We could contact them until yesterday, but we haven't been able to do so since this morning. We are certain that something happened.”

Perhaps it might have already been occupied by the gnolls.

But even if they assumed that was the case, they had to check it themselves. If it had really become occupied by the gnolls, they couldn't leave them be.

Rasgrid raised her head and let out a long sigh and then turned to look at the warriors.

“We can’t split the forces that much when the enemy army is approaching. Because of that, I decided to only take the elites to check the situation. Siri!”

At her call, Siri approached Rasgrid. Rasgrid placed her hands on Siri’s shoulders and said, “Inferior ranked warrior Siri will be in charge of you.”

“Take good care of me.”

As she spoke with the same expression as when she stood on the battlefield, the warriors smirked and shrugged their shoulders.

“It’s good for me if I’m with Captain Siri.”

“I will also get some merits this time.”

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

“So you really are going with us! The warrior met by a Valkyrie!!”

While everyone was saying something, a warrior Tae Ho had seen for the first time pretended to know him. Tae Ho would be the most famous warrior in the entire army. Because of that, Tae Ho just smiled awkwardly instead of replying.

‘A saga may really appear like this...wait, it may be better than what I thought?’

If he made it well, wouldn’t he be able to make a saga that summoned Valkyries?

‘Should I ask Heda to come meet me everyday?’

For it to become a saga, it needed enough achievement and recognition.

It was when Tae Ho was thinking seriously about the ‘The Warrior Met By a Valkyrie’, that Rasgrid approached him.

“Warrior ‘The Warrior Met By a Valkyrie’.. I heard that your injuries were severe,” Rasgrid looked at the warrior met by a Valkyrie and said.

He had thought this when he first saw her, but she was still very pretty and had a really cold face.

When Tae Ho got a hold of himself, he wondered about what to answer, because he couldn't say that he had healed completely after eating a piece of a golden apple.

But fortunately, Rasgrid was the one that acted first.

“Eat this medicine. You will feel fresh tomorrow morning.”

The thing Rasgrid took out from at her waist was a small glass bottle that had a red liquid inside.

“Ohh.”

Whilst the surrounding warriors were admiring it, Tae Ho received the bottle.

“Thank you.”

‘I will just say that I drank it and keep it for myself.’

It didn't have an immediate effect like the piece of golden apple, but looking at the reactions of the warriors and Rasgrid's words, it seemed like it was of quite a high quality.

‘She still has the a few morals. She doesn't order injured people as she pleases.’

But of course, just letting him rest was the best. Tae Ho took the medicinal bottle carefully. And then Rasgrid said again, “I still have something I need to give you; and it seems like I won't have to be troubled, because you are all gathered here.”

Rasgrid gave Tae Ho some of the pockets that were already on the table.

“You have also raised great achievements today. So I will be giving you three pockets of gold and two of runes. In addition, I will give your legion 30 points.”

It seemed as if she was planning to go with the merits awards

informally. Rasgrid started with Tae Ho, and after handing everyone their rewards, she said, “You will depart tomorrow morning. The transportation means will be the Black Flash”

“Ohh!”

“Black Flash!”

The warriors started to cheer with bright expressions. However, Tae Ho put on a confused face and started to look at the others.

They were reacting the same way as when they heard of the Rain of Steel.

‘It shouldn’t be.’

While Tae Ho was the only one doubting, Rasgrid put on a very faint smile and looked at them.

“I thank you for your hard work again. For Asgard and the nine planets! Let Odin’s blessings accompany you.”

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

As the warriors yelled with a loud voice, Rasgrid nodded slightly and then left.

Then Tae Ho asked the warrior that was next to him, “What is the Black Flash?”

“The Black Flash is the Black Flash!” The warriors smiled brightly and said, and Tae Ho sighed once more when he realized that this place was Valhalla.

Rolph, who was looking at them, said, “Tae Ho, are you curious about what the Black Flash is?”

“I don’t know it well, but it’s a killer, right?”

At Tae Ho’s question, Rolph shook his head and laughed.

“No, not even I know about the Black Flash. But it’s from Valhalla, so wouldn’t it be amazing?”

He just about forgot it but Rolph was also a warrior from

Valhalla. Because of that, Tae Ho just gave up and decided to experience it firsthand.

And it was then.

“The Black Flash...is really a killer,” Siri said in a low voice. She spoke towards the sky with a hard and tired expression.

“For real.”

Just what was it, that none other than Siri was acting like that?

Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and steeled himself.

&

The Black Flash. That really was a black flash, just like the unknown warrior had said.

‘Black Flash my ass! It’s more like a flying coffin!’

No, wasn’t this closer to the Rain of Steel?

Tae Ho lay down on the black metal coffin. Speaking precisely, there was only space for one person to get in, and the long and pointy started to fly at an amazing speed.

The amazing sound of air ripping was heard, along with the cries of the warriors. In addition, the flight time wasn’t as short as the Rain of Steel. He felt as if he had already been flying for more than 10 minutes.

That was the difference between the Rain of Steel and the Black Flash. The Rain of Steel was a device meant to deploy a large number of warriors into the battlefield and the Black Flash was meant as a means of transportation to send a minority to a long distance urgently.

“Uwaaaa! Habansini...Gibuni Lisaunhe!”

Despairing words were heard from a warrior when the coffin started to fly in the sky. Tae Ho also felt weird. It felt as if it was starting to descend.

“Prepare! For! The! Shock!”

Siri’s voice, that seemed like she spat it with all her strength, was also heard. And after a minute, the promised shock came.

“Kuhok!”

“Kuk!”

The shock was bigger than when riding the Rain of Steel. Tae Ho groaned while gritting his teeth and tried to start breathing through his nose. The tip of the coffin seemed to have dug into the ground, so that he was in a slight lying posture.

After he took a few breaths, the lid opened up automatically. Fresh air and the groans of the warriors were heard.

“Blergh!”

“This is....Valhalla?”

Most of the warriors spat nonsense. There were even some that started to throw up.

“It really kills you,” Rolph said as if he was almost dying. Siri didn’t say anything but he could see her pale face.

‘Damn Valhalla. They love firing weapons too much.

Just whose fetish was this? Odin’s? Thor’s?

‘But it’s really fast.’

Looking at its effectiveness, it was really useful.. Although he didn’t know what kind of magic it had, they said that he would be able to return to the firing point if he got back on.

‘I’m glad I invested all of those runes.’

After he got on the ground and took a few breaths, his condition had recovered completely. Although he had invested in all of his five stats equally, because of all of the rewards he had received, the number of runes in his health point wasn’t low. In addition, Tae Ho now had on the golden apple necklace. It was obvious that he

would recover quickly.

While the other warriors were still in pain, only Tae Ho looked into the distance with a clear expression. Then Siri, who was looking in the same direction, said, “That place that you are looking at is the dwarves’ mine.”

It looked more like a fortress, rather than a mine.. It was a big and strong building that looked like an inverse lid, but there wasn’t a single window.

Rolph, who had recovered a bit, stood next to Tae Ho and said, “The dwarves are weak in sunlight. There’s a saying that they will turn to stone if they face the dawn head on. That’s why there are no windows at all. They even work underground a lot.”

“And they don’t suck on blood?”

“I have never heard of that.”

Well, at that point they would be vampires and not dwarves.

“If you’ve gotten a hold of yourselves, line up with your weapons. We will approach the fortress.”

As Siri ordered them in a low voice, Tae Ho and the 12 warriors followed behind her. This time, the hunters like Siri and Rolph were also holding shields. Siri closed the distance to the fortress carefully. But there was no reaction at all from the fortress. She hesitated a bit and then reached within bow range..

In the end, Siri arrived in front of the gates. They couldn’t even feel the presence of the dwarves in the small buildings next to it.

Siri looked at the side buildings and then yelled in a loud voice, “Dwarves! We are the warriors of Valhalla! Valkyrie Rasgrid sent us!”

There was a reaction this time. But it wasn’t an answer. The gates opened up with a loud sound.

“Are they telling us to get in?”

“They may not be able to get out because the sun is still up!”

The warriors mumbled in a low voice. But Siri opened her eyes sharply instead of ordering them to get in and glared at the inside of the gate.

Tae Ho also did the same. However, there was a decisive difference between them.

“Siri! Your right!”

Tae Ho didn’t have the ability to look through the darkness. But he knew that there were red letters filling the insides. In addition, there weren’t only letters on the inside.

The moment Tae Ho yelled, Siri looked to her right, and shouted, “Shield Wall!”

At Siri’s yell, the warriors reacted simultaneously. They raised their shields and formed the Shield Wall..

Pababababbak!

Rains of arrows started to pour over the shields. The strength behind them wasn’t normal, so the arrows that flew in a straight line pierced the shield directly.

[Fallen]

[Dwarf zombie]

[Poisonous]

[Dwarf ghoul]

He could see red letters from between the shields. The problem was that they weren’t only at the side buildings but also in front of them.

“Diagonally! We are retreating slowly!” Siri yelled and then arrows started to pour down again from the front gate. Some shields started to break. There were even some groaning warriors that had gotten hit in their thighs and shoulders.

They would die like this, whilst becoming porcupines.. They needed to do something.

“Close your eyes!” Someone yelled from behind them. One part of the warriors did that, and the others didn’t. Tae Ho unconsciously closed his eyes. It was a judgment made by the dragon knight Kalsted, instead of the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho.

At that moment, a light shone. The thing that had exploded in front of the warriors and the gate was a flashbang.

“Come over here!”

The voice was heard again. Siri put back her shield and said, “Move!”

The warriors that had closed their eyes lead the ones that hadn’t. Tae Ho grabbed Rolph’s arms and then ran towards the place the voice was heard.

Another rain of arrows started to pour down from behind. And at the same time, he saw the one that had yelled. It had come from one of the buildings that were at the left of the fortress. It was a small man that was wearing a bandana and black goggles.

[The hurried]

[Dwarf Isaac]

Green words.

He was an ally.

< Episode 5 – Night banquet (3) > End

Episode 6/Chapter 1: God's precious metal

(1)

“Leave me!”

“Shut up!”

The warrior that got hit in his thigh with an arrow yelled and the warrior next to him pulled on his arm and shouted.

“Hurry up!”

The dwarf that opened the door yelled desperately. And arrows started to pour down again as if his yell was a signal.

“Ugh! I got hit!”

“Run!”

The warriors entered the building one by one. Siri entered the door as fast as a squirrel and then leaned her body on the door's frame and took out the crossbow she had on her back.

“Fire!”

Their objective wasn't to drive back their enemy. It was closer to protecting themselves.

When Siri fired the second arrow, Tae Ho and Rolph rolled together and entered the building. Tae Ho started to breathe as he was holding his breath and then looked beyond the door. The scene of the red letters getting bigger and bigger was horrifying.

“Close the door!”

Siri yelled after firing her fourth arrow. And the warrior that was already on wait closed the door quickly. But it wasn't the time to relax.

“Over here! Enter!”

The dwarf Isaac made a gesture with his hand in a corner of the

building. It seemed like there was a secret passage connecting underground that a part of the floor was opened up.

Pababak! Pak! Pak!

The arrows hit the wooden door consecutively. And the similar sound was heard on the roof and the walls as if it was hailing.

“Get in!”

As Siri gave the order, the warriors threw their bodies to the passageway without asking or refuting. Tae Ho threw the furniture near the door instead of running to the passageway immediately to try to buy more time.

“Tae Ho!”

Rolph, that got in first, yelled. And Siri that had stayed until the end pushed Tae Ho’s back and the two of them ran towards the passageway.

The passageway that was connected with a ladder instead of stairs was deeper than they thought. Tae Ho and Siri jumped towards it because they didn’t have the leisure to climb down the ladder. It seemed to be about 4 meters.

“Ugh!”

“Careful!”

The warriors that had jumped down first groaned and made some space for them. Siri landed swiftly as a squirrel, and Tae Ho landed with a heavy but stable sound.

“Keep going! They will notice it in no time!”

Isaac closed the lid and yelled. He had climbed downstairs quite quickly and urged the warriors. And then, thudding sounds was heard from beyond the lid.

Although the passage wasn’t that small, it was quite small for the warriors of Valhalla that easily surpassed 180cm. There were even warriors that reached the ceiling.

The warriors kept going forward when they couldn't see well, and Siri stayed last and waited for Isaac.

“Go! Hurry!”

Isaac yelled towards Siri and then gulped dry saliva and looked up the lid. For the dwarves, that could see on the darkness pretty well, he could see the blades of the axes starting to penetrate the lid.

“Damn it!”

There was no reason. Isaac cursed and then after he told the warriors to keep running he hit the wall.

“Close your ears! I will blow it up!”

Isaac didn't wait for their opinion. Tae Ho closed his eyes immediately, and in that instant, a strong tremor covered the warriors.

Bababababng!

Maybe he had already planned to blow it up, that the explosion only occurred in a small part. The tunnel crumbled and blocked the passageway.

“Cough! Ugh!”

“Kugh.”

The warriors coughed and groaned. Siri also coughed a few times as if she was in pain and then yelled.

“Are you okay?! Everyone, call your number! One!”

As Siri started, the other warriors also started to call their numbers.

“Nine!”

Tae Ho yelled in a low voice and shortly and after calming his breath he looked at his surroundings. It seemed that he got a bit more accustomed to the darkness that he could now see the faces

of his companions.

“Thirteen!”

The last number was heard. Although several of them didn't have strength in their voices, Siri let out a sigh of relief as there were no casualties.

While the dwarf was looking at the action of the warriors, as the last number was called he approached Siri and said.

“I'm Isaac. Let's go a bit deeper for now. There will be light there and it will be more comfortable to breathe.”

They had no reason to refuse. As Siri made an eye gesture, the warriors that were at the front started to go one by one. And after going on from 10 more meters, a wide space appeared just like Isaac had said.

“Oh, Isaac!”

A dwarf that was anxious while looking at the warriors of Valhalla getting out of the tunnel yelled brightly when he saw Isaac. Tae Ho and Siri, that got out last started to look at the room. Although the ceiling was low and there was no furniture, about 20 dwarves were gathered in this place.

‘They really are small.’

Although it was more distinctive as the warriors of Valhalla all had big builds, but the dwarves really were small.

‘It feels kind of marvelous.’

They were short but their shoulders were broad and their arms were long. Because of that, rather than being similar to middle schoolers they really looked like another species.

‘And there are only men here.’

They should all be men as they had grown beards.

While Tae Ho was looking at those dwarves, Siri ordered for

treatment of the warriors that were in urgent need of treatment, and then spoke towards Isaac and the dwarves.

“We are warriors of Valhalla. We came because Valkyrie Rasgrid sent us. Just what happened?”

“Our mine got taken.”

“By who?”

As Siri asked, Isaac, frowned and then said with a serious expression.

“It happened yesterday at dawn. We were going to eat breakfast and sleep like usual. But there was poison in our food.

“Can’t dwarves distinguish poison?”

As one of the warriors asked as if he was talking by himself, Isaac’s pointy ears flinched.

“Our olfactory and gustatory senses are indeed sensitive. But it’s not to the point that we can distinguish the flavor of a weak poison. And actually, that poison really wasn’t much. It just made it hard for you to move, it didn’t pose any danger to your life at all.”

The dwarves, that had a much stronger body than humans, were resistance towards poison in the first place. They could chew down poisonous mushrooms while laughing.

“But the situation made that poison to be fatal.”

Isaac frowned as if he gulped down something bitter and then said towards Siri and the warriors.

“I’m sure you saw them, but the ones that attacked us were our companions. They are poor things that got cursed and transformed into monsters. Do you know about ghouls?”

“I know that they are dead corpses that become monsters. They eat human flesh.”

As Siri replied with a stiff expression, Isaac nodded.

“That’s right. But what’s more terrible is that if we die bitten by them we will also become ghouls. Some of the ones that ate the poison and became weakened got bit by them....And then hell unfolded.”

It was enough even if he didn’t explain further. Tae Ho, that occasionally played zombie games as a hobby, could easily imagine the scene of the ghouls multiplying.

“Are you the only survivors?”

“Probably.”

At Siri’s question, Isaac answered with a depressed tone. It seemed like the other dwarves also got depressed that they lowered their heads and their shoulders dropped.

Rolph looked at those dwarves and then asked.

“Isaac, is there another passage? One to use to escape.”

“The ones connected outside of the village are already in their hands or we destroyed them to stop them from coming in. And.....”

“And?”

“Even if that were possible, we can’t escape like this?”

“If you are talking about revenge.....”

“That’s not it. It’s more important than taking revenge.”

Isaac interrupted Rolph’s words and then said while spreading his shoulders confidently.

“An unt has been discovered in the mines about fifteen days ago.”

“Unt!”

“My God!”

The warriors raised their voices and exclaimed in admiration. And then Isaac opened his eyes widely as if he was surprised and

then asked.

“Oh, you know about Unts?”

“No, we don’t.”

“What’s that?”

The warriors tilted their heads and Tae Ho was the only one to nod.

‘Right, this is how it should be.’

It would be weird if they did know about unts.

Tae Ho’s satisfaction was secondary, and Isaac that was dumbfounded for a moment cleared his throat and then started to explain.

“An unt is a really precious metal. It’s a thing that’s called as the essence of the stars or God’s precious metal.”

“So it’s merely a precious metal?”

As Siri asked shortly, Isaac shook his head bluntly.

“It’s not merely that. Right! Mjolnir! The thing that was used when making Mjolnir was an unt! The weapons made with an unt are the strongest and most durable in the world! It’s even amazing when amplifying the power of your runes!”

“Ohh!”

At the word of Mjolnir, the warriors reacted immediately. Wasn’t that weapon the weapon of the strongest warrior of Asgard, Thor?

Mjolnir, that could call thunderclouds and make explosions of thunder was Asgard’s strongest weapon. So if it was a precious metal to make that Mjolnir, you wouldn’t be able to judge it as being ‘merely’ a precious metal.

“It’s a mystical material that can only be refined by starlight and moonlight. We must find that metal.”

“Can’t we find it later?”

“We can’t. In the first place, the reason they attacked seems to be because of the unt. The wicked vampire that attacked us is corrupting the holy anvil to steal the unt that is being protected by the holy anvil. If we get the unt taken by them, a weapon like Mjolnir may appear in the enemy’s hands.”

Siri frowned. She had her doubts, but if what he was saying was true, then the ones that attacked the mines were enemies of Asgard.

If they get the unt taken a weapon like Mjolnir may appear in their hands.

Although the process took a huge jump, they couldn’t overlook it. And the warriors that knew of Mjolnir’s power had their expressions stiffen.

“And in the first place, if we want to escape, we have to destroy them. Just like I said before, the passageway we just got through was the last one connecting to the outside. The one controlling our brothers that became ghouls is the vampire, so if we kill him our brothers won’t be able to move as well. So we will have an opportunity to escape!”

As Isaac yelled with strength again, the dwarves clenched their fists and cheered. Isaac approached Siri that still had a stiffened expression and said.

“We know where he is. If we use the passageways he isn’t aware of we will be able to approach him comparatively easier. It was impossible by ourselves, but what is there to fear when the warriors of Valhalla are with us?!”

There was some instigation in his words. Siri closed her eyes once instead of answering immediately and then looked at Tae Ho.

“Tae Ho, what do you think?”

Siri’s voice became low. Because of that, Tae Ho didn’t get flustered at the sudden question and instead thought about the

words Isaac said.

They will attack the boss controlling his minions and open a path to escape.

Although the warriors of Valhalla may be satisfied with just that, that wasn't the case for Tae Ho.

"Isaac, don't you have a bit more information? Things such like the vampire we have to kill and the place he is at."

As Tae Ho asked calmly, it seemed like Isaac also became calmer that he replied in a calmer voice.

"Mmm....First, just like you know the vampire is weak towards sunlight. He's the same as us. And....Rather than using magic, it seems like he fights with his body. He's big and looks like a beast, and in addition, his claws became longer or shorter as he wished. His skin was pale.....and he didn't have any hair and had black eyes."

"He's like Stragos."

As Rolph said in a low voice, everyone turned to look at Rolph.

"Rolph, do you know something?"

As Siri asked, Rolph put on an awkward smile.

"I don't know the details....But I do know that he's especially strong even among the ghouls. He has great physical capabilities, and there's poison in his claws and teeth. He's a bit bigger than us.....And just like Isaac said he's weak at sunshine."

If he said that he was bigger than even the warriors of Valhalla, it was certain that he would be bigger than 2m.

Rolph glanced at Isaac as if asking if he knew more. Isaac understood the meaning almost immediately and then started to explain again.

"The place he's at is the place the unit is. It's a place that was made long ago to refine the unit. It's also been more than ten years

since we use it. Anyways, the holy anvil is in that place. And the place is like this.”

Isaac spread a big map on the ground. It was similar to a fortress that the paths were all complicated.

The enemy they had to defeat was Stragos.

And the location was the room that had the unt in it.

Tae Ho listened to the given conditions once again and then raised his head. It was because he had thought of something.

“Isaac, will this be possible?”

Tae Ho started to speak.

< Episode 6 – God’s precious metal (1) > End

Episode 6/Chapter 2: God's precious metal

(2)

10 Valhalla warriors.

20 dwarf warriors.

They were the remaining ones after excluding 3 warriors of Valhalla and 5 dwarves that couldn't do battle because of their injuries.

The dwarves armed themselves with a round shield and a sword or axe, and the warriors that lost their shields due to the rain of arrows received new ones from the dwarves.

After the preparations were done, Siri calculated the time. It would soon be midday.

"Let's go!" Isaac urged the warriors and stood at the front. Siri followed at the back..

The fortress of the dwarves was divided, as the underground passage was connected with the mines and the fortress was above ground. The place the Unt was wasn't underground but above ground, and on top of that was the top floor of the fortress, the second floor.

"I'm confident on not encountering any enemies until we reach the top. But starting then, we will have to fight with all our strength."

It seemed like Isaac was nervous because his voice started to tremble. Siri nodded and then said to Tae Ho in a low voice, "Tae Ho, tell me immediately if you see something."

Siri had overcome danger twice thanks to Tae Ho. It seemed like she trusted him quite a bit.

"Beyond that door, the top floor will appear."

After moving past the blocked or broken passageways for quite a while, Isaac pointed to a big metallic door. The dwarves were breathing in or pulling their weapons closer to their bodies, and the warriors of Valhalla also glared at the door while steeling themselves.

“Starting now, it will be a battle of speed. Let’s go!” he said.

After they opened the door, they saw a big hall that had a high ceiling, unlike the passageway. The dwarves started to run with all their strength with their short legs and the warriors of Valhalla ran lightly while being aware of their surroundings.

“Over there!”

“They are flocking in!”

Isaac and Tae Ho yelled at the same time. Isaac’s eyes were looking at the right crossroad and Tae Ho’s eyes were looking beyond his back.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

As dozens of heavily armed dwarf ghouls came charging, the entire hall seemed to ring. Red letters approached quickly.

“Keep running!”

Siri ordered them to keep running instead of fighting. Isaac had turned around the corner, and the warriors also kept running.

“They are also coming in front of us!”

After Tae Ho yelled, Siri and Rolph took out their crossbows. Two dwarf ghouls that were charging from the front fell down and Isaac took in a breath and then yelled, “I will entrust you the front!”

Siri and the warriors charged forward. Tae Ho also grabbed Runefang and passed the dwarves.

“Turn back! Fire!”

There were only tens of ghouls in front of them but there were dozens of them behind them. In addition, they felt like more ghouls were coming from the path they hadn't taken.

The dwarves turned back at Isaac's order and then they stood in a line and raised a wall of shields. And then they took out three pieces of metal that looked like the head of a dragon from beyond those spaces.

Chwaaak!

Fire surged from the heads of the dragons. The fire instantly devoured the ghouls.

"Forgive me!" Isaac yelled while looking at the burning ghouls. Some warriors of Valhalla that turned to look back admired, and Tae Ho pushed back a dwarf ghoul with his shield and then crushed its head.

"Keep going! Starting from here it becomes a single path, so we will stop them!"

It wasn't an easy task. The ghouls that were lit on fire tried to take one more step instead of collapsing, and in the first place, there were just too many ghouls.

However, Siri nodded. Isaac smirked and made a gesture with his chin towards the warriors of Valhalla and the warrior that was at the rear raised a flamethrower a dwarf had given him.

"Let's go!"

Siri didn't turn back. And Tae Ho, who was charging forward with her, did the same.

Explosions were heard from behind them. The yells of the dwarves and the sound of metal clashing rang through the hall.

"Incoming!" Tae Ho yelled, as soon as he climbed the stairs. Ten ghouls, that were guarding the room that had the Unt, came charging towards them. Siri and Rolph fired their crossbows, and

the warrior with the flamethrower smiled and said, “I’m also firing!”

The head of the dragon spat fire this time too. The warriors cheered and the ghouls screamed.

“Don’t drop your guard!”

Isaac had used three flamethrowers. They couldn’t cover the entire hall with just one. The ghouls fired their crossbows from beyond the fire, and the warriors of Valhalla charged while covering their heads with the shield, instead of making a shield wall.

“Valhalla!”

“Ullr!”

“Odin is looking!”

Their arms trembled every time the crossbow hit. But the warriors didn’t stop. They swung their swords and axes towards the ghouls.

“Idun!” Tae Ho also yelled and swung Runefang. He gave a quick glance at the hall but he didn’t see any more red letters.

“Open it!”

At Siri’s order, two warriors opened the big and heavy marble door. Rolph and three warriors fired their crossbows randomly, and the warrior that was fascinated by the flamethrower charged forward and spat more fire.

“In the ceiling!” Tae Ho yelled.

Stragos.

The one that had brought the tragedy to the dwarven fortress was hanging from the ceiling.

“Kwaak!”

Just as Isaac and Rolph had explained, it really was a grey

monster. It wasn't only on his head, but almost his entire body was covered by strange tattoos. He threw himself towards the warrior holding the flamethrower, and the warrior turned the flamethrower towards the monster, but it wasn't enough. The nails of the Stragos slashed the arm of the warrior.

“Kuak!”

The arm got cut off by the attack. The flames coming out from the flamethrower fell to the ground and started to burn the air, and as soon as the Stragos landed, it swung his arm again and cut off the head of the warrior.

Blood started to pour out from the warrior that had lost his arm. Rolph and Siri fired arrows towards the monster, and two warriors raised their shields and tried to bash him.

“Uoooooooo!”

It was a charge resembling a rhinoceros, but it didn't reach him. The Stragos fell back almost ten meters with just one leap.

“Kill them, my servants!”

As the Stragos yelled, the dwarf ghouls that were waiting in several rooms started to get out and charged towards the warriors. And that number was close to 20.

“Shield Wall!”

Siri charged forward instead of falling back and raised her shield. The arrows fired by the ghouls hit their shields, and Rolph groaned.

It was a strange thing. They would only get surrounded if they kept going like this, but Siri and the warriors kept moving towards the inside of the room while maintaining their Shield Wall.. The dwarf ghouls fired their crossbows again, and the Stragos glared at the group.

And Tae Ho also glared back. The structure of the room he had

heard from Isaac resembled the actual room. big circular room. There was a pillar made of stone was on the other side of the door and the holy anvil was on top of it.

However, Tae Ho didn't even look at the Unt on top of the anvil. He looked at other places with the dragon's eye and in the end, he was able to find it.

“I'm going!”

“Go!” Siri yelled and released the Shield Wall. The warriors started to charge towards the ghouls at the same time and then took their attention.

Tae Ho ran. It wasn't towards the glaring Stragos or towards the holy anvil, but towards the wall.

Isaac had said that the Unt could only be refined by starlight and moonlight. It was a wonder how it could be refined by those things but there was something he had thought of after listening to Isaac. In addition, hadn't Isaac said that this room was meant to refine the Unt?

They refined the Unt in this place. And for that, they needed starlight and moonlight. On top of that, this place was on the top floor. If he connected all of the conditions, then one result emerged.

And so he asked, and Isaac affirmed.

“Open it!” Rolph yelled. Tae Ho pulled on the switch that was on the wall, and in that moment a loud sound was heard in the ceiling.

Kugagagaagaga!

The ceiling opened, just like a dome. And the sun, that was at the highest at midday, showed up.

“Kuaaak!”

The dwarf ghouls that had their skins exposed started to yell.

Although the ones that had their bodies covered seemed to resist it a bit, they couldn't show proper movements. The reason was because of the Stragos.

Smoke started to surge on the body of the Stragos, which was only wearing pants. Because of that he let out a terrible cry and tried to dodge the sun, but there was no way he could dodge the sun that was right above him, and the ceiling was still opening even now.

“Now is the time! Kill him!”

Two warriors charged towards the Stragos. And then, the Stragos swung his two hands and started to mumble something in a low voice.

Something wasn't right. Because of that, Siri, who was facing the dwarf ghouls, left them alone and turned her crossbow towards the Stragos.

Siri's arrow pierced the shoulder, but it didn't stop mumbling. In addition, the tattoos on his torso started to shine brightly.

“Hit his head!” Rolph yelled. The warrior swung his axe vertically, and the Stragos yelled something like a chant instead of mumbling anymore.

Tae Ho looked at the sky and then understood what he had done.

Dark clouds were coming towards them. It wasn't a natural cause. The clouds that had gathered were only covering the ceiling of the fortress and blocking the sunlight.

The axe stabbed on his shoulder. Then the Stragos pierced the chest of the warrior with his nails, and although both of them yelled equally, the one that fell was the warrior.

“Kuhak!”

The Stragos yelled evilly. Tae Ho looked at the ceiling once again. It was because the biggest letters he had seen until now was

approaching.

“Get away from him!” Tae Ho yelled. Siri, Rolph and the warriors charging towards him flinched, and the warrior that was already close to him got covered in acid that fell from the sky.

“Uaak!”

The warrior fell while screaming. A black monster that seemed to be a fused monster of a bat and a lizard appeared from the ceiling. It was so big that its wings were about ten meters wide.

It stood on the borders of the ceiling and started to pour down acid again. The warriors could only dodge the acid and fall back, and the Stragos smiled evilly and ran towards the wall. As the clouds were already blocking the sunlight, it seemed as if he was going to ride the monster and pour acid.

He couldn't just look idly. Tae Ho also ran like the Stragos. When he reached the wall, Tae Ho kicked on the air and jumped.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Just Like a Storm]

The Stragos got on the monster, which had lowered its head. Tae Ho jumped once more into the air and flew towards him.

As he had never imagined that Tae Ho would jump on the air, the Stragos got hit by Tae Ho's body slam and fell from the monster. Tae Ho hurriedly extended his arms and grabbed the neck of the monster.

“Make him fall!”

The Stragos, that fell to the ground, swung his claws and ordered the monster. And then, the monster surged to the sky. It seemed as if he was planning to drop Tae Ho from a high point.

“Tae Ho!” Siri and Rolph yelled urgently. Tae Ho grabbed the neck of the monster tightly and then realized one thing.

He was accustomed to it.

Riding on monsters, that is.

Flying in the sky with a monster.

Because the Dragon Knight Kalsted was indeed a Dragon Knight. Gryphons and Wyverns were obvious things, and he had even ridden and fought on the strongest aerial monster, a dragon!

[Saga: The one that can handle dragons]

[Synchro rate: 8%]

The empty slot filled up. And simultaneously, his synchro rate went up.

“Turn your head!” Tae Ho grabbed the head of the monster and ordered. The monster resisted but it turned unwillingly. The overwhelming and unyielding spirit of Tae Ho made that possible.

Siri and Rolph opened their eyes widely and the warriors of Valhalla cheered instinctively, but the Stragos realized that something wasn't right.

“Let's go!” Tae Ho ordered, and the monster moved towards the ground and then started to spit acid.

< Episode 6 – God's precious metal (2) > End

Episode 6/Chapter 3: God's precious metal

(3)

The thick green acid melted the floor. Stragos rolled on the ground, barely dodging the acid, and after that opened his eyes as if he could hardly believe it.

“Maguros!”

As he yelled desperately, the monster Tae Ho was riding roared in reply. It seemed like it was saying that it didn't intend to attack.

[The Enraged]

[Stragos: Bergot]

[Resisting]

[Maguros]

The two were in red. Tae Ho grabbed the neck of the monster called Maguros tightly and smiled bitterly. Just like the other sagas, it seemed like ‘The One That Can Handle Dragons’ was also incomplete. He couldn't control Maguros completely yet. But there was still another method.

“Fly again!”

Maguros roared loudly and then surged into the air. However, it didn't last long this time. Tae Ho turned Maguros again.

“Go! Return to your owner!”

It was a flight closer to a vertical dive. Maguros roared, and Stragos realized what Tae Ho was about to do.

“You evi-”

He couldn't finish cursing. Maguros started to dive towards the ground. Precisely speaking, it was above Stragos's head.

The roar and the cries were mixed. Maguros's neck, which fell

head on, got bent and that huge beast crashed onto Stragos. Its huge wings got bent at a strange angle.

The warriors of Valhalla pulled back or assumed a defensive stance. Siri and Rolph each looked at different places. Siri looked at the sky, and Rolph looked at Maguros that had crashed.

A smile appeared on Siri's face. And Rolph, who had looked at the sky late, called out Idun's name.

Tae Ho was in the air. He had jumped before Maguros crashed and was spinning in the air.

“Uwat!”

Tae Ho maneuvered in the air rather sloppily and then started to roll after he landed. Rolph laughed freshly and Siri looked at the Maguros again and ordered, “Fire! Finish him for certain!”

The warriors of Valhalla reacted. The ones that had crossbows, including Rolph, started to fire arrows consecutively, and the ones that didn't started to throw their axes.

In the middle of this, Tae Ho let out a groan and touched the ground. Although he had maneuvered in the air, as it was from quite high it hurt a lot. But it wasn't the time to shrink down in pain. Tae Ho's eyes still saw the red letters. Although it had almost died, it wasn't dead yet. And it was the same for the Stragos.

He needed to deal the final blow. Tae Ho gritted his teeth and stood up and then a nice thing entered his eyesight.

‘The flamethrower!’

It was the flamethrower that the warrior that had been killed by Stragos had been holding. Although the part of the head where the fire came out was bent, it didn't matter that much. It would still be useful.

Tae Ho threw the flamethrower towards Maguros and at the same time yelled towards Rolph, “Rolph! Explode it!”

It was too short, but Rolph understood it. He fired an arrow towards the flamethrower that fell near the armpit of Maguros and then activated his saga.

[Saga: The Arrow of the Hunter Calls for an Explosion]

Bang!

The arrow that hit the flamethrower exploded. And in that moment, an explosion much bigger than Tae Ho had imagined occurred.

‘These crazy dwarves!’

He had expected an explosion, but he didn’t think it would be this much. Were they carrying those things like nothing?

Whatever Tae Ho’s thoughts were, the big explosion covered Maguros immediately. It seemed like the sticky liquid covering Maguros’s skin was making the fire grow more.

The warriors of Valhalla opened their eyes roundly at the sudden explosion, but it only lasted for a moment. Then they enjoyed the situation and cheered like always.

“We won!”

“We beat it!”

“Burn them more! More!”

Some of the warriors seemed to want to make the fire bigger, so they threw the nearby dwarf ghouls in as lumber.

Siri laughed while being at a loss for words but then nodded slowly. Her stiff expression seemed to be loosened up a bit.

Rolph turned to look at Tae Ho instead of looking at the scene his arrow had made.

“I was really amazed. Are you okay?” e walked while asking.

Tae Ho nodded and answered, “I’m fi... not yet!”

“Kuaaaaaaak!”

A roar exploded along with Tae Ho's voice. And Stragos surged up from the fire. One of his arms was destroyed, and there were terrible burns on all of his body but he was still alive.

His black nails became long. Then he swung his claws towards the nearest warrior at a speed that was hard to follow with the eyes. The warriors holding the bodies of the dwarf warriors tried to block with the ghouls, but it wasn't enough. The claws of Stragos slashed the waist of the warrior deeply.

The warrior grabbed at his waist and fell and Stragos yelled once again. His skin was recovering a bit. Siri then pulled the trigger.

The arrow hit his back and then got shaken but after that, he disappeared.

"Tae Ho!" Siri yelled. Stragos kicked the ground with an amazing strength and then charged towards Tae Ho, instead of Siri that had fired the arrow. Although they were 10 meters away, it was meaningless

'Don't joke!'

At that moment, Tae Ho grabbed at the air. The warrior's sword activated and Runefang blocked Stragos's claws.

Bang!

Tae Ho got pushed back. Stragos attacked Tae Ho once more after landing. He attacked with overwhelming strength and speed. Tae Ho didn't breathe. He concentrated on Stragos's claws. Some attacks scratched Tae Ho, but they weren't lethal.

Stragos urgently attacked.. Tae Ho looked at his attack calmly and then swung Runefang roughly. Runefang parried Stragos's claws and hissing left hand got bounced back.

Bang!

An explosion occurred at Stragos's back. It was Rolph's arrow. Stragos tried to stand up, even when letting out a terrible cry, and

then one more arrow hit his head like a drawing.

It was Siri. Her eyes were directed beyond its head with the arrow stuck in it. Tae Ho was the one there.

Tae Ho swung Runefang. It was a beautiful trajectory. The sharp blade hit the neck and advanced like that. He beheaded him in an instant.

The warriors gulped air. Contrary to them, Tae Ho breathed out. Runefang sliced the air after cutting down Stragos's head and then he fell down. The head that got separated from the body rolled on the ground.

Boom.

Tae Ho perceived the sound late. He breathed out once more and the warriors cheered. Siri didn't break her firing posture even after Stragos's head fell, and only after Tae Ho dropped Runefang did she loosen her shoulders and let out a sigh of relief.

[Stragos's corpse]

The red letters transformed to become white, which represented neutrality. Tae Ho released the Dragon's Eye and then sat down as if collapsing.

"Idun's warrior!"

"Idun's pride!"

The warriors yelled and approached Tae Ho. Tae Ho closed his eyes tightly instead of welcoming them.

It hurt. It hurt like hell. It seemed as if it was because of the poison in his nails, that he felt as if his wounds were burning.

However, Tae Ho smiled bitterly. He breathed in calmly and checked himself.

[Synchro rate: 9%]

It had also risen this time. And Tae Ho became certain.

‘It’s related to the completion of the saga.’

It wasn’t only the Immortal Warrior. The other sagas were also related to the synchro rate. If he investigated a bit more, he would know how far his saga could reach and what he could transform into sagas more clearly.

‘And...’

He was right in front of the 10%.

‘There’s something.’

There would be a change the moment he reached 10%. It wasn’t something anyone had particularly decided on, but Tae Ho felt that way. It was the prediction of the progamer Lee Tae Ho, not Kalsted’s.

“Tae Ho! Are you okay?!”

“You aren’t dead, right?!”

“Wake up! Let’s celebrate the victory!”

The warriors surrounded Tae Ho and talked loudly. Tae Ho just nodded suitably and then laid down.

‘Let’s sleep like this.’

He was hurt and also exhausted.

However, he didn’t feel even a little bit of sleep.

‘Idun’s blessing.’

Tae Ho smiled bitterly. As he stood up, giving up on sleeping, the warriors laughed again.

“Ohh! Spirit entered your eyes again!”

“That was a nice attack!”

“Absorb the rune quickly!”

While being urged by the warriors, Tae Ho extended his hand towards Stragos. Then red smoke started to appear like fire.

“Wow.”

It was three times the amount than when he killed Red Eyes. For it to be this much even when taking off Siri's and Rolph's share, it seemed like he was a much bigger figure than he had thought.

‘Well, he did call dark clouds and did many things.’

Tae Ho nodded and then clenched his fist lightly. The runes he had absorbed made him feel full and filled his chest.

“You have done great. It was an amazing performance.”

Siri approached and the warriors opened a path for her. Tae Ho smiled and said, “You and Rolph too.”

Because the arrows of those two people had played a really big role.

He turned to look at Siri and Rolph and then retrieved the remaining runes from Stragos's body. After that came the treatment of the injured and the retrieval of the deceased.

“Okay, let's check on this thing called Unt.”

At Siri's words, all the warriors turned to look at the holy anvil.

The Gods' precious metal, Unt. The object that had caused all of this.

The warriors, who were filled with curiousness, walked hurriedly. It was the same for Rolph and Siri.

‘Ah, I was about to forget.’

Tae Ho, who was following them from the rear, stopped in his place and then went towards the still burning Maguros's corpse.

Retrieval of the rune.

Red smoke started to get sucked into Tae Ho's palm again.

< Episode 6 – God's precious metal (3) > End

Episode 6/Chapter 4: God's precious metal

(4)

A huge monster had crashed, explosions had occurred, and the scars left by the weapons made the room a mess. But only the holy anvil was in perfect shape.

“It's a really big anvil.”

“You are right. It's really big.”

“Even a person would be able to lie down on it!” The warriors that had gathered admired.

Even Tae Ho thought that the holy anvil was huge, even when it was his first time seeing an anvil. Although he didn't know much, he did know that it would be some times bigger than a normal anvil.

There were rune letters on the pillar made from stones, and a big white anvil that had several black spots on it was on top of that. And once again, there was a silver metal the size of a fist above that.

“Wait. Is that little thing the Unt?”

“Warriors of Valhalla! We came to help!”

The loud voice made the warriors gulp down their question. Just as they expected, it was Isaac and the dwarves.

Isaac, who got into the room first, looked at the burning corpse of Maguros and the beheaded Stragos and then smiled brightly.

“You did it!”

Isaac wasn't the only one that was excited. The dwarves that had covered themselves with a bandana or a cape to block the sunlight, started to burst into laughter.

“Isaac, is your group fine?”

As Siri asked calmly, Isaac nodded heavily as if he had gotten a hold of himself.

“It’s not that we haven’t suffered any damages, but we are fine. Mercury is one of our specialties.”

The dwarves had used their flamethrowers and the flashbang. When looking at the explosion the flamethrower made, it was highly probable that they had a proper bomb or something.

Isaac smiled, as if telling them not to worry and approached the warriors on his short legs.

“Is the Unt fine?”

“Check it yourself. We wouldn’t know, even if we looked at it.”

As Rolph stepped aside, Isaac started to hurry towards the anvil and then nodded.

“Mm, the holy anvil blocked the evil strength well. The Unt is safe.”

It seemed like the black spots were traces of being led astray.

As Isaac was greatly satisfied, after looking at the other warriors as if gathering their opinions, Rolph asked carefully, “Isaac, is this all?”

“That’s right. That’s why I told you that it was really precious. It’s a miracle that we dug something of that size.”

Isaac looked at the other dwarves as if that wasn’t the case and then everyone nodded at the same time.

However, it wasn’t that great for the warriors. What would they do with just a piece the size of a fist?

“I think that it won’t do much difference even if they take it.”

As one of the warriors spoke, Isaac got worked up.

“What are you saying? You are able to make many things with an Unt of that size! Be it an axe, a sword or several rings!”

Certainly, it might be possible to make an axe or a sword with it. If it were a small one to cut down lumber, that was.

“How much do you need to make Mjolnir?”

Tae Ho thought of the hammer Thor held and then Isaac started to think and pointed at the corpse of the burning Maguros.

“If we take into account the compression, then the size of that monster?”

The warriors all turned to look at Maguros. Just looking at its size, it was several times bigger than the holy anvil.

An Unt the size of a fist; and Mjolnir needed Unts as big as Maguros’s corpse.

“And the enemies can make Mjolnir?”

As the warriors looked at Isaac with cold eyes, he hurriedly cleared his throat.

“Hm, hmhm. Well, I’m not certain. I was just taking in the probabilities.”

As he cleared his throat consecutively while saying that he didn’t lie, the warriors started to jeer him but Tae Ho nodded.

‘I was convinced.’

Stragos was certainly strong. He was a real monster that almost annihilated the entire dwarf mine.

But he was lacking compared to Mjolnir. If an Unt capable of making Mjolnir existed in this mine, then monsters much stronger than Stragos would have flocked here.

Siri also seemed to have thought the same thing, as she was nodding slightly.

“But still, thanks to you we were able to avenge our brothers. We thank you sincerely.”

Isaac, who was still clearing his throat while being jeered by the

warriors, then hit his chest like the warriors of Valhalla and said, “We just did what he had to as warriors of Valhalla.”

Then the warriors of Valhalla, who seemed to be weak towards compliments became embarrassed and Siri replied with a calm voice, “We are still grateful nonetheless, whether that was your task or an action that doesn’t ask to be rewarded.”

Isaac smirked and then turned to look at the dwarves. While Isaac was being jeered at, the others had been inspecting the anvil and then placed the Unt in a box and handed it to Isaac.

“Isaac.”

“Yeah.”

Isaac touched the box with a complicated expression and then approached Siri.

“Here, take it.”

Isaac gave her the box. Siri blinked as if she was surprised and then asked instead of receiving the box, “Will it be fine?”

“It’s fine. We were planning to give it to Valhalla after we refined it anyways. But after seeing this, you may know that refining the Unt after this disaster is impossible. And even if we are holding onto it, other monsters may come to take it. That’s why I will pass on the honor of refining this Unt to the master crafters of Valhalla.”

Refining an Unt seemed to be a real glory, such that the dwarves wore a really regretful expression. Siri looked at those dwarves for a moment and then spoke to Isaac.

“I understand. I will respect your will.”

As Siri grabbed the box with a respectful motion, Isaac gritted his teeth and let go of the box.

[The Strong Willed]

[Isaac]

Isaac turned his eyes away purposefully, to shake off his regrets, and Siri also hid it quickly in her cape, as if being considerate of him.

Only after they hid the box did Isaac lift his head and say towards Siri and the warriors, “Now, what about drinking some beer? We have to celebrate having taken revenge for our brothers and grieve for them. We also have to treat our benefactors!”

“Ohh!”

“Are we tasting dwarf beer?”

“Dwarf beer!”

As the warriors cheered and enjoyed it, even Isaac started to feel so good that he yelled, “Of course! We will give you the barrel itself!”

“You are cool! You are a man!”

“You really do know something!”

They seemed to would put their arms around their shoulders at any time. However, Siri poured cold water on the scene.

“No, that’s impossible. We don’t have the time. We have to return quickly.”

‘Gasp?!’

“How can that be!”

“You are too much!” The warriors complained, while wearing teary faces, but Siri was blunt.

“Isaac, we will be returning. I’m sorry we can’t help you with cleaning up.”

He had to quickly tell Valkyrie Rasgrid about what had happened in the mine. In addition, an army was charging from the west to attack the fortress. It wasn’t the time to be drinking beer leisurely.

But it was still dwarf beer.

The warriors looked at Isaac with earnest eyes and Isaac glanced at Siri, but there was no change in her expression. In the end, the one that gave up first was Isaac.

“Um, I can’t do anything about it. But still, we can’t send away our benefactors with empty hands. We will give you one each, so follow us.”

“Are you giving us a barrel each?”

Rolph was also a warrior of Valhalla, so he asked with quite an expectant voice. And as the depressed warriors all raised their heads, Isaac smirked.

“I will give you something better than that. Have you heard about the dwarf armory?”

“Dwarf armory!”

“Weapons made by dwarves!”

“Follow me!”

As Isaac led the way confidently, the warriors turned to look at Siri and she smiled bitterly, as if she couldn’t help it, and then nodded.

“Now, take one you like!” Isaac yelled as they reached in front of the armory. The warriors that were jumping about while waiting for the door to open all brightened and went in running.

Swords, axes, bows, shields, armor, helmets, etc. The various equipment were lined up on the walls and the furniture. It seemed like there were at least a hundred of them.

Even the calm Siri seemed to have been so excited that her steps were quite fast while coming to the armory. Tae Ho just stood still at the entrance instead of following everyone else and activated his saga.

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon Can See Through All Things]

In Dark Age, normal weapons were colored in white. And after he

started to look while being aware of that, words appeared over the many weapons in a heap.

[Has an excellent weight balance]

[Huge axe]

[Hard]

[Round shield]

However, Tae checked another thing instead of reading the letters.

‘Gold... No, please let there at least be blue.’

The special equipment would be named with a color.

It was highly probable that this place had only gathered the normal weapons, seeing that only white letters appeared in a heap. But still, Isaac wouldn’t just let them take those things away. It was possible that there was special equipment.

‘Bingo.’

He saw blue words. Tae Ho moved towards the blue words without even looking at any other place.

[The fast and light]

[Hawk’s wing coat]

There was a grey coat adorned with feathers below the blue letters.

As Tae Ho tried to check it more closely to know its use, a voice was heard from behind him.

“To try to pick the wing coat, you have good eyes. And that thing is also excellent when used for defense. It can block blades and has resistance towards magic because of the magic in it. In addition, if you wear it your movements become better.”

It was Isaac. But according to how he spoke, it didn’t seem to be a normal defensive equipment. Tae Ho looked at Isaac, who was

smiling as proudly as if he was looking at his son and then asked honestly, “Isaac, what’s a wing coat?”

“Huh? You don’t know what a wing coat is?”

“Yes.”

Isaac blinked at Tae Ho’s answer. His eyes were asking how he had picked it then, but Tae Ho was just waiting for Isaac to answer.

In the end, Isaac was the one that explained.

“If you wear the wing coat and recite the given chant, you will be able to transform. The things you chose are the wings of a hawk, so you will be able to transform into a hawk.”

“Into a hawk?”

“That’s right. The Valkyries all have a swan’s wing coat. If they have to fly away urgently they will transform into a swan.”

‘So Heda can also transform into a swan?’

Tae Ho imagined Heda transforming into a swan. It wasn’t easy to imagine it but he thought that it would suit her.

“How is it? Try transforming into a hawk after you return.”

It was quite an attractive proposal, because transforming into a hawk and flying in the sky were all interesting things.

“Uh, wait.”

However, Tae Ho thought of another thing in the next moment.

They would return to Black Fortress.

How?

“Uaaaaa! Habasini Too0 Isaheeee!”

The black structures that looked like coffins crossed the sky with an amazing speed. Siri’s voice was heard beyond the voices of the warriors.

“You will bite your tongue! Shut your mou-Ugh?!”

“Captain Siri?!”

“Captain?! Did you bite your ton... Ugh!”

The warriors bit their tongues in consecution. Tae Ho shut his mouth tightly as to not join them and clenched the arm that was holding the hawk’s wing coat.

‘I will also get accustomed to this.’

Someday.

The black flash became faster. The Black Fortress wasn’t that far.

< Episode 6 – God’s precious metal (4) > End

Episode 7/Chapter 1: Valkyrie (1)

A swan that had several golden feathers was flying in the sky as fast as a hawk.

Valkyrie Reginleif.

She, who had a special lineage even among Valkyries, was planning to fly all day and night. However, her flight didn't last that long.

A group was advancing in between dawn and morning.

Reginleif discovered them from afar. However, instead of taking her distance and observing them, she decided to fly towards them a bit quicker. It was because it was impossible to judge by looking from far away.

They were overwhelmingly fast. You couldn't even compare them to the normal advancing speed of an army. But that wasn't the problem.

Reginleif couldn't grasp their number.

A dense and huge mist was covering them. Reginleif looked at the mist moving at abnormal speeds and pondered. Was she going to approach more while taking the risk or grasp the number of the enemies just by looking at the size of the mist?

Reginleif closed her eyes. Originally, she would have chosen to valiantly enter the mist, but it was impossible to do so in this place. The restriction she had did not permit her.

Reginleif closed her beak tightly while pressing down her rage and then turned back gracefully. Reginleif's wings fluttered faster to try to report what she had seen with her eyes.

&

“Bleeeeeergh!”

“A bit ma tong.”

“Captain also bit yo tong?”

One part of them started to throw up and another part of them was conversing with them while bleeding from their mouth.

And in the middle of them, Tae Ho got down the black flash and let out a long sigh.

‘I really like the ground. Walking is really cool.’

Tae Ho was talking by himself and looked at the surroundings. The Black Fortress was busier than when they had departed yesterday. It may be his feeling, but it seemed like there were more people than before.

“Captain, are you okay?”

Siri just nodded while pressing her lips to Rolph’s question. But looking that she was still frowning, it seemed like she had bit her tongue really hard.

‘She’s slightly cute.’

She, pretending not to feel pain was rather cute, but Tae Ho pretended not to have seen that. It was because Rolph, who he thought was thinking the same thing as him, got hit in his shin.

“Captain, a Valkyrie.”

A warrior that was laughing at Rolph gestured with his chin. Valkyrie Rasgrid was walking towards them with quick steps.

“Your number decreased. Was there a battle?”

Rasgrid checked at the group when she arrived and then said in a low voice. Siri gulped once and then answered in a low voice.

“Yes, a Stragos had taken over the fortress.”

Siri reported what had happened on the mine briefly and then gave Rasgrid the unt she received from Isaac.

“It’s the unt the dwarves gave us.”

“I will receive it well.”

Rasgrid took the box that had the unt and then turned to look at all of the warriors.

“You have done well. You have performed greatly.”

She looked at each warrior once as if wanting to memorize their faces and then looked at the warriors that were lying on the Black Flashes.

“The souls of the warriors will transform to become metal warriors. I will take care of the remains.”

The warriors of Valhalla that had died on the battlefield would return to Valhalla be it slow or fast. Regardless of that, the reason they had brought the corpses was to make a funeral for them.

“Rasgrid, what happened with the army in the west?”

After she had almost concluded with her story, Siri asked carefully. The warriors were also curious that they turned to look at Rasgrid.

Rasgrid let out a short sigh and then explained with a hard but gentle voice.

“They are approaching faster than we thought. Reginleif returned this morning from her scouting and told us about the danger. You must have noticed but the reason the number of soldiers increased is that of that. 500 lowest ranked warriors came in support at noon.”

“Can’t we know the number of the enemy?”

“It isn’t clear, but I think that they are at least 6000.”

The number of warriors currently in Black Fortress amounted to 2500, even when counting the ones that came to support. If it was like Rasgrid had said, more than double their number was approaching.

“Originally, I should open a feast and reward you accordingly, but the situation is bad. I prepared a place to rest and eat so I

would like you to rest even if it's not enough. There's a high probability for the battle to occur tomorrow morning or noon."

She seemed like she really was sorry that her cold eyes became a bit warm. Siri answered while representing everyone.

"We understand."

"Right, Ingrid will lead you. I will now return."

Rasgrid fixed her expression after closing and opening her eyes and then hit her left chest lightly.

"For Asgard and the nine planets."

"For Asgard and the nine planets."

As Siri returned the salute, Rasgrid turned back and left. Her fast steps represented the grim situation.

Ingrid, that was the Valkyrie that had come to Valhalla with Tae Ho and the one that told him that Heda came to meet him, entrusted the corpses to some warriors of Odin's legion and then led the group.

"Over here."

Ingrid took the group to a big room. There were plenty of alcohol and meat and of course warm and comfy beds inside the room.

"Don't drink too much."

Ingrid warned them shortly and then left the room. Naturally, everyone turned to look at captain Siri and she loosened her shoulders after looking at her bed that was covered with curtains.

"I will go wash first. Just like Valkyrie Ingrid had said, don't drink too much. You have done well today."

"Captain has also done well."

"For Asgard and the nine planets."

"We will leave food for you captain, so you can take it slow and enjoy."

As soon as Siri's permission was given, the warriors chose the alcohol and meat instead of washing themselves. And that was the same for Tae Ho.

'Let's eat first.'

Thinking about it, he couldn't eat almost anything since morning.

After Tae Ho finished eating and drinking he went to wash and went to sleep. It seemed like his nervousness all faded away that as soon as he lied down he fell into a deep sleep.

&

"Why don't you wake him up?"

"I will feel bad if I wake him when he's sleeping. And the others are also sleeping."

"But didn't you come here on purpose?"

"I just came to see if he was fine, so that's enough."

A small voice.

One which Tae Ho couldn't hear. However, the owner of the voice just looked down at Tae Ho as if it didn't matter and then kissed him on the forehead.

"Let Idun's blessing be with you."

"Mm, Heda."

Just what was he dreaming about?

The woman, Heda, flinched for a moment and then left the room quietly after laughing silently. And Valkyrie Ingrid followed behind that Heda.

&

"She came to meet you at night too."

"But they say you were sleeping."

“How regrettable, right?”

“Just say that you like it, please.”

As Tae Ho said with a tired expression, the warriors laughed freshly and then patted on his shoulder.

“You are a really good friend.”

And looking that they even raised their thumbs it seemed like they were having a lot of fun.

By now, Tae Ho could also laugh like them. It was regretful, but he did relax a bit.

‘It seems like Heda is fine.’

He was worried because she went to another battlefield, but looking that she came to meet him every time, it seemed like she was fine.

“Huh, he’s laughing.”

“What is it? Is it the leisure of the one that already has one?”

“So you are saying that one isn’t regretful, right?”

As the warriors started to speak, Tae Ho was about to say something. However, another sound took their attention before he could even speak.

They were in between walls, but the loud and clear sound made the warriors stand up.

“It’s the horn trumpet!”

“It’s a gathering order! Hurry up!”

Siri, that had already armed herself, appeared from beyond the curtains and yelled. Tae Ho and the warriors prepared quickly and then left the room following Siri.

The insides of the Black Fortress was completely busy. The warriors got on the walls while following the orders of the Valkyries. And Tae Ho, that had also gotten up along the warriors

of Ullr's legion, gulped dry saliva unconsciously.

The mist was charging towards them. You could only explain it like that. In addition, the mist wasn't simply spread widely. It was also high that it looked like there was a grey pillar between the ground and sky.

“Put your battle stances immediately! They are attacking!”

“We will activate rune magic! Don't get surprised!”

“Ullr's legion! Prepare to fire!”

Several voices were heard at the same time. Tae Ho concentrated on Siri's voice and took out Thunderbolt. He stuck closely to the walls of the fortress that started to shine with a blue light and could see the enemies charging towards them after having gotten out of the mist.

“Prepare to fire!”

Siri yelled. And similar orders were being sent in other places too.

Tae Ho felt his breath getting rougher. He had experienced it many times by now, but this was different.

The level of the battlefield he had seen until now was different. As thousands of warriors yelled and charged at the same time, it was understandable that that scene made you feel out of breath.

In addition, gnolls weren't the only things charging towards them. There were huge elephant monsters that seemed to be acting like siege weapons among the gnolls.

“Fire!”

Siri ordered. And Tae Ho reflexively pulled the trigger. Rain of arrows poured down from the fortress, and the gnolls that charged at the front cried and fell.

But there was still a lot of them. The ones that had passed through the rain of arrows and reached near the fortress threw

their hooks. The huge elephant monsters headbutted the fortress, and the gnolls that climbed its back started to fire towards the fortress.

It became a dogfight in an instant. It was a competition between the ones that wanted to climb up and the ones trying to stop them.

Boiling water, rocks and wooden logs fell down the fortress. The arrows pouring downwards and upwards filled the sky and ground.

“Shield wall!”

Siri’s troop covered their heads with their shields and then fired their crossbows. In the midst of the heated battlefield, Tae Ho was breathing to calm his stance and his fingers that were about to pull the trigger stopped. Tae Ho’s eyes moved towards the mist instead of down the fortress.

Red letters.

It wasn’t on the ground but in the sky. Tens of red letters appeared out of the mist.

[Cruel]

[Wyvern Rider]

[Mad]

[Harpy]

Tens of harpies, that were monsters with the torso of a woman and wings and legs of a bird, flew over the fortress. And between them, massive wyverns roared towards the ground.

“Fire towards the sky!”

Someone yelled. And at the same time, the harpies descended like a flock of birds and attacked the warriors on the fortress. The strength in their legs and their sharp claws were threatening enough.

Shields broke and their formation also broke. Because of the attack in the sky, a hole appeared in the defenses, and naturally, the number of gnolls climbing the fortress also increased.

However, the biggest problem was certainly the wyverns. The dragons that were covered with grey leather breathed out fire from a distance the swords and axes didn't reach them. And the riders on top of the wyverns also fired crossbows or poured acid.

Tae Ho breathed in and thought. He thought of a method to reverse this situation.

There were many harpies but few wyverns. The things that were more troublesome were the wyverns.

It was crazy.

But he had to do it. Tae Ho breathed in deeply and then got out of the shield wall. He didn't pay much attention to Rolph's perplexed voice and then kicked the ground and air consecutively and surged up.

The harpies focused on Tae Ho. And Tae Ho received their gazes and yelled inwardly.

'If you got a new item you have to use it!'

"Chant!"

He yelled and turned. And then Tae Ho discovered himself having become a hawk. He flew higher with one more flutter of his wing.

The harpies got perplexed at the sudden transformation. That made an opening, and Tae Ho discovered his target with his eyes of a hawk. He quickly got out of the harpies while being covered by Rolph's and Siri's arrows.

He had wings instead of arms. And had claws instead of his legs.

Tae Ho took a big turn. He flew higher than the wyvern and the objective for that was simple.

“Chant!”

He yelled once again and the claws of the hawk became Tae Ho’s two legs. His kick, that held the momentum of his flight, attacked the back of the rider.

And the rider fell down while yelling. Tae Ho rode on the back of the wyvern instead of the rider.

[Saga: The one that can handle dragons]

The wyvern flinched and then accepted its new owner. It was different with the case of Maguros. Even the letters had changed to green.

“Good!”

Tae Ho also yelled. This wyvern had a saddle and reins.

He fixed his posture automatically. He knew what he had to do the moment he grabbed the reins.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri yelled.

The wyvern took a big turn and flew near the fortress and Siri jumped on top of the wyvern boldly. She sat behind Tae Ho and started to fire her crossbow towards the harpies. Four harpies cried and fell in an instant.

The wyvern fluttered its wings once more. It soared higher, and then Tae Ho looked at a place. His eyes looked at a wyvern rider charging towards him.

[Enraged]

[Wyvern Rider]

How will he attack? Will he order wyvern to spit fire? Or slam with its body or tail?

It was certainly effective, but there was something more effective than that.

“Grab tightly!”

Tae Ho said. Siri flinched and then grabbed Tae Ho’s waist. Tae Ho took in a deep breath and then activated the warrior’s sword.

A long spear used for charging. He couldn’t make something beyond Runefang yet. It was merely a normal weapon like the most basic beginner’s dagger.

But it was enough with this.

Tae Ho knew and the dragon knight Kalsted agreed. And the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho smiled.

“Kwa!”

The opponent’s wyvern spat fire. Tae Ho’s wyvern flew vertically and dodged the fire.

Siri grabbed on Tae Ho’s waist more tightly. Tae Ho controlled the wyvern-like his limbs and the wyvern drew a beautiful line.

Something close to vertical diving. And the attack exploding from the end of that!

Bang!

Thunder clashed. The lance charging spear got destroyed, and the rider on top of the wyvern also got destroyed. The wyvern that couldn’t withstand the shock fell to the ground.

But Tae Ho’s wyvern was different. It flew to the sky once more as if it was a surging flock of birds.

“Waaa!”

“Idun’s warrior!”

“Finish them!”

The warriors cheered. The remaining harpies and wyvern riders all focused on Tae Ho.

And in the middle of their gazes, Tae Ho made a new spear. He glared at his next target and kicked his wyvern. The wyvern surged

up once again.

And in that instant.

Tae Ho realized. He could know.

The dragon knight Kalsted's lance charging. The change that occurred by having recreated that.

[Synchro rate: 10%]

New strength surged on Tae Ho's body.

< Episode 7 – Valkyrie (1) > End

Episode 7/Chapter 2: Valkyrie (2)

The people remembered the name of one man.

Dragon knight Kalsted.

The strongest man in Dark Age.

&

Pa!

The air split broke and exploded. Tae Ho felt it when the wyvern ripped the air with its wings. He detected it. And he closed his eyes because of that.

Kalsted, the one that had the bloodline of a dragon.

He told him. He whispered to the pro gamer Lee Tae Ho.

The things he could do. The new area he could now reach.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri yelled and put more strength in her arms grabbing on Tae Ho’s waist. Tae Ho opened his eyes at her voice that was filled with earnest. The wind still blew strongly. The wyvern flew riskily. Tens of harpies were gathering towards them at the same time.

“Ah.”

Tae Ho said. His yell, that was closer to an exclamation, was filled with dullness. So Siri yelled once again.

“Tae Ho! Get a hold of yourself!”

“Grab tightly!”

Tae Ho yelled. Siri agreed in his cheerful yet powerful order. She stuck closer to Tae Ho’s back and put more strength in her arms.

“Let’s go!”

Tae Ho ordered. He grabbed the reins and lowered his posture and then activated the power of his saga.

[Saga: The one that can handle dragons]

It wasn't simply controlling. The wyvern, that was tired because of overexerting itself, felt strength getting through its wings. It was like it was unleashing the potential even it didn't know it had.

Tae Ho laughed. He read the wind. Then he turned his head to look at the harpies charging towards them like bees and then turned his body. He made a big turn along the wyvern and then activated his saga once more.

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is just like a storm]

It didn't only limit to Tae Ho. The strength of the saga also applied to the wyvern's flight. In addition, the strength was different than before. It was only by a little but it was closer than what Kalsted had done.

A new wind blew. The wind that blew like a whirlwind accompanied the wyvern's flight. It shook the atmosphere along the blowing wind.

Chkwaaaaa!

The wyvern passed through the harpies. The wind teared up the harpies, and the harpies couldn't keep their balance on the shaking air. There were some that became a mess, and some that hit themselves and fell. The harpies numbering more than 20 couldn't even touch Tae Ho.

The wyvern roared. It turned while riding the wind as if it enjoyed flying with Tae Ho. At that moment, Siri leaned her body towards Tae Ho and swung her right arm to look behind her. Tae Ho, that was in the middle of spinning, turned to look at Tae Ho and then read Siri's saga with his saga that had become more powerful.

[Saga: The eyes of the dragon can see through all things]

[Saga: The arrows of the witch never misses its target]

Siri's saga. You could know what it did just by reading the title. Siri pulled the trigger consecutively and the arrows that got fired pierced through the chests of the harpies like a lie.

“One more time!”

Siri yelled. Tae Ho smirked and did as she wished. He passed through the harpies once more.

“Uwaaaaa!”

“Catch and kill them!”

“Finish them!”

The warriors yelled above the fortress. While the dead harpies fell down, they damaged the gnolls that were on the ground and made them perplexed.

“Tae Ho! Be careful!”

Rolph, that was looking at the sky, yelled. It was because he had seen the harpies fall and then saw the wyvern riders turn towards Tae Ho.

The number of the wyvern riders were 3.

And Tae Ho also noticed them. Because of that he lowered his posture even more and told Siri to lower her posture like him and grab him tighter.

Because they would fly with a special method from now on.

One of the specialties of the dragon knight Kalsted.

The fighting method that gave the program Lee Tae Ho the nickname of ‘The king of shooting’.

“Follow me, follow me!”

The strange aura that was flowing on the wyvern's wings disappeared. But instead, the flying method of the wyvern became sharper.

The wyvern riders chased at Tae Ho's back. Two of the three

targeted the wings of Tae Ho's wyvern and breathed out fire.

Tae Ho couldn't see that scene. But he could feel it. As he shifted his weight to his right, the wyvern tilted his body immediately. The fire breaths of the other wyverns passed below and above the wyvern's wing.

Popong!

The fireballs exploded. Tae Ho's wyvern made a complete turn in the air. If it were a normal wyvern, it wouldn't have been able to do that, but the strength of the saga made that possible.

Siri gritted her teeth to gulp down her shout. The wyvern made a turn and surged up, and the wyvern rider that was trying to close in the tail of Tae Ho's wyvern could only charge forward like that.

Tae Ho's wyvern drew a beautiful line again. The wyvern, that seemed to be doing acrobatics in the air, soon caught the back of the wyverns that had breathed out fire.

However, Tae Ho didn't try to execute his lance charge. That wasn't the only ability he could use in a dogfight.

Crash!

Tae Ho's wyvern flew above the other wyvern closely and bit the rider. After biting it strongly it turned it spat him and then turned its head. And the other wyvern rider was in that direction.

Fire breath.

It was weak because it fired it in a hurry but it didn't matter. The rider, that got covered in fire, let out a cry and fell and the wyvern that had lost its wyvern didn't know what to do.

Now, only one wyvern rider remained. Tae Ho said after looking at the last wyvern rider flying towards them late.

"Captain Siri!"

The arrow with an incomparable precision hit the forehead of the rider. Tae Ho charged like that and swung Runefang that was

set on fire. The flame sword made a problem in one of the wings of the opposite wyvern. But it was enough with just that. Because Tae Ho and Siri weren't the only ones on the battlefield!

Rolph's exploding arrow made the wyvern fall. A huge crossbow, that seemed to have been activated late, fired huge arrows at the chest of the wyvern that didn't have its rider.

Three harpies and twenty harpies.

He had nullified their aerial forces.

The warriors cheered and Tae Ho looked down the ground. He saw the enemy forces trying to climb the fortress.

"Pant, pant, pa....."

Siri breathed roughly at his back. She had never imagined that they would fly in this way consecutively.

And Tae Ho looked farther away instead of delivering her safely to the ground. And the Valkyries Rasgrid and Reginleif, that were looking at Tae Ho's performance, also turned to look at the place he was looking at.

The grey mist that resembled a pillar. The enemy forces that were coming out of it endlessly.

Just how many enemies would there be in there? Would more wyvern riders and harpies come out? Or would even more gnolls appear?

It was neither. At that moment Rasgrid opened her eyes abruptly, and Reginleif clenched her fists. And Valkyrie Ingrid, that was encouraging at the warriors, could only turn her head at the terrible uneasiness.

Beyond the mist. What was inside of it. And what appeared now.

Tae Ho also saw it. The strengthened eyes of the dragon were telling him.

The huge red letters.

The letters shining in a scarlet red, as if warning him of the greatest danger.

The mist dispersed. No, it broke. The existence shaking the ground roared and broke the mist.

[Utgard-Loki's warrior]

[Giant: Hgut]

As tall as 20 meters.

The giant that was even bigger than the fortress charged towards it.

&

The warriors of Valhalla knew.

That the God's of Asgard had a long time enemy.

The existence of the giants that had the strength as the Gods and lived on the other side of the planet.

However, they only knew their existence because of the stories. Thanks to that, they felt overwhelming pressure at the giant charging towards them. They couldn't think anything for a moment. And when they barely realized that the existence in front of their eyes was an enemy, it was already in front of the fortress.

The giant had a different look to that of a human. Its upper body was greatly developed, and its body was a grey that resembled a rock. Perhaps, it may really be made with rocks.

Its head was similar to the gnolls. It's long and black hair covered his face and his chest. It's two eyes that had a long distance between them were round and shone in a yellow light.

The giant was holding a giant blunt weapon in its right hand. And obviously enough, the giant swung its blunt weapon towards the fortress.

“Oh, sacred power of the runes!”

Valkyrie Reginleif yelled like thunder. At that moment, a blue and strong light appeared on the fortress and pushed back the giant and the gnolls that were hanging on it by a great distance.

The gnolls, that crashed on the ground, groaned in pain and twitched. The giant stepped on those gnolls and then glared at Reginleif that had activated the rune magic of the Black Fortress.

But Reginleif didn't dodge his eyes at all. The giant roared and raised its blunt weapon, and the warriors gulped air. Reginleif put more strength at the runes.

Babang!

A loud sound exploded towards the air. The blunt weapon hit a wall that couldn't be seen with your eyes. The ground shook, and Reginleif let out a groan.

She would be able to endure a few more hits at most. If she could use the rune magic of Black Fortress however much she wanted, she would have used it the moment the gnolls attacked.

The giant raised his blunt weapon regardless of knowing that or not. Valkyrie Ingrid hurriedly looked towards Rasgrid. She asked for permission with her eyes.

However, Rasgrid didn't have the permission to let the Valkyries participate in the battle. She gritted her teeth and then discovered the black crow Hugin, that was looking down the battlefield.

Rasgrid opened her mouth. And in that instant, the second blow of the giant hit the Black Fortress.

Bang! Bababang!

A shock that was bigger than the first attack occurred. Followed by the loud sound, the sound of the wall breaking was heard, and Reginleif that was hanging on the walls yielded.

The color of the faces of the warriors of Valhalla changed. As valiant as they were, it was rare for them to be scared to this

extent, but they couldn't stop shaking in front of this giant.

In the other hand, the gnolls yelled in joy. The group that was hidden in the mist also raised their weapons and sang the destruction of Valhalla.

The giant raised its blunt weapon again. Reginleif bit her lips and glared at the monster, and Ingrid ran towards Rasgrid. Rasgrid looked at the sky and pleaded.

“Odin!”

‘A giant has appeared. Even if it's rank is low, it's not something the lowest ranked warriors should fight. Allow us, the Valkyries, to participate in the battle. Let us fight the giant directly!’

‘I won't allow it.’

His voice rang in her head. Rasgrid hurriedly turned to look at her side. The crow Hugin was seated on her shoulder.

Rasgrid's cold face crumbled. And Hugin faced Rasgrid with a casual face.

‘Just like you said, it's merely a lowest ranked giant. The battles of the lowest ranked warriors are all a test. So I won't allow the Valkyries to intervene.’

Why had she proposed to bring reinforcements? And why did she only gather lowest ranked warriors?

This place was the battlefield. And at the same time, the place for growth and test.

What Valhalla needed wasn't weak but numerous warriors. It was warriors strong enough to beat Ragnarok.

Rasgrid opened her mouth to protest. But nothing came out her mouth. Because she knew Odin well. She knew really well that he was the God of the cruel and brutal war.

The giant started to attack for the third time. And Reginleif gritted her teeth. Ingrid ran towards Reginleif instead of Rasgrid.

She worked hard to try to help Rasgrid find her cool, but it wasn't easy.

The third attack. The invisible wall broke down completely. The gnolls cheered and Reginleif staggered.

She won't be able to stop the next attack. The fourth attack would hit the fortress.

But at that moment.

Hugin twisted its beak and smiled.

The reason was simple.

There was a group of people moving towards the giant on top of the fortress.

< Episode 7 – Valkyrie (2) > End

Episode 7/Chapter 3: Valkyrie (3)

The giants were huge.

They, who were like pillars, could easily crush the bug-like existences on the ground — and they were strong because of that.

Lowest ranked giant.

An existence that was merely huge.

However, it was still a giant. The strength it had was because of its huge size.

They couldn't move. It was normal for them to feel fear. They were just trembling, waiting for their deaths.

The giant pulled his blunt weapon. It had already repeated this action three times. Even the Valkyries shrank back like turtles and raised a protective wall.

It would be the same this time. No one would be able to stop it!

“TH-OR-!”

A shout broke the silence and shook the fortress.

It wasn't the giant nor was it the Valkyries.

It was a warrior of Valhalla.

He smiled. Bracky, a lowest ranked warrior that belonged to Thor's legion, charged over the fortress and called the name of the God.

His shout was like a signal.

“Odin!”

“Ullr!”

The warriors yelled the name of the Gods. They stood up while shaking off their fears.

Everyone that gathered here was special. They were valiant

enough to be granted entry to Valhalla.

“Go! Go! Go! Warriors of the Gods!” Bracky yelled. He, who had a big body even among the warriors of Valhalla, was holding a big axe. He threw himself towards the giant after yelling.

It was pointless. Meaningless. An ignorant thing.

However, it wasn't for the warriors of Valhalla. Some of the warriors started following Bracky's back. The huge giant was a really big target. The warriors of Ullr's legion fired their crossbows and the other warriors charged towards the giant.

It was like a violent storm that occurred in the silent sea like a wave.

Tae Ho also saw that. The wyvern fluttered its wings and Siri yelled towards Tae Ho.

“Get me down! I have to go to Rolph!”

Her voice was urgent, but it had a calmness that was much like Siri.

The giant swung his blunt weapon that was about to hit down the fortress. Some of the warriors that valiantly followed Bracky were swept up by it. Their bodies exploded at that overwhelming strength.

There was bloodshed. There were even some that pierced through that bloodshed and stuck on the giant. They stabbed their axes and swords and kept attacking even though it seemed to be pointless.

“Kua!”

The giant roared and shook its body. It hit its own body with the hand that wasn't holding the blunt weapon and then some more warriors died again.

Tae Ho didn't see that. He turned the wyvern back and then found Rolph with the dragon's eyes. He flew lowly as if grazing the

fortress.

“I will make an opening! Use that!”

Siri jumped down and yelled and Tae Ho looked up the sky instead of asking how. Then he surged up once again.

The giant moved its body violently. Its grey body really seemed like it was made with rocks as ordinary attacks didn't seem to effect it at all. Most of the arrows couldn't even pierce it and bounced back.

Siri jumped down from the wyvern and rolled on the ground. She quickly stood up, looked at Rolph, and then extended her crossbow without speaking.

They were short on time. Siri stood up on the handrail of the fortress. Rolph stood behind her as if pulling her and then grabbed the crossbow with her.

Tae Ho looked at the two people at a high place and then realized something.

[Saga: The Arrows of the Witch Never Misses Its Target]

[Saga: The Arrow of the Hunter Calls for an Explosion]

The two people activated their sagas at the same time.

The arrow flew through the air. Different from a normal arrow, it kept changing its direction mid-flight.

Bang!

It hit the eye of the giant and then exploded.

It was a place that wasn't protected by its rock-like skin. The giant cried in terrible pain and writhed. Siri and Rolph fired the second arrow.

They aimed for the mouth instead of the eyes because it was closing its eyes in response to the pain. The arrow that passed through its teeth exploded.

The giant cried out again. Siri and Rolph sat down at the same time as if they had exhausted all their strength.

An opening.

It wasn't enough yet. It had to be bigger than this.

And because of that, he arrived on the ground.

[Saga: He's the Son of a God]

Bracky took in a deep breath. A one-man army, an invincible warrior — he had many nicknames but the one he liked the most was the son of a God.

Thor's son. A seed sprinkled by Thor to humanity. For him, as he didn't know who his father was, the nickname was like a blessing.

“Kuhahaha!”

Bracky laughed and then pulled his axe. He used all his strength that was further strengthened by the saga and hit the talon of Aquiles of the giant.

Bang!

The axe, that couldn't handle the force, broke down. At the same time, the giant's ankle was also destroyed. The giant let out a real cry this time and fell down on its butt. The ground shook like an earthquake because of that shock, and everyone near it lost their balance and fell.

Bracky also fell. He just smiled instead of running away while lying down on the floor. It was because he saw someone charging towards the giant from the sky, passing through the shining sun.

“For Idun!” Siri and Rolph yelled. The surrounding warriors also noticed him. They all yelled.

“Idun!”

The thing falling down from the sky.

The thing that was similar to Thor's thunder!

The wings of the wyvern flew through the wind. No, it split the air. The tip of Tae Ho's spear broke the air and charged forward.

Babang!

The spear broke. A deep crack appeared on the giant's forehead. The giant fell down completely at the great shock and the wyvern trembled. It could barely fly upwards with all its strength.

Tae Ho was also exhausted. His right arm, that had executed the lance charging, felt like tearing off.

The warriors yelled towards Tae Ho. They called Idun's name.

Siri did the same and Rolph also cheered. But the Valkyries didn't. Reginleif shouted, "Not yet!"

The giant raised its body. The giant rose up and extended its arm so fast that it didn't seem real at all.

"Chant!"

The giant grabbed the wyvern. The wyvern let out a feeble cry in the instant that its body and wings crumbled. Tae Ho barely transformed to a hawk and flew towards the fortress.

"Dodge!" Siri yelled, but Tae Ho couldn't react in time. The corpse of the wyvern that had become a ball hit Tae Ho.

His wing was bent and he rolled in the air a few times. The wyvern's corpse that had hit Tae Ho clashed with the fortress and exploded. Tae Ho fell down while having become a mess. He reached the ground, but kept rolling until the end.

His head hurt and he couldn't see. He couldn't breathe and his chest hurt. He felt like he would die any moment.

He could hear a buzzing sound. Every time that happened, his skull rang. He opened his mouth but only blood from who knows where filled his throat.

He didn't even know if his transformation had ended or not. He couldn't distinguish if he had the shape of a hawk or a human. He

didn't have any senses.

Ahh.

Ahhhh.

He gritted his teeth. Tae Ho admitted this time too that Heda was right. Idun's blessing was caught on Tae Ho's tough lifeline. It didn't let him go.

He felt a warm feeling on his forehead. He didn't know what was happening but Tae Ho felt Heda.

That feeling was minimal, but it gave him the strength to move.

His trembling hand moved towards his waist. He took out the entire cloth and threw it towards his mouth. Then used the last of his strength to take out the cloth and gritted his teeth again.

Crunch.

It had a nice flavor even in this moment. A cold and fresh feeling flowed through his mouth and Tae Ho opened his eyes.

"Tae Ho!"

He saw Rolph. Rolph couldn't open his mouth at the faint golden light healing his wounds. When he barely managed to gather his voice, the thing he said was Idun's name.

Tae Ho breathed in. He raised his body. He could see Siri firing her crossbow with his eyes that had barely gained vision. The warriors of Valhalla were fighting with the giant that was like a wounded predator.

Odin also saw that. Hugin twisted its beak and spoke with Rasgrid.

"They are warriors of Valhalla. They aren't weak people that you have to protect. Valkyrie Rasgrid. My daughter. Go and do your task."

Rasgrid closed her eyes. She took a deep breath and then looked

at the battlefield with cold eyes again.

Hugin flew off Rasgrid's and she ran without even looking back at Hugin.

“Warrior Tae Ho!”

Rasgrid approached Tae Ho. Reginleif and Ingrid also did the same.

Ingrid opened his eyes abruptly when she saw the remaining strength of Idun in Tae Ho's body, and Reginleif put on a complicated smile. However, Rasgrid directly asked, “Will you be able to do that once more?”

The charging lance that fell from the sky. The attack that made a crack in the giant's forehead.

Tae Ho stood up and looked at the giant. The dragon knight Kalsted told Tae Ho that it was possible. It was only once, but he would be able to execute the same attack.

But the problem wasn't only Tae Ho's body.

“I need something to ride on.” Tae Ho said. Rasgrid nodded at his words that were closer to a request.

“Reginleif, Ingrid. Take care of it.”

Rasgrid spoke in a low voice and quickly and then gave the unt she was holding to the two Valkyries. Reginleif understood what Rasgrid was going to ask.

“We have only one opportunity.”

“We can do it then.”

Rasgrid hid her determination and answered. Reginleif laughed and then grabbed the unt with Ingrid. They poured all of their magic and activated the power of the exalted rune.

Rasgrid turned to look at Tae Ho. The Valkyries that didn't get permission to go to battle couldn't exert even a fourth of their

strength. It was obvious about the magic Reginleif and Ingrid could exert looking at the situation. They would merely be able to transform the unit once.

Rasgrid was also restricted in her actions. Because of that, she decided to help Tae Ho instead of fighting directly.

“Ride on me.”

Tae Ho blinked. At his look that seemed to imply what she was talking about, Rasgrid took off her cape. She took out a coat from the air and then recited a chant after wearing it.

“Draco!”

Dragon’s wing coat.

The Valkyries didn’t only have swan wing coat. She, who was the daughter of Odin, would surely have more things than others.

Rasgrid transformed into a dragon that had white scales and blue eyes. Maybe it was because of the battle restriction that her size wasn’t that big. She was about the size of a wyvern.

“Get on,” Rasgrid said. Then, she gave him the unit Reginleif and Ingrid had transformed. It was a sharp blade you could put at the tip of the charging lance. There were complicated rune symbols in it.

They were ready. The pro gamer Lee Tae Ho wasn’t someone to step back in this situation.

[Saga: The Sword of the Warrior]

He applied the unit that was filled with the strength of the runes at the tip of the charging spear. Then he climbed onto Rasgrid’s back.

[Saga: The One That Can Handle Dragons]

At that moment, Rasgrid flinched, but she accepted Tae Ho. She flew to the air while sharing the same senses with Tae Ho.

The giant looked at Tae Ho and Rasgrid. It extended its arm as if it was enraged that he had gotten hit in the forehead.

“Where are you going!” Bracky yelled. He grabbed the dead warrior’s weapon to replace his broken axe and then attacked the giant’s leg.

The giant frowned. It stomped down and kicked, but Bracky was surprisingly agile. He quickly dodged the attacks but this time he started throwing weapons at it.

“Go! Warriors of Valhalla!”

Reginleif yelled with all her strength. The warriors charged towards the giant to try to buy at least one more second. Siri and Rolph also fired an arrow with the last of their strengths.

The giant roared. The gnolls also charged to try to help the giant. The yells and roars mixed in the battlefield.

However, Tae Ho didn’t listen to that. He surged up the air and read the atmosphere. Then he strengthened Rasgrid with his saga.

She was much stronger than a wyvern. She could fly faster, higher, and stronger.

Rasgrid turned high in the sky. Her flight, spread in a silent world, started to call in a raging wind.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior Is Just Like a Storm]

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon Sees Through All Things]

He secured his target. Then raised his speed with the wind he had called.

The forehead of the giant. The crack he had made. The deepest place within that.

Tae Ho didn’t close his eyes. He stopped his breath and concentrated.

“Kua!”

The giant yelled. He swung his arms in an attempt to hit Tae Ho who was falling at an amazing speed.

It felt like a wall was flying towards him. It was fast and threatening.

However, Tae Ho didn't lessen his speed. He dodged the hands of the giant by following the wind. He only charged forward.

The lance also charged.

It was the thing that didn't need to look back.

Bang!

It hit. The unt stabbed the crack. The spear exploded and the giant fell with a last cry. At the same time, the strength of the rune that was concentrated on the unt was released in an instant.

Rasgrid was falling as if she would crash on the ground but then she strongly batted her wing. She flew upwards again and Tae Ho could see her from the back.

The giant's head was destroyed. It seemed like it had split into several pieces, but then became dust and scattered away.

Silence fell on the battlefield, but that was merely the calm before the storm.

The cheers of the warriors exploded.

Bracky, who had become a bloody mess, started to laughing and Rolph called Idun's name. They were calling the names of several Gods, but soon started to call only one.

"Idun!"

"Idun's warrior!"

Tae Ho laid down on Rasgrid's back instead of replying to them. He could see something even after releasing his saga.

[Synchro rate: 13%]

But that wasn't all. There was something telling him that it

wasn't the time to sleep yet. There were still many enemies left.

[Idun's blessing]

On top of that, there was the effect of the piece of the golden apple.

‘Heda is always right.’

Tae Ho mumbled something weird and then raised his body. He asked Rasgrid to go to the battlefield once again as she was about to return to the fortress. Rasgrid didn't decline.

On that day in the afternoon.

The warriors of Valhalla cheered. They cried out in victory once again.

< Episode 7 – Valkyrie (3) > End

Episode 7/Chapter 4: Valkyrie (4)

The battle ended.

The warriors of Valhalla completely defeated their enemies that doubled their numbers.

The plains were filled with the corpses of the gnolls and blood. The gnolls that had seen the giant fall lost all their fighting spirits. They were more busy fleeing rather than fighting, and in the end, they all started fleeing desperately.

The moment more casualties occurred on a battlefield wasn't when they clashed frontally. It was when one side chased down the fleeing side and massacred them one-sidedly.

Valkyrie Rasgrid lowered her posture in the plains and looked at the ground. Her dragon wing coat that were made with white scales suited the plains well.

“We won.”

Valkyrie Reginleif said this with a satisfied face. She, who was born with a really precious bloodline even among Valkyries, was always composed and beautiful.

“We will take a while just by cleaning up the corpses of the gnolls.”

She said that as a joke and then looked up the sky. It seemed like someone spread the rumors that a flock of crows was gathering.

Rasgrid raised her head and looked at that. She couldn't see Hugin in between them. It seemed like he had already left for another battlefield.

“The warriors were moved inside Black Fortress. Each commander has already started retrieving the casualties.”

Valkyrie Ingrid approached carefully and spoke towards Reginleif. Her role as a specialized messenger made her steps as

light as a feather.

Rasgrid let out a long sigh. She stood up slowly and then turned to look at Reginleif and Ingrid. She could see a headless giant and a greatly damaged fortress beyond the two of them.

“A giant has appeared.”

It was lowest ranked, but it was still a giant. In a normal situation, the Black Fortress would have collapsed and countless warriors of Valhalla would have died.

Rasgrid's cold eyes sunk down. She thought of the things that happened yesterday and today.

She understood that a Stragos had appeared in the dwarven mines because they were the giants' hunting dogs that could smell and search for the unts. It wouldn't be weird for them to appear at anytime.

A giant however was different.

How was it that they appeared? Why did they send a giant to the fortress?

Either they aimed for it, or planned it, or it was a strategy.

‘Perhaps there may be a simpler reason.’

Their attacks had gotten so strong to the point that they sent a giant to the rear. It seemed like Ragnarok had progressed that much.

Rasgrid didn't say anything. However, Reginleif knew really well what she was thinking about.

“I have already reported this. Although my responsibilities don't end here, I have done all I can. So let's forget about the giant at least for today. Aren't there more important things than that?”

As Reginleif smirked, Rasgrid opened her mouth and asked even though she knew exactly what she was going to say.

“What things?”

“Rewarding the warriors. Being happy for the victory and share alcohol with them. My sister.”

“I also think like that. The warriors have performed better than we thought. I feel proud to be a Valkyrie that helps and leads them,” Ingrid added. There was excitement in her eyes.

“Now, let’s return and drink some alcohol. You can’t stay out today Rasgrid.”

Reginleif crossed her arm on Rasgrid’s shoulder and laughed. Ingrid also laughed lowly and in the end, and Rasgrid also put on a smile.

&

The sun set, and night came. The fire in the altar burned so intensely it seemed to devour the night.

Valkyrie Reginleif stood in front of the high altar. The warriors of Valhalla that amounted more than 2,000 looked at her in a comfortable posture, and Reginleif swung her clenched fists.

“Valiant warriors! Warriors of Valhalla!”

Reginleif’s voice was so loud it resembled thunder, but it didn’t hurt their ears. Rather, her voice was beautiful and magnanimous that made their ears enjoy it.

“I express my respect at your braveness and I praise you for that! Think of it as an honor that tonight I, Valkyrie Reginleif, will be together with you!”

“Uaaaaaaa!”

“Valkyrie!”

“Reginleif!”

The warriors answered with a heated cheer. It was a heat that didn’t seem to lose to the fire in the altar.

Reginleif also laughed. She showed an excessive movement as if she was acting and put on a sad expression.

“Warriors! Forgive me for not being able to fill all of your glasses. You are just too much, and we are merely three! You can’t wait some hours to drink your first glass, right?”

It was merely a joke but the warriors all burst out in laughter. Reginleif swung her cape.

“However we also know refinement. Today, my sister Rasgrid will fill the glasses of the two people that performed the best! It’s none other than the ice princess Rasgrid!”

“Ohh!”

“Rasgrid!”

The warriors cheered and Rasgrid frowned when she was called ice princess. Tae Ho, who was at the front, had to grit his teeth to try not to laugh.

“Warrior of Thor’s legion, warrior Bracky!”

“One man army!”

“Invincible warrior!”

As Reginleif named him, the warriors all yelled Bracky’s nickname. Bracky let out a fresh laugh and got on the platform. As he, who was huge even among the warriors of Valhalla stood in front of her, Reginleif admired him brightly.

“You really are big!”

“Really big!”

Reginleif stood on her tiptoes, but she didn’t even reach Bracky’s chest.

“Reginleif.”

Rasgrid said this coldly and lowly as if telling her to stop at that point. Reginleif shot a playful eye gesture at Bracky as if teasing

her and then took out a side step and yelled, “Warrior of Idun’s legion, warrior Tae Ho!”

“The warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him!”

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“Idun!”

The warriors cheered again. Rasgrid frowned at the vague title while Tae Ho cleared his throat and stood in front of Reginleif.

Bracky smirked and said to Tae Ho, “It’s a cool day.”

“Yeah.”

They had spoken for the first time today, but they felt friendly enough. You could say that he was an ally that he had faced a life and death battle with.

Reginleif gave Bracky and Tae Ho each a cup of alcohol made with horn. When that process was over, Rasgrid took a deep breath and stood in front of the two people while holding a bottle of alcohol.

“Warrior Bracky, will you accept alcohol from me?”

“Do I have a choice?”

As Bracky answered in an unexpectedly well-mannered way, Rasgrid even lowered her posture to fill the cup easier. Bright red alcohol quickly filled the cup.

“Warrior Tae Ho.”

The next was Tae Ho’s turn. Just like there was that feeling with Bracky and Tae Ho, Rasgrid and Tae Ho also had the same feeling between them. Rasgrid filled his cup and then put on a faint smile.

“Thank you.”

Rasgrid greeted Bracky and Tae Ho with her eyes and then took a step back. Reginleif, who’d seen all of this, laughed and stepped up.

“Now, warriors! Raise your cups! Let’s be happy with today’s victory!”

Bracky and Tae Ho turned back to look at the warriors. There was something that filled their chests when they saw the two thousand warriors raising their cups.

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

“For Asgard!”

They drank alcohol at the same time. A laughter came out even though the alcohol content was really strong.

“You drink really well!”

“You too.”

Bracky hit Tae Ho’s back with his palm. If he were a normal warrior he would have fell to the ground, but Tae Ho didn’t even flinch with this light greeting.

“Certainly!”

Bracky laughed again and Tae Ho felt glad he invested his runes on his physical stats. Valkyrie Reginleif extended her bottle of alcohol towards the two of them.

“Accept some alcohol from me too.”

“To receive alcohol twice in the same day, I really feel like living.”

As Bracky smiled, Reginleif put on a playful expression.

“Is warrior Tae Ho accustomed to this?”

“No, I’m also happy.”

He hadn’t received alcohol from Heda yet.

Tae Ho, Bracky, and Reginleif cheered and then emptied their cups.

It was at that moment when the gates of the fortress opened with

a rumbling sound. The warriors turned back in response to that big sound and then faced the Valkyrie that stood on the gates just like two days ago.

Valkyrie Ingrid yelled with a composed voice this time too.

“Warrior Lee Tae Ho!”

“Yes!” Tae Ho answered. The warriors all quieted down and Ingrid, who had become nervous in the atmosphere, waited for a moment and then opened her mouth.

“Mee.....”

“Meeting!”

The warriors yelled faster than Ingrid.

“Uhahahahahah!”

“Idun!”

“Idun’s warrior!”

“Valkyrie of Idun!”

It wasn’t envy or jealousy. The warriors were really enjoying this situation.

Ingrid, who had her words taken out of her mouth by the yells of the two thousand warriors, put on a dumbfounded face. Heda that extended her head from behind Ingrid put on an even more dumbfounded face.

“Wh-what is it?”

She had already expected it to some point because of what happened two days ago, but something beyond her expectations had happened.

“A! Mee! Ting!”

“A! Mee! Ting!”

The warriors yelled. The voices that didn’t seem to fit at first

became one and shook the fortress.

“Idun!”

“I want to go to Idun’s legion too!”

“Uhahahaha! Thor won’t forgive you then!”

“For Idun!”

“For the beautiful Goddess of Life!”

“You are beautiful Valkyrie!”

There was one common point between the warriors of Valhalla and the Gods of Asgard: they were all valiant and loved exalted warriors.

They had seen Tae Ho’s performance in today’s battlefield. Because of that, they sang in admiration rather than in jealousy or envy.

The warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him.

The warrior that had the rights to that!

The Warriors opened a path for Heda. The scene that was like Moses opening the Red Sea was really amazing.

Valkyrie Ingrid laughed and moved aside and Heda that couldn’t hide behind her anymore as she passed the warriors with a flushed face. As soon as she got on the platform where Tae Ho was, she quickly said, “Just what did you do?”

She vaguely heard that he had performed greatly, but it was really vague. Ingrid told her to hear to it directly from him.

Tae Ho didn’t wasn’t embarrassed at Heda’s fluster but spoke while enjoying it.

“Isn’t it nice? They are all yelling Idun’s name.”

Tae Ho pointed at the warriors as if telling her to listen. The warriors were really calling for Idun’s name.

“You like it, right?”

“I-I do.”

Heda was Idun’s Valkyrie. It seemed like she got more flustered at the warriors calling for Idun’s name because her face flushed even more.

“Don’t be like that and wave your hands.”

“Li-like this?”

As Heda waved her hand shortly, the warriors cheered even more.

“Idun!”

“Idun!”

“Idun’s Valkyrie!”

You would become better at something with repetition. Heda was timid at first but she soon started to smile brightly and waved her hand even wider.

But it was then.

“The warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him!”

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“Huh?”

Heda blinked. She could understand the first part, but not the latter.

“What are they talking about?”

Heda turned and asked. This time Tae Ho was the one to get flustered and Bracky laughed loudly. Reginleif, who was with Bracky, approached Heda and freshly said, “It’s just like they say. Warrior Tae Ho rode on top of Rasgrid. That’s why he’s being called that.”

Not firing at the enemy but at their ally.

When Rasgrid let out a long and deep sigh, Heda's expression transformed even more.

< Episode 7 – Valkyrie (4) > End

Episode 7/Chapter 5: Valkyrie (5)

“So you fought above Rasgrid that transformed into a dragon?”

“Yes, there was that thing called dragon wing coat.”

As soon as Tae Ho entered the small meeting room he first cleared the misunderstanding. Heda spoke in a low voice after listening to Tae Ho.

“How peculiar.”

For none other than Rasgrid to let an inferior ranked warrior get on top of her. For Heda, that normally knew Rasgrid, that was a difficult thing to even imagine.

However, Tae Ho that didn't know that just tilted his head and asked.

“The dragon wing coat?”

“No, not that.”

Heda shook her head slowly and just let it end there. Tae Ho looked at her as if it was weird but decided to ask another thing.

“Um, Heda. Do you also have dragon wing coat?”

“No, I just have a swan wing coat. The dragon wing coat is really precious things.”

‘Unfortunate.’

The capabilities of the dragon wing coat were really amazing. Because it let you transform into a dragon just like its name implied. But it wasn't that he wanted to particularly ride on Heda after she transformed.

“Hmhm.”

“Why?”

“No. Nothing.”

As Tae Ho also spoke ambiguously Heda didn't ask further. But instead, she asked something once again just like Tae Ho did.

“How is your body? Just from what I heard it seemed like it was a really big battle.”

“Uh, actually.....”

Tae Ho paused and then showed Heda the pocket he had in his waist. It was obviously an empty pocket.

Heda raised her voice at the part that Tae Ho cleared up all of the apple pieces in an instant.

“My God! Are you really fine?”

Heda approached Tae Ho and hurriedly checked the state of his body. And fortunately, she didn't find any big wounds. No, rather he was healthiness itself.

“I ate all of the pieces at once. I also have this. Oh, also your blessing.”

Tae Ho smirked and then pointed his forehead and Idun's necklace.

“Ha... Really.”

Heda let out a sigh of relief and stepped back and after that, she spread the empty pocket she took from Tae Ho.

“I should ask for some more however I can.”

She was obviously talking about the pieces. Tae Ho saw Heda's look and asked carefully.

“Isn't that going a bit far?”

The pieces of golden apples were really precious items. However, Heda shook her head.

“The only warrior I'm in charge of is pushing himself, so I also have to do the same. However precious it is, what worth is there if you just store it? The people that need it should use it, am I

wrong?”

If the other Valkyries had heard her, there would have been a fuss but Heda really thought like that.

“Anyways, it seems like your body is fine because you ate it all at once. I think that you probably won’t even be able to sleep for 3 days. You are overflowing with strength.”

“Yeah.”

Even though he had gone through an all-day battle and the night was deep he didn’t even feel the slightest bit of exhaustion. And he thought that it would stay the same if he didn’t sleep this day.

‘It certainly isn’t a normal item.’

It didn’t only revive him right before dead but it also had this amazing effect.

While Heda saw Tae Ho admiring it she clapped and said.

“Then, let’s go with classes.”

“You are thorough.”

“That’s the task of a Valkyrie.”

Whether others said they were having a meeting or not, they couldn’t waste the precious time they had.

Heda said bluntly and then grabbed the most important point.

“You said that the synchro rate increased a lot, right?”

“Yes, it’s already at 13%.”

“Did you realize something new?”

“It seems like the completion is different for each saga. Although the immortal warrior is 13% the charge of a warrior is just like a storm feels like 20%~30%. Or even more than that.”

“Mm, that’s plentifully possible. Because there are other smaller sagas below the big saga, immortal warrior.”

There was no rule that said that the synchro rate increased in groups. And for the first time, the length of the contents of each saga and how famous it was, was also different. It would be stranger for it to increase at the same rate.

“There are also changes in the completion rate increased, right?”

“I feel like I can do more things with them.”

He could see more things with the eyes of a dragon and the charge of the warrior started to get accompanied by wind. For the warrior's sword, he would be able to make a stronger weapon than Runefang.

“I'm expecting for its completion.”

Tae Ho also nodded. Because differently from Heda, he could more or less guess the completion of his saga. Especially, the thing he expected the most was the warrior's charge.

‘Because of that day, Kalsted was really a storm.’

He wasn't merely accompanied by wind. The charge of the warrior is just like a storm had a strength beyond that.

As strength was put in Tae Ho's eyes Heda smiled once again.

“There is no news of a new saga?”

“There was one more empty slot added. But I'm thinking of saving it. It seems like the saga I can make is influenced by the synchro rate.”

When his synchro rate was below 5% he couldn't create the saga the one that handles dragons. Although he couldn't know the exact standards, he just sensed when he could make it or not.

Heda also nodded.

“Well, listening to you, you overcame the crisis through the one that handles dragons. If you don't have a saga you need immediately, it also won't be bad to create one at the spot.”

Although it was different to what she had said previously, the two things she had said had logic behind it.

“But you should still think thoroughly about it. Understood?”

“Of course.”

Thinking about things like this was the specialty of the progamer Lee Tae Ho.

At the fresh answer of Tae Ho, Heda nodded in satisfaction.

“Good, so let’s calculate. You earned a lot of runes, right?”

“An overwhelming amount.”

Tae Ho smirked and spread his chest as if telling her to check quickly. Heda gulped dry saliva as if preparing herself and then placed her palm on his chest.

“Wow, really.”

A smile appeared on Heda’s face. When she had checked for the last time, he now had about four times since then.

Even though the runes were divided by everyone that had defeated it, it was still this much. In addition, the things Tae Ho had weren’t normal runes.

“There were also special runes, how do I use them?”

Among the ones he had accumulated, there was one green rune. And this was the real reason Heda put on a smile.

“It’s an attribute rune. If you accumulate them, the respective attribute becomes stronger so it is of help when you use magic or saga. This one is earth attributed.”

“Oh, attributes. How many are there?”

“Gathering them all, 9. Earth, wind, fire, water, thunder, light, darkness, life, death.”

Heda extended one finger every time she named one attribute and mumbled in a low voice. After that, the shape of the green

rune appeared on Heda's palm.

"If your attribute becomes stronger, then its characteristic is reflected in you. The earth attribute is related to health and defense."

It was something he understood in an instant. Because the giant he faced was really sturdy.

"Anyways, it's a good thing."

"Yeah, it's also precious."

As Tae Ho resumed it simply Heda nodded quickly.

"And.....um, Tae Ho. Don't invest all of the runes this time, will you save some?"

"It seems like there are other uses for it?"

"Yeah, I was thinking about making you learn rune magic. Immediate strengthening of your stats if good, but there are several rune magic that is plentifully useful."

Heda didn't tell Tae Ho to become a magician. Tae Ho understood Heda's words and nodded.

"It would be good to learn as an assistant. It seems like we can't learn it right here, right?"

"We need a ceremony or a procedure. I will teach it to you later when you return to the legion."

"Yes, I will bother you with that."

As Tae Ho agreed, Heda started to speak about the how many runes should he leave. After investing the remaining runes equally, Heda let out a sigh and then fixed her expression.

"Let's end the classes here and talk about the path you should take."

'She's really like a teacher from school.'

But of course, there was no one like Heda when Tae Ho went to

school.

‘If there were, I would have gone to Seoul University.’

“Why?”

“Nothing, nothing. Let’s do that.”

As Tae Ho showed the will to do it so suddenly, Heda tilted her head for a moment but then started to speak again.

“When you return, you will be promoted to an inferior ranked warrior. To become an inferior ranked warrior you need a number of merits and a set amount of accumulated runes, but you already far surpassed that.”

“There are no tests for that?”

“There’s none when you become an inferior rank. You can say that achieving merits and accumulating runes is a test by itself.”

‘Well, doing a test or an interview would be weirder.’

Tae Ho laughed when he thought of the warriors of Valhalla solving their test sheets. It was also the same for the interview scene.

As Tae Ho laughed, Heda also laughed and then proceeded with what she was saying.

“There will be more warriors that will be promoted this time. They should probably be your brothers.”

The first one he could think of was Bracky. He had achieved more merits than him in the expedition of the Black Fortress, and he had clearly achieved big merits when defeating the giant.

“There’s a high probability for you to go to the next battlefield with them. Of course, there may be some that got promoted in another place and also warriors that were originally inferior ranked so you will see unfamiliar faces. Even so, the situation should be better than this time.”

‘Will I be able to keep seeing captain Siri?’

If possible, he wanted to keep being with her.

“It seems like you have comrades you want to stay with, right?”

“Yes.”

“It will turn out well. For them to have been with you means that they have also performed greatly.”

This was also a right word. In addition, Rolph wasn't a lowest ranked warrior that went to his first expedition. He should have the merits and runes he had collected previously, so there was a high probability for him to get promoted this time too.

“Okay, so we finished everything.”

“Thanks for your trouble.”

After he bowed playfully, Heda didn't end the meeting or bless him as usual but instead put on a troubled face.

“Uh, but you know.”

“Yes?”

“I'm saying this just in case.....”

Heda turned her head as if checking her surroundings and then approached Tae Ho and whispered.

“You musn't go over Odin's legion even if Rasgrid seduces you. Understand?”

At her voice that was filled with earnest and embarrassment, Tae Ho opened his eyes widely.

“You can even move legions?”

“N, no. Not normally. But Rasgrid is a Valkyrie Odin treasures and also has a high position. So she can push things.”

‘I don't think she would.’

It was none other than Rasgrid. He couldn't imagine Rasgrid

humiliating herself that easily.

“Anyways, you understood right?”

Heda grabbed Tae Ho’s hand and said. It seemed like she was really troubled about that.

But she was worried about nothing. Because Tae Ho didn’t even have one reason to move over to Odin’s legion.

‘There are so many good points here in Idun’s legion.’

He had saved his life twice thanks to Idun’s blessing. The pieces of the golden apples were things he could receive it because he belonged to Idun’s legion and most of all Heda was in the legion.

However, Tae Ho said another thing instead of nodding immediately.

“It depends on how you do.”

Heda opened her eyes widely at that moment but then she seemed to have read Tae Ho’s thoughts that she smirked.

“Then there shouldn’t be any problems.”

She smiled brightly and after that stood on her toes and kissed Tae Ho’s forehead. It was Heda’s blessing that had even saved him once.

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.”

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.”

Tae Ho repeated those words and the meeting ended like that on that day.

And after one week, the moment the expedition team returned to Valhalla.

Tae Ho returned to Idun’s legion.

< Episode 7 – Valkyrie (5) > End

Episode 8/Chapter 1: Inferior ranked warrior (1)

The warriors of Valhalla that numbered more than 2,000 were lined up in front of Black Fortress. Valkyrie Reginleif stood on a high rock and yelled while pointing at the violet doors.

“Warriors! We are preparing a banquet for you! Go to the banquet place after you enter the door!”

“Ou!”

The warriors replied with an outcry at Reginleif’s words. Looking at their faces, it seemed like they were craving for meat and alcohol because they couldn’t have a banquet due to being on guard for the past week.

But even so, they couldn’t just go running towards the violet doors. It was because the space doors in the plains only amounted to two, so they could only wait for their turns.

Rolph smirked as if even waiting was fun and said, “We barely got summoned back.”

“Still, the past week has been really peaceful right?”

“Even if it’s Valhalla, we don’t go to wars every day.”

Actually, that was an expression that was a bit misleading. There was a high probability that there was another fierce battle occurring in another place of Asgard.

‘They did say that the other two planets were also in war.....’

Olympus and the Temple.

Counting Asgard, three planets were in the middle of a war. The size of the war was so big you couldn’t even imagine how it would be on the front lines.

Tae Ho nodded moderately at Rolph’s words and then turned to

look at the fortress.

“Rolph, who are they though? They are a bit different to warriors.”

Rolph turned his head at Tae Ho’s question. Rolph frowned at the soldiers that were guarding the walls on the west side.

“They are warriors that couldn’t enter Valhalla. I heard that they are normally deployed in situations like these when they lack manpower. I also heard that there were some that came from Niflheim and Nastrond.

They were a force that came to Black Fortress to guard it in place of the warriors of Valhalla.

‘Ah, so that was the reason?’

He thought it was strange because he couldn’t see anything when using The Eyes of the Dragon, but he understood when he heard Rolph’s words.

‘It’s not that they are on a different level like the Valkyries that I couldn’t see in the first place.’

Their runes were so low it seemed like they didn’t have any.

“Those poor guys. I also heard that their emotions are all dried up compared to ours.”

As Rolph clicked his tongue, the warriors in their surroundings also looked at the soldiers on the fortress with poor eyes.

‘Aren’t they different from us?’

They were still the same soldiers.

‘Well, am I the only one that thinks like that?’

If the soldiers on the fortress were normal soldiers that were forcefully deployed, then the warriors of Valhalla would be the ones that had come voluntarily.

In addition, they couldn’t feel it with their bodies because they

thought that it was still an army in the end, but they were treated quite well.

Most of all, growth based on the runes had a big role. For the warriors of Valhalla that respected strong people, the meaning the runes had plenty of meaning as they were no different to the path of becoming stronger.

As everyone was looking at the soldiers in the fortress together, it soon time for Siri's troop to enter. Siri stood at the front and then turned back to yell at the troop members.

"It's our turn! Let's move!"

It seemed like they had waited too long as the steps of the warriors were fast. Maybe it was because he had experienced all kinds of things since he arrived at Valhalla that Tae Ho crossed the violet door without much refusal. After he closed and opened his eyes, he saw the same enormous hall of when they first departed.

"Wow, I'm going to go crazy," said one of the warriors next to him.

Then, the other warriors also started to add, "I'm drooling. I'm sure this is the smell of honey!"

All the warriors were enticed by the nice smell. When he had first entered Valhalla, the banquet he had didn't smell this good.

Siri led the excited warriors and entered the banquet room. The place was big enough to accommodate more than 2,000 people and had hundreds of tables with a great amount of food placed on top.

The warriors took their seats and started to enjoy the alcohol and meat to their heart's content. Tae Ho also was more comfortable with the warriors since the past week that he ate without reserve.

After 30 minutes, someone said, "Oh, Tae Ho. Look over there."

"My eyes are shining."

When he turned around, he saw that three Valkyries that were

on Black Fortress with them, started landing on a decorated stone table. However, all three of them were wearing dresses instead of armor.

Just like the unknown warrior had said, it was a feast for the eyes. Rasgrid, who was wearing a blue dress and a silver crown instead of armor, raised her cup lightly and said, “Odin has seen your performances. Everyone that has participated in this battle will be rewarded.”

“Odin!”

“King of Gods!”

Rasgrid waited for the cheers of the warriors to fade and then raised her voice again.

“There’s one more thing we will be announcing, Reginleif.”

Reginleif, who was wearing a red dress and a golden crown, answered the call. Rasgrid stood to the side while Reginleif took the center and yelled, “I will announce the warriors that have ascended to the inferior rank. Come to the front as you are called!”

Now, silence filled the room instead of cheers. Everyone gulped dry saliva with nervous faces as if it had become a waiting room that would call the people that had passed.

“Thor’s legion, warrior Bracky!”

“Ullr’s legion, warrior Rolph!”

Every time a name was called, cries of joy and sorrow came from the warriors. Reginleif named about ten warriors before looking towards the followers of Ullr’s legion. She cleared her throat, and called out, “Idun’s legion, warrior Tae Ho!”

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

The warriors cheered. They didn’t know about the others, but they knew they had to recognize Tae Ho.

‘Can’t you just call me something like Giant Slayer or the sort?’

Or rather the warrior that had a Valkyrie visit him.

However, for the warriors, Tae Ho was already the warrior that had ridden on a Valkyrie.

In the end, Tae Ho half gave up and walked to the front. Then, Rasgrid who also had given up, spoke to the warriors that were lined up.

“You have ascended to the inferior rank starting from today. I will be expecting your performances from now on. This dagger is a symbol of the inferior rank.”

As Rasgrid made a gesture with her hands, Ingrid, who was wearing a green dress, started handing out one dagger to each warrior. It was unshapely, but there were quite elaborate runes in the handle and the shaft.

When the simple announcement ended, the banquet returned to the eating and drinking. Tae Ho and Rolph moved to the new table along the inferior ranked warriors.

“So you certainly ascended. Well, if it’s not you, who would?”

As soon as he sat down, a big and reliable hand was placed on his shoulder. Tae Ho knew who it was without even turning back .

“You too, Bracky.”

“Well, it’s obvious to me.”

Bracky, whom he had gotten quite friendly with the past week, smirked and emptied his cup of beer. Rolph, that was seated at the other side, said with an admiring face, “The two of you are amazing. You ascended just after one expedition.”

“How many expeditions have you been through?”

“I’ve been to three similar expeditions to this one. But of course, this was the most chaotic one.”

Actually, Rolph had also ascended quite quickly. It was just that Tae Ho and Bracky who ascended at the first expedition were

special cases.

“Rolph, Tae Ho. Congratulations.”

“Captain Siri.”

Siri was wearing comfortable clothes instead of the leather armor she always wore, although it wasn't like the dresses the Valkyries were wearing. She approached them and served alcohol to Tae Ho and Rolph, and then dropped her shoulders, relaxing a bit.

“Now we are all inferior ranked. Rolph, I will be seeing you more often.”

“I'm expecting inferior rank lodging.”

In Rolph's case, it would be like graduating to middle school after elementary school.

‘It would be the same for me, right?’

Tae Ho would still be alone with Heda.

After they laughed and talked, one more happy face appeared.

“Kya, certainly. Certainly. I have good eyes when looking at people.”

“Bjorn!”

Bjorn laughed and approached naturally and then sat between Tae Ho and Bracky before speaking to the warriors around them.

“Congratulations on ascending. Do you have any celebration plans?”

“Celebration plans?”

“Hey, didn't you become an inferior ranked warrior? You have to enjoy what you have.”

As Bjorn exaggerated this, the warriors all started to focus on him.

“How interesting. Elaborate.”

As even Bracky chirped in, Bjorn looked at his surroundings and then leaned his body on the table and said in a low voice, “How is it? How about going to Anaheim with me?”

“Anaheim?”

“It’s one of the regions next to Valhalla. It has good alcohol, beautiful ladies, thrilling gambles, delicious food and good fights! It’s the paradise that all the warriors want!”

At that moment, the eyes of the warriors changed. In the other hand, Siri put on a pitying expression and then shook her head and left for another place.

Bjorn didn’t mind and continued with a low voice as if he was sharing a secret.

“Anaheim’s entry starts right from the inferior rank. Don’t you have to spend the gold you received after each battle? It is meant to be used in Anaheim.”

“Indeed.”

“There’s nowhere else to use it.”

“I thought that it was a commemorative token.”

Tae Ho refuted inwardly, ‘With what Heda told me, it has more uses than that.’

He glanced at Rolph and the others. When he looked at their expressions, it seemed like they had gathered quite a bit of gold. Bjorn’s eyes shone again.

“I know all the good places in Anaheim. If you just follow me, you will realize the sweet flavor of Valhalla.”

“How trustworthy.”

“I admire you.”

‘They look like beginner soldiers that are going out on their 100th-day vacation. No, aren’t they more like apprentices taking

their first day off?’

Thinking about how they should play looked exactly like that.

Tae Ho looked at them with lukewarm eyes. Bjorn put strength in his arm and said, “Tae Ho, you are also coming with us. You understand?”

Rolph heavily added, “I believe that he would prefer being alone with the Valkyrie in his legion rather than playing with us.”

The warriors all turned to look at Tae Ho with stiff expressions. In the end, the choices Tae Ho was given was only one.

“I have to go with you.”

“Hehe, you thought well.”

As Rolph laughed, the expressions of the other warriors also loosened up.

“If you return, applicate to go out to the Valkyries in your legion. Since you have gone out on an expedition and have just been promoted, they will surely agree.”

Bjorn explained everything they needed and then hit on the table.

“Expect it. Tomorrow you will understand why Valhalla is heaven for the warriors.”

Bjorn smirked and the warriors also looked at themselves and also smirked.

It was then when Reginleif raised her voice on the platform.

“Warriors. The Valkyries of your legions have come to receive you. Return and rest your fatigue.”

The doors that were on the side of the hall all opened up. At first glance, it seemed like there was a dock over there.

“It’s time to separate, but we will soon meet again.”

“For tomorrow.”

“For tomorrow.”

Bjorn cheered with the warriors and then split up after saluting with their eyes.

Tae Ho went out to the dock alone because he was the only one in his legion and then found Heda.

“It’s Idun’s Valkyrie.”

“Oh, so she’s the rumored Valkyrie.”

“How pretty.”

Heda had become famous among the warriors that participated in the expedition of Black Fortress thanks to Tae Ho. She was playing dumb and acting calm, but her eyes were all flushed up.

“Heda.”

“Let’s go quickly.”

As Tae Ho approached and talked to her, Heda hurriedly grabbed Tae Ho’s hand and went to the wooden boat. They didn’t talk for a long while even after that. Only after they had gotten far enough from the dock did Heda let out a sigh of relief.

“Haa, I feel like I can live now.”

Looking at Heda, Tae Ho asked, “Nothing happened on your side?”

“What about you?”

Heda couldn’t come to meet him in the past week. Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders and said, “It was peaceful after that. I only went out to patrol a few times.”

“The situation had been cleared up already.”

It was also one of the reasons why Heda didn’t go to meet him.

“Before that, Heda, can I ask for tomorrow off?”

“Huh? You want to leave?”

“Actually.....”

Tae Ho simplified the story of what happened at the banquet. At first, Tae Ho didn't think much, but after speaking more he started to anticipate the break because it was the first vacation he'd receive since coming to Valhalla.

But Heda's expression seemed to become strange the more she listened and then started avoiding Tae Ho's eyes.

“Heda?”

“Huh? Uh, yeah.”

“Why are you avoiding my eyes?”

“Uh, so.....I'm sorry. I also received it when I arrived here.”

Heda shrugged her shoulders and glanced at Tae Ho when she gave him an order.

There was a gathering scheduled for the inferior ranked warriors.

Lee Tae Ho, who belonged to the inferior rank of Idun's legion, had to participate with the inferior ranked warrior troops of Ullr's legion.

Gathering day: Thor's day.

It was an order that didn't have any decorations, which was so much like Valhalla.

He began to be filled with uneasiness as he read the letter. Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and looked at the gathering date.

“Um, is it maybe?”

“Yes....it's tomorrow.”

Thor's day.

Heda answered with a sorry face, and Tae Ho closed his eyes. He remembered the faces of Rolph and the other warriors that were laughing and brightly talking about going out tomorrow.

< Episode 8 – Inferior ranked warrior (1) > End

Episode 8/Chapter 2: Inferior ranked warrior (2)

The wooden boat arrived at the lodgings in Idun's legion thanks to the fast winds. Heda, who had paid close attention to Tae Ho during the entire trip, said with a spirited voice, "Let's eat something delicious after meeting Idun. I will show you my skills."

"I'm fine, I'm fine. Living is just like that."

As Tae Ho replied with melancholic eyes, Heda laughed sloppily without strength and then anchored the boat to the dock.

Looking at her, Tae Ho raised his head to look at a place far away.

'Now, if it's Ullr's legion....Did Rolph also get his vacations cut?'

You couldn't really count how many inferior ranked warriors there were in Ullr's legion, but thinking about what Heda had said, if he was going to be with the allies he had been with previously, it was highly probable that Rolph also had been summoned.

'That's a bit better.'

Because then he wouldn't be dying alone. No, not that, but the fact that he would have a comrade to be with.

Whatever the case, Tae Ho felt better and asked Heda a question while Heda was still closely eyeing Tae Ho.

"Um, Heda. Will we have time to learn rune magic?"

She did tell him that he would be learning rune magic the next time he returned to the legion. She said that it required a strenuous procedure and consciousness so he was doubtful as to whether he could do it in one night or not.

Maybe it was because Tae Ho's voice had gotten brighter or he because he had changed subjects that Heda smiled brightly and said, "We will only be learning the basics, so it'll be enough. Let's

have rune magic class after eating dinner.”

Thinking about it, most of the times he spent with Heda were filled with classes.

‘Is she an enthusiastic teacher?’

They even had classes when she had come to meet him.

When Tae Ho nodded, Heda spoke quickly in fear Tae Ho that would lose his spirit again.

“Okay, so let’s go meet Idun first.”

Tae Ho went to the shrine just like the first time he had visited. Even the part where Heda stayed behind stayed the same.

‘I’m getting nervous.’

It still was a meeting with a Goddess after all. Even now, he was imagining Idun’s beauty and things like a sacred halo above her head.

‘She wouldn’t say anything just because I called for Heda instead of her, right?’

Tae Ho cleared his throat because something weighed in his heart and then entered the shrine. Every time he took a step, the inside of the temple seemed to darken and then a wide plain with golden apples opened up.

“My warrior Tae Ho.”

The voice that came from the sky rang in his ear. Tae Ho reflexively kneeled down. No one had ordered him, but his head lowered on its own.

Idun, the Goddess of Youth and Life.

“Raise your head.”

It was Idun’s voice that sounded like a whisper. Tae Ho slowly raised his head and then faced Idun who was covered in a golden light.

He couldn't see her face this time either. The only thing he could see was the golden light and the beautiful lines of the body that was covered by a sky blue cloth.

It was enough with just this. Tae Ho felt Idun's beauty and dignified appearance.

Idun faced Tae Ho's eyes filled with admiration and said while laughing lowly, "Warrior Tae Ho, so you are called the warrior that rode on a Valkyrie?"

Tae Ho flinched at the unexpected attack. Had the rumors spread to the world of the Gods?

'No, that can't be. Idun should only be the one that knows.'

While he was denying that inwardly, Idun continued to talking.

"I heard that you have performed greatly. Tae Ho, you are my pride."

"Thank you."

No matter what anyone said, it was a compliment directly from Idun, one of the real Gods of this world. Even if he was from another world, he could feel a sense of accomplishment.

As Tae Ho expressed his manners again, Idun looked down on Tae Ho and then said with a worried voice, "Tae Ho, my warrior. You look dispirited. Did something happen?"

"No, nothing."

Something did happen, but even he couldn't say it. Idun wasn't the one that had given the order in the first place.

'I can't say that I'm depressed because my vacation was cut short.'

As Tae Ho hid his thoughts and shut his lips, Idun didn't press him anymore and said, "If there's anything you need, then ask Heda. She will always take your side."

“She’s already doing really well.”

“Right, Heda also complimented you a lot.”

Idun finished speaking with a smile and then approached Tae Ho. She extended her hand.

“I can’t leave my prideful warrior empty-handed. I will give you a stronger blessing. Close your eyes for a moment.”

Tae Ho closed his eyes as he was told. Then, a holy light covered Tae Ho’s body. He felt Idun’s blessing becoming stronger.

As Tae Ho slowly opened his eyes, Idun turned back to the place that had returned to normal and said, “I will give you a treasure the next time you return from an expedition. It will be something you want.”

“Something.....I want?”

“Right, it’ll be a really good thing.”

Idun smiled once again.

“Warrior Tae Ho, my pride. Let glory be on your path.”

The world turned to a golden light. Then it became dark again.

“Ha...”

Tae Ho unconsciously let out a sigh and then left the shrine. As he was looking at his surroundings for a moment, Heda approached him with quick steps.

“Did you have a good conversation?”

“Yes.”

“Are you more spirited now?”

“I’m fine, I’m fine.”

Those weren’t empty words but the truth. It wasn’t even Heda’s fault in the first place.

However Heda apologized again and said, “I’m also sorry. I don’t

know if it will work but I will protest.”

“Don’t uselessly do the impossible.”

Complaining to the superiors would generally return in a bad way for you.

Heda then treated Tae Ho to a formal dinner with her great skills just like she had promised. Perhaps it was because it was more delicious than what he had at the banquet, Tae Ho was greatly satisfied.

At night, Heda sat in front of Tae Ho who was sitting above a big magic circle with his t-shirt off.

The reason why he took it off when it was cold was simple.

“The easiest way to use rune magic is to engrave it in your body.”

“Like a tattoo?”

“Yeah, we call that a carved seal. However, as easy as it is to use, it also has its defects, so I don’t greatly recommend it. It’s a method warriors that want to learn one or two rune magics use.”

Heda paused for a moment and then looked at Tae Ho. It looked like she was telling him to guess the reason.

“Isn’t the number of rune magic you can engrave limited? Like rune magic can only be engraved on the bodies of strong warriors?”

As Tae Ho spoke what he had thought of quickly, Heda nodded.

“That’s right, that’s one of the reasons why I don’t recommend it for you. You can’t engrave magic on the bodies of weak warriors. You can’t easily erase it, so it will be troublesome later on when you become strong, right?”

“That makes sense.”

The magic used at the lowest rank may become an useless thing when advancing to become a superior class warrior. In addition, if

you lacked space because of a rune you engraved, it would really be troublesome.

Regardless of that however, Heda wanted to engrave runes on Tae Ho's body. Of course, it wasn't a normal one but a special one.

“What I'm teaching you is a temporary engraving. Although you need more runes than normal, you can remove it whenever you want. It's a small amount, but you can retrieve some of the runes.”

This method consisted of accumulating runes on your skin and engraving it after covering it with a transparent membrane.

‘So it's like a sticker tattoo.’

As Tae Ho nodded, Heda took in a breath and spoke with a serious expression.

“There are three types of temporary engravings I will be doing this time. I will put each type on your chest, back, and left arm.”

After Heda said that she took out a pen made with a big feather of a crow. She had an ink bottle in her other hand and it was filled with ink made with Tae Ho's runes.

“Now, shall we start? It will be dangerous if something goes wrong, so don't move.”

Heda spoke seriously and then approached Tae Ho while dragging her butt. Tae Ho gulped dry saliva.

The crunching sound started from his chest.

&

The day after Odin's day was Thor's day.

Tae Ho crossed the door as he was led by Heda and then a familiar hall appeared.

It was the hall where he had departed for the Black Fortress.

As he saw that the wide hall that could hold thousands of people was empty, several emotions rose in his chest. However, Tae Ho

could only smile.

“Rolph!”

There were about ten or so people gathered in the hall, and there was someone he didn’t want to meet today that was there.

“I feel like crying.”

Rolph said this in a low voice, and the other inferior ranked warriors put on a happy smile while the others put on a smile of sympathy. However, Siri seemed to be in a really good mood.

Siri faced Tae Ho with a smiling face and then introduced him to the other warriors.

“This is warrior Tae Ho, the one I talked to you about. He has just become an inferior ranked warrior, but he is really outstanding. Don’t look down on him.”

“Oh, so you are the warrior that rode on a Valkyrie?”

“I heard the rumors as well.”

“So even a Valkyrie comes to meet you?”

The warriors of Ullr’s legion all felt good will towards Tae Ho. However, Tae Ho could only turn to look at Siri.

“Um, Siri?”

“I also told them that you beat a giant.”

As Siri made an excuse in a low voice, the warriors burst out of laughter.

‘They aren’t ordinary.’

As he glanced at them with the dragon’s eyes, the amount of runes they had weren’t normal. The one that had the least had about twice the amount that Rolph had.

‘Am I in between them?’

He could clearly see the amount of runes that Siri had when he

couldn't do so previously. Surprisingly enough, she had the most runes out of all the people here.

‘Perhaps, what I saw before at the plains wasn't all of it.’

As he started thinking about Siri fighting, a voice came from behind him.

“Is everyone here?”

The owner of the voice was a Valkyrie. She was wearing black wolf leather armor, and her wavy brown hair left a deep impression on him.

“We have all gathered. This one is warrior Tae Ho of Idun's legion.”

Siri hit on her chest, expressing her manners and then introduced Tae Ho. The Valkyrie that also expressed her manners turned to look at Tae Ho and said, “Nice to meet you. I'm Valkyrie Gandur, the one that will lead this expedition.”

“I'm Lee Tae Ho.”

“I also heard your rumors. I will be expecting your performances just like the rumors say.”

Her smile was as ill natured as Reginleif's.

Tae Ho was afraid of asking what kind of rumor she heard so he just answered and took a step back. Fortunately, Gandur looked at the warriors and started talking to them instead of pressing him further.

“This expedition is a small one in which only Ullr's legion and Idun's legion will be participating. However, just like it always has been, don't drop your guards. This expedition won't be that easy.”

“We don't have anything easy!”

“Isn't that too much?”

“So, the inferior ranked warriors are only here to fool around?”

As the warriors protested playfully, Gandur also answered back playfully. Not having formalities between the Valkyries and the warriors made it a really free atmosphere.

“Anyways, let’s stop with the jokes. I will tell you the details after we arrive. Any questions?”

One of the inferior ranked warriors asked, “Where is our destination?”

Gandur turned back and flicked her finger to operate the dimensional door. She answered while touching the space door that started to spread like water.

“Svartalfheim.”

The land of the dark fairies. The land of endless night.

A really black and dense violet space door welcomed the warriors.

< Episode 8 – Inferior ranked warrior (2) > End

Episode 9/Chapter 1: Svartalfheim (1)

The space beyond the violet door was humid and heavy.

Tae Ho felt the change of the scenery the moment he took the first step. He cut his breath short and looked at his surroundings.

The first thing he saw were the high trees. The trees were lined up like a wall and the branches were interlinked, making a ceiling that covered the sky. The reason why it was dark was probably because of the resulting shadows.

Tae Ho took one more step. There was dirt, rotting branches, and browning leaves everywhere. As he breathed slowly, he could feel the cold and humid air.

Most of all, his body felt heavy. He didn't know if that was the precise expression, but the gravity itself felt different. Although the difference wasn't that great, it's not as if there was none. In terms of numbers, it would be 1.1 times more.

Half of the warriors that were ahead of Tae Ho looked at their surroundings as if it were marvelous while the other half remained on guard with casual faces as if it wasn't their first trip. Siri, who was the first one to pass through the door, belonged to the latter category.

‘So this is Svartalfheim.’

The land of the dark fairies that had a name that could twist your tongue.

‘So the dark fairies are the dark elves?’

As he started to think of slim beauties with copper skin, a laugh came from behind him.

“Amazing right? This place is Svartalfheim.”

Valkyrie Gandur, who crossed the door last, walked to the front and gave an explanation to the warriors that had never been here

before.

“As you can see, this place is almost entirely covered by shadows thanks to the branches. In addition, since this forest is really vast, regardless of it being day or night, it’s always dark. The reason why Svartalfheim is called the world of the endless night is because of this.”

As the warriors of Valhalla nodded with impressed faces, Gandur started to explain in more detail as if she was excited.

“The ones living in this forest are mostly dark fairies.....Therefore, if you cross the forest boundaries, there’s Nidavellir and the land of the dwarves called Dvergr. So two races live in the same place.”

“Dwarves also live in forests?”

As one of the warriors asked this, Gandur shook her head.

“There is a forest, but Nidavellir is more of an underground world. The place is like a maze because it’s built with several tunnels. If you somehow end up there, be careful not to get lost.”

Simply put, the dark fairies lived in the forest and the dwarves lived underground.

In addition, her words seemed to indicate that this task was related to the dark fairies and not the dwarves.

“Gandur, what is our task? It’s about time for you to tell us.”

As one of the warriors asked again, Gandur fixed her expression and then started explaining seriously.

“The dark fairies have asked us to defeat some monsters. They say that one of the dark fairy families was harvesting a medicinal plant for Valhalla and woke up a basilisk near here.”

“When you say basilisk, do you mean the king of snakes?”

After Siri asked this question, carefully Gandur nodded.

“It’s that basilisk. The family that was attacked asked for assistance from the Dark Fairy Congress, and the Congress asked Valhalla to defeat it.”

“So that’s why we’re here.”

The warriors looked at themselves as if they understood. Gandur also nodded this time.

“Right, our legion specializes in hunting. We are the best at hunting monsters.”

Most of the warriors in Ullr’s legion were hunters.

“I’m also expecting a lot from you. Rasgrid makes it seem like you can handle monsters really well,” Gandur said while looking at Tae Ho.

He then realized one thing.

‘So Rasgrid was the culprit.’

He wondered why he, who belonged to Idun’s legion, was dragged into a legion with specialized hunters.

As he looked towards a place in the distance and laughed, Rolph approached him and patted his shoulder.

“This is also fate.”

His words were to console him, but his face was smiling. If he hadn’t come here, then Rolph would have been alone.

Tae Ho returned a complicated smile to Rolph and then concentrated again on Gandur. She continued with her fluid words.

“For now on you will be travelling to the liaison office nearby. I will go to the Congress to take care of some things with the dark fairies. So Siri, you lead the troop and visit the troubled family.”

“Understood.”

Siri hit her chest lightly and expressed her manners. It seemed

like Siri would be the actual commander, just like dwarven mine case.

Gandur also hit her chest and talked to the warriors.

“There’s one more thing I have to tell you. They will be especially moving with the white silences on this occasion.”

“White silence!”

“Ohh! White silence!”

“I’m finally riding on one!”

Even before Gandur finished speaking, the warriors were letting out cheers. As they were all inferior ranked warriors, they didn’t seem like they would cheer without even knowing what it was like the lowest ranked warriors, but he didn’t have the courage to ask.

‘Just what is it this time?’

‘Is it also a projectile, which is a fetish for Valhalla warriors?’

‘Or is it an object that silences you for eternity?’

Tae Ho looked at Rolph cheering together with the others. In the end, he approached Siri and asked, “Siri, what’s the white silence?”

“It’s really cool. You will also like it.”

Siri answered like a warrior of Valhalla and so Tae Ho looked at Gandur with an uneasy expression.

&

“Wow!”

“It’s the real thing!”

“It’s really big!”

The dark fairies liaison office was made by carving a really big tree and a really marvelous one, but no one paid attention to it. It was because they were all busy with the white silences Gandur had

called.

‘It’s really cool.’

Even if Siri was a warrior of Valhalla, it seemed like reason and logic worked with her because the white silence was a really cool obj-no, beast, even in Tae Ho’s eyes.

There were huge wolves with white fur. They were so big he couldn’t even compare them to the tigers or lions he’d seen at the zoo. They were so big they could even handle the warriors of Valhalla as they were almost equal in size.

There were exactly 10 wolves. Just like the number of warriors.

“There will be people seeing them for the first time so to explain it briefly, they are one of the prideful summons of Ullr’s legion. They can obviously walk, and when they run they don’t make any noise. That’s the reason why they are called white silences. They will also be of great help in battle.”

Just like Gandur had explained, the white silences were really silent. It was a really marvelous to see those big things moving without making any noise.

‘Do all legions have their own summons?’

‘So what could Idun’s legion summon be?’

‘Wait, do we even have one?’

Heda hadn’t told him anything, and Ullr’s legion was a hunter’s legion, so it was understandable for them to have wolves, but that wasn’t the case with Idun’s legion. The only thing he could think of right now was an apple tree.

‘What kind of animals would Odin’s legion have?’

‘Wouldn’t it be a really cool animal since he’s the king of Gods?’

While Tae Ho was thinking of a different thing, the warriors got on the white silences one by one. Although they were hunters through and thorough, excluding Siri and a few others, the

remaining ones rode on the wolves quite awkwardly.

“Tae Ho, hurry up and get on one. It feels really great to mount it.”

Rolph, who had a sloppy posture, spoke with a face that said that he would die of happiness. Tae Ho nodded once and then got on the white silence.

[Saga: The One That Can Handle Dragons]

The white silence that was on his side in the first place didn't resist him. The moment he activated the saga his posture was automatically fixed.

“You really are skilled. It's just like Rasgrid and Reginleif said. I really want you,” said Gandur in a low voice, but since he was next to her he could hear everything she had said. Perhaps, the one Heda had to worry about wasn't Rasgrid but Gandur.

In addition, Siri had the same eyes as Gandur. Rolph also seemed to think that it would be good if he were in the same legion as Tae Ho.

As Tae Ho thought of Heda's face and shifted his eyes, Gandur smirked and said, “A guide from the fairies side will come with you. Follow him.”

As soon as she finished speaking, a dark fairy riding on a black horse approached them. She wasn't the slim beauty with copper skin Tae Ho had expected — he was a handsome youth with light violet skin.

‘Even so, he's similar to the dark elves that I know of.’

His ears were pointy, his face was handsome, and his body was slim. His skin had a light violet color that had a pastel feel to it and silver hair that was nearly white paired well with his skin.

The dark fairy that was wearing brown leather armor placed his right hand on his left chest and saluted, perhaps because everyone

else was riding their wolves.

“I’m Tollaris from the Mollo family. I will be leading you to our family’s house.”

“I’m Siri from Ullr’s legion. Treat us well.”

As Siri also hit her chest to express her manners, Tollaris nodded and looked back at Gandur.

“Valkyrie Gandur, we will depart immediately.”

“Let Ullr’s blessing be with you.”

“Let Ullr’s blessing be with Gandur!”

“The Valkyrie of our legion is certainly the best!”

“We will be going!”

“We will bring you the leather of the basilisk as a gift!”

As Gandur waved her hand and sent them off, the warriors of Ullr’s legion raised their voices and answered back. It was rough, but you could feel their affection towards Gandur, the Valkyrie of Ullr’s legion.

Tollaris just looked at them silently and then charged forward. As Siri followed him, the warriors also started to follow suit.

The white silences weren’t only silent, they were also fast. Tollaris’s horse galloped really quickly, but no wolf fell behind. Or rather, it seemed like they were faster than the horse in bulky places where roots were sprouting.

However, the best thing was how it felt when you boarded them. Normally your butt would hurt when riding on a horse even with a saddle, but you couldn’t feel any of that with the white silences when they suddenly changed direction or speed. Perhaps this was because of their cushiony fur.

Tollaris ran for a quarter of a day while resting at times. Because they were in such a dense forest that covered the sky, it was hard

to determine their location or direction.

But they were certain that they come a long way from the starting point.

“It’s over there.”

Tollaris lowered his speed to a walking pace and pointed to a far place. Tae Ho, who had gotten accustomed to the forest while coming all the way here, discovered that the village was composed of tree houses.

‘It’s like a village of a single family.’

The dark fairy said that everyone that resided here were from the Mollo family bloodline. The dark fairies guarding the entrance looked at the warriors of Valhalla with vigilant eyes, and the kids also peeked at them while hiding behind the trees.

The warriors of Valhalla looked at the village with curious eyes instead of shrinking back from the many gazes, just like ideal Valhalla warriors.

As they entered deep into the forest, a house covered by fences appeared.

“Let’s go in.”

As Tollaris dismounted from the horse, Siri and the other warriors also dismounted from the white silences.

“You can just place them in the stables. Just place them far away from the horses.”

Siri said this towards the dark fairies that had put on troubled faces as they were thinking about what to do. Although they were summoned, it seemed like the Valkyrie was the only one that could order them as she pleased.

After they passed the gates, they saw a huge house with a wide yard. It was marvelous that they were still covered by branches with a house as huge as that.

“You have troubled yourselves by coming this far. I’m Mallus, the head of the Mollo family.”

A slim man with a sharp impression welcomed them from the yard. As the man waved his hand lightly, beautiful dark fairies appeared and gave each of the warriors a cup. It seemed like they were telling them to ease their thirst for having come a long way.

There was no reason for the warriors of Valhalla to refuse when they were wild for alcohol. Siri also accepted it while thinking that one cup wouldn’t do harm.

Tae Ho also did the same. But before he was about to place his lips on his cup, he activated the dragon’s eyes just like how he always did so when he faced someone new.

Tollaris’ name was green. There were many dark fairies in the village that had grey names which meant neutrality. Anyways, most of them were green or grey.

But it was different for the house.

[Utgard Loki’s underling]

[Dark fairy: Mallus]

Clear red words. In addition, he had already seen the name: Utgard Loki.

‘The giant from the Black Fortress!’

Utgard Loki’s warrior, Hgut.

There was no time to think. There was an enemy right in front of them, yet they were currently drinking alcohol from the enemy.

“Captain Siri!”

Tae Ho yelled and threw his cup. The warriors that had already taken a sip were surprised and turned to look at Tae Ho. Rolph opened his eyes wide as if he was flustered. However, Siri was different. She threw away her cup and also spat the alcohol out of her mouth.

Mallus looked at Tae Ho. He didn't know about Tae Ho's saga. However, the moment he saw Tae Ho's eyes filled with certainty, he made a quick judgment. He raised his arm instead of making a sloppy excuse. Red words started to appear on the walls.

“Hit them!”

“Shield wall!”

Mallus and Siri yelled at the same time. The warriors of Valhalla hurriedly raised their shields and the dark fairies that appeared from everywhere fired their bows.

Tollaris and the dark fairy ladies that were near them looked at their surroundings with flustered faces and fell after being hit by the arrows.

The dark fairies screamed. The house was filled with green words, grey words, and red words.

“Seal the door!”

“We are escaping!”

Mallus and Siri yelled at the same time again. The dark fairies in grey ran towards the gate, and some of the warriors hid behind the shields and fired their crossbows towards the dark fairies that were trying to close the gate. Siri pulled back the shield wall and then blew her horn trumpet.

The white silences reacted to the sound that resembled the wind. They bit down or slammed the dark fairies that were trying to tie them down. They ran across the yard and approached the group.

“Tae Ho! Take lead!” Siri said while hurriedly mounting onto the white silence. It was because she trusted Tae Ho's eyes.

Tae Ho glared at the half-closed gates and yelled, “Let's go!”

The white silences charged soundlessly.

“Close the gates!”

Mallus yelled again. The dark fairies ran towards the entrance while Rolph and the warriors raised their crossbows once more. A rain of arrows hailed from above their heads.

Tae Ho only looked in front of him and charged. He didn't dodge the arrows coming from the front. He stormed towards the gate and extended his left hand. He activated the carved rune magic!

“Gant!”

Rune of wind.

A strong wind surged from Tae Ho's left arm.

< Episode 9 – Svartalfheim (1) > End

Episode 9/Chapter 2: Svartalfheim (2)

The temporal rune magic carvings had five levels.

The Gant, which Tae Ho had learned, was level 1. However, Tae Ho's magic greatly surpassed that of the other inferior ranked warriors that neglected magic.

The wind that bursted out deflected the arrows. Not only that but it also roughly pushed the door the dark fairies were trying to close.

Bang!

The white silence Tae Ho was riding on charged silently. Siri and the other warriors also quickly left the house.

Tae Ho dropped his body closer to the white silence's body and looked towards the front. As he had expected, there were overwhelmingly more green and grey letters compared to the red ones. Tae Ho went in the opposite direction of where the red letters were gathering from outside the house and then looked back.

Chwajajak!

The dark fairies that came out of the house consecutively fired arrows. Some arrows hit the backs and arms of the warriors, but instead of screaming in pain, they counterattacked with their crossbows.

They weren't inferior ranked warriors for nothing. If the lowest ranked warriors were at the level of valiant humans, starting from the inferior rank and up, with the accumulation of quite a bit of runes, they could be called superhumans. It was obvious for their physical abilities, but their fortitude and concentration were also better than normal.

A warrior who was hit in the back three times took on a firing stance without faltering and precisely pierced a dark fairy's

forehead. As the accuracy of the other warriors was also precise, the dark fairies lost a bit of morale.

“Keep running!”

Siri yelled towards Tae Ho and the warriors. They were in a situation where they didn't know how many enemies there were or what they were hiding. For now, escaping was a priority.

Tae Ho opened a path. He escaped through the outskirts instead of going through the village entrance to get out of Mollo village, which wasn't entirely fenced off.

“Watch your heads!” Siri yelled. Tae Ho turned his head and saw red letters pouring down the ceiling. They were big snakes that were hanging on the branches.

Tae Ho took out Runefang. The sword was set ablaze and he swung it while charging forward. The other warriors also raised their daggers and axes to get rid of the snakes.

The white silences didn't stop. The warriors of Ullr's legion had more or less taken care of the snakes and then tilted their ears. They heard the sound of the horses that the dark fairies were riding to chase them.

“Rolph, stick next to Tae Ho. Warriors, activate Ullr's blessing!”

Siri quickly ordered the warriors. Rolph stuck close to Tae Ho and the warriors that were lined up in a line while charging through the forest activated Ullr's blessing one by one.

Another difference between the inferior rank and the lowest rank.

The inferior ranked warriors of Ullr's legion couldn't only use one blessing; they could use both stealth and track.

The nine warriors, excluding Tae Ho, activated the stealth blessing and their surroundings became quiet. Even though they were riding at a fast pace, no traces could be seen on the ground.

Tae Ho caught his breath while running. The sound of the horse steps drifted farther and farther away.

&

Mallus, the head of the Mollo family, gritted his teeth with a pale face. He couldn't guess where things had gone wrong.

There were no signs. He didn't even leave them a single hint.

'Just why!'

Curses came out on their own. In addition, the situation was serious. He had attacked the moment he was sure that the warriors of Valhalla had noticed, but even so he couldn't catch them.

What would happen if they escaped like this? Just until where did they notice?

His head felt stuffed. He couldn't think of anything else either. He lacked too much information.

'Not yet, I still have a chance.'

He thought about how he could somehow get rid of them.

At first, they had entered the house without doubts. It meant that the Valkyrie of Valhalla that had brought them in still hadn't realized Mallus's estrangement.

He didn't know when they had noticed, but still they were the ones that knew.

So he just had to get rid of them.

'But how!'

They had already escaped the village. He had sent a pursuit team, but it was doubtful whether they could catch them or not. In addition, if they were out of the Mollo family's territory, then the other dark fairies could witness the fight. He didn't have much time.

He needed help, but even he was afraid to ask for it.

“It seems like something has gone wrong.”

He heard a voice. Surprised, Mallus, couldn't even gulp dry saliva properly. He trembled and barely managed to look back.

He wasn't at the Mollo family's house anymore. The entire world turned dark, and Mallus fell into the wide space alone.

Mallus fell to his knees. Then knocked his head on the floor. The eyes looking down at him were on a really high place.

Giant.

The monsters of Jotunheimr.

The eyes of the exalted giant king, the aide of Utgard Loki, shone even in the darkness. With his eyes looking down on him in the darkness, Mallus couldn't think of hiding anything. He spouted everything he knew.

He had to get rid of the warriors of Valhalla that had fled.

If he didn't, then things would really turn out for the worst.

“Let me borrow the basilisk. If you let me borrow your strength, then I.....”

“You can't do it.”

The voice that came down from the sky petrified Mallus. It was true. Mallus himself knew it the best. However, if he didn't do something, the future he had left would be crushed.

Mallus started to sweat while not being able to breathe properly. The voice of the giant stirred him up again.

“But don't fear, Mallus. I have prepared something.”

Mallus flinched and unconsciously raised his head. The giant looked at Mallus. The giant that didn't trust this small and childish dark fairy in the first place had obviously prepared something just in case.

“It should be moving by now.”

An existence that wouldn't be beaten by mere inferior ranked warriors of Valhalla.

The eyes of the giant passed Mallus. It headed beyond the darkness, to a far place.

&

“We shook them off.”

The warrior that was at the rear said this in a low voice. As if that were a signal, the warriors stopped executing their stealths. The white silences also slowed their pace.

Even if they were the white silences, they couldn't run forever at full speed. They needed time to catch some breath — same for the warriors of Valhalla.

“Don't relax too much. We can't ease ourselves before meeting Gandur.”

Siri glanced back and said in a low voice. As she couldn't even feel any traces with the tracking blessing it seemed like they had really succeeded in shaking them off, but whatever the case this was still the land of the dark fairies. Now that the Mollo family they trusted in had suddenly attacked them, it wouldn't be weird for other dark fairies to also attack them.

The warriors knew that truth well, but instead of getting nervous for nothing they showed a bit of leisure.

“It hurts like hell. Siri, can't we treat our injuries for a moment?”

“There's poison in the arrows. I tasted it a bit and it made my tongue numb. It seems rather lethal. The poison of the snakes seem like paralyzers.”

The warriors talked while they plucked the arrows from their bodies and frowned. If they were warriors of the mortal world, they would have already died due to the lethal poison, but for the inferior ranked warriors, it only hurt quite a lot.

Even so, Siri shook her head after looking at the warriors with worried eyes.

“Treat yourselves while moving. We can’t stop.”

They had to keep moving even if it was a little bit. Just like Siri had said, they couldn’t relax until they joined up with Valkyrie Gandur.

As the warriors acknowledged the situation, they treated themselves with first aid with things like medicine and mushrooms.

Rolph, who wasn’t particularly hurt, asked Tae Ho in a low voice, “Tae Ho, did you know that the head was a bad guy through your saga?”

“Yes.”

Tae Ho nodded once and then looked at Siri. Tae Ho himself was hesitating even after having seen it with the dragon’s eyes, but he was thankful towards Siri who had believed in him without hesitating once.

“Thank you for believing in me, Captain Siri.”

“Of course.”

Siri answered shortly and then looked at her surroundings. At Siri’s rather brusque expression, Rolph smiled bitterly and asked, “Isn’t it obvious to trust your comrades? Captain Siri just said that.”

They faced life and death battles together after all.

Tae Ho unconsciously nodded. Thinking about it, he had known Rolph and Siri for merely 10 days, but their feelings was another thing. They felt like reliable allies whom they had been with for tens of years.

“The youngest says some righteous things.”

“He’s the youngest and he’s spouting things like comrades in

arms. How many battlefields have you gone through? At most 40? 50?”

“Hey kid, make some cute tricks.”

The inferior ranked warriors said some words towards Rolph and laughed soundlessly.

Then, Siri sharply said, “Keep silence. We haven’t completely shaken them off. Activate your stealth blessing as soon as you finish the treatment.”

“Yeah, yeah.”

The warriors replied lightly and then concentrated on curing themselves. When they took just two more steps, one of the warriors raised their heads. He reflexively took out his dagger and yelled, “Right!”

Bang!

The voice and the loud sound exploded at the same time. The javelin that flew strongly pierced the chest of the warrior and then stabbed the ground like that.

“Split!”

“It’s coming in strong! Block it!”

The warriors yelled at the same time. And one of them swung their weapon reflexively.

But it was too late. Precisely speaking, the opponent was too huge.

The axe of the warrior had certainly hit its target. However the opponent charged through as if ignoring the attack and then pierced the neck of a warrior that was riding on white silence.

His body was big. He then pushed down the warrior he had pierced the neck of and then swung his right arm. And then, poisonous snakes started to pour down from the tip of his hands.

The snake bit the warriors and the white silences. The warriors that were outside its range put on a battle stance quickly and some even got down the white silences.

Tae Ho also looked at him and got shocked. It wasn't because the monster had an insectoid head and a tail.

He couldn't see its name properly. He did know that it was red, but that was all.

Tae Ho knew what this represented.

An existence of another level. Something he couldn't reach at his current level.

It slurped its snake like tongue. And at the same time, its tail and arms that were covered with black scales moved. It seemed like it would leap but then smacked down a warrior with its tail and exploded something with its hand. And then, a black aura spread towards its surroundings.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The warriors fell on the ground. It was because the white silences had suddenly disappeared.

Summoning dispel. Now that the summoner, the Valkyrie, was far away they didn't even have a means to block it. The warriors chose to attack it instead of trying to read the situation.

The axes and daggers that poured down stabbed its body. The monster got covered by blood but that was all. It crushed the head of a warrior as if nothing had happened to it.

Three warriors had died. No, it was four. It plucked up an axe that was stuck in its body, then spun and swung the axe widely. The warriors all threw down their weapons and fell back, but one of them couldn't completely dodge it. The axe split his chest, and the moment blood started to pour the tail of the monster grabbed on the neck of the warrior. And then smashed him down to the ground. A sound of something crushing was heard.

“It’s a regenerator! don’t get close to him rashly!”

Siri yelled and fired her crossbow consecutively. The monster didn’t even bother to dodge the arrows and opened its mouth.

“An inferior ranked warrior knows about regenerators? Then, you should also know that you won’t be able to stop me.”

It was a low and creepy voice. It smiled brightly and then started to pluck the weapons stuck in its body and threw it to the warriors. When the warriors parried the weapons or dodged, the monster charged forward. It ran towards Siri.

Siri took a breath and then threw her crossbow at the monster and took out her dagger. The monster was fast, but Siri was also as fast.

The sword of the monster and Siri’s dagger clashed. It seemed like the monster, that was bigger than the warriors of Valhalla, was many times bigger than Siri. Siri was also a superhuman, but she wouldn’t be able to endure the pressing force for long.

The monster laughed. Instead of putting more strength in its sword, he chose to kick. There was an amazing strength behind its kick, even when it was in a contest of strength with Siri.

Siri dodged the attack. She twisted her arms and body strangely and flowed down the attack. The posture of the monster crumbled thanks to that, and Siri used that opening.

It was a fast and strong attack. Several wounds appeared in the body of the monster in an instant and it became covered in blood. And just as it had been until now, that was everything. The wounds of the monster started to regen and then it swung its swords towards Siri as if it didn’t even feel pain.

Bang!

She blocked the attack by parrying it, but she couldn’t withstand it. Siri’s body seemed to bend at the overwhelming strength and then fell to the ground.

Bang!

The arrow Rolph fired exploded. As soon as the close battle between Siri and the monster ended, the warriors started to fire arrows consecutively. But it was in vain. The monster had taken a strong attack at a close distance as if nothing. And then it threw itself towards Siri, that was in pain in the ground, as if trying to finish it.

Rolph fired an arrow again. It exploded and it lowered its speed but that was all. One of the warriors cursed and turned back. He ran without even looking back. He wasn't escaping while leaving his comrades. No, he was escaping but that was because it was his role. It was meaningless if everyone died here. One of them had to stay alive and deliver the news. Thanks to that, he chose to flee even when he would face humiliation.

But the monster noticed that. The monster that was running towards Siri turned its body and extended its right hand. The snake flew as fast as an arrow and binded the legs of the warrior. He hadn't killed him and just made him fall, but it was enough with that.

The monster looked at Siri again. She was standing up. She glared at the monster and it laughed. He ignored the arrows that were still hitting its back even in this moment and then swung its sword.

Bang!

It was blocked again. But it wasn't Siri that had blocked it this time. The moment it turned its body a moment to attack the escaping warrior Tae Ho had entered in the opening that was made.

He knew the moment they clashed their swords. It was an overwhelming strength. In addition, the pressure was also overwhelming. It felt just like facing a giant.

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon Sees Through All Things]

He couldn't see a weakness. Tae Ho stopped his breath and concentrated. If it was a monster then Tae Ho was a superhuman.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior]

The sword techniques of the dragon knight Kalsted. His fighting method.

The engaged swords separated and then clashed again. Three times, four times.

The monster put on an expression as if it was having fun. He could hear Siri that was panting behind him. The warriors tried to attack from a distance however they could, and Rolph that had ran hurriedly dragged Siri.

Tae Ho didn't know exactly what Siri meant with regenerator, but he realized one thing. He wouldn't be able to finish it with normal attacks. Looking that it didn't even flinch at the explosive arrow Rolph fired, the flaming Runefang would also have no effect on it.

He needed another thing.

Something that could make a gap between them.

Babang!

It was the fifth exchange. He was losing in strength. If he didn't have Idun's blessing, he would have already dropped his sword.

Tae Ho concentrated on the monster and thought.

The conversation he had with Heda. The words she had told him.

'What do you think is the difference between lowest ranked warriors and inferior ranked warriors?'

The night he became an inferior ranked warrior Heda asked him after finishing their classes of rune magic.

The lowest ranked warrior was a person that couldn't throw

away their habits from the mortal world. They had strengthened their bodies by accumulating runes, but they still belonged to the boundaries of humans.

Starting from the inferior rank, they could start to be called superhumans. They were warriors that could do things normal humans couldn't with their accumulated runes.

But that wasn't the only difference.

The lowest ranked warrior received the blessing of a God.

And the inferior ranked warrior received even more blessings.

It wasn't only because they had accumulated runes and became stronger. It was because they had gotten more accustomed to the strength of the God through the times they were an inferior ranked warrior.

The God of a legion.

The inferior ranked warriors were holding a seed. It was a level to prepare them on becoming intermediate ranked warriors.

The difference between inferior ranked warriors and intermediate ranked warriors.

'Starting from the intermediate rank, I can use the strength of a God.'

He would strengthen his body through the runes and become accustomed to the strength of the God by receiving blessings. He would prepare himself to be able to handle the strength of a God.

'Tae Ho, you are a bit different.'

He had eaten Idun's golden apple that was the fruit of the Gods.

He had received much more blessings than normal inferior ranked warriors.

And the strength of the dragon knight Kalsted had become the root for Tae Ho's strength.

‘You can bloom your seed but I don’t recommend it. Because the strength of a God is permitted starting from the intermediate rank.’

It was dangerous. He couldn’t know what side effects could occur.

But even so, Heda had told Tae Ho.

Because he was special. Because rather than being thrown in his ignorance, she wanted him to control it voluntarily!

Bang!

The sword of the monster stabbed the ground. It was the seventh attack. And the eight attack occurred from his hands.

The snakes that poured down opened their mouths. Tae Ho lowered his posture and dodged it and then entered its grasp. The monster stayed calm even when Tae Ho attacked when he was at the defensive until now. He was putting a posture as if allowing him to attack as much as he wanted and prepared to execute the ninth attack.

Tae Ho swung his sword. Runefang split its stomach and Tae Ho got out of its reach.

The monster laughed but then stumbled. It placed its hands on the wound on his stomach. The blood didn’t stop and shock appeared in its face.

‘Heda.’

Tae Ho breathed. Then he turned towards the monster again.

The power of a God.

The golden light of Idun started to shine on Runefang.

&

< Episode 9 – Svartalfheim (2) > End

Episode 9/Chapter 3: Svartalfheim (3)

The

Regenerator Makus couldn't believe what had happened to it. Blood flowed endlessly through its fingers. The pain caused by the wound was too unfamiliar.

It was something he wouldn't forget.

Everyone here was an inferior ranked warrior. It wasn't something it had heard, but Makus itself had confirmed it.

It had observed them entering the Mollo family from a distant location and he ascertained his assumptions by fighting them.

The runes they had accumulated were all at the inferior ranked level. There were no intermediate ranked warriors here.

Yet the thing that had ripped open the blessing of the Giant and had suppressed the regeneration was certainly the strength of a God.

In addition, the power of a God felt unfamiliar. It was a strength he hadn't experienced on the battlefield until now.

It wasn't only Makus, but Siri was also surprised. However, it was different from Makus' shock. There was delight in Siri's reaction.

Tae Ho said, "I'm going."

That sentence sliced through everyone's thoughts. Regenerator Makus flinched, and Siri and the warriors of Valhalla knew what they had to do. They all started to attack, starting with Rolph.

Arrows poured down. It still didn't work. However, Makus couldn't ignore them anymore with the leisure it had previously.

It focused its eyes on Tae Ho. Tae Ho faced Makus and let out a long breath. He thought while maintaining a calm expression.

‘Fuck.’

It was hard. Maintaining the strength of a God wasn’t an ordinary thing. He finally he knew why Heda had told him not to use it if possible.

He felt like his magic power, stamina, and concentration were quickly being drained from him.

‘Let’s fight wisely.’

Fighting while maintaining the strength of the God was a stupid thing to do. There was a high probability of him collapsing before the monster if he did that.

Tae Ho observed Makus. He remembered the moment Runefang ripped its abdomen.

The strength of the God ripped open the force that was covering it. Idun’s strength overpowered its regenerability.

He would use the power of the God when he attacked, and he would attack differently from how he had done so until now.

“For Idun.”

Tae Ho mumbled in a low voice and then charged. Makus flinched again. Then it took its hand off its abdomen and raised its sword.

However, Tae Ho didn’t enter its range. He believed that there would be an opening sometime.

Siri replied with his thoughts.

Puk!

Makus’ stance crumbled as it had been entirely focused on Tae Ho. It was the result of Siri slamming herself against it instead of firing her crossbow. The monster could regenerate its wounds and even ignore pain, but it couldn’t do anything about being pushed.

Chwak!

At that moment, Tae Ho cut through its arm. The monster let out a low scream and then fell into despair once again.

It didn't simply just hurt. Being cut by the sword wasn't the end of it — the wound seemed to deepen everytime.

‘It works.’

What Tae Ho was holding wasn't Runefang. It was the Executioner's sword, which was especially effective towards enemies that could regenerate. It was a magic sword that inflicted a bleeding effect and sustained damage.

He would only wield the strength of the God the moment he attacked. The special effect of the weapon would activate just like it normally did in game.

The monster became even more flustered. The pain he had felt for a really long time made it numb.

Tae Ho charged again. The monster raised its sword hurriedly, but it didn't have the same ardor as before. Rather than exerting pressure, it had shrunk down.

The monster was still strong. However, it started to mind Tae Ho's attacks. It started to defend, and its posture worsened.

The Executioner's sword, which was covered in gold light, passed by its body several times. More blood flowed, and its movements became even more dull.

“Kua!”

The monster swung its sword widely while roaring. It was because it had realized that it couldn't continue like this. He swung his sword that wielded unbelievable strength several times.

Tae Ho was calm. He dodged the attacks that had become simple as they were strong. It was the same in the game. You needed to be calmer the grimmer was the situation. You had to observe the enemies' attacks to properly counterattack.

Makus' sword passed over his head. The excessively strong attack broke Makus' stance and Tae Ho realized that the time had come. He jumped as if entering its grasp.

At that moment, a sharp stab attacked Tae Ho. It was Makus' tail. It was the secret card it had prepared.

Tae Ho gritted his teeth and endured the pain. Instead of twisting his body to dodge the attack, he surged forward.

Makus' tail stabbed Tae Ho's shoulder. At the same time, Tae Ho's sword deeply stabbed its abdomen.

Curses came out on their own. Tae Ho gulped down Heda's name and then twisted the Executioner's sword. Before he let go of his hands, he activated the warrior's sword once more.

Pubuk!

The Executioner's sword transformed to a heavy metal hammer. As it was inside its body, it broke down before perfectly transforming, but it was enough. The insides of the monster had become a mess.

“Kuhok!”

The monster vomited blood. Tae Ho let go of the sword and then powerfully hit its stomach with his right palm.

The monster lost its breath. It fell back and Tae Ho activated the warrior's sword with the last of his strength. He inserted the God's strength in the Executioner's sword one more time.

The sword that was swung from a high place severed its head. Blood flowed endlessly from the deep wound.

Tae Ho plucked and threw down the tail that had stabbed his shoulder. Curses and screams came out at the same time but he endured it by gritting his teeth.

The monster fell on its butt.

Tae Ho also fell on his butt. He let out a sigh that was mixed with

a groan. At that moment, the warriors all cheered.

“Tae Ho!”

“Idun’s warrior!”

Starting with Rolph, the warriors came running towards Tae Ho. Some of them stabbed Makus’ corpse as if to ensure that it was dead.

“Uwa! You are amazing! Really amazing!”

Rolph was especially excited and hugged Tae Ho. Honestly speaking, it hurt. If he had to choose, he would prefer Siri’s embrace.

However, Siri just smiled at him. No, in the first place it seemed like she was also exhausted like Tae Ho. She was breathing roughly while sitting down.

“Wa-wait.”

Tae Ho pushed Rolph back. Only then did Rolph get a hold of himself and let go of Tae Ho.

“First, the runes....”

He thought he would fall unconscious any moment now.

Tae Ho extended his palm towards Makus’ corpse. Familiar runes and runes with attributes he’d never seen before entered Tae Ho’s palm.

Life attribute rune.

In addition, the amount was large.

“Did you absorb it all?”

Rolph asked again and Tae Ho nodded. Then Rolph embraced him again. The other warriors did the same.

It also hurt this time. Honestly speaking, it was even hard to breathe.

Tae Ho closed his eyes. Since he was tired, it was reasonable for him to feel sleepy.

He didn't lose consciousness though. Perhaps it was because he had absorbed life runes or because he had yelled Heda's name instead of Idun's at a decisive moment that caused Idun's blessing to catch Tae Ho's consciousness.

'Oh, Idun.'

Tae Ho felt like he was being crushed by Rolph and closed his eyes. He couldn't sleep, but he was planning on resting even if it was just a little bit.

Tae Ho thought of Heda's face instead of Rolph's to calm himself and he slowly fell asleep.

&

The Giant that was in the darkness sensed Makus' death. This situation was also beyond the Giant's expectations.

Just what had happened? How had this come about?

He would ponder about that later. The Giant thought of the things he had to do right now.

He would stop the excavation that was being realized by the Mollo family. The moment the congress of the dark fairies asked for help from the warriors of Valhalla because they had woken up a Basilisk while excavating was also Mallus' mistake. He would also get rid of him.

However, he wasn't planning to just fall back.

The basilisks Makus had called before it died became a stronghold for him.

The Giant closed his eyes and darkness covered him again.

&

The first who sensed a change was Siri. She stood up from her

place and then looked at her surroundings before biting her lips.

She, who had the senses of a veteran warrior, could feel it. Things that were emanating killing intent were gathering.

Her side was already quite exhausted. It was right to flee instead of fighting them head-on.

However, they didn't have the white silences anymore. Escaping from their reach like they had done so until now was impossible.

“Siri?”

One of the warriors called Siri. It was because he had also noticed the same thing as Siri.

Siri looked at the corpses of the warriors. It was unfortunate but now wasn't the time to retrieve their corpses.

“Garm is still alive!”

The warrior that was treating the warrior that had received the first javelin attack yelled in joy. Siri was also happy, but she didn't refute the fact that he would be a load to carry with them.

What could she do?

Siri closed her eyes. She felt the enemies closing in even now and made a quick decision.

“We are going to scatter.”

The first thing they had to do was to regroup with Gandur. But it didn't mean that all of them had to do that.

The warriors showed rejection at first but no one opposed it. It was because they also knew that was the best course of action.

Siri divided the groups. The remaining warriors would flee in three groups.

“Let's meet in Valhalla again.”

“Those are the correct words, but it's somewhat ominous.”

If they were in the mortal world, it meant for them to meet again after they died.

The warriors laughed in a low voices. Siri put on a smile and mixed it with a sigh before speaking again.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

The warriors didn't turn to look at each other anymore. They started to run with all their might.

Time passed by.

Tae Ho opened his eyes. What he was expecting was the bedroom he could see the ceiling of, but weirdly enough, what entered his eyes was still a forest.

Tae Ho blinked in a half-awake state and then woke up completely. He was lying down on a bulky and big root and Siri was next to him. It seemed like it had really become night as it was darker than the afternoon. He could see Siri's white skin.

“Captain Siri?”

Siri turned to look at him. She was putting an exhausted expression but then placed a finger on her lip and started explaining the situation after silencing Tae Ho.

Basilisks had gathered not long after he had defeated the regenerator. Siri's group had come to hunt the basilisks but the situation was bad. In addition, they hadn't expected for the basilisks to come in a group.

In the end, they chose to scatter and flee to increase their survival rates. Siri was in charge of the exhausted Tae Ho.

She activated the stealth blessing while fleeing because she was cornered, but it was a matter of time before they'd be discovered.

“Why didn't you wake me?”

Then he wouldn't have been extra baggage.

Siri answered with warm eyes at Tae Ho's question.

"I tried everything but you didn't wake up."

Perhaps it was the aftereffect of having excessively activated the strength of a God.

Tae Ho just raised his body instead of asking what she had tried. As he concentrated, he could hear leaves shuffling near them.

Just like Siri had said, they were really cornered. In addition, it seemed like the sound was coming closer. If they were closing the gap, then getting discovered was really only a matter of time.

What would they do now? Would they hide until they were discovered and then fight?

He couldn't think of anything in particular. He had the hawk wing coat, but it was impossible to fly properly in this place that was filled with branches as the ceiling.

Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and then looked at Siri. Siri answered with a low voice at his eyes that were asking if she had a solution.

"Now that you're up, the number of choices has increased by one."

Siri spoke up to there and then stood up after letting out a breath. She loosened up her cape and then also started to take off her armor.

"Captain Siri?"

Tae Ho opened his eyes widely while looking at Siri who had stripped herself naked.

With a bitter voice, Siri said, "I'm not a Valkyrie, but take good care of me."

[Saga: Wolf Witch]

White smoke instantly covered Siri, and a wolf with golden fur

appeared in front of Tae Ho.

< Episode 9 – Svartalfheim (3) > End

Episode 9/Chapter 4: Svartalfheim (4)

Tae Ho blinked. There was still a golden-furred wolf instead of Siri in front of him. She was smaller than a white silence, but it was enough to ride on her.

“Captain....Siri?”

“Is it that surprising?”

What came out of the wolf’s mouth was certainly Siri’s voice. The deep and blue eyes of the wolf were similar to Siri’s.

‘Well, a Valkyrie can even transform into a dragon.’

Thinking about it, didn’t Tae Ho himself transform into a hawk?

‘Ah, so that’s why.....she took it off?’

Because she didn’t transform into an item like the wing coat. It seemed like it was impossible to transform with her clothes on.

“Captain Siri, you were a magician?”

At Tae Ho’s question, Siri put on a strange smile with her wolf appearance and then replied vaguely.

“It’s similar. But first, is your shoulder fine? Your regeneration rate was faster than I imagined.”

Tae Ho looked at the wound he’d received from the regenerator. Tae Ho’s recovery rate was fast thanks to Idun’s necklace, but the wound was too big in the first place. It did close up quite a bit, but he still felt pain when he moved.

“Wait a moment.”

Tae Ho took in several breaths. He closed his eyes and activated the God’s power. As he concentrated, the aura that covered his entire body shifted to his shoulder and a golden light started to cover the wound.

Using game terms it would be the divine power used by priests or

paladins. Just like the Gods of Asgard represented different fields, the strength of the Gods varied based on what God it was.

“It really is the strength of the Goddess of Life, Idun.”

Siri said this in a low voice. Tae Ho spent a great amount of health and concentration for using the strength of the God he wasn't accustomed to but thanks to that, his wound was able to completely close up.

“Whew.”

He certainly needed training. It wasn't a strength you could use starting from the intermediate rank for nothing.

‘It still has its uses.’

Tae Ho moved his shoulder lightly. He did feel some pain but it didn't restrict his movements.

Siri said, “Tae Ho, if we start moving, the stealth blessing will become weaker. So they will chase us immediately after that. Avoiding battle is impossible.”

Tae Ho activated the dragon's eye and looked at his surroundings. He saw several red words through the grass.

The basilisks and several giant snakes.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly without having realizing it himself and nodded. Just like Siri had said, avoiding battle was impossible.

“Get on my back. I'm not as fast as a white silence, but I should be quite fast.”

She said that, but she might be faster. Siri had the most amount of runes among the inferior ranked warriors gathered for this expedition.

“Didn't you think of taking Rolph and escaping?”

If she had chosen Rolph instead of Tae Ho then she would have been able to transform into a wolf way before.

As Tae Ho got up and asked, Siri, let out a long sigh and looked at Tae Ho fixedly.

“I’m sorry for Rolph but....If I had to choose between saving one of the two, I would have chosen you. For Asgard and for Valhalla.”

Tae Ho understood what Siri meant by those words.

As the atmosphere became grim, Siri put on a playful smile.

“Well, it was more dangerous than I thought because you didn’t wake up as I expected.”

She said that as a joke but it was the truth. If Siri had prioritized her safety she would have chosen another warrior instead of Tae Ho.

However, she chose him. Just like she had said herself, she judged that she would save Tae Ho.

“Your smiling face is cute.”

As Tae Ho said unconsciously, Siri burst out of laughter.

“What are you saying looking at the face of a wolf?”

She was also right this time. However, Tae Ho just smirked and rode on Siri’s back. It was more comfortable to fix his posture because she was smaller than a white silence.

“Tae Ho, I will entrust you with battling.”

The only thing Siri could do now that she had Tae Ho riding her back was running. Tae Ho was the one in charge of repelling the snakes chasing them.

Tae Ho nodded. He clenched his fist once and then lowered his posture and said.

“You should also entrust your body to me.”

“What?”

[Saga: The one that handles dragons]

Tae Ho activated his saga instead of replying. And then, Siri also flinched just like Rasgrid had done, but then accepted Tae Ho.

“So it was like this.”

“It’s better than you thought, right?”

Siri just prepared to charge forward instead of replying. Tae Ho also concentrated instead of joking around anymore.

The moment they charged forward, the stealth blessing would disappear. And battle would start from that moment.

Tae Ho’s and Siri’s breathing started to synchronize. They shared their senses through the saga.

Uneasiness and nervousness and expectation towards the battle that would occur starting from now.

Tae Ho put strength in his two legs tightening on Siri’s waist. And then Siri kicked the ground.

Several sounds were heard at the same time. The sound of charging through the ground, and bodies getting up from the grass.

The eyes of the dragon pierced through the darkness. Tae Ho extended his hand after he sensed the red letters getting closer. The thing he chose was the executioner’s sword.

Chwak!

Snakes attacked from the sides. They were just like arrows.

He slashed one snake. And at the same time fended back the snakes by using the shield on his left arm. Some snakes bit Siri. Siri let out a groan but she didn’t stop.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The earth shook. The big guys were moving. Big red words approached from between the small ones.

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is just like a storm]

Siri's charge was empowered by the wind. Even though it was noisy, it effectively pushed back the small snakes coming at them.

‘It came!’

The first Basilisk. Tae Ho looked at the red letters instead of the face of the Basilisk. He pulled the trigger of Thunderbolt instead of the Executioner's sword to check its general outline.

He fired in consecution but none of the arrows hit. A part of them bounced back as if they slipped off the scales.

“Don't face its eyes!”

Siri warned him. The snake king the Basilisk had a power evil eye that had the power to petrify.

Tae Ho followed Siri's warning. He kept looking at the red words instead of the head of the Basilisks to guess the distance.

Siri was fast but the terrain wasn't good. The bulky roots were too big and thick, and there were many holes in the ground. But the Basilisks moved quickly on the ground as if slipping through it.

There was one more on their right. And another one was charging from the left.

“Captain Siri!”

He yelled but it was late. Siri jumped up and tried to dodge them, but the Basilisk was faster. The monster, that had flown as if bouncing up, it gripped Siri's body.

It seemed like it was still an offspring that its body was small. The monster that was even bigger than an anaconda, that was famous for being big, covered Siri's entire lower body and tried to strangle her.

“Urasha!”

Tae Ho let out a cry and swung the Executioner's sword. At his strike that had all of his strength behind it, the Basilisk offspring got split. Although it didn't split in two, he had succeeded in

slashing up to its bones.

“Kyak!”

The Basilisk offspring let out a cry and struggled. Thanks to that, Siri's lower body was unsealed but Tae Ho and Siri rolled on the ground.

“Chwak!”

The snakes charged towards them as if this was the right time. Some of the teeth pierced through the thick leather armor.

Tae Ho ground his teeth and endured. He acted calmly instead of moving his limbs rashly. He slashed the snakes biting his legs and then looked for Siri.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri fixed her posture and leaped up. Tae Ho kicked on the air and then hung on Siri's body.

He felt dizzy because of the poison. And he could also feel that Siri's movements had become dull.

But now wasn't the time to stop.

The Basilisk that was at their right extended its head and spread its mouth. Instead of biting down Tae Ho and Siri it started to pour out acid.

“Gant!”

Tae Ho activated the rune magic. As he pushed back the acid the most he could through using the wind wall he threw the blazing Runefang at his mouth. Runefang, that was supported by Tae Ho's strength, flew like an arrow and pierced its mouth.

The huge Basilisk that could devour an entire human struggled in pain, so the earth started to shake. Siri didn't stop her legs even when groaning in pain.

Tae Ho took in a breath. And then glared at a high place and

determined himself.

“Captain Siri!”

At the same time, he called her he transmitted his thoughts through the one that can handle dragons.

Close your eyes and charge with your fastest speed. Leave everything to me.

It was an excessive order. However, Siri believed in Tae Ho. She closed her eyes and charged forward.

Now that he had defeated the regenerator, his synchro rate was at 15%. And obviously enough, the completion of the warrior's sword also became higher. Tae Ho took out the Heavy Lance he used for defeating the Ogre Lord Gandoll.

At their front, a Basilisk that was as twice as big as the normal ones were blocking their path. It was impossible to dodge it or going through the sides like they had been doing until now.

Tae Ho looked at its head instead of the red letters to aim better. You could see its red eyes below the projection that resembled a crown.

The evil eyes activated. And at the same time, Tae Ho concentrated the God's strength in his eyes.

The power of the evil eyes and the strength of the God clashed. The Basilisk, that was raising its head like a cobra, flinched at that moment and Tae Ho hit one spot with the Heavy Lance.

Siri looked at it through Tae Ho. She increased her speed to the maximum by using all her strength.

“Chwak!”

The Basilisk didn't dodge and charged forward. It opened its mouth wide and then spat out acid like a breath.

Tae Ho also didn't dodge it. He raised his shield and didn't stop. He jumped through the violet acid and then precisely hit the point

he had established!

Bang!

A heavy sound rang out. A part of the Basilisk's body exploded the moment it clashed with Tae Ho and Tae Ho throw out the Heavy Lance that had become a mess. Siri rolled on the ground once without landing properly.

The Basilisk died on the spot. The monster collapsed to the ground and trembled, but those were just effects after dying.

Tae Ho bit his lips and stood up. He could see the naked Siri at a distance. It seemed like she had some consciousness remaining in her that she was using all her strength to rise up with her trembling arms and legs.

They had passed through the acid in an instant and blocked it with the wind and shield, but she had still drunk some of it.

Siri stood up by staggering a bit but fell again in the end. It wasn't only the Basilisk's acid, but the poison of the snakes also held her back. She smiled at Tae Ho that had approached her with difficulty and said.

"Tae Ho, go."

She would stay in this place and try to buy even a bit more time.

Those words weren't even a bit funny. Siri couldn't even properly stand up and didn't even have her crossbow that was her specialty.

Tae Ho took in a deep breath instead of replying. He stood next to Siri and gripped the blazing Runefang.

Siri dropped her mouth after looking at him but then closed it again. Because even she wouldn't be able to leave if she was in the same situation. But instead said another thing.

"I should be able to fire a few times."

Even if she didn't have a crossbow, she could still hit her target

by activating her saga. Siri gripped a sharp stone and Tae Ho glared at the darkness.

The red words.

There were also five Basilisks.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly when he looked at himself trying to endure alone rather than escape. How much had it passed that he changed this much?

“I’m still glad that i’m next to you.”

Because he wasn’t alone. He had someone to fight with.

“Let’s meet in Valhalla again.”

Siri had also said it. The two people exchanged smiles instead of fear and glared at the front. The red letters charged towards them and Tae Ho shouted the name of Idun instead of fleeing. And because of that, he missed the things that approached them from behind.

“Uoooo!”

“Ullr!”

“Valhalla!”

“Captain Siri! I have come!”

Voices were heard in consecution. Siri and Tae Ho opened their eyes widely at the cries that were heard from behind. They could see them even if they didn’t turn back.

The warriors riding on the white silences passed over Tae Ho and Siri and charged. Even though they were running on grass, they were unbelievably silent. And Valkyrie Gandur was at the front while riding a white silence wearing leather armor.

“Rip them off!”

She yelled. The inferior ranked warriors of Ullr’s legion followed her orders.

In addition, they weren't alone. There was one more person. The man that moved like a storm even when he wasn't riding on a white silence swung his sword and lightly slashed open the head of a Basilisk.

Tae Ho looked at him. It was way more than what happened when he looked at the Valkyries. He could only distinguish his name.

[Ragnar Loðbrók]

Intermediate ranked warrior. No, perhaps a superior ranked warrior.

Tae Ho let out a sigh of relief and sat on the ground. Siri also seemed to have relaxed from her nervousness that she bent down her head almost to the point of falling.

They survived. Maybe they had come by listening to the fighting sound or they had another method but Gandur and the warriors had come at the right time.

‘Heda.’

He was sorry to Idun but he could only think of Heda first in these situations. Tae Ho breathed in again and then looked at the warrior that had slashed the neck of the Basilisk as if it was straw. But something else entered his eyes first.

‘Huh?’

The corpse of the huge Basilisk Tae Ho had killed.

There were small shining letters below the white letters that represented the corpse.

Tae Ho gulped air unconsciously. He forgot all of his exhaustion and raised his body.

‘Why did that appear there?’

The items in Dark Age had different colors so you could differentiate its rank at a glance.

Normal equipment in white.

Rare equipment that had magic imbued with it in blue.

Equipment that was more superior to that in gold.

And once again, equipment that surpassed that in white gold.

And the pinnacle of all items, the rainbow light that represented an epic rank.

Tae Ho was the best pro-gamer in Dark Age, but even he had seen the rainbow light as few times as he could count in one hand. But right in front of him, there were rainbow light letters.

[Broken piece of an unknown sword]

A handle of an old and worn up word that was in between the scales of the dead Basilisk.

Tae Ho extended his hand and gripped the handle of the sword.

< Episode 9 – Svartalfheim (4) > End

Episode 10/Chapter 1: Ragnar Lodbrok (1)

Tae Ho opened his eyes. This time he was in a comfortable room instead of the forest filled with branches and leaves.

Tae Ho enjoyed the soft and comfortable sensation of his blanket and heater before he thought of the things that had happened before he fell asleep.

He picked up an unknown epic item, retrieved the runes from the corpse of the Basilisk, covered the naked Siri with his hawk wing coat, and saw Rolph running towards them.

‘Mmm.’

His memory became faint after that, but it seemed like he had taken an antidote and soon fell asleep.

‘Although Idun’s blessing stops the sleepiness, it just lets you sleep immediately.’

Tae Ho realized something meaningless and raised the blanket to check the clothes he was wearing. He felt good because he had been changed into clean clothes but at that moment realized something else.

‘My epic item!’

He still didn’t know about its properties, but it was still an epic grade item.

In Valhalla, they gave you ownership of the items you plundered from the enemies, except for special cases. So no matter what anyone said, the owner of the epic item was Tae Ho.

‘No, most of all, what if they threw it away?’

Just by the look of it, it seemed like a really old, broken, and useless item.

Tae Ho hurriedly raised his head and then let out a sigh of relief.

His clothes and items were on a small table next to his bed and the broken handle was also there.

“Ha...”

As he let out a sigh of relief, he heard a voice next to him.

“You are fine. It’s a safe place. Did you have a nightmare?”

It was Siri’s voice that was low and calm and even had gentleness in it. Tae Ho turned his head to follow the voice. He could see Siri in bed just like him.

“Captain Siri.”

“You and I are both fine. I’m glad. Gandur and the others came at the right time.”

Siri put on a calm smile. Her soft look was nice to see but compared to usual she didn’t have strength in her eyes. It seemed like her lips were also dry.

“Is your body fine?”

As Tae Ho asked with a worried voice, Siri nodded with the minimal motion.

“Kind of. I think I will get better after resting a bit more. I’m also a warrior that has accumulated runes until now.”

Siri was also a superhuman.

As she was putting on that soft smile instead of her usual armor, rather than giving off the impression of a strong superhuman, she made you think of a beautiful but pathetic woman.

Tae Ho thought of Siri of last night.

‘Ah, no. Not this.’

Tae Ho erased the things that appeared in his head and then faced Siri after clearing his throat.

“I’m glad.”

“Right, it was a bit dangerous.....but it was a nice experience.”

Siri asked with her eyes as if that wasn't the case and Tae Ho also nodded. They both felt that the comradeship between them had deepened.

“Um, Captain Siri. Where are we?”

As he asked this while looking at the room.

Siri slightly rose up and said, “It seems like a house provided by the Dark Fairy Congress. While you were asleep, Gandur came and told me about having controlled the situation.”

“With that....Did she mean the Mollo family?”

“Right, the first thing that should be made clear is that this expedition wasn't requested by the Mollo family but by the Dark Fairy Congress.”

Tae Ho tilted his head at the sudden explanation but then widened his eyes as if he had realized something.

“Uh, wait. Did the Dark Fairy Congress catch the Mollo family's mistake so they requested an expedition team from Valhalla saying that it was a request from the Mollo family?”

“Surprising. It's just as you said.”

Siri kept explaining with wide eyes as if she was really surprised.

“It seems like the Mollo family was searching for something. They did discover some excavations....But it seems like they woke up some basilisks in the process or they were conserving the basilisks for some unknown reason and got caught by the other dark fairies families.”

“An excavation?”

“There are still many relics from the great wars in this place.”

Siri mumbled with a bitter face and then raised her head.

“Ah, if I speak like this you won't know. Do you know about

Ragnarok?”

“Um.....I heard Heda say that the front lines were adhering.”

“Right, but tens of years ago.... they say that when Ragnarok first started, there was a really big and fierce war. Actually, that is the reason why the front lines are now adhering.”

‘So they battled on a big scale but both sides stepped back?’

It was an understandable thing. There were also many cases of this in the mortal world.

Tae Ho nodded as if he understood and Siri continued speaking.

“The relics of the Great War are the traces left from that battle. Those traces remained on the several planets of Asgard that had Yggdrasil as the central axis.

The traces of the war where heroes that were as numerous as the stars had burned down.

‘Uh, is that also like that?’

Tae Ho’s eyes moved to the unknown sword piece. Perhaps that was a part of something a powerful hero used back then.

“What could the Mollo family have been searching for?”

“I wonder...We should investigate. Seeing that even a regenerator came out, we are certain that the Giants are behind this.”

Siri answered in a low voice and then finished with saying that the head of the Mollo family had disappeared and part of the Mollo family was taken away.

‘Could they have been searching for this piece of the sword?’

Whatever the case it was still an epic ranked time.

Thinking about it though, that didn’t seem to be the case.

Based on the circumstances, it was highly probable that the basilisks were sent by the Mollo family. It also that meant that

they could control them.

The piece of the sword wasn't stuck in a place like its stomach but it was between the scales. If what they were looking for was really the piece of the sword, then it didn't seem like they would have missed it when they could control the basilisks.

"Tae Ho?"

"No, I was just thinking."

It was when Tae Ho was about to change subjects.

"Captain Siri!"

"Siri, are you okay?"

"Your small face became even smaller!"

"You are so pale!"

The warriors of Ullr's legion entered the room and then covered the bed Siri was on and each of them said some words. They had worried faces.

Siri showed a smile to all of them and then glanced at Tae Ho.

"I'm fine. Be worried for Tae Ho too."

Siri wasn't the only patient in this room.

Regardless of Siri's petition, the warriors of Ullr's legion snorted.

"That guy is fine."

"Yeah, there's no need to."

"Captain Siri, there's no need to check on him."

Even Rolph, whom he believed in, said this with cold words. Siri was surprised at the sudden cold treatment and was about to get angry, but Gandur was faster than that.

"Everyone, leave it."

Valkyrie Gandur, who entered the room later, looked at Siri and Tae Ho once and then put on a smile.

“Warrior Tae Ho.”

“Yes!”

Tae Ho replied reflexively and could guess the situation. The warriors put on a grievous face and Gandur burst out in laughter in the end. Then a voice came from beyond the door.

“It’s a meeting.”

“Heda!”

He had his doubts but it really was Heda. She approached Tae Ho’s bed to check up on him and then asked, “Are you fine? I heard that you were greatly hurt.”

“Idun’s strong point is that we are resilient. I’m fine.”

“I’m glad.”

Heda let out a sincere sigh of relief and the warriors looked at Tae Ho with envious eyes. Heda approached with her normal face, not seeming to notice their eyes.

“Stay still. I will bless you.”

It wasn’t strange as it happened at every meeting. However, Tae Ho got flustered and the warriors gulped some air.

Heda swiped back her hair and then softly kissed Tae Ho’s forehead. Tae Ho couldn’t say anything and that was the same for the warriors.

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.” Heda gently said. Siri, who had seen that from the side, smiled bitterly.

“I know why they were making a fuss.”

“I wondered what you did at the meetings!”

“Impossible!”

The warriors increased their inputs after Siri. One of them turned to look at Gandur and yelled, “Gandur! Bless me too!”

“Go and wash. You stink.”

“Wah, wah. You are too much.”

The warrior was depressed and dropped his shoulders at the cold reply.

Heda shrugged her shoulders with a calm expression in response to all of their reactions.

“Why? This is a normal thing, right Tae Ho?”

“Heda, you did that on purpose, right?”

Heda stuck out her tongue and laughed before standing up.

“First of all, there’s someone I want to introduce to you.”

“Someone, to introduce me? Ah, is he maybe?”

Tae Ho thought of the person he saw before falling asleep that wasn’t here. It was that strong warrior he only knew the name of — the warrior that cut down the basilisk’s neck as if cutting through straw.

“Ragnar! Come in!”

Heda yelled towards the door.

“Ragnar?”

“Is it that Ragnar?!”

The warriors of Ullr’s legion looked at themselves and blinked. Then everyone shared the same feelings.

“Wait, then is the person that fought with us.....?!”

The warriors couldn’t continue speaking anymore. They looked towards the door with breathless faces and surprisingly enough, Siri also gulped dry saliva and looked towards the door.

One man slowly entered through the door. He was a really tall man with really long limbs. His face that displayed the integrity he had was handsome, and his golden beard was also cool. His hair,

which was shaved at the sides, gave a strong and sharp impression.

But most of all, the thing that stood out the most was his eyes.

Green eyes. The eyes that had madness and mysteriousness in it, the two eyes that resembled a wolf.

“I will introduce you. He’s Ragnar Lodbrok,” Heda said, and at that moment the warriors exploded.

“Ragnar Lodbrok!”

“My god!”

“Ho-holy.”

“Ra-ragna Lodbrok.”

The last one was Siri. She flushed and stammered his name like a girl that was looking at her favorite idol — that was a look you couldn’t even imagine from her.

“Ohh! Ohhhh!”

The warriors of Ullr’s legion couldn’t even speak properly now. The man called Ragnar smirked towards the warriors and even blinked towards Siri.

Siri blocked her mouth with her hands and gulped air. It was a really unrealistic sight in many different ways.

Heda who looked just like usual, pointed at Tae Ho and said, “Ragna, this is our warrior Tae Ho. Tae Ho, Ragna.”

At Heda’s brief introduction, the warriors widened their eyes. They acknowledged that kind of introduction was enough.

However, the man, Ragnar, nodded slightly and then approached Tae Ho and said, “Right, I’m Ragnar Lodbrok. There’s no need for me to introduce myself, right?”

He finished speaking and looked towards the warriors of Ullr’s legion. The warriors of Ullr’s legion nodded as if they had become Tae Ho.

However, Tae Ho couldn't participate in this flow because he was someone that only knew about Odin and Thor from Norse mythology. There was no way for him to know about its heroes.

He glanced at Heda but it wasn't the atmosphere for a proper explanation. No, maybe it was, as he felt that it seemed like she wanted him to directly ask Ragnar.

‘Right, will he kill me then?’

Tae Ho decided himself and then looked at Ragnar. He nervously spoke with an apologetic expression.

“Um.....I'm asking because I really don't know.....but who are you?”

Who the hell is Ragnar?

At Tae Ho's question, the warriors of Ullr's legion dropped their mouths and Siri was barely able to stop the words that were about to come out.

As if this reaction was completely unexpected, Ragnar looked at Tae Ho as if he had taken a blow and Gandur blinked. Only Heda burst out in laughter soundlessly.

< Episode 10 – Ragnar Lodbrok (1) > End

Episode 10/Chapter 2: Ragnar Lodbrok (2)

Ragnar Lodbrok.

The beginning of the Vikings, and a legend among the Vikings.

The most exalted warrior and explorer that went to the unknown and was an adventurer that did not fear challenges.

He had several wives. All of them were beautiful and gave Ragnar strong children.

Ragnar was a Dragon Slayer. He was a warrior that fought a dragon one-on-one to rescue a beautiful lady that was trapped in a tower.

He was strong, valiant, and wise. He was cunning expert on cruel wars, just like Odin, the King of Gods.

The warriors of Ullr's legion started explaining about Ragnar Lodbrok even while spitting. Siri didn't participate earnestly and she understood that Tae Ho didn't know about him but she started to explain to him in excessive detail.

Tae Ho listened to all of that and put on a nonchalant face while he thought about it.

'Um, so he's a legendary king. Someone like King Arthur or Gwanggaeto. Well, is it fine to think like that?'

Even though he was an important character for the Vikings, it was the first time he had ever heard of his name. It didn't reach him that greatly.

Heda spoke in a low voice as if she knew about Tae Ho's thoughts.

"To say it with simpler words, he's a superior ranked warrior."

"Oh!"

Tae Ho understood immediately because it was impossible to

grasp even with the eyes of the dragon. Well, if it was just like he had heard until now, then he had to be at least superior ranked for it to make sense.

Gandur also added, “He was a top ranked warrior in his prime, but he has retired for several reasons.”

“Ahh!”

The ones that raised their voices this time were the warriors of Ullr’s legion. They seemed to understand why Ragnar was a superior ranked warrior instead of a top ranked warrior.

“If he showed his strength properly, you wouldn’t even be able to breathe.”

As Heda added this for the last time, she nodded with an excited face.

‘Anyway, in the end, he’s a really amazing person.’

The other things didn’t matter, but for Siri to make an expression like that made Tae Ho think that Ragnar was really amazing.

‘But.....’

Why had Heda called him?

Tae Ho glanced at Heda and she slowly nodded. She looked at Gandur and said, “Um, Gandur. Starting from now I want this to be a thing for our legion. Can you help me?”

“Well, it’s not that I can’t. Would a barrier be enough?”

“Yes, thank you.”

As Heda nodded, Gandur took out a piece of rock from her pocket that had runes engraved on it. Heda took out the same thing and after they placed it in the air while facing each other, a faint curtain of light spread between Tae Ho and Siri’s beds.

As the room split in two, Heda placed down her rune stone and

sat below Tae Ho's bed.

"The reason I called Ragnar is for him to become your teacher."

"Teacher?"

"Yeah, that's right."

"But if it's a teacher, you....."

"You used the power of the God right?" Heda asked in a low voice. It wasn't like she was blaming or reprimanding him but was asking just to make sure.

Tae Ho nodded instead of answering. Heda closed her eyes once and then put on a troubled smile.

"I kind of expected it. No, should I call it a hunch.....Tae Ho, you are an existence beyond the standards for many reasons."

But for him to really use it was another thing.

Heda opened her eyes slowly. She placed her hand over Tae Ho's and said, "Me alone is not enough. That's why I asked around a lot and managed to bring Ragnar."

He wasn't a warrior that belonged to Idun's legion. He belonged to Odin's legion and even if he was retired, the warriors of Ullr's legion really admired him. That meant that he was a big shot among big shots.

"Heda."

The one that spoke was Ragnar. He was listening to Heda's and Tae Ho's conversation while leaning on the wall. He then twisted his lips and smiled.

"I still didn't say that I would be responsible for your warrior."

Ragnar's eyes were smiling but at the same time they were emitting a dangerous light.

Heda looked up at him and then spoke as if she were provoking him.

“Yeah, but the world will change soon. You would really want to take care of him. Rather, you’d ask for it yourself.”

For Tae Ho who had only seen the gentle and soft Heda, the provoking Heda with sharp eyes was new.

Ragnar snorted and said, “For an inferior ranked warrior to use the strength of a God is really an amazing thing. But that’s it.”

Even Ragnar’s children could do that much. It was an amazing thing, but it wasn’t rare.

Ragnar looked at Heda as if he wanted an answer from her. Heda lightly grasped Tae Ho’s hands and said, “Tae Ho, I trust Ragnar. So why don’t you show him your saga?”

It was supposed to be a secret.

The one that had prepared the ring was Heda, but in the end, the one deciding to get in on it or not was Tae Ho.

Tae Ho turned to look at Ragnar and he nodded.

“If you do, then I also do.”

He still didn’t know what kind of man Ragnar was but he really did believe in Heda. He couldn’t even imagine Heda doing something that would harm him.

“Right, thank you.”

Heda stood up from her place and then gave a steel feather to Tae Ho and Ragnar. It was something Tae Ho had already used once.

A magical tool that could show his saga to the other person.

Ragnar gripped the feather as if telling him to try it. Tae Ho took a deep breath. Instead of speaking, Tae Ho instantly thought of his saga.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior]

It was the story of the dragon knight Kalsted, who was called the strongest existence in Dark Age.

The record of the world's best pro gamer, Lee Tae Ho.

Ragnar opened his eyes widely. He, who was leaning on the wall, was surprised and fixed his posture immediately.

“You.....”

He was really out of words. He barely managed to say something after smacking his lips for some time.

“What did you use to do, bastard.....no, person. No, sir.....?”

He had barely managed to say the last word. Tae Ho looked at Ragnar for a moment instead of replying and Heda put on a nice smile as if it was as she had expected.

&

“It's crazy for this to be possible.”

Ragnar continued laughing for some time after they left the house with Heda. He himself was a Dragon Slayer that had hunted dragons and was the owner of an amazing saga that made him the legend of the Vikings. However, Tae Ho was above him.

“You really are a peculiar guy.”

He had that amazing saga but he was merely an inferior ranked warrior. The imbalances also had its limit.

‘No, he's becoming strong. And really fast at that.’

He was merely a lowest ranked warrior until recently. He became an inferior ranked warrior yesterday but he was already starting to use the strength of a God that was supposed to be used from the intermediate rank.

Ragnar was a legend among the Vikings, and because of that, he was an ideal warrior of Valhalla. He loved strong and exalted warriors.

Heda gulped dry saliva and then asked with a slightly nervous voice.

“Ragnar, how do you see it?”

“What?”

“When Tae Ho’s saga becomes complete and he becomes as strong as his saga.”

Until what realm would he be able to climb?

Ragnar didn’t think for long. He answered almost immediately.

“At least like Sigurd.”

Dragon Slayer. The man had defeated tens of dragons when you could already become a legend by defeating only one.

He was the owner of God sword Gram, which Odin gave him. He was the partner of the beautiful Valkyrie Brynhildr and the golden king that held part of dragon Fafnir’s treasures.

Heda closed her eyes at the joy. She asked Ragnar once again, who had named one of the best warriors even among the top ranked warriors.

“What about the best?”

Ragnar didn’t answer this time. He closed his eyes again and then put on a playful smile.

“So I just have to teach that guy?”

“Not half-heartedly. You also can’t rush things.”

There was a warning in Heda’s eyes. However, Ragnar smiled as if he were joking.

“Still, you can’t be holding him like a treasure trove.”

Ragnar looked at Heda’s eyes. She was beautiful and simple, but that was the reason why she had gentle eyes. It was really different from Ragnar’s eyes, which mirrored the eyes of a wolf.

“I will entrust him to you,” Heda said with a sigh and Ragnar smiled and nodded.

“Right, I will take care of him.”

It has been a really long while since he had taught someone. However, he was an existence that made him want to do so.

“Now that I see, Heda, don’t you know anything about this case?”

Ragnar changed subjects. It was only for a moment, but he had faced basilisks, so it was natural for him to be curious.

Heda let out a long sigh and said, “I still don’t know yet but I’m certain that the Giants are involved in this. Seeing that a regenerator appeared, it should be from Utgard Loki’s side.”

The one that first created the regenerators was the Giant King, Utgard Loki, who was also called as the Magician King.

“What were they looking for?”

“That’s something we should find out.”

They still lacked information. They had just started investigating Mollo family so they needed more time.

“Um, but Ragnar.”

“What?”

Ragnar approached Heda and asked her. Heda looked up at Ragnar and asked again.

“So, what is the best you can think of?”

It was the question that he hadn’t answered.

Ragnar opened his eyes sharply and approached Heda a bit more. He whispered his thoughts in her ear.

&

‘He’s really my teacher.....’

While Heda and Ragnar were talking outside the house, he was left alone with Siri once again and then started to think of the

things he had faced until now.

“Well, it seems like I will need some.’

Heda’s classes were mostly theoretical.

In addition, Heda was a Valkyrie. He didn’t know if it would be more effective than learning directly from a warrior of Valhalla.

‘A man Heda believes in.’

Tae Ho would also believe in him for now. He would be taught by a warrior whom Rolph and even Siri praised.

“First of all....”

Tae Ho mumbled in a low voice and then looked at the old and broken piece of the sword that was in his hands. If he looked with the dragon’s eyes, he could still see the rainbow colored letters that represented an epic ranked item.

‘I’m sure it’s an epic ranked but...’

He just didn’t know how to use it at all. How would he use a sword with only the hilt?

‘No, I’m sure there’s something. It’s a feeling.’

It was the senses of the pro gamer which was hard to explain.

[Broken and unknown piece of sword]

It wasn’t normal however he looked at it. Although this was only in Dark Age, there were no epic ranked items that could be used as materials. The materials to make an epic ranked weapon were all a rank below that: the unique rank.

Could it be the first epic ranked material?

Or did it have a value of an epic rank just like this?

‘The traces of the Great War.’

If that really was the case, then couldn’t it be a fragment of a weapon that a god-like existence used?

Tae Ho just touched the hilt. He looked at the rainbow colored letters.

< Episode 10 – Ragnar Lodbrok (2) > End

Episode 11/Chapter 1: Unknown Sword Piece

(1)

There were three hidden fountains on the roots of the tree of life called Yggdrasil.

They was the fountain of wisdom, Mimir, the fountain of envy, Hvergelmir, and the fountain of life, Urd.

The fountain that was the most mystical and hidden in the deepest part was obviously Mimir.

The fog covering the spring was dense. As they covered it in layers and formed a barrier, not even a Giant with hundred eyes would be able to see through it.

The cry of a dragon was heard from far away. It was the voice of the dark colored dragon, Nidhogg.

It was a wicked creature that could cover the world with its terrible poison but it wasn't a problem yet. It wasn't able to smell the honey alcohol of the spring because of the smell of the poison coming from its own body.

Booming sounds were heard along the cry. It was certainly Ratatosk that had come and busily went over the roots of Yggdrasil.

He had memorized the curses of Nidhogg he was to deliver to Hraesvelgr and was climbing Yggdrasil hastily. The booming sound became more distant.

Odin closed his only eye. He was seated below an ash tree he had planted himself and touched his eye patch with his rough hands.

He came to this place every day. Even after having spent a fantastic night with tens of beautiful ladies or having faced countless enemies on the battlefield, he always came to Mimir's spring and waited for results like this.

Three beautiful ladies reflected off the surface of Mimir's spring which was full of honey alcohol. They weren't in this place, but the three sisters you could see were seated close to each other and were knitting.

These were the three sisters that divined the fate of the world.

The eldest, Urd, held the threat of fate and the middle one, Verdandi, knitted it earnestly. The youngest one, Skuld, just saw what her sisters did and stealthily unknitted the threads.

The past, which Urd could see, was unchangeable. The present, which Verdandi lived in, was filled with infinite possibilities.

And the future, Skuld, looked at what hadn't been decided yet. It was just the possibilities drawn by the past and the present.

The three sisters divinated the fate of the world. Skuld whispered the future she saw over the surface, and the head of Mimir that was placed on a wide rock read the movement of her lips. He analyzed what they had predicted and translated it into a language is understood.

“Ragnarok is proceeding. It's just going forward and not retreating, so on the day the world wolf wakes from its slumber the foolish yet wise Odin that is resisting at the front will become dog food.”

Odin didn't even flinch at the insult. And the crow Munin, that was seated at his shoulder, also didn't show any movement.

Mimir continued speaking.

“The space snake Jormungandr hasn't died yet. It will be reborn before you find it and it will decide its fate along with Thor.”

The following content was similar. The story he had heard hundreds and thousands of times didn't change.

“The fires of Surtur will set the world on fire, and the possibility for his happening is 10.000 of 72.972.”

The part the world would perish was the same. But at that moment Odin opened his eyes widely.

“What did you say just now?”

Mimir knew well which part Odin pointed. Because of that it didn't read another part again and said with a clear voice.

“It's 10.000 of 72.972.”

Odin stood up from his place. The numbers had changed. Actually, the numbers changing was a common thing. But it was important to what direction it changed to.

The possibilities of annihilation always became bigger. Although it halted for a moment, in the end, it kept advancing.

But right now, a change occurred for the first time.

The probabilities lowered. Although it was merely one in ten thousand, it had certainly lowered compared to before.

Odin approached Mimir's head. It sat in front of a wide rock and faced Mimir.

he heard Nidhogg's cry from far away. Odin raised his head and looked at the sky. The crow Hugin was approaching after having passed through the dense fog.

&

“Idun's warrior Tae Ho. The merits you have achieved in this expedition are big. I will also tell Ullr so there will be a reward for you.”

As soon as they returned to Valhalla, Gandur faced Tae Ho and hit her chest. Tae Ho also showed his manners by hitting his chest and answered with a smile.

“Thank you.”

Tae Ho thought that it was a light greeting but Gandur thought differently. If Tae Ho wasn't in this expedition they wouldn't have

been able to succeed. And the reason the warriors of Ullr's legion could return alive was thanks to Tae Ho.

Because of that Gandur was sincerely thinking of requesting a reward to Ullr. Valhalla loved great warriors and they wished to receive a suitable treatment.

As soon as Gandur finished speaking, the warriors of Ullr's legion gathered towards Tae Ho. The first one he said his farewell to was Siri.

“Take care, captain Siri.”

“Same goes for you.”

Compared to Tae Ho, that was completely healthy, Siri still seemed to be in pain. However, now that they had returned to Valhalla she wouldn't need to worry that much.

“Tae Ho, return safely.”

“Farewell warrior of Idun. Next time, we will return the favor.”

Rolph and the other warriors also said their farewells and thanked him. Although he had been connected with Ullr's legion without any coincidence, he really wanted to keep being with them.

“Okay, Tae Ho. Shall we also return?”

Everyone finished their farewells and as Ullr's warriors returned after being led by Gandur, Heda grabbed on Tae Ho's hands and said.

Tae Ho nodded but then he looked at the violet door that was connected to Svartalfheim. It was because there was someone that hadn't come with them.

“If you are thinking about Ragnar he will come soon. It seems like he's worried about what happened with the Mollo family. He said he would check on things.”

Ragnar Lodbrok. Tae Ho's teacher that Heda invited.

“You said that Rasgrid was dispatched to the Mollo family right?”

“Gandur and Ullr’s legion was dispatched to hunt the Basilisks. Things like investigating are Rasgrid’s specialty.”

Now that the Mollo family, which they trusted in, had betrayed them they couldn’t leave the entire investigation to the dark fairies. Although they couldn’t meet in person, based on what Heda or Gandur said it seemed like Odin’s legion which was led by Rasgrid got dispatched to the Mollo family as if taking turns with Ullr’s legion.

‘Rasgrid.’

Until a few days ago, she had stood on the same battlefield as him. He felt good even by listening to her name like this.

But it was at that moment. Heda looked at Tae Ho’s face that was remembering the battle of the fortress and said.

“Do you miss Rasgrid?”

He thought he knew how he should reply.

Because of that, Tae Ho answered with a calm face.

“Can that be as much as Heda, who I’m glad to see every day?”

“You do speak well.”

It seemed like that was the correct answer, that Heda’s steps became lighter.

&

There were some ships docked at the port. Looking that Valkyries and warriors were coming and going, it seemed like a small-scaled expedition like Ullr’s legion was leaving to an expedition.

After passing by the grand ships and getting on the wooden boat, Heda started to hum and prepared to depart. Tae Ho just looked at her and after the ship left the dock he asked carefully.

“Um, Heda. I have an item for you to check.”

“Item?”

Heda tilted her head while stirring the oars and then placed them down and sat in front of Tae Ho.

“What is it?”

“Wait a moment.”

Tae Ho loosened the pocket that was tied around his waist and took out the unknown piece of the sword.

“I found it in the Basilisk I defeated. I wonder if it’s a weapon from the great war.”

Although it was still an unknown item, it was still an epic graded one. If it really was from the great war, there was a high probability for it to be part of a famous weapon.

Compared to Tae Ho, that only knew one weapon of the Norse mythology, Valmont, Heda that was a Valkyrie would be able to grasp what the item was.

“Let me see.”

Heda’s eyes became serious as if she realized that it wasn’t a normal item. Heda raised the piece of sword carefully and started to inspect it thoroughly.

And how much time had passed? Heda raised her head with an exhausted face and Tae Ho pressed down his anxiety and asked.

“Do you know what it is?”

Heda frowned as if she felt sorry for having disappointed him and shook her head.

“Sorry, I don’t. The magic felt from the hilt.....It certainly isn’t a normal item but I can’t feel its property perhaps because of the aftereffect.”

“Property?”

“Whose God this item belongs to, or from which genealogy it

came. Perhaps it may be an item made by the dwarves, which simply doesn't have the power of the Gods in it."

You couldn't look at it casually just because a God wasn't related to it. Of the several treasures of Valhalla, the ones that had the powers of God were rather the scarce type.

Even the strongest weapon of Asgard, Mjolnir, was made by using the God's precious metal the Urd but basically, it was made by the skills of the dwarves.

"But Tae Ho, you somehow managed to find this. With the item in this situation, it shouldn't even enter your eyes."

"I was lucky>"

Actually, the rainbow-colored letters did catch his eyes.

Heda checked on Tae Ho and then said in a bright voice.

"Although it's only a hilt, the magic it has is quite vast and it seems to be high quality. If we give it to a master dwarf of Valhalla, he may be able to put a new blade to it."

"It certainly is unusable like this, right?"

As he asked implying if it was an epic ranked item, Heda thought for a moment and then answered.

"Umm....probably? But let's not fix it that hurriedly. I will try to investigate a bit more. If we find the traces of the Great War, we may be able to obtain some clues. Perhaps, it may still be useful like this."

"Then I will trouble you."

"It's something for a warrior of the legion. That's the job of a Valkyrie."

Heda smiled brightly and returned the piece of sword to Tae Ho and then grabbed the oars again. They could reach Idun's legion shortly after because the currents were fast.

“We returned faster than expected so Idun may get surprised.”

Heda tied up the wooden boat and smiled. Even taking into account the time he was lying down on the bed of the dark fairies, Tae Ho had returned in barely 3 days. Tae Ho remembered something at what she had said and then smirked.

“What? Something good?”

“Idun said that she would give me a gift after returning from this expedition.”

She had said so. He thought that he would see her after some weeks but for them to reunite after merely 3 days.

‘She won’t say that she didn’t have the time to prepare anything because she didn’t have time, right?’

She was still a God.

Heda smiled without knowing that Tae Ho was thinking of bad things.

“Idun’s gift, I’m also expecting towards it.”

“I will show it to you first.”

Although they were the only ones.

Heda accompanied Tae Ho in front of the shrine like always and then stepped back.

“Go.”

“Yes.”

Tae Ho entered the shrine. After he took a few steps a familiar scenery spread instead of the darkness.

“My warrior Tae Ho.”

“Greetings to Idun.”

Tae Ho naturally kneeled down and expressed his manners. Idun, that was standing in front of an apple tree, looked down at Tae Ho

and said.

“I received the report. You also raised great merits this time too. If it wasn’t you, we wouldn’t have been able to disrupt the plans of the Giants.”

“It’s thanks to your blessing.”

He had actually been able to defeat the regenerator thanks to Idun’s strength. He did yell Heda’s name unconsciously but Tae Ho was really thankful towards Idun.

Idun looked at Tae Ho that had answered calmly and then took some steps. She reached in front of Tae Ho and then lowered her posture and touched his cheeks.

“A regenerator isn’t an existence an inferior ranked warrior is supposed to fight. I’m really glad that you returned safely.”

Those were words that you could see the gentleness in it.

The light that was so strong it covered her face felt warm.

She touched Tae Ho’s cheeks once more and then said with a playful voice after turning back.

“First of all Tae Ho. They say you rode on a comrade? I heard she was a beautiful female warrior.”

“Um, that.....”

“I’m not scolding you. I heard everything from Heda.”

Idun laughed as if it was really a joke and then walked up to the apple tree she was standing at previously and then looked back at Tae Ho.

“I shall give you a gift as I promised for having returned and finished the expedition successfully.”

It was the time he had been waiting for. As vigor filled Tae Ho’s eyes, Idun laughed again and said.

“I have prepared two things. Choose one from the two.”

It was just like he had predicted. Even before Tae Ho could react Idun took out a white coat from the air.

“The first one is a flying horse wing clothes. If you wear it you will be able to transform to a horse that can fly through the sky.”

“A flying horse? Then a pegasus?”

Tae Ho didn't know well about Norse mythology but he did know a bit about Greek and Roman mythology. A pegasus was a white horse with wings that the hero of the Greek mythology, Bellerophon, rode on.

Idun also seemed to know the name of Pegasus that she nodded.

“It's a gift Olympus sent to Asgard long ago. I was wondering if you would specifically like it as you like riding on things.”

Idun said as if teasing him but Tae Ho couldn't deny it.

Because it really was a flying horse wing clothes.

Tae Ho wasn't planning on wearing it himself. That was something he should make a comrade wear it.

‘Captain Siri would be able to fly through the sky with that, right? And there's also Rolph.’

The two weren't the only ones. Anyone fighting with him as possible.

“Ah, no wait. Why should I even ride on Rolph?”

Rolph was left with a defeat and then Tae Ho started to think of the things he could do with the wing clothes. And Idun, that was looking at that Tae Ho, said casually.

“It would be good if you have it in case you get to fight with Heda.”

“Idun?”

“This other thing is a pocket.”

Idun slightly changed subjects and she took a white pocket the

size of a palm this time.

“Tae Ho, do you know about the treasure ship called Skidbladnir?”

“Uh.....No.”

It was a name he heard for the first time. He also wouldn't have to know that it was a ship if she hadn't told him.

“It can receive favorable wind anywhere and at any time and when you fold it, it becomes small to the point you can put it in your pocket. The children of Ivaldi made this ship after being asked by Loki, and this pocket was also made by them.”

Simply said, this was a high-quality item made by master makers.

“Everything you put in the pocket becomes small. So you are able to put in many things in it.”

“It becomes.....small?”

“Right, my warrior Tae Ho. Can I borrow one of your items?”

As Idun extended her hand Tae Ho took off his hawk wing clothes and gave it to her carefully.

“Here.”

“Look well.”

Idun didn't even fold the wing clothes and brought it to the entrance of the pocket. And then, surprisingly enough the wing clothes that were much bigger than the pocket began to shrink to the size of a finger and got inside the pocket.

“Wow.”

Idun took out the wing clothes again as if this wasn't all. She started to count slowly and when she counted up to three the wing clothes returned to its original size.

“Even after taking it back like this, it stays small for a moment. You can control the time. In addition, you don't have to worry

about the items getting mixed because you can take out what you want directly.”

‘This is really like an inventory that appears in games.’

No, it wasn’t simply that. The function of shrinking it made him thought that there would be many situations in which he could use it.

“The name of this pocket is Unnir.”

Idun sealed the pocket prettily and then placed it on the air. With Idun at the middle, there were the flying horse wing clothes at her right and Unnir at her left.

“Now, pick one.”

Idun’s words were exceedingly cruel. To pick one of the two. She should have rather shown him one.

“No, whatever the case I’m lucky I get to even choose one.’

Tae Ho decided to think positively and started to think with a serious face.

Idun smiled again and said.

“My warrior Tae Ho. Don’t think too much. You will be able to get the other one after you raise another merit.”

Because Tae Ho was the only warrior that could receive a treasure.

Tae Ho thanked that Idun’s legion was few on people once again and then started to look at the treasures after taking a breath.

The flying horse wing clothes and Unnir.

Tae Ho made his decision.

< Episode 11 – Unknown sword piece (1) > End

Episode 11/Chapter 2: Unknown Sword Piece

(2)

“I will take Unnir.”

As Tae Ho made his decision, Idun brightly smiled. Although he couldn't see her face properly because of the light, he could feel that she was asking the reason why.

“It's so that I can have the basics down for now.”

Compared to the flying horse wing coat, Unnir had its own strong points.

The foremost aspect of the wing coat was an increase in his battle power. For Tae Ho, something to ride on wasn't merely just a means of transportation. Tae Ho's attack power multiplied several times when he rode on something compared to when he fought on the ground.

‘But the problem is that it's a wing coat.’

He wouldn't think about it twice if it was a flute that could call a pegasus, but it was a wing coat. It meant that he would need an ally to wear it for him.

Depending on who that person was, the battle strength would increase or decrease. In addition, Tae Ho didn't have a fixed ally. Even if he gave it to Siri, she may be fighting along with Rolph, or he could be dispatched to a battlefield where he didn't have anyone he could trust.

‘Depending on the battlefield, I may not be able to use the wing coat.’

Svartalfheim was like that. For places that were impossible to fly in, the wing coat would be an obstruction.

Unnir's strong point was simple. Inventory.

Although he didn't have anything in particular to put in it, after thinking about it, he hadn't increased his baggage because he didn't have an inventory.

There were a lot of things he could put in: several shields, potions, clothes, bandages, provisions, and more.

‘Right, even in Dark Age what beginners do first is acquire a bag.’

If rare items dropped after you killed a boss but you couldn't take it away because you didn't have space in your bag, then it was really a loss. Originally, things like this were supposed to be prepared beforehand.

In addition, Unnir wasn't a normal inventory. You could make the items smaller, so that had its own purposes.

‘In conclusion, it'll be Unnir.’

He would wait and see after increasing his inventory.

He wanted to see Siri or Heda transform into a pegasus, but he couldn't do anything about it.

‘Let's take the wing coat later.’

He finished thinking after considering Rolph to transform into a pegasus and faced Idun. She just nodded slightly instead of asking more questions.

“Then I will respect your will. My warrior Tae Ho, I will bestow Unnir, the treasure of Idun's legion, to you.”

Idun grabbed Unnir with her long and slender fingers and gave it to Tae Ho. He took it politely and then tied it around his waist.

“Ask Heda for detailed instructions.”

“I understand.”

Tae Ho also replied politely this time and then looked up at Idun for a moment. Idun slightly tilted her head and said, “It seems like you still have some business. Do you have something you want to

ask?”

“There’s something I want to ask you.”

Tae Ho carefully took out the unknown sword piece to Idun. He said the same thing that he had told Heda and then Idun started to check it. She said, “This fragment certainly has a strong power embedded in it. But I’m sorry, I don’t know which God it is from or the origins of this item off the top of my head.”

She said the same thing as Heda. Seeing that even the Goddess Idun spoke like this, he wouldn’t be able to know its identity immediately.

“But my warrior Tae Ho, although it’s merely a fragment, I think that it will be good if you treasure this item. I don’t feel an evil energy so it certainly isn’t from the Giants but it is of Asgard. In addition, I think that it will have a strength beyond what you can see.”

Idun touched the sword piece slowly as if sensing it and then returned it to Tae Ho.

“I should also investigate some more. I will tell you through Heda if I get something.”

“Thank you.”

“Right, then I should end today’s meeting here. My warrior Tae Ho, raise your head for a moment.”

As Tae Ho raised his head as told, Idun lowered her torso and placed her lips on Tae Ho’s forehead. A warm feeling enveloped Tae Ho’s body.

“My blessing shall accompany you.”

Idun smiled and the surrounding scenery changed.

&

“Did it go well? Did you receive a gift?”

“Yes, I got something really cool.”

Heda, that was waiting outside the door as always, approached him.

Tae Ho lightly patted Unnir and then told Heda what happened with Idun. Heda put on a slightly surprised face.

“Heh, how unexpected.”

“What is?”

“I would have thought that you would like the wing coat more.”

He realized that she was joking by looking at her eyes, and because of that, Tae Ho also said in a playful voice, “I will think about it when I get to be together with you.”

“Who said I would wear it?”

“You will obviously wear it. It’s you we are talking about.”

Heda laughed at the shameless remark.

“I may not let you ride on me even if I do wear it.”

“I think that you will ask me to, first.”

“It’s kind of painful to be looking at you. Are you sure I can be here?”

Tae Ho and Heda turned their heads at the voice.

Ragnar Lodbrok.

He was standing on the dock while frowning.

“You came really quickly.”

Ragnar shrugged his shoulders while answering Heda, “Rasgrid chased me away saying that I was distracting.”

Tae Ho asked unconsciously, “Rasgrid did?”

“She said that the warriors would get noisy if I was there.”

“That’s right,” Heda said. Tae Ho also nodded because Ullr’s

legion really did become noisy.

“Anyways, as I have just arrived I will relieve my fatigue. We will start the classes tomorrow newbie.”

He waved his hand and then started to move towards his lodging even when nobody had told him which was his. As Tae Ho was looking at his back, Heda smiled with her eyes and asked, “Are you looking forward to him teaching you?”

“He’s a legend in the end.”

“That seems a bit vague but.....it will certainly be good for you to expect it. He’s a real legend.”

He knew it even while he was looking at Siri’s reaction. Tae Ho imagined himself being taught swordsmanship by King Arthur or Guan Yu. Honestly speaking, he would be lying if he said he wasn’t excited.

“Now, Ragnar is Ragnar and we are we. Let’s start with the rune magic classes. I don’t know about other things, but I will still be in charge of it from now on.”

Heda was as enthusiastic towards the classes as ever. Tae Ho nodded and then the classes started.

&

The next morning, Ragnar took Tae Ho to the dock after sleeping for a long time.

“Sit there for now.”

Ragnar saw the dense fog spread beyond the dock and then smacked the place next to him as if telling him to sit. After Tae Ho sat down, Ragnar asked naturally, “How much have you progressed with Heda?”

“Sorry?”

“How much have you progressed in your classes? Look, your eyes are filled with dirty thoughts.”

Ragnar laughed wickedly. If someone saw the situation, they would think he was the one thinking about dirty things.

Tae Ho opened his eyes sharply and then started to tell him about the classes with Heda. After hearing it all, Ragnar said, “It seems like Heda called me to teach you how to use the strength of a God, but I will postpone that for later. For now, mastering through repetition is the priority. In the meantime, I think that I will just ask you to endure the activated state of the strength of a God for a long time.”

It seemed like he was speaking half heartedly, but Tae Ho understood the reason. It was because it was hard to even maintain the strength of a God right now. It was obvious that he would be learning how to actually use it later.

“I won’t teach you everything from one to ten. I will just advise you, so take what you need, understood?”

“I understand.”

Ragnar smiled as Tae Ho answered immediately.

“Good, I like you. For now, I will teach you the basics of the strength of a God. Although it’s just tedious theory, it will help you and I will only do it this once so endure it. Every God has their own attributes, but they all have similarities. I call that similarity, permission.”

“Permission?”

“Right, the reasons why inferior ranked warriors aren’t able to injure a regenerator is because they don’t have permission to wound a regenerator. Although in our original world, a noble may die at the knife of a vagabond, it’s a bit different in this world. If a vagabond wants to stab and kill a noble, then he needs to become a noble like them to have the permission to kill him. The strength of a God makes that possible.”

He thought it was okay for him to know about it. The reason why

Tae Ho could injure the regenerator was because he took off the Giant's blessing that was covering it through the strength of Idun. In the end however, he didn't inflict the wound with this strength alone.

“It seems like you understand a bit. First, being able to use that permission freely is the basis of the strength of a God. The application comes after that. If you want to become a superior ranked warrior, you have to at least be able to use the strength of a God as naturally as breathing.”

“What are the difference between an intermediate ranked and superior ranked warrior?”

The difference between the inferior and intermediate rank was the existence of the strength of a God. Then, if both ranks had the strength of a God, what would differentiate them?

“I won't tell you now.”

“Why?”

“You can already use the strength. What will a guy who is an inferior ranked warrior and can use the strength of an intermediate rank do when he knows what a superior ranked warrior can do? You would overdo it this time too, right? Then you will break down and Heda will come crying to me. And I, who is weak towards crying beauties, will be troubled. So that's the reason.”

Tae Ho wanted to refute back at the exact words but he could only keep silent. Because that was true.

‘But still, are they doing something by using the strength of a God?’

He thought that was the case based on what Ragnar said. It seemed like there would be a high level application that Tae Ho couldn't imagine right now.

Ragnar continued speaking, “You can maintain the strength of a

God even in your bed, when i'm not here, so let's move on to the next thing. Actually, I want to prioritize your saga rather than the strength of God."

Ragnar fixed his posture. He spread his chest and then looked at the air.

"A saga is the root of us, warriors of Valhalla. It's not a strength you use for a moment when you are inferior ranked and that you move on to a new one when you get promoted to the intermediate rank. The saga is something you need even at the top rank because that is life itself."

The story of a warrior.

The song of a hero transmitted orally.

Ragnar smirked. That smile was charming even to a man. It seemed like Ragnar Lodbrok's saga was behind that smile.

"I was thinking of two things."

Ragnar's eyes moved over to Tae Ho's face. Ragnar raised a finger and lightly pinched Tae Ho's chest.

"One is an attacking saga. You will make a saga entirely for attacking."

Ragnar clenched his fist and then looked up at Tae Ho's eyes and said, "You have many sagas while you are an inferior ranked warrior. However, they are all supportive sagas. Thanks to that, you are useful wherever you go, but you don't have a strong blow."

At the word strong blow, he thought of Siri's and Rolph's saga, Siri's saga that never missed its target and Rolph's saga that made his arrows explode. Both of them were offensive sagas.

"Create a strong blow meant only for you. I'm talking about an attack that can kill anything, be it a giant, monster, or devil. If that one blow represents you, then that attack by itself will become stronger."

That's what a saga was.

"For the remaining one, we will look back at your sagas."

"Look back?"

"Right, your saga still isn't complete. Actually, this is a really peculiar case. All of the inferior ranked warriors possess a saga they think is already complete."

Tae Ho opened his eyes sharply at the vague expression and Ragnar smirked again.

"A saga is a story and a story isn't fixed. A story is something that changes by word of mouth."

Tae Ho received a saga, like a skill in a game, after several battles.

Magic had fixed mechanisms, and a technique had certain effects.

But Ragnar was different. He emphasized the point that a saga was a story and a song.

"My saga is like this. So I can only use it like this. This is the mistake the lowest ranked or inferior ranked warriors make a lot. Look back at your saga again. There is a possibility there's a method you haven't thought of until now. Or there's a strength you haven't thought of. This is more important than ignorantly increasing the number of sagas."

Ragnar hit Tae Ho's chest lightly and then stood up.

"Now, we are finished with today's class. I will be resting so tell me if you have any progress."

Ragnar spoke like that and really returned to his lodging.

Tae Ho got flustered for a bit, but rather than calling Ragnar he looked towards the river.

It was just like Ragnar had said. He said everything he needed, and just like Heda had told him, the saga was his own. Thinking about his saga was entirely his job.

“A strong blow. I need to reorganize my sagas.”

Tae Ho mumbled in a low voice and closed his eyes. He thought of Kalsted’s stories one by one.

‘Wait.’

After several minutes passed, Tae Ho stood up from his place; it wasn’t because he thought of a new attacking saga.

‘A completely different use of a saga. Perhaps an extremely game-like idea.’

It was just a thought that had flashed in his head. He didn’t know if it would be possible.

But he wanted to try it.

‘A saga is a story.’

It wasn’t a fixed thing.

Because the saga was the life of a warrior, it was something that continued with the life of a warrior.

Tae Ho took out the unknown sword piece from Unnir. As he activated the dragon’s eyes, he saw the rainbow colored letters.

Epic ranked item.

A broken sword.

He couldn’t know what this item was originally or if it was merely a part of something else. But there was still a way to use it even if he didn’t know those things.

Tae Ho breathed in. Instead of gripping in the air he gripped the unknown sword piece tightly.

[Saga: The Sword of the Warrior]

His saga covered the sword piece and materialized Runefang over the broken sword.

And the thing that was made then.

[The Shining Heavenly Runefang]

The rainbow colored words that represented an epic ranked item, changed. However, the thing that changed wasn't only the color of the words. Runefang's shape changed. The sword that had really strong runes engraved on it emitted a strong light.

Tae Ho felt his heart beating faster. It wasn't because he was excited about Runefang strengthening.

The unknown sword piece.

What would happen if he combined a stronger weapon here instead of Runefang?

The answer was simple.

'All of the weapons recorded in the sword of the warrior becoming epic ranked.'

And that's what it meant.

A smile appeared on Tae Ho's face.

< Episode 11 – Unknown Sword Piece (2) > End

Episode 11/Chapter 3: Unknown Sword Piece

(3)

“That’s not a saga but a cheat.”

“Right?”

As Ragnar checked the strengthened Runefang and spoke with surprised eyes, Tae Ho smirked and agreed. It was also a cheat in Tae Ho’s opinion.

The original Runefang was blue-colored, which meant that it was a rare ranked weapon, but the item became epic ranked and its attack power and special abilities were also strengthened.

Although Ragnar didn’t know about the rareness or the attack power of the weapon like Tae Ho did, he did know how to distinguish weapons.

The difference between Runefang, which was simply made with the warrior’s sword, and Runefang that was made through using the unknown sword piece, was so clear you could distinguish it with a glance.

“Is it because he is from another world that he seems to think completely different from us?” Ragnar mumbled in a low voice. Warriors in Valhalla that could recreate the weapons in their previous life were common, but he had never heard of someone combining a weapon they were using and a part of a broken weapon to strengthen it.

“Ragnar, do you know what weapon this piece is from?”

Tae Ho deactivated the warrior’s sword and asked Ragnar. Ragnar then returned the unknown sword piece to Tae Ho and answered, “I don’t. There’s no way I could tell with just the hilt.”

“Certainly.”

“What?”

“No, nothing.”

He hadn't thought that Ragnar would know something not even Heda or Idun knew. While Ragnar's expression changed to something strange, Tae Ho added, “It's still unexpected. It seems like a part of a really amazing weapon.”

Yet everyone he had shown it to said that they didn't know what it was.

“Can't do anything about that. There are a lot of weapons that broke in the Great War. Actually, the God's weapons that were as numerous as the stars disappeared along with the Great Warriors.”

The King of Gods, Odin, had prepared for Ragnarok for a really long time. When he said that the weapons and heroes that were as numerous as the stars, that wasn't an exaggeration.

The Great War.

The huge war that had led to the present and the start of Ragnarok.

“Tae Ho, do you know about the hero, Sigurd?” Ragnar said with a complicated face and then made a gesture with his chin.

“Uh.....the owner of the God Sword? He even caught a dragon.”

He remembered seeing him in a game. Was he the origin of the hero, Siegfried?

Ragna frowned as Tae Ho got the keywords correctly.

“Hey, don't you actually know about me?”

“Ey, I don't. I don't know. I haven't even heard of you.”

Ragna frowned even more at Tae Ho's answer but it was only for a moment. He returned to his serious expression and kept talking.

“There's a rumor that hero Sigurd's God Sword, Gram, was actually broken in the Great War. So it means that the Gram he is using now is a recreation of his saga.”

What he was saying was that although the unknown sword piece really was amazing, there was a numerous amount of equipment that broke down.

Tae Ho nodded silently and then asked another question.

“Ragnar, is a weapon that is recreated with a saga not as good as the original one?”

“That depends on each saga, but if it’s a weapon like Gram, there’s a possibility for it not to be as good. There are things like mystical powers that are in the weapon itself.”

A warrior wasn’t the only one that could make a saga. If it was a sword comparable to Gram, then you could become the protagonist of that saga.

“Hm, anyways, you are saying that there’s a possibility that this is a fragment of the God Sword, Gram.”

“Probably not, but there is a possibility. Although I’m doubtful of that, it will be more certain when you gather more fragments.”

‘Gather more fragments.....’

It wasn’t easy. Even if there were more fragments remaining it would still be a hassle to differentiate them.

What Tae Ho had now was the hilt. That meant that all the other parts were blades.

It would be almost impossible to guess the origin just looking at a broken blade.

‘But.’

Tae Ho had the eyes of a dragon. If he could find the pieces, it wouldn’t be impossible to identify them.

“Do I really have to go?”

To the Mollo family that was being delved into the Great War.

If there were other pieces, it was possible for the blades to be in

the same place where the hilt had been discovered.

“Ragnar, do you know where Heda is?”

Ragnar pointed to the kitchen with his eyes in response to Tae Ho’s question.

&

Heda, who was still in the middle of cooking, placed down the kitchen knife on the cutting board with a thudding sound and asked, “You want to go meet Rasgrid?”

Tae Ho pulled his body back at the bloodthirsty feeling and then nodded.

“Yes.”

“And the reason?”

“That.....”

Tae Ho told Heda what he had spoken about with Ragnar. Heda spoke in a rather relieved manner in response to his words that indicated that he wanted to go visit the traces of the Great War without justification.

“If that’s the objective then there’s another method. There’s something.....that arrived just in time.”

Heda cleaned her apron and then took out an order decree from a pocket on her waist.

“It’s Rasgrid’s reinforcement request. She’s calling for you.”

“Rasgrid called for me?”

“She wants you to check the scene.”

Rasgrid roughly knew that Tae Ho had special eyes because she was on the same battlefield as him last time. Tae Ho was also the one that had seen through the betrayal of the head of the Mollo family, so it was understandable for her to call him.

“How good. Can I depart right now?”

If he was called for that reason, then he would be able thoroughly check on the traces of the Great War.

As Tae Ho replied happily, Heda looked at the food she was in the middle of making and answered with a depressed voice. “You can go with the troop that has decided to join them. You will be leaving tomorrow afternoon so I was planning on telling you tomorrow.”

Heda spoke up to there and then said with a casual voice, “You know you can’t change legions even if Rasgrid seduces you, right?”

She brought up the subject from their last conversation.

Tae Ho answered ill-naturedly at Heda’s voice that was mixed with anxiety.

“I will think about it.”

&

Tae Ho arrived in a hall after being escorted by Heda and then joined the reinforcement troop. He saw nice faces this time too.

“Captain Siri.”

“Nice to meet you Tae Ho.”

Siri welcomed him with a smiling face. However, there was another person denying the truth with his shoulders dropped. It was a weirdly familiar scene.

“Captain Siri, why is Rolph’s expression like that?”

“It seems like his promise to go to Anaheim was broken again.”

Siri laughed and said this with a funny voice. It seemed like Rolph’s plans for a break had fallen apart again.

‘Mm, if you don’t have any plans in the first place you won’t get disappointed either.’

Tae Ho realized a truth of the world that you couldn’t call particularly good and then clicked his tongue while looking at Rolph. While looking beyond Tae Ho’s back, Siri asked, “Before

that, Ragnar isn't coming with with you?"

"Yes, just look at me as a single person."

Having deployed Ragnar to the last fight was a special case in the first place.

Siri was little bit disappointed but then smiled and said, "You alone is enough."

"Treat me well."

Siri smiled brightly perhaps because it wasn't the time to stand on the battlefield yet. Tae Ho glanced at Siri's back and asked, "The number this time is big."

"The nature of this task is different. Excluding the faces you saw last time, they are all inferior ranked warriors."

About thirty warriors were gathered behind Siri's back.

'Well, if they were just going to call numbers they wouldn't have withdrawn in the first place.'

Tae Ho nodded and then looked at his junior soldiers. Of course, they all seemed to be his superiors when considering their amount of time in Valhalla.

The inferior ranked warriors looked at Tae Ho and each of them said some words.

"He's the rumored warrior?"

"So that was the person who rode on a Valkyrie!"

"Ohh!"

Admiration and respect filled in the eyes of the lowest ranked warriors that looked at Tae Ho. Siri smiled faintly and said, "I also told them that you defeated a Giant and a regenerator."

"Thank you."

As Tae Ho answered, Siri, laughed again as if she was enjoying it and then looked at the warriors conversing.

She yelled, “Close your mouths and prepare to depart!”

“Ou!”

The warriors yelled in a big voice and then lined up immediately. This time, Siri would lead the troop alone without any other Valkyries.

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

“For Asgard!”

The warriors of Ullr’s legion walked towards the violet space door.

&

The Giant in the darkness raised its head. He was one of the five Giants under the Giant King Utgard Loki and was called the Giant of Darkness, Avalt.

Just like the chief gatekeeper of Asgard, Heimdall, Avalt could see beyond the natural laws from a sitting position. Because of that, there were few cases where he went outside the darkness he himself had made.

Avalt slowly moved his fingers. The nets spread over Asgard, the tree of life, Yggdrasil, and the several worlds connected to it looked just like spider on a spider web because Avalt was checking it through his fingers.

A voice was heard. A big moth that flew through the darkness whispered in Avalt’s ear.

It told him that one of the five Giants of Utgard Loki, Harad, the Giant of Strength, was moving.

Avalt rolled his fingers. Just as the loyal servant had said, Harad’s underlings were moving towards Svartalfheim.

He thought he clearly knew what Harad was thinking after Harad had sent his underlings towards the place that Avalt had his hands on.

The loyal servant didn't ask what it was going to do. Avalt put no a small smile and rolled its fingers again.

It just pulled the strings connected to Svartalfheim as if it was just going to look at Harad's skills.

&

The place they arrived at beyond the door was the same as before. However, the only difference was that the one that came to meet them wasn't a darky fairy but a warrior of Valhalla.

"I'm inferior ranked warrior Tostin of Odin's legion. I have heard about your reputation."

Tae Ho grabbed the hands of the big, red bearded warrior. It was a bit burdensome, but Tae Ho answered while smiling because his actions and eyes were filled with good will.

"I'm inferior ranked Lee Tae Ho of Idun's legion. Nice to meet you."

"Inferior ranked Siri of Ullr's legion. I'm in charge of this group."

Siri, who was in business mode, spoke with a hard face. Tostin looked at Siri's group.

"Nice to meet you. I will lead you to the army post."

Odin's legion currently used the Mollo family's village as a post. As they wondered how they would move up to there, Tostin had brought about 30 black horses.

The horse had glossy black fur, long legs and was also cool but Tae Ho unconsciously said.

"It's rather normal."

It looked just like a normal, regular a horse.

Rolph seemed to have regained his spirits as he laughed and said, "Is it disappointing?"

“A bit.”

‘It seems like I have also become a warrior of Valhalla.’

Although it was not to the point where he missed the Black Flash or the Rain of Steel.

As their departure was late and their transportation means were mere horses, it seemed like Tostin calculated two days for them to arrive at the post. Instead of being adept to the dark fairies, the warriors of Valhalla decided to set up camp and continued their journey early in the morning.

About two hours later, when the group was about to arrive at their destination, the sound of a horn trumpet was heard from far away.

At that moment everyone’s expressions changed. Tostin, who was at the front, turned to look back at everyone and yelled, “That came from the excavation site! We will increase our speed!”

It was certainly the sound that notified them of an enemy attack. Siri made a gesture with her hands and made every one of the warriors in Ullr’s legion take a battle stance.

After riding for five more minutes, they started seeing the excavation site. Sounds of weapons clashing were heard at the entrance of the cave as there weren’t trees and you could see the sky. Tae Ho, who was at the front with Siri, saw the familiar gnolls.

“Everyone take your weapons! We are going to charge through like this!”

As Siri barked her orders, the warriors took out their weapons one by one. Tae Ho also took out the unknown sword piece from Unnir.

The speed of the horse and the weight of that shock was a weapon itself. The gnolls that were gathered at the entrance couldn’t even fight properly were crushed on the ground or

bounced off. It would be appropriate to say that they had pierced through the enemy.

Siri looked at her surroundings hurriedly instead of turning the horse. She could see several groups of gnolls. Although it was a wonder of how they had appeared, they were gathered in groups of twenty and Odin's legion which was being led by Rasgrid was fighting inside the cave against a group of more than 100 gnolls.

"Captain Siri! Over you!" Rolph yelled. Siri raised her head hurriedly and saw that harpies were flying towards her like a flock of birds closing in on their prey.

It was too late for her take out her crossbow. Siri gripped the sword in her hand with more strength and at that moment, Tae Ho jumped on top of the horse.

'If you obtained an item you should use it!'

Tae Ho yelled inwardly and then swung Runefang above Siri's head. The runic letters on the sword started to shine, and at that moment, a surprising thing happened.

Chwaaaaaaaaaak!

Flames covered the air. Fire shot out from Runefang.

The harpies flying towards Siri let out cries while being covered in flames. One of them had their wings burnt and fell among the warriors, and the remaining harpies flew upwards hurriedly and flew away.

"Wow."

Tae Ho, who had arrived on the ground, looked at his Runefang. It wasn't epic ranked for nothing. The flames surging from the sword weren't even comparable to what they were before.

"Ta-Tae Ho?"

Rolph stuttered because he was bewildered and Siri also widened her eyes. The lowest ranked warriors of Ullr's legion had just seen

him fight for the first time were in awe.

Tae Ho got on his horse again as if answering to their gazes and said in a low voice, “For Idun.”

The gnolls started to gather in one place. Tae Ho glared at them and activated his saga.

[Saga: The Sword of the Warrior]

Runefang disappeared and the unknown sword piece that was merely a hilt took the shape of a crossbow.

Epic ranked Thunderbolt.

Tae Ho pulled the trigger. Just like its name, it started to fire thunderbolts.

<Episode 11 – Unknown Sword Piece (3) > End

Episode 12/Chapter 1: Roar of the dragon (1)

Instead of arrows having a paralyzing effect, arrows with thunder covering them were fired from Thunderbolt. The arrow, which flew with a sparking sound, was enough to catch the attention of the attacking side as well as the gnolls that were being attacked. In addition, it wasn't only one bolt. Because of Thunderbolt's particular firing ability, it seemed like three streaks of lightning flew at once.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The gnolls that got hit with the thunder fell as if they were hit by a giant's hammer. As Siri and the warriors of Ullr's legion started to fire their crossbows together, it seemed like a shower of warriors was pouring down on their heads.

"We are moving!"

Siri yelled loudly and started to lead the troop forward. She was planning for them to act as a light cavalry that poured down rains of arrows.

Tae Ho stuck next to Siri and looked at his Thunderbolt. It seemed as if a trigger had been added to the hilt of the sword, so the grip was rather bad compared to a normal crossbow, but the crossbow was worthy enough for him to ignore this discomfort.

"Fire!"

The moment Siri gave the order, the warriors started to fire arrows and the gnolls that were gathered started to fall helplessly. They had already defeated three groups in this way.

"Captain Siri! We are reaching a limit!" Rolph yelled at her. It was a reasonable thing. In the first place, this wasn't a wide plain. They weren't running around outside, so there could only be a restriction to their movements when running around the enemy.

"We will be grouping up with Odin's legion!"

Siri made a fast decision and determined their direction. Tae Ho cleared the front by firing thunderbolts and the warriors of Ullr's legion raised their swords instead of crossbows. They increased their speed once more.

“Val! Ha! Lla!” The warriors of Ullr's legion yelled. They could all see Odin's legion and Rasgrid, who were being attacked by the gnolls. Some of them, which was more than a hundred, turned to look at their group.

“Shield Wall!”

The warriors on top of the horses raised their shields. The gnolls fired arrows, and most of them hit the shields, but some of them hit the horses. Two of the horses fell.

However, Siri didn't lower her speed at all. The warriors that were on top of the horses that fell jumped down from them safely and then started to charge on their own feet.

Bang!

The charge of the cavalry hit their rear. Siri led the troop in a diagonal direction to get the troop out of the gnolls' reach and then jumped down from her horse. Although the mobility of the horse was precious, most of the warriors of Valhalla were more accustomed to fighting on the ground.

Almost all of the warriors followed Siri and got down from their horses. However, Tae Ho decided to look at another place instead of following them. He could see a specifically clear green letter in the middle of Odin's troop.

[Odin's legion: Rasgrid]

“Kyaaak!”

Harpies let out cries from the sky and attacked the heads of the warriors of Odin's legion. Ullr's legion, which was led by Siri, joined the wings of Odin's legion and they faced the enemies that were at the front and above them and endured as best as they

could. Although the gnolls were on the offensive, their morale was lowered, as a wave that had gotten broken by a breakwater.

Tae Ho looked at the entire battlefield. This big place, which was described as the remains of the Great War, had the shape of a valley.

‘Why is it?’

Doubt arose in Tae Ho. It wasn’t only because of the valley-shaped region. It was because of the deployment of the gnolls. The gnolls were scattered in all directions as groups. Thanks to that, they were able to charge them, but it was weird. Just how had they charged in, that they were scattered that far away?

Tae Ho opened his eyes abruptly. It was because he already knew the answer. He looked at the sky reflexively, because he had heard the cries of the harpies.

Rain of Steel.

It wasn’t exactly the same as Valhalla’s. But it was similar. And it was also obvious. Because they had fought against Valhalla for a long time. The resemblance to each other was obvious.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Huge rocks covered in red light fell to the ground consecutively. As soon as they landed on the floor, they swelled up and exploded, and monsters started to pour out from inside. Giant gnolls and orc-like creatures that had ash-colored skin started to come out. Maybe they had realized that normal Gnolls wouldn’t do.

Coming from the sky meant that there was someone sending them. He did look up at the sky but it seemed like that existence was beyond the clouds or had sent them from such a far place that he couldn’t see anything in particular that seemed like the enemy.

“Oh, Odin.”

The warriors of Odin called the name of their god in the brutal

battlefield. Instead of despairing at the number that doubled in an instant, they started to fight more roughly.

Valkyrie Rasgrid didn't lose her composure. The lowest-ranked warriors weren't the only ones that had been deployed in this expedition. A majority of the inferior-ranked warriors of Odin's legion, who were quite experienced, took part in it as well. Now that they were facing giant gnolls, they would be able to overcome this situation easily.

Would it just end after pouring down troops like this?

Rasgrid raised her head and looked at the sky, then let out a groan. Her yell was like a scream.

“Scatter! Leave the middle empty!”

The warriors also looked up at the sky. A shadow covered the heads of those warriors. A huge red boulder which was covered in flames was falling down towards the center of Odin's legion.

&

The Giant of Strength, Harad, was different to the Giant of Darkness, Avalt.

They both served the magic king Utgard Loki, but their tendencies were close to being opposites.

Avalt's failure made Harad feel joyful. It was obvious, as it liked to plan things from behind the curtains like a rat.

So Harad was planning to overturn Avalt's failure, and with a more certain and powerful method.

Why bother with seducing the dark fairies and making them work for you? You could just break them all down.

Was Valhalla fearful? What would you do if you feared an opponent you had to face?

You would retrieve a seed when you discovered it. And if you couldn't discover one, you would everything on fire and destroy it

all.

It wasn't a bad thing, because he was even more tired of the adhering phase. If everywhere was set on fire, in the end, the balance would break and the era that even the cowards of Valhalla described as the Great War would come.

“Break it all down. Set everything on fire.” Harad glared from beyond the sky of Jotunheim, the planet of the giants, and ordered. It wasn't an order sent to the weak and numerous gnolls.

Giants.

The race that would break and set Valhalla on fire even before they could act.

Harad raised its cup of wine that was made of bronze. It looked at the first giant descending through the eyes of the harpies.

&

The flames set the surface on fire. The warriors of Odin that had hurriedly emptied the middle were still fighting against the gnolls outside, and the ones that were inside glared at the blazing pillars which were ten meters tall.

The pillars broke down after becoming dust. And inside that, a giant that was about 7 meters showed up.

The giant roared. It wasn't a simple yell. The warriors of Valhalla yielded and the gnolls fell into madness.

Evil deeds.

The growth system of the giants had been replaced by the rune system of the warriors of Valhalla. The more enemies killed, so the more evil deeds done, the stronger the giants became. It was the same as strengthening through the blood and soul of the deceased ones.

Although it was smaller than the giant that appeared in the Black Fortress, their strengths couldn't even be compared. It was an

existence that had committed several evil deeds.

The giant continued to roar. The warriors of Valhalla couldn't lift their eyes off the giant. And then Rasgrid moved.

She looked at something else rather than the giant.

The second pillar of fire was descending from far away. It wasn't on the battlefield, but somewhere else. Rasgrid knew even without drawing a map in her head. That place was where the village of the dark fairies was.

Although the branches covering the skies were thick they were still branches. They couldn't stop the descent of a flaming giant.

Rasgrid opened her eyes sharply. She quickly determined the strength of the giants and judged on which battlefield she had to stand.

Rasgrid would remain here and send another person towards the village of the dark fairies.

And in this moment, there was only one person who she could believe in.

"Warrior Tae Ho." Rasgrid said, as if whispering. She had been tracking Tae Ho's location ever since Ullr's legion appeared and she was now next to him. Tae Ho, who was focused on the giant, turned his head at Rasgrid's voice and then noticed the second giant descending towards the village of the dark fairies.

Rasgrid grabbed Tae Ho's hand.

As she didn't have time to explain, she simply took out the Dragon Wing coat from the air and then gave it to Tae Ho instead of wearing it herself.

"I will lend it to you. Give it to someone you trust in. I will entrust to you the giant in the village."

Rasgrid looked at the giant and Tae Ho at the same time. The giant, that had finished roaring, took out a flaming sword.

“I believe in you. Let Odin’s blessing be with you.”

Rasgrid spoke quickly and then pulled on Tae Ho’s arm and kissed him on his forehead. She passed by Tae Ho instead of smiling and then went towards the giant.

Her opponent wasn’t a lowest-ranked giant. And in addition, she couldn’t even ask for permission for her battle power to be unsealed. Rasgrid took out a shining sword and revealed her strength at the same time.

“Reinforcements will soon come from Valhalla! Pulverize the enemy!”

“Odin!

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

The warriors of Odin shook off the oppression of the giant with battle cries. The blazing giant glared at Rasgrid, who was covered with a white aura.

Tae Ho took his eyes off Rasgrid’s back. The second giant had finished descending on the village. It broke the branch ceiling and revealed its presence. It was so huge its shape could be clearly seen, even though it was hundreds of meters away.

Followed by the giant, blazing rocks were falling. He had to move to save the dark fairies’ village.

Some of the warriors started to get onto their horses. But Tae Ho looked at his surroundings instead of doing the same.

“Tae Ho?!”

He could see Rolph right next to him. Tae Ho hesitated. It wasn’t because of a childish reason, like he didn’t want to ride on Rolph.

The performance changed based on who wore the wing coat. The amount of runes Rolph had, that had just become an inferior-ranked warrior, were low. It would rather be better to make another inferior-ranked warrior of Ullr’s legion wear it.

But would he be able to believe in someone else? Would he be able to entrust his body to them?

It happened at that moment..

“Rolph! Tae Ho! Hurry up!”

“Captain Siri!”

Siri appeared next to Rolph and Tae Ho while riding a horse. She was also looking at the village. It seemed as if she wanted to go riding over there.

Tae Ho pulled on Siri’s arm. Thanks to that, she looked at him with perplexed eyes and Tae Ho gave her the Dragon Wing coat, as if pushing it towards her.

“Wear it!”

Siri blinked. But then she understood what Tae Ho was asking of her. And Rolph also realized why Tae Ho had hesitated while looking at him.

There was no time. Siri opened her mouth in perplexion but she chose to wear it instead of saying something.

“The activation word?”

“Drako!”

The moment Rasgrid had transformed into a dragon was still fresh in his head. As Tae Ho yelled, Siri quickly donned the wing coat and then she transformed into a dragon.

She was different to Rasgrid, who was a white dragon with blue eyes. As if there was no specific shape, Siri had transformed into a big golden furred wolf with a pair of wings.

Siri lowered her stance and then Tae Ho got on top of her and yelled towards Rolph.

“To the village!”

Rolph nodded and then rode on the horse Siri had been riding.

Tae Ho lowered her stance and then activated ‘The One That Can Handle Dragons’.

Siri trembled. ‘The One That Can Handle’ was meant to handle dragons, just like its name implied. It was obvious for the connection to be stronger now that she had transformed into a race of a dragon rather than when she was a wolf.

Tae Ho placed his hands on Siri’s back instead of ordering and tightened his legs. Siri kicked the ground while spreading her wings and rose to the sky in an instant.

Rasgrid and a blazing giant clashed in front of them. Light and fire clashed and the warriors of Ullr’s legion started to charge towards the village.

Tae Ho looked at the giant in the village. He took in a deep breath and gripped on the air.

[Saga: The Warrior’s Sword]

He didn’t use the Unknown sword piece. What he needed now was to grab its attention. While he flew towards it he would take its attention on him.

Tae Ho gripped the Heavy Lance in one hand and then requested Siri through the connection of ‘The One That Can Handle Dragons’. Siri also acted loyally this time.

[Saga: The Arrow of the Witch Never Miss Their Target]

Their bodies were already touching. Siri’s saga was added to Tae Ho’s arm and Tae Ho looked at the giant while quickly ascending. Instead of concentrating on aiming he threw the Heavy Lance with all his strength.

Although it wasn’t correct to call it an arrow – the power of the saga decreased, thanks to that. However, the target was just too huge!

Bang!

An explosion occurred from far away. The moment the giant got hit in the shoulder it turned back. Tae Ho faced against the giant and gripped the Unknown sword piece.

The Heavy Lance, that was covered with a golden aura, extended from Tae Ho's hands.

The weapon that was used to destroy the Ogre Lord Gandoll, was emitting a great strength, as if telling him to add a new story to his body.

And Tae Ho listened to its request.

Tae Ho and Siri charged towards the giant.

< Episode 12 – Roar of the dragon (1) > End

Episode 12/Chapter 2: Roar of the dragon (2)

His breathing was rough. From behind him, the fire and the light were fierce, and there was a path of flames in front of him.

The giant was big. Although it was smaller than the giant that appeared in Black Fortress, it still seemed to be tens of meters tall.

The giant in the middle of the broken pillar was covered entirely by the flames.. There were deer horns in the helmet that covered its head and parts of its body were covered by the armor that it wore..

It only took a few seconds for Tae Ho to close the distance to it. He could see and listen to several things in that short time.

The dark fairies screamed. Monsters started to appear from the rocks that fell alongside the giant. The warriors of Ullr's and Odin's legions rode like crazy and the burning fire let out black smoke that seemed as if it was screaming.

Tae Ho grabbed his Heavy Lance tightly. It wasn't the time to be picky about things. He had to attack and then see what happened.

Siri increased her speed. Tae Ho aimed for the left shoulder of the slow giant. He executed the merciless and powerful Lance, charging before it could even do anything.

Bang!

The Heavy Lance hit the shoulder of the giant. An explosion was heard and it stumbled back greatly.

But that was all. Siri, who was covered in the aftershock, flew past the giant, and Tae Ho released the Heavy Lance, which was partially destroyed, and then turned back to look at the giant.

He knew the moment he stabbed it, that he couldn't damage it. And the first Lance he threw also couldn't damage the giant. It had just pushed it through the shockwave.

The defensive aura.

The moment they clashed, its defenses broke. However, in that short moment, it weakened the power of the charging Lance. And even if that wasn't the case, the giant was hard and even had armor on it. Counting that it had moved, it only had mere scratches on it.

Siri made a big turn. And then they could see along with Tae Ho.

The giant raised its arms instead of grabbing a weapon, like the giant at Black Fortress had. At that moment the ground started to shake.

A vortex of fire.

The wind, which originated from the arms of the giant, became one with the fire. Like that, it began to charge and burned down the forest.

‘My goodness!’

The giant wasn't a warrior. It was a magician. Although it was something that could happen anytime, Tae Ho could only become bewildered.

The fire spreading in the forest became several times faster. Black smoke covered the sky and the dark fairies that were in the forest couldn't even scream properly. They collapsed after breathing in the smoke, and the warriors of Valhalla now also had to fight against the fire.

A vortex of fire appeared again from the palm of the giant. The giant seemed to be trying to destroy everything in its surroundings, instead of concentrating on Tae Ho.

He had to stop it.

He had to grab its attention by whatever means.

[Saga: The Warrior's Sword]

Tae Ho made the Heavy Lance again. It flew near the giant and

then threw the Lance in consecution.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The giant swung his hands, as if shooing a fly. The ground shook greatly and the fire spread to the surroundings. Siri raised her speed with all her strength.

Tae Ho passed over the wave of fire and thought. He hadn't only thrown the Heavy Lance just to take its attention.

Understanding of its defensive aura.

The aura wasn't as hard as he had thought. It simply dissipated after blocking the attack of the Heavy Lance.

But the problem was that it regenerated. Tae Ho calculated the timing it regenerated after three attacks to be about three seconds. Although it was short, you couldn't completely take your time.

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon See Through All Things]

Siri turned once more in the air. Tae Ho looked at the giant through the eyes of the dragon. He could see a faint light in the middle of its chest. Although he couldn't see the shape well as it was being covered by a triangular chest plate, he was certain that it had a weakness.

'Tae Ho!'

Siri called for Tae Ho with all her strength. Tae Ho put more strength in The One That Can Handle Dragons and supported Siri's flight. The wave of fire the giant was spreading became fiercer. Because of the dark smoke that covered the sky, Siri and Tae Ho found it hard to breathe.

How would Rasgrid's side be fighting? When would reinforcements come? Would the fairies in the village be able to live? What about the warriors of Valhalla fighting below the Giant?!

He felt stuffed. Firstly, he had to do something about the fire..

And to do that, he had to beat the giant first.

“Tae Ho! The dark fairies!” Siri yelled again with all her strength, but this time her voice was filled with delight. Tae Ho hurriedly turned to look where Siri was looking at. There were dark fairies gathering on the spot where the branch ceiling disappeared. They were all green colored and weren’t normal dark fairies.

‘Magic!’

Through the eyes of the dragon, he could see that magic was being gathered. The magicians started to make a chant, and the concentrated magical power began to fly towards the sky.

A sound was heard above their heads. Clouds gathered, and Tae Ho knew what was happening.

It was a downpour. Rain poured down on the giant and its surroundings as if a hole had been made in the sky.

The rain gulped down the smoke. It calmed down the fierce fire and it stopped the fire from eating the forest. It even weakened the fire that was coming out of the body of the giant.

“Odin!”

“Ullr!”

The warriors of Valhalla cheered. But they couldn’t just be happy. Even though they were said to have bodies as strong as steel, compared to them, the dark fairies were too weak. The heavy rain was as threatening to their lives as the fire.

Rolph, who was watching Siri and Tae Ho fight, embraced a dark fairy child that had collapsed near him. His breathing was weak and his trembling body was cold.

They had to hurry. Although they would be able to win if they maintained this state and waited for reinforcements to come, countless dark fairies would die that way.

The giant turned towards the dark fairy magicians. It began to

chant to attack them from far away and the dark fairies couldn't leave their spots, even knowing that. It seemed like they were to maintain the downpour.

Other dark fairies were riding to that place with their horses. The giant threw a ball of wind towards the dark fairy magicians and some of them raised their staves at the exact timing. Something unable to be seen by the eyes barely fended off the ball of wind.

Bababababang!

The wind broke the trees. Unluckily enough, some magicians that were near the tree got torn up by it, and there were even some that vomited blood.

Tae Ho breathed in. Siri staggered because of the pouring rain but she flapped her wings while gritting her teeth. Tae Ho whispered his tactic towards her.

It was too reckless.

However, Siri agreed instead of opposing. It seemed like they just had to be reckless to beat that giant.

"Let's go!" Tae Ho yelled. Siri added her own saga while flying. She activated the 'Wolf Witch' and conserved her strength and stamina a bit more.

[Saga: The One That Can Handle Dragons]

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

Tae Ho also used his sagas in consecution. It was to make Siri's reckless flight a success.

Siri flew towards the head of the giant as if charging against it. The giant extended its hand but Siri passed over it closely and then turned in a spiral. Siri's back was headed to the ground for a moment, and at that moment Tae Ho flipped down Unnir. He poured down some things inside of it hurriedly.

They were two stones that were the size of a finger. The moment

they got out of Unnir, Tae Ho chanted just as he he was taught by Heda. The rocks returned to their original size without having to wait three seconds.

Babang!

Boulders the size of a person hit the head of the giant. Although the height they was dropped from was low and the giant was big – he couldn't damage it greatly – it was enough. The defensive aura broke and Tae Ho jumped down from Siri's back. His objective was the chest of the giant.

[Saga: The Warrior's Sword]

He grabbed Runefang while falling. Then he made it emit orange flames, even in the middle of the heavy rain, and focused at one point. It was the part that was connecting the giant's chest plate.

Crush!

Runefang broke the connector. It left a small wound on the giant and Tae Ho ground his teeth. He kicked the ground slightly and also broke the lower connector.

The Giant moved its hand to hit Tae Ho and he twisted his body in the air. He kicked in the air once again and yelled.

“Chant!”

Tae Ho transformed into a hawk. He spread its wings widely and then flew up.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri flew below Tae Ho. Tae Ho released his transformation after landing on Siri's back and then looked at the giant. Thanks to the connectors of one side being completely cut off, the chest of the giant was completely exposed.

A huge rock that emitted a blue light was stuck in its chest. Tae Ho realized even without having to use the dragon's eyes, that it was its weakness. And perhaps it might be the origin of its

strength.

Siri raised her speed with all her might. Tae Ho shot off Gant in consecution and scattered the whirlwinds.

He dodged the whirlwinds. Siri and Tae Ho flew up almost vertically and cold rain poured down on the two people. Tae Ho breathed roughly. He stuck closely to Siri and said, "Captain Siri, endure it. I will overdo it quite a lot, starting from now."

Siri donned a forced smile. Instead of asking if what they had done until now wasn't overdoing it, she steeled herself. She prepared for the last flight.

'One hit, one kill.'

It wouldn't work if he stuck to its chest and broke it little by little. He needed one strong blow after he broke down its aura.

So to say, an attack you could put everything on!

The golden aura that was being emanated from the Heavy Lance started to take shape. It started to form a whirlwind following the spear and at the tip of that, a brighter light of Idun was concentrated.

The strength of a God.

In addition to it, Tae Ho's and Siri's saga.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

[Saga: The Arrows of a Witch Never Miss Their Target]

The Lance charging wasn't an arrow. But the attack he would execute now would be able to be applied to Siri's saga.

The powerful blow Ragnar had spoken of.

The strongest saga he could make right now.

[Synchro rate: 17%]

[Synchro rate: 18%]

His synchronization rate increased just by recreating the saga. It was obvious – because this technique was one that represented Kalsted's first years!

[Saga: Roar of the Dragon]

Draconic Ballista!

Bang!

It pierced through the earth. The explosion ringing through the skies was just like the roar of a dragon.

It wasn't a simple charge. Another driving force was generated behind Tae Ho's back. The golden light that appeared from between the thick lines of light was already a thunderstrike. It was a thunderbolt. Tae Ho and Siri became an arrow of death themselves.

The giant hurriedly created some wind and then broke it. Thanks to that, their path was shaken a bit but Siri's saga supported it. They started to fly towards the chest of the giant in a rough line!

The strength of the God pushed away from its defenses. The shining tip of the spear stabbed the rock, and then it exploded along with it. The piercing strength of Draconic Ballista penetrated through the cracks of the rock.

A blue light shone brightly. It seemed as if the entire world was dying in blue.

Maybe it was his feeling, or it was actually that time moved slowly,. Tae Ho and Siri landed on the ground immediately and swam through the crack of the rock really slowly.

They didn't know what had happened but Tae Ho was certain.

They had beaten the giant. They had defeated it.

Tae Ho extended his hand towards the center of the blue rock he had broken. Several kinds of runes became smoke and started to gather on Siri and Tae Ho.

And at that moment Tae Ho blinked. Time started to flow normally again. However, Tae Ho and Siri didn't fall. A bigger blue light covered the two of them and the world turned upside down.

“Ullr!”

“Idun's warrior!”

Rolph cheered while watching the giant fall down. And the other warriors also did the same.

However, Rolph became perplexed. He looked at his surroundings and his mouth dropped open with a pale face.

“Captain Siri?! Tae Ho?!”

The two of them were nowhere to be seen. He thought that they would fly again to the sky or land roughly, but it was neither.

How so.

Rolph looked at the sky with a stupefied face. He could only see dark clouds in the sky, where they had disappeared.

&

Tae Ho and Siri crashed onto the ground. Tae Ho bounced down and then rolled on the ground and Siri returned to her human form. Maybe it was because she used the ‘Wolf Witch’ in the middle that her clothes that were inside the wing coat were a mess.

But it wasn't the time to worry about those things. Siri was unconscious and couldn't wake up, and Tae Ho, who had barely remained conscious, let out a groan and struggled to get up.

“Captain...Siri?”

The runes they couldn't finish absorbing got sucked into their bodies after becoming red smoke.

Tae Ho approached Siri and lay her down. He sloppily used his lap as a pillow and then raised his head to look at his surroundings.

“Where is...this?”

A world that had day and night, and earth and sky mixed.

The scene, which could only be expressed that way, was spread in front of Tae Ho.

< Episode 12 – Roar of the Dragon (2) > End

Episode 13/Chapter 1: Traces of the Great War (1)

A rough and scary wind blew in the deepest part of Jotunheim, the land of giants.

The wind was originated because there was an essence of coldness that had a mysterious power, and the palace of the giant king was placed over there, as if to protect it.

Magician king, Utgard Loki.

He, that had the strongest force even among the other giants in Jotunheim, was seated on a throne made from a branch of Yggdrasil and looked into the distance. A land of severe cold could be seen from the wall in front of the throne and beyond the terrace, and even beyond that, you could see Gastropnir, the fortress of the giants.

Utgard Loki closed his eyes. He, the giant king, remembered the Great War.

The war that put a world in extinction and dealt a fatal blow to Asgard.

The wound he had suffered from the Prince of Light, Cu Chulainn, the hero of the extinct planet, didn't heal. He could still feel pain from the wound in his shoulder that had been pierced by Gae Bulg.

Utgard Loki let out a heavy sigh. He opened his eyes slowly and saw the back of the man who was on the path connected to the terrace. Although he was big compared to humans, it was a really small and frail existence compared to the giants. However, Utgard Loki didn't ignore him. He was someone you just couldn't ignore.

“Loki.”

The one that was a giant and a God. He was a sworn friend of

Thor, an adviser of Odin and Asgard's disguiser, who shared friendships with several Gods. The God of fire and lies.

He, who had black hair and a handsome face, turned back. He was wearing a leather coat made from the fur of a white beast, and he wore a smile.

Close to a hundred years had passed since the Great War. The front lines were adhering, and both sides continued with an endless consumption rate.

Loki asked with his eyes. And Utgard Loki moved the fingers of his big, heavy left hand instead of replying to those green eyes.

They both knew the answers. The most effective method to end the adhering phase and collapsing Asgard had been decided since Ragnarok started.

The summoning of the world wolf Fenrir that devoured the sky and the earth.

They already had the methods to do it. That was the reason he was moving his five fingers, to execute the plan.

Utgard Loki didn't express more than that. However, Loki nodded as if he had understood and then turned back. He charged forward lightly with his boots that could ride in the sky and the sea and disappeared.

The summoning of the world wolf.

Utgard Loki clenched his fists and then lightly patted the armrest of his wooden throne.

He thought about Loki. He really was a God that was like fire.. Although it was useful depending on it was used, if you had it too close to you, you would get burnt by him. He had that kind of temperament.

Odin and Thor of Asgard were wounded by him. But what did he have to do?

‘The war will soon resume.’

The Great War. The real Ragnarok.

Utgard Loki slowly closed his eyes. It was only for a moment, but he also wore the smile Loki had worn.

&

Siri opened her eyes. As soon as she gulped dry saliva, indicating that her mouth was dry, a voice was heard above her.

“You woke up just now?”

“Tae Ho?”

She was relieved to see a face she knew. Siri realized that she was lying on Tae Ho’s lap and then hurriedly got up and unconsciously adjusted the dragon wing coat. She had been prepared for it when she used the ‘Wolf Witch’, but her clothes had really become a mess.

“Where is this?”

She did remember that she had fought against the giant with Tae Ho. But she didn’t remember coming to this strange place where earth and sky were mixed.

Tae Ho frowned slightly and said, “That’s what I also want to ask. It was good up to destroying the giant with the Draconic Ballista, but we got covered in a blue light after that and we ended up here.”

Siri frowned when she remembered something at the words ‘blue light’. It wasn’t because her head hurt. It was because of a physiological need.

She was hungry.

Though it was an obvious thing. She had transformed into a dragon and battled fiercely. Maybe it was because she used her saga in consecution that her body and mind felt blank.

Tae Ho felt awkward after hearing the gurgling sound coming from Siri's stomach but he then regained his composure. It was because he didn't see that Siri was particularly embarrassed.

‘Well, she is also a warrior of Valhalla.’

For a warrior of Valhalla to be embarrassed because of a small gurgling sound? You couldn't even imagine that.

“Do you want to drink something? Or eat?”

Siri became bright as soon as Tae Ho asked.

“Do you have provisions?”

She really wasn't embarrassed at all. However, he liked her sincere attitude even more.

“Wait a moment.”

Tae Ho opened Unnir, which was attached to his waist, and started to take out several things. These emergency supplies didn't seem to be prepared in a hurry, but they were all good things, as they were made by Heda.

Siri blinked in surprise when she saw that beef jerky, bread, several fruits and drinks appeared before her.

“Im...pressive. Did Idun-nim give you that?”

She was obviously asking about Unnir. Tae Ho smirked and nodded. “Yes. She told me to choose between the flying horse wing coat and this, so I chose this.”

“It seems as if it will be impossible.”

“What will?”

“Gandur-nim was asking if there was no method to bring you to our legion. But as you are receiving this much goodwill from Idun-nim it seems like that will be impossible.”

As Siri laughed hopelessly, Tae Ho put on a bitter smile.

‘There's also Heda.’

He was sorry for Gandur, but he didn't even think about leaving Idun's legion.

Siri spoke again.

“That's a really amazing treasure. You should be the only one among the inferior-ranked warriors that has a treasure like that.”

He did think that it was amazing when he first received it, but looking at Siri's reaction it seemed as if it was impressive even when taking into account the standard of all of Valhalla.

‘I am really being favored.’

Tae Ho felt satisfied, and smiled calmly.. Siri's eyes became lukewarm at Tae Ho's reaction and then she changed subjects.

“Now that I see, did you retrieve the runes Tae Ho?”

“Of course. That's the most important thing.”

If you caught a monster, you had to get the experience. Not retrieving the experience after having caught it was something he couldn't forgive himself for at all, as a pro gamer.

Tae Ho made a gesture with his eyes, as if telling her to check and Siri closed her eyes and checked her own runes.

“It seems like I was also able to get my share because of the saga that shared our senses... Amazing.”

Siri looked at herself while putting wide eyes. Her rune amounts had really increased. With this much, she could be called an intermediate-ranked warrior.

The giant they had defeated was stronger than the giant they beat at Black Fortress. In addition, it was important to point out that they had beat it with their own strength.

Tae Ho's runes had also increased so much that they were now similar to Siri's level. In the first place, taking into account that Siri had a lot more runes than Tae Ho, it seemed like it was divided based on the contribution.

‘My synchro rate also reached 19%.’

The 20% was right in front of him. He was sure that there would be another change, just like what happened when he reached 10%.

‘Captain Siri also got attribute runes.’

Tae Ho had received fire attributed runes in that battle. It seemed like Siri had also gotten a wind attribute rune.

Siri was amazed at herself having become stronger and smiled, and then Tae Ho smirked while looking at her and said, “There’s some benefit on having overdone it right? So let’s keep working hard from now on. Ah, how about you moving to Idun’s legion?”

After he said that, he mused about it and thought that it was a good idea. Because if Siri moved legions, she would be able to use the flying horse wing coat. In addition, they matched each other well, and their battle prowess would also increase by a lot.

However, Siri shook her head. “That’s a charming proposal, but I will have to decline. First of all, Tae Ho, there’s something I want to ask. You don’t need to answer if it troubles you.”

“What is it?”

“I know that you come from another world and it’s also rare for warriors to ask about their past. But...Your sagas are all amazing. So much, to the point that I’m curious what kind of world yours was. What did you do? I don’t think you were a normal warrior.” Siri asked rather seriously. Maybe it was true that she meant that he didn’t need to answer if he didn’t want to, since her eyes seemed to be a bit sorry.

Tae Ho pondered for a moment and then shrugged his shoulders and replied, “Uh...Actually, I was a world champion.”

Siri remembered the first day he entered Valhalla and then nodded as if it was as she had expected.

“Ah, certainly. That was why. I was facing a really incredible

person.”

She had certainly misinterpreted. She would surely be thinking about a battle king or something of the sort.

However, Tae Ho turned the subject instead of resolving the misunderstanding.

“What about you? I heard that you were a hunter.”

She wasn’t a shield maiden but a hunter. Those were the words of Rolph.

At Tae Ho’s question, the light in Siri’s eyes seemed to dim but then she put on a smile and said, “I was a normal hunter. I lived in a hut far away from the village and hunted beasts and things worse than beasts.”

‘Those things should be humans, right?’

The words above Siri’s head that he saw when he first met her.

She didn’t look like a normal bounty hunter. The ‘witch’ word that appeared in Siri’s saga was one thing, and it seemed like there was something else.

‘Also...’

It was easy to forget, but this place was Valhalla. It was a place only dead warriors could come to, so Rolph and Siri must have lost their lives at a young age.

It seemed like Siri noticed Tae Ho’s gaze since she erased the smile she wore and dropped her shoulders and said, “I like Valhalla. Instead of being jealous and having bad feelings towards the other person, they get sincerely amazed and show their strength. I like those kinds of warriors. They are pleasing allies that I fight with, and I like the present that we are fighting in, to protect Asgard and the nine planets; to the point that I want to enter the real paradise that was prepared by Odin as late as possible.”

Her words contained sincerity in them. He wanted to smile along with her but Tae Ho couldn't pass the last part easily.

“The real paradise?”

“The warriors of Valhalla become steel warriors when they die. Then what will happen if even they die?”

Bjorn said that they would die for real then. However, Siri said another thing.

“A rest for a real warrior is prepared. Only warriors of Valhalla can enter that place.”

Because of that, the warriors of Valhalla could fight valiantly. They could focus on how they would die, rather than on when they would die, as they did in the mortal world.

Siri smiled. “I promised that I would go to Anaheim with Rolph when I return.”

“To Anaheim? With Rolph?”

“He looked depressed, like a poor puppy, because his promise was broken two times. I also think of my little brother,” Siri smiled and said. It seemed like she was really looking forward to going to Anaheim with Rolph.

‘But if Rolph goes with Siri, he wouldn't be able to go to the places he wants to, right?’

But then he changed his thoughts.

‘No, it would be better for Rolph.’

‘Then should I also ask Heda?’

It was when Tae Ho was fantasizing that Siri, who was eating something, looked at her surroundings and said again, “Tae Ho, it seems like this is a trace of the Great War.”

“Certainly, right?”

Tae Ho had thought the same thing. Siri nodded and then looked

at her surroundings and said, “I heard that the space that remained from the after-effects of the Great War was really unstable. That there was a crack in the world which you couldn’t see. This could probably be one of those cracks.”

A broken world that had the earth and the sky mixed.

There was a possibility that they had entered the crack because the blue stone of the giant broke and a magical explosion occurred.

“Tae Ho, you have a special eye. Haven’t you found something?”

“There is one thing, but I’m not certain.”

Tae Ho had checked his surroundings for a moment before Siri woke up. The magic power in their surroundings was flowing in one direction. Just like a current of water.

“I wonder if there will be something after we reach the end of the flow. Although it may be too hopeful, the exit could be there.”

Tae Ho pointed beyond a hill that was far away.

Then at that moment, Tae Ho felt a vibration at his waist.

He became surprised at the vibration, which was much stronger than the vibration of a cell phone, and then stood up and checked his waist. It was the Unknown sword piece that only had the hilt.

The vibration stopped when Tae Ho placed his hand on the unknown sword piece.

Siri, who wore the same surprised eyes, stood up from her place and asked, “Tae Ho, is it that piece you said you obtained before?”

“Yes, but...wait.”

Tae Ho seemed to have remembered something that happened when he grabbed the unknown sword piece and asked, “You are the one that answered just now?”

The answer to the conversation when he said that the exit may be over there.

At that moment the unknown sword piece vibrated again. Tae Ho looked at Siri, and she nodded.

“This place is separated from other places. It is filled with the strength of the Great War, so it may have recovered some of its strength. Perhaps this sword may be one of those legendary swords that had its own ego. Just like this sword, Freyr-nim was said to have one that fought on its own.”

It was an understandable story then. Tae Ho asked towards the unknown sword piece again, “Do you have something you remember? If you do vibrate once, if you don’t, do it twice.”

The hilt vibrated two times shortly. Maybe it was because it was in pieces that its memories were incomplete.

‘And it can’t even speak.’

However, if it was basic communication it was enough. It wasn’t an epic-ranked item for nothing.

Tae Ho organized his thoughts and asked again, “So the exit is over there?”

Vibrate.

It vibrated once.

A smile appeared on Siri’s face.

And Tae Ho also smiled. Although there was a possibility for the unknown sword piece to be lying or that its knowledge wasn’t correct, even so, the thing they had to do remained the same.

‘And it doesn’t seem like a lie either.’

Tae Ho put back the remains of the provision in Unnir and then took a big breath and turned back. Siri got flustered and said, “Tae Ho, it’s over there.”

Tae Ho also knew. However if this really was a trace of the Great War, there was something he had to do first.

‘I beat one giant. Rasgrid will become in charge of the other one and reinforcements will also come.’

In addition, quite a lot of time had passed. In the first place, if every second was important right now, he wouldn’t have been able to even think of eating and conversing slowly with Siri.

So he had to do what had been needed.

The real objective he came to Svartalfheim for.

[Saga: The Eyes of a Dragon See Through All Things]

Tae Ho’s eyes started to read the various colored words.

< Traces of the Great War (1) > End

Episode 13/Chapter 2: Traces of the Great War (2)

There was ordering in the middle of the settlement of the battlefield.

They retrieved the corpses of their allies and confirmed that their enemies that were pretending to be dead were really dead or captured them.

All of these things were important, but there was one more thing that had to be done.

Retrieval of equipment.

Although it was regretful, the ones that had died couldn't hold a weapon again. They couldn't wear their armor, and it was the same for the accessories.

Due to that, acquiring weapons from the enemies and retrieving weapons of allies was an important thing.

'This is a killing.'

Traces of the Great War. A part of the battlefield that fell into a crack of the world, as if testifying how fierce the battle was.

Thanks to that, this place wasn't organized. It had stayed that way for close to one hundred years.

Amazingly enough, there were no corpses of the warriors of Valhalla nor the giants, monsters, etc. Because of that, Tae Ho could retrieve the weapons while feeling more at ease.

'I just shouldn't take the white-named weapons.'

There was also a capacity in Unnir. Even when excluding the white letters, which meant that it was a normal equipment, blue-colored words were just as numerous and at times, golden letters could be seen, which were more superior.

‘The brighter the color is, the better the equipment.’

There was a difference among rare equipment, just like there was an up and down in the cold water. Tae Ho put on a smile and then placed the weapons on the floor inside of Unnir.

“A bow, a shield, and armor.”

Tae Ho wasn’t picky, regardless of the type of equipment. Siri looked at what Tae Ho was doing with a dumbfounded expression and laughed hopelessly.

“Tae Ho, isn’t it a bit too much to take the broken weapons?”

It was an obvious question, as she didn’t know about the ‘Sword of the Warrior’.

“It’s fine. They all have their uses.”

Tae Ho shook his head with a merry expression and then took up a broken bow.

‘This belongs to Ullr’s legion.’

Maybe it was because the eyes of the dragon had become stronger or starting from the rare-ranked equipment, they all seemed to have their history that their respective legion was marked in it.

‘The colors of each legion are showing.’

In the case of Odin’s legion, there were many common weapons like swords and axes, but blunt weapons like hammers appeared in the case of Thor’s legion and firing weapons could be seen in Ullr’s legion.

Shields for Heimdal’s legion, handcuffs for Tir’s legion and armor for Freyr’s legion. Tae Ho took all those things and opened his eyes widely. It wasn’t only because he saw chronicle-ranked equipment, which was colored in gold, that was rarer than the rare rank.

‘Wow, there is also the legion of Freyja.’

She was one of the few Gods Tae Ho knew about in Norse mythology.

The Goddess of love and beauty and the one that was compared to Aphrodite in the Greek mythology.

‘Well, there’s also Idun’s legion here.’

It would be weirder than a legion of a Goddess even Tae Ho knew about to not exist.

[Freyja’s legions’ artifact]

[Belt of the Wise Man]

[Anecdote: The warrior that wears this belt won’t get exhausted, even after fighting for ten days and nights.]

It seemed like it was a magical equipment that increased your health and stamina.

‘It’s fun that the anecdote shows instead of the stats.’

Of course, you had to first equip the equipment to know of its abilities, but it felt good because it seemed as if it was connected to the saga.

As Tae Ho was looking at the Belt of the Wise Man, Siri approached and asked, “Tae Ho, what’s wrong?”

Tae Ho equipped himself with the belt and answered after he confirmed it.

“I was surprised that Freyja-nim had a legion. She really is the Goddess of beauty, right?”

Siri tilted her head at Tae Ho’s question and then realized that he was from another world and started to explain in earnest.

“It’s true that Freyja is the Goddess of love and beauty, but at the same time, she’s the Goddess of magic and war. Her position in Valhalla is also strong, to the point that she has a huge army, comparable to Odin’s legion.

It was something Tae Ho didn't know well, but Freyja was a precious existence for Valhalla. She was one of the three Gods that had created the rune growth system, that could be said to be the core of the warriors of Valhalla.

“In addition, Freyja-nim has transcended the legions and is the one that administers the Valkyries. She's a really strong and beautiful Goddess.”

The reason the Valkyries could lead strong and valiant warriors to Valhalla was because they had learned Freyja's magic.

And actually, Freyja was also the Goddess of disputes. War was needed to secure warriors of good quality in Valhalla. Making the Kings of Midgard of the mortal world fight endlessly was the task she had received from Odin.

‘It really is the Norse mythology. So the Goddess of beauty also fights.’

He thought that she was really Valhalla-like and on another hand, thought of Idun.

‘Could Idun-nim also be a fighter?’

He couldn't imagine that sight at all but he thought that it would be possible. Because Heda and Rasgrid were both outstanding beauties and at the same time, strong warriors.

Tae Ho imagined Idun holding a sword and a shield and then checked Siri up and down.

“You also took quite a lot.”

Siri dodged his eyes, as if she was embarrassed and answered.

“We can't leave the equipment of the Great Warriors alone like this.”

“You thought well. When you loot an item, it's important to do it with a relaxed heart.”

It was important to just see the item as it was without looking at

who had used this item or if you had any conscience.

“First of all, Tae Ho, are you really planning on going like that?”

Siri also checked Tae Ho up and down and said with warm eyes. That was because Tae Ho’s current fashion was really serious.

There was no way there would be something like harmony when he was wearing equipment from several legions that each had their own colors. It wasn’t only flashy, it might have been appropriate to say that he looked like a clown.

However, Tae Ho held his head high.

“I have to save space in the pocket. And also, the utility is more important than the looks. You shouldn’t also act like that and start wearing other things. Only then will we be able to return safely and you will be able to go to Anaheim with Rolph.”

“Mm.”

Siri couldn’t refute, as those were right words, and then she started to equip the items she had in her hand rather slowly.

Tae Ho saw that Siri was becoming a mess in real time and then turned his eyes to his surroundings again. It seemed like looting earnestly had paid its fruits, because he couldn’t see almost any blue letters.

‘Are unique and epic ranked items really that rare?’

It was an obvious thing, but he also felt a bit disappointed. But it was then that it happened.

Brr.

The Unknown sword piece started to vibrate. It was vague, but it seemed like it was pointing in a certain direction.

As Tae Ho approached that direction, the vibration became stronger and as a test, he went in a different direction and the vibration became weaker.

A smile appeared on Tae Ho's face. He moved, following the strength of the vibration and then discovered rainbow-colored letters shining brightly.

[Fragment of an unknown equipment]

It was a cylinder shaped item, that had its top and bottom sliced off. According to each person, it could be a hilt or the handle of a shield.. It was that hard to be certain of its identity.

“Tae Ho? Do you have something?”

Siri, who had become as much of a clown as Tae Ho, approached him hurriedly. Tae Ho extended the fragment of the equipment.

“The Unknown sword piece is reacting...but it doesn't seem to be a part of this sword.”

If it were, it wouldn't have been a hilt, but a blade.

Siri just looked at the fragment and opened her eyes sharply.

“Perhaps it may have the same origin.”

“Origin?”

“Yeah, origin.”

Siri raised her head again and explained after smacking her lips a few times.

“Tae Ho, I don't know if you have heard of this, but among Asgard and the nine planets, one of them has already been destroyed.”

“Yes, I heard that from Heda.”

Because the planet that was at the forefront got destroyed, Asgard, Olympus and the temple became the front lines.

Siri nodded once and continued speaking.

“The survivors of the destroyed planet fought along with us, warriors of Valhalla, in the Great War. Perhaps, those pieces may be from the destroyed planet and not from Asgard.”

A weapon of another planet, not Asgard.

That was an understandable story. Because Heda and Ragna and even Idun weren't certain of the origins of the Unknown sword piece. It made sense if it really was from another world.

“But of course, these are just possibilities. Perhaps, they may be an equipment that was used in the same legion. Or the owner of the piece of sword told you that the fragment was important.”

It was a thorough attitude that was so like Siri.

‘Let's take it for now.’

There would be no change on the part that he would take it. Tae Ho put in the fragments of equipment in the now full Unnir and then raised his head and opened his eyes sharply.

“Tae Ho?”

“It seems like the time limit has come. The flow of the magic power is becoming rougher.”

Although this was a world where earth and sky were mixed and day and night were also mixed, Tae Ho could know instinctively. The night was approaching on the trace of the Great War. Just like he had told Siri, the flow was becoming rougher, so they didn't have the leisure to spend more time there.

“Let's hurry.”

They had already taken the equipment they needed. Tae Ho and Siri ran quickly, following the flow of the magic power.

After they climbed the hill they had regained their consciousness at, they saw a valley that was carved widely, and magic power was being concentrated at one point of the valley.

A cold, heavy metal was in the middle of that flow. When it was seen from far away, at first glance it seemed like a sword.

[Fragment of Garmr's Soul]

White gold-colored words, that indicated it was a unique item.

There was a corpse of a huge beast near its surroundings.

“Fragment of Garmr’s Soul.”

As Tae Ho started to read it loudly, Siri flinched. Although you could find the name Garmr in several places, it was because there was the corpse of a huge beast in their surroundings.

“Hell Keeper Garmr?”

The watchdog that guarded Gnipahellir, the entrance of Niflheim.

It was when Tae Ho turned to look at Siri as if asking what that was, the world changed. Tae Ho and even Siri could feel it. Night came at the trace of the Great War. The flow of magic power that was gathered on top of Garmr’s fragment started to swirl.

A chill surged up from the ground. The blue wind that came from who knows where became one with the vortex, and the smoke gathered on top of Garmr’s fragment started to take shape.

It was a big and bad-looking black dog that was so big, it could gulp down a person with one bite. Its chest, which was dyed red because of the blood, was memorable.

Garmr, which had a transparent form, looked at the sky and roared. And then smoke surged up from several places and just as with Garmr, they started to take shape.

The traces of the Great War that had become separated from the world.

Because of that, the deceased ones couldn’t return to the place they had to. Even though close to a hundred years had passed, they were still stuck in this land.

As if it detected the body temperature of live people, Garmr turned to look at Siri and Tae Ho. The creatures that had been recreated in the ground did the same.. They exchanged gazes for a

really short moment and then it started without any kind of signal. The monsters began to charge towards Tae Ho and Siri.

There were a lot of them. It would be good to describe them as a red wave. Siri groaned and took out her weapon, and Tae Ho pulled Siri towards his side. He grabbed Siri, who was flustered and had lost her balance, and then looked to someplace and whispered lowly.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

The whisper, which was mixed with exclamation, calmed Siri down. And then she could know. She cheered while in Tae Ho’s embrace.

“Valhalla!”

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

A cheer that was like a storm was heard from behind them. A green wave formed by letters that were as big as the red wave surged like a hail and passed by Siri and Tae Ho.

They also weren’t able to return.

And even though they couldn’t return, they hadn’t changed.

Warriors of Valhalla.

The heroes of the Great War!

They recognized their juniors, Tae Ho and Siri. They laughed pleasantly and charged and then clashed against the monsters that were glaring at the two people.

Siri, who had become excited and was blushing, took out her weapon as if wanting to fight with her seniors, but this time also Tae Ho held her back. Siri glared, as if asking why now, and Tae Ho pointed at the Hell Keeper Garmr and said, “We have to catch the boss.”

The fight between the warriors and the monsters was a dogfight. Then there was something their side had to do.

Siri realized what Tae Ho's eyes were saying and checked the equipment she was wearing and made a chant.

“Draco.”

[Saga: The One That Can Handle Dragons]

Tae Ho and Siri became one once more. The two of them passed over the battlefield and charged towards the Hell Keeper Garmr.

< Episode 13 – Traces of the Great War (2) > End

Episode 13/Chapter 3: Traces of the Great War (3)

[Fragment of soul]

[Hell keeper Garmr]

The words that were red as blood were clear. Although he couldn't see any special weaknesses, he could see special keywords that seemed to be its attribute.

[Reflective]

[Defensive]

Siri fluttered her wings. She increased the height a bit more, and at that moment she staggered.

“Captain Siri?!”

Siri steadied her body reflexively instead of answering. It was because the moment she reached a certain height, the flow of the magic power was impending her flight.

Garmr just glared at Siri and Tae Ho as if reflecting its defensive characteristic. Tae Ho used the ‘one that handles dragons’ to support Siri the most he could, but even the strength of the saga didn't work properly.

In the end Siri landed on land. However it wasn't a perfect one. It was almost like crashing.

And then Tae Ho realized why his saga didn't work properly. Because the thing that crashed on land wasn't a big wolf that had a pair of wings, but Siri's original appearance.

Tae Ho ended up sitting on top of Siri so he stood up hurriedly and helped her get up. Siri let out a groan and breathed.

“It seems like flying will be impossible.”

You wouldn't know if you could hover like a helicopter, but it

seemed like it would be impossible to keep flying in place even with the assistance of the saga. In addition, the flow of magic power that covered the sky wasn't normal. It was like the magic in the dragon wing coat was dispelled the moment it touched it. They could suffer more by sloppily trying to fly.

Tae Ho nodded still and then grasped the distance between them and Garmr. Siri also raised her crossbow with a relieved face.

Garmr put on an alert stance just like a guard dog and glared at the both of them. Although it was big, as its look was that of a dog, it seemed like they just had to be careful of its teeth and claws.

“I’m going.”

The one that spoke first was Siri. She charged forward and fired arrows as if pouring them.

[Saga: The arrows of a witch never misses its target]

The arrows that were flying to a different place changed their trajectory and aimed for Garmr's eyes.

The arrows hit. However Siri, that was an experienced hunter, could know at that moment. She did hit it but that was all. Siri's arrow pierced through Garmr's body and stuck on the ground.

Reflection.

Garmr charged. Fire spread out from its big mouth.

Chwaaak!

The fire sweeping through the land was strong no matter who saw it. Siri rolled on the ground and dodged it, and then fired some more arrows but the result remained the same. Garmr's attack worked on them, but their attack didn't work on it.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri yelled and he understood. He entered Garmr's reach in an instant by charging with the 'charge of the warrior'. And then he swung the Executioner's sword!

Chpak!

The sword that had the power of a God slashed Garmr's leg. Garmr, that got surprised, fell back and a wound that seemed like it was carved appeared in its right leg.

Just like they expected the power of a God worked. However Garmr was big. In addition, as it started to be more vigilant, these easy attacks wouldn't work anymore.

"Tae Ho!"

Siri called Tae Ho again. She transformed into a wolf by using the 'wolf witch' and then got next to Tae Ho in an instant and glanced him telling him to get on.

Let's do the Lance Charge.

Her eyes were clear but Tae Ho flinched and then shook his head. He glared at Garmr and said.

"Captain Siri, buy me some time."

Siri got flustered but she didn't ask back. She charged towards Garmr, that was enraged because it was wounded and it started to breathe out fire. Tae Ho and Siri scattered to different directions and dodged the fire.

Siri glared at Garmr instead of looking back at Tae Ho. She remembered that the Tae Ho he knew wasn't someone that said useless words in a battle and then raised her claws. If it was the wolf witch that had a cursed power, she would be able to damage it.

"Roar!"

Siri let out a big roar and charged. Although she wasn't even a quarter the size of Garmr, she was faster than it. She revealed her fangs towards Garmr and then bit it in its neck.

The attack worked as expected. However its leather was too thick. Garmr moved its body trying to shake off Siri, and Siri used

all her strength to hold on.

‘Is it not ready!’

Siri yelled inwardly. However Tae Ho was looking at a weird place instead of answering or supporting her. It was the place Garmr had appeared for the first time.

[Garmr’s soul fragment]

A claw like item that was colored in white gold.

The moment Tae Ho touched that something that was stuck in the ground, Garmr raised its head abruptly.

“Kwooong!”

Garmr let out a roar and turned its body to Tae Ho’s direction. Although the roar made you shiver, Tae Ho smirked at that moment. He was delighted that his expectations were correct and grabbed the fragment of Garmr’s soul, that was as big as a stake, with his two hands. Although he felt a nasty spirit attack him, he endured it with the power of a God.

Garmr finally shook Siri off. However, Siri didn’t strengthlessly roll on the ground. As soon as she hit the ground, she stood up immediately and slammed Garmr’s side. Garmr stumbled again and Tae Ho pulled out the fragment of Garmr’s soul with all his strength.

Bang!

A loud sound burst out. However it wasn’t an explosion. It was the sound made when the seal broke up.

Garmr had thrown its body to try to bite Tae Ho even when stumbling, but it crashed to the ground while having its mouth open. Contrary to when it appeared, its body started to scatter as smoke.

Tae Ho, that was about to get bit, let out a sigh of relief and raised his head. The flow of magic power that was swirling in the sky was

getting sucked in the hole that had the fragment of soul stuck in it.

Bang!

It was the second loud sound. Tae Ho rolled his body to dodge the flow and then looked at the sky while holding on to the fragment of soul. Garmr's soul, that was almost dissipated, entered the soul fragment and a big space door appeared over the hole in the ground.

The passage that led outside.

The Unknown sword piece vibrated. Siri approached while breathing roughly and said with the face of a wolf.

“Get on, Tae Ho.”

As they would get out at once.

Tae Ho listened to Siri this time. He lowered his body after getting on Siri and she took in a breath and looked behind her. Although it wasn't as extreme as Garmr, the warriors of Valhalla were also facing a change.

Siri put down the lingering attachment and looked at the front again. She felt Tae Ho's weight and then charged forward. She jumped to beyond the black space door.

Pak!

The world changed with a strong light.

The moment they got out of the door, Siri got sat on by Tae Ho once again but it wasn't the time to complain about those things.

Tae Ho stood up immediately and then raised his weapon as if trying to protect Siri. There was an unfamiliar scenery and an unexpected situation in front of them.

A valley that you could call the surface.

Rasgrid was still fighting against the fire giant. Warriors of Valhalla were fighting at their surrounding, and burning boulders

were falling down the sky.

The time they had spent inside wasn't short. They were sure at least 1 hour had passed. However it didn't seem to be the case outside. At most a few minutes. The proof for that was that the reinforcements from Valhalla still hadn't arrived.

And right at that moment. Everyone that were on the battlefield turned to look at Tae Ho and Siri. It was because of the aftershock originated when the space door opened.

Most of them simply got surprised. However it was different for the fire giant. It looked at Garmr's soul fragment that was in Tae Ho's arm and then let out a roar and tried to charge towards him.

But Rasgrid quickly swung her sword at that giant. And then, a big wall of wind blocked the giant's path and Rasgrid glanced at Tae Ho and Siri as if trying to find a reason.

And Tae Ho could instinctively know. That Garmr's soul fragment was stuck in the real trace of the Great War and not the surface of the world.

It was certainly the fragment the giants and the Mollo family were looking for.

The giant, that was stopped by Rasgrid, ordered with an angered voice. The monsters that were scattered in the battlefield ignored the enemies in front of them and started to charge towards Siri and Tae Ho.

“Protect warrior Tae Ho!”

Rasgrid also yelled. The warriors of Odin's and Ullr's legion tried to stop the monsters somehow, but they were much more numerous. Siri, that had become empty handed for having transformed into a wolf, adjusted the dragon wing coat and extended her hand towards Tae Ho. She was asking for anything that could be used as a weapon.

However Tae Ho just pulled Siri into his embrace instead of

taking out a weapon from Unnir. And then shrunk down while pressing Siri's head down. They looked like they wanted to endure the wave that was about to come.

And then Siri realized. Compared to the soul of the monsters that perished in the trace of the Great War, 'They' had a place to return to.

Valhalla.

The paradise for the exalted warriors!

A storm surged up. The souls of the warriors of Valhalla started to come out of the space door that Tae Ho and Siri used to get out. They passed the both of them in an instant and started to charge towards the monsters like a raging billow.

The monsters got bewildered. And it was the same for the warriors of Ullr's and Odin's legion.

However there was a difference between the two. The warriors of Valhalla recognized the heroes of the past in an instant just like Tae Ho and Siri had done so. They cheered from the bottom of their hearts and welcomed them.

"Valhalla!"

Siri pressed down her emotions and breathed roughly. However Tae Ho bit his lips. It was because he had grasped the difference from outside and inside.

The warriors of Valhalla that lost their lives had to return to Valhalla. And becoming a metal warrior in that place was their task.

The warriors of Valhalla called some souls. The warriors of the Great War couldn't fight against the monsters like they did inside the door.

In addition, the shape of the warriors that was already dim started to become dimmer. Their souls started to scatter like

smoke.

Tae Ho gritted his teeth and put on a fighting stance. Siri also got out of Tae Ho's embrace and extended her hand again.

But it was at that moment.

“Oh Valhalla! Odin, the father of the sky!”

One of the warriors of the Great War yelled. He hit his chest as if roaring towards the sky.

“Allow us for one last fight! Grant us the glory to protect Asgard and the nine planets!”

The flow of time was different inside the door. Perhaps, they may have lived close to a hundred years in a dead but not dead state.

But they were still the same. They didn't change even a little bit. They haven't even gotten corrupt.

The warriors of Valhalla.

The great warriors that protected Asgard and the nine planets!

“Valkyrie Rasgrid allows you!”

Rasgrid yelled. She glared at the burning giant and raised her sword high. She declared by exercising the right given by Odin and Freyja.

“I will lead the souls of the warriors myself! Warriors of Valhalla! Fight! For Asgard and the nine planets!”

The warriors requested and the Valkyrie granted permission. She fulfilled their wishes.

Light shone on the warriors of the Great War. They, that had gotten permission from Valhalla, regained their original appearance for a moment. Their bodies that were becoming dim became clear, and their stories that were stagnated started to continue.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

The warrior that asked for permission said in a mumbling voice. And followed by him, the warriors of Valhalla yelled altogether.

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

The battle resumed. Burning boulders still fell down the sky, and additional forces from the monsters side fell down but it was meaningless. The valiant warriors of Valhalla swepted the monsters like a wave and they literally got swept up.

Siri let out an exclamation. It was a really amazing scene. Her heart started racing by its own and her face became flushed, and her breath also became rougher.

She had to fight with them. She had to raise the glory of her superiors by fighting alongside them.

However Tae Ho grabbed her again. Siri flinched and turned to look at Tae Ho and he laughed and said.

“We have to catch the boss again.”

Tae Ho pointed at Rasgrid and the burning giants with his eyes. Siri put on a teary face but then gave up. She chanted with a bit of resentment.

“Draco!”

[Saga: The one that handles dragons]

Tae Ho and Siri became one once more time while feeling a vague deja vu. She surged up angrier than ever.

< Episode 13 – Traces of the Great War (3) > End

Episode 14/Chapter 1: Garmr's soul fragment (1)

Tae Ho and Siri were actually in a really tired state. It was because they had already fought two fierce battles, even though each didn't last too long.

Siri was the one that was especially exhausted. Even though she was supported by the sagas, the flight Tae Ho requested her to do was of a really high level. In addition, it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that she had fought Garmr alone.

The moment Tae Ho activated the 'One That Handles Dragons' he realized that Siri's exhaustion was quite large. Perhaps Siri's teary face, which wasn't like her, was already proof of that.

"Hang on a little bit more, Captain Siri."

Tae Ho lowered his posture after whispering to her and then transmitted his strategy.

In the first place, Tae Ho wasn't planning on intervening against Rasgrid's fight against the fire giant because they were on a different level. The two of them weren't beings that Tae Ho could currently face.

"Listen well, our objective isn't dealing damage. It's to take the aggro."

They would let Rasgrid do all the attacking. Their task was to not let the fire giant defend or dodge properly, or to keep disturbing it.

Instead of asking anymore, Siri just entrusted her body to Tae Ho's saga. Tae Ho faced the giant and Rasgrid, who were far away, flew up and instead of putting away Garmr's soul fragment inside of Unnir, he held it with his left arm.

The thing the fire giant was looking for was Garmr's soul fragment. Then what would happen if he kept showing it to the

giant? It would be just like a fisherman shaking the bait.

‘Also...’

He would attack the top of that giant. It wasn’t important if he could actually damage it. It would be worth it if he could keep getting on its nerves.

Siri rode in the wind. She drew a big circle around the fire giant and Rasgrid and Tae Ho kept firing a beginner spear made through the ‘Warrior’s Sword’.

Siri didn’t even have to use her saga. Their target was a seven meter tall giant, so there was no need to aim. It would get on its nerves even if it grazed it!

“Kuaak!”

And as expected, the giant started to get frustrated. Even though it was facing Rasgrid, it turned its head or its eyes and checked Tae Ho’s location. In addition, it even threw some attacks at him.

“Good!” Tae Ho yelled in joy and Rasgrid attacked the opening that was made. Siri flew over a fireball and said with warm eyes, “How wicked.”

“Sorry?”

Siri didn’t speak again and Tae Ho aimed at the back of the giant. The giant, which had allowed some attacks from Rasgrid, seemed to have decided to ignore Tae Ho’s attacks, since it didn’t even turn back.

It wasn’t a bad response, because the beginner spears Tae Ho threw towards the giant were so weak they couldn’t even leave a scratch on it.

However, this was also what Tae Ho wanted. And the reason Siri saved her saga was for this moment.

[Saga: Sword of the Warrior]

The thing he made was a Heavy Lance.

[Saga: The Arrows of a Witch Never Miss Their Target]

The Heavy Lance, which was empowered by the power of a God, drew a sharp trajectory. The fire giant was surprised and turned its body but it was already too late. The Heavy Lance struck its ear, and the giant let out a pained roar.

Right then, the harpies charged towards Tae Ho. Maybe it was because Siri had used her saga that she stumbled for a moment, but she passed through the harpies with the help of the ‘Charge of the Warrior’. She took a big turn and after turning their heads they saw Rasgrid, who was preparing her final attack to deal with the giant that had stumbled because of the blow in its ear.

“Sword That Splits the Sky!”

It was just like the name implied. At Rasgrid’s yell, a white aura started to surge towards the sky. It became a sword, like its name, and cut the earth in two.

The head of the giant was cut in two. Although it wasn’t split, that was enough. Fire surged up and the body of the giant was burnt in an instant and fell down like a burnt tree.

Boooooooooom—

A sound similar to a landslide was heard. Rasgrid turned to look at Tae Ho and he knew instinctively.

Rasgrid smiled. Although he couldn’t see well because she was far away, he knew.

The battle continued. Although new giants didn’t appear, the number of boulders falling from the sky increased. It seemed as if they wanted to overturn the situation through sheer numbers.

However, Valhalla didn’t stay still. Tae Ho just looked into the distance while fixing his back, instead of jumping into the battlefield.

And then it started to pour down. The killer thing. The Rain of

Steel that didn't lose to the flaming boulders!

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Warriors of Valhalla started to emerge from the metal structures when they landed on the ground, and the cheers of the warriors covered the battlefield.

“Odin!”

“Tir!”

Strategies didn't work anymore. It seemed like the giants also realized that, since that no more flaming boulders fell from the sky. Tae Ho landed in a safe place far away from the battlefield with Siri and said, “Captain Siri, we can rest now, right?”

Siri just chanted instead of replying, as she was as tired as she could be.

&

The battle had ended. Corpses of monsters filled the battlefield. It was a complete victory.

However, the warriors of Valhalla didn't put their weapons back. Each of them was looking at the center of the battlefield while holding their weapons.

It was about one hundred warriors.

Warriors of the Great War were standing there. They had lost their light and were dimming again as if the promised time with Valhalla was up, but it was different for everyone else on the battlefield. The warriors of the Great War were all starting to shine.

“Oh Valkyrie, lead our souls to Valhalla. We will go to Odin and boast about today's fight.” The warrior at the front said. Rasgrid erased her icy expression and smiled gently.

“Exalted warriors, I will make a promise that won't change for eternity. Valhalla will always welcome you.”

Rasgrid raised her sword. And then Rasgrid's appearance, that was wearing armor, changed. Rasgrid swung her sword once more while wearing a dress.

A path of light opened up. It was a beautiful rainbow path that connected the ground to the sky.

“Bifrost...”

Originally the stairs that connected the mortal world Midgard with the world of Gods, Asgard.

The warrior that was looking still at the stair of light put on a nice smile and then raised his voice and yelled, “Warriors of Valhalla! Our battle today will remain in history! And remember! Let's meet again! On a new battlefield!”

“On a new battlefield!”

“On a new battlefield!” The warriors of the Great War yelled, and the warriors of Valhalla took deep breaths. They raised their swords and cheered for the warriors that were leaving.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.” The warrior looked at Rasgrid and said for the last time and then placed his foot on the stair of light. All of the warriors of the Great War got onto the rainbow stair.

And Rasgrid, who was looking at them, turned her head. She called Tae Ho and Siri with a gesture of her eyes.

“You have done well. The merits you have accomplished are really big.”

The two of them had performed better than she had expected. It would be glad to just tie its feet, but to have defeated it!

She still needed to investigate the flow that had occurred afterward, but she knew instinctively that the ones that had made the flow were the two people in front of her.

“Forgive me for having to leave early because I have to lead the

warriors. I will return first and prepare a reward according to your merit,” Rasgrid glanced at the stair of light and said. It seemed like she also had to leave along with the warriors.

“Thank you. And also here... We used it well.”

Tae Ho gave her the dragon wing clothes, which was well folded. Although he really wanted that item, it was correct to give it back as he had borrowed it from her.

Rasgrid smiled vaguely after receiving the wing coat and then turned to look at Siri and said, “You have done well, Siri. Wasn’t Tae Ho’s flight really violent?”

At the sympathetic words, Siri grabbed her aching back and nodded. However, Siri regained her usual serious expression and hit her chest formally and said, “I just did my best as a warrior of Valhalla.”

Rasgrid faced Siri, who seemed to have shining eyes and then looked at Tae Ho.

“Tae Ho, Reginleif, and Gandur will come soon. Leave the remaining tasks to the two of them.”

Although she didn’t say anything else he seemed to know what she meant. She would probably be saying to give them Garmr’s soul fragment, which was the objective of the giants.

“I understand.”

“Right. The two of you have done really well.”

The warriors of the Great War were already on the shining stairs. Rasgrid placed her lips on Tae Ho’s and Siri’s forehead in turn.

“Let Odin’s blessing be with you.”

Rasgrid’s blessing.

She smiled and turned back and then got on the shining stairs. She went to Valhalla while leading the warriors.

“How beautiful.” Siri said in a low voice, because going to Valhalla while holding the hands of a Valkyrie was the dream of the warriors. Although it was something all the warriors had gone through once, it didn’t mean that the significance disappeared. Not only Siri, but the warriors of Valhalla looked at the leaving warriors with feelings of reverence.

‘It is cool indeed.’

Although Tae Ho had come to Valhalla with different feelings from the warriors, he could only admit the scene in front of him was meaningful. He felt like a part of him was choking.

And how much time had passed? It was then that Rasgrid and the warriors reached a high place and the path of light disappeared.

“Warrior Tae Ho, Warrior Siri.”

A familiar voice was heard from the sky. They looked up and saw Valkyrie Reginleif and Gandur. Transforming into a beautiful lady from a swan was a really mystical scene.

Reginleif looked at Siri and Tae Ho gallantly like always and then frowned.

“The two of you are really exhausted. I’m sorry but I can’t allow you to rest yet. Can you tell me what happened briefly?”

Siri glanced at Tae Ho and then he started to tell the things that happened in the trace of the Great War. Reginleif, who had listened to everything, carefully put the fragment of Garmr’s soul in a box she took out from the air.

“The merits of the two of you are indeed really big. Rest for now. Let’s listen to the details at a later time.”

Reginleif spoke rather quickly and put back the chest in the air again and then placed her lips on them both, just like Rasgrid had done.

“Let Tir’s blessing be with you.”

They felt like they were more comfortable in mind and body. Siri trembled as if she enjoyed the blessing and closed her eyes and Tae Ho looked at Gandur, who was next to Reginleif.

“What?”

“Ah, I wondered if Gandur wouldn’t bless us.”

Although it wasn’t that he wanted to receive a kiss from Gandur, but not receiving was also a bit strange.

‘Collecting... that’s not it.’

No, or perhaps it was?

Gandur smirked at Tae Ho’s words and then shook her head.

“The greed of humans have no end. But it is indeed right to do it.”

Gandur placed her lips on Siri’s forehead, which was closer to her, and then approached Tae Ho. As Tae Ho closed his eyes while expecting the blessing, Gandur glanced sideways and then placed her lips on Tae Ho’s cheeks.

“Let Ullr’s blessing be with you.”

Although it wasn’t on his lips, Tae Ho was surprised because it was an unexpected place. Gandur laughed while looking at Tae Ho and then turned around and then flew away after they transformed into swans.

Was it only Gandur’s joke?

Tae Ho touched his cheeks unconsciously and looked at the swans and Siri, who had seen that, said in a low voice, “So, that was the reason?”

A joyful voice.

Tae Ho flinched and looked sideways and then he realized why Gandur had done that.

“Hi again?”

Although it was similar to what he heard usually, the tone was a bit different.

Tae Ho made eye contact with Heda, who was putting on a smile that seemed fake, and then hurriedly lowered his hand from his cheek.

&

The giant of Strength, Harad was caught in an awful mood.

It wasn't because the attack had failed. Because he had taken that into account in the first place. And spreading seeds of fire that would become the omen of a big fight was also his objective.

But the problem lay in another place.

The giant of Night, Avalt. He didn't really think that there would be a seed there, as Avalt had just stepped down from the place.

But there was actually a seed there. In addition, the way it had appeared was close to being the worst.

But the biggest problem was that Valhalla had realized that because of the stupid giant of Fire.

The giants were aiming for Garmr's soul fragment.

Valhalla wasn't a powerless foe. They may have already realized what they were trying to do after gathering the fragments of Garmr's soul.

It was a mistake he hadn't even thought of. He couldn't even imagine that things would take a turn for the worse like this.

But that mistake wasn't the only reason that put Harad, the giant of Strength, in a foul mood.

Utgard Loki.

The magician King didn't say anything about this mistake. He didn't even punish him or say any words.

And that truth put Harad in a terrible pain.

Would he be thinking that he wasn't even worthy of being punished? Was he already outside of his sight? No, perhaps this case by itself wasn't important at all, because it was merely a small battle.

Harad was anxious. And the giant of the Night, Avalt, looked at Harad from the side and felt a strange feeling.

What was the reason?

Was it because he knew that not punishing him would harass him more?

The other giants thought like that. But Avalt was different. He thought differently.

‘Perhaps.’

The magician King would have already foreseen this situation. Harad making a mistake would have been what the magician King had wanted.

“It turned out like the King wanted.”

Even though Avalt's space was the darkness, a small voice passed his ears as if it was whispering. The giant of the Night didn't turn his eyes to check the owner of the voice. It was obvious that the snake-like voice came from Asgard's giant King, Loki.

What the King wanted.

What he was seeking.

The giant of the Night ended his thoughts and covered himself with a denser darkness.

He didn't believe in Loki. However, he agreed that it had turned out just like the King had wanted.

So he would throw away his delusions and perform his duty. Because he was one of the five fingers of the magician King. Accomplishing what the King wanted was also what Avalt himself wanted.

He would wait for Asgard's reaction and then wait for the next order of the magician King.

Avallt, the giant of Night, decided. He closed his eyes slowly, as if being closed in darkness.

&

"Hm, so that happened. You received blessings from Rasgrid, Reginleif and also Gandur." Heda stood in between a Black Flash and nodded and said without any emotions.

Tae Ho, who was lying on a Black Flash, stiffened. Even if that wasn't the case, the Black Flash was really like a coffin.

Siri, who had lain down on the Black Flash that was next to him, laughed. It seemed like she was really enjoying the situation.

Heda looked at Tae Ho. He flinched reflexively and Heda laughed once more, as if she couldn't endure it.

"I'm joking. Joking."

Because she already knew why Gandur had done that in the first place.

Heda fixed the mattress of Tae Ho and continued, saying, "Keep resting for now. Siri, you are also exhausted. Do you know how many times you used your saga?"

The two people had really used their sagas to their limit. Although Tae Ho could somehow endure it because he invested quite a lot of runes on his concentration, it wouldn't be weird for Siri to collapse at any moment. It wasn't for nothing that Heda had made the two of them lie down on the Black Flash.

"Siri, thank you very much."

"Don't mention it."

Siri and Heda exchanged smiles and then Heda spoke again.

"There are a lot of people to take care of, so you should sleep."

Let's speak about the remaining things at a later time.”

Heda stopped speaking there and then lowered her posture after approaching Tae Ho. Tae Ho just waited for Heda, as he was already accustomed to her blessing.

“Let Idun's blessing be with you.”

Her voice trembled more than usual.

Tae Ho opened his eyes quickly but Siri had already turned away. He saw that she was a little bit embarrassed.

“Let Idun's blessing be with you.”

Heda also blessed Siri and then stood up. Tae Ho just closed his eyes instead of trying to see her face. Maybe it was because of her blessing that he fell asleep in an instant.

And that was the reason why Tae Ho couldn't feel it.

Inside of Unnir, the fragment of the unknown weapon was emitting a faint light.

< Episode 14 – Garmr's soul fragment (1) > End

Episode 14/Chapter 2: Garmr's soul fragment (2)

When he got a hold of himself he was already in Valhalla, and on top of that in the residence of Idun's legion. It was because they had prioritized some warriors including Tae Ho even though the clearing of the battlefield still hadn't ended.

"Siri also returned to rest. Was it Rolph? That friend stayed behind. The damages the dark fairies suffered were large, and it's also important to investigate the trace of the Great War that was discovered."

Maybe it was because she has been next to him until now or it was a coincidence that Heda, that was next to Tae Ho's headrest, said.

Tae Ho blinked a few times as if chasing away the sleepiness and asked again.

"What about the Valkyries?"

"The investigation is proceeding with Rasgrid commanding them. Reginleif took Garmr's soul fragment that you discovered to the Gods and there has been no notice since then, and Gandur returned first to lead the warriors of Ullr's legion."

The eyes of Heda became a bit sharp. Because what he was asking was related to the Valkyries.

Tae Ho lightly ignored her eyes and then rose up.

"Heda, the things the Giants are aiming for are certainly Garmr's soul fragment, right? When I fought against it, the monster was a really big dog."

After he told her what happened in the trace of the Great War briefly Heda nodded.

"That's right. Garmr is a big dog that guards the entrance to hell.

I was told that it died in the Great War..... It seems like those fragments are scattered everywhere. Tae Ho, what you faced against should probably be a fragment of its soul.”

“The original thing should have been incredible.”

“It’s the keeper of hell, the place that everything and everyone go to. It’s a really strong and scary monster.”

Heda’s eyes looked at a distant place. It seemed like she was thinking about Garmr that was in one piece.

However, she seemed to have shaken off those thoughts that she turned to look at Tae Ho and said.

“It will soon be revealed what the Giants tried to do with the fragments. Although it’s a bit irresponsible to say this, let’s leave it to the higher-ups. I will tell you when the results are up.”

“Yes, that will be good.”

He was merely curious as to why the giants aimed for this item and what they wanted to do. He would be satisfied just by listening to the results.

Heda stood up with a nice mood as Tae Ho agreed and then pointed at a basin with warm water that was on the table.

“Wash yourself and get out. After you regain your strengths by eating you have to go meet Idun-nim.”

They would meet Idun as they had returned to the residence.

A smile appeared on Tae Ho’s face as if it was obvious.

“It seems like you like it that you are meeting Idun-nim?”

“Of course.”

It wasn’t simply because he was going to meet a Goddess. Because every time he met her she gave him something. And he especially knew what she was going to give him this time.

“I have to get the flying horse wing coat which she promised last

time. It would suit well, right?”

Of course, the one wearing it and the one suiting it wasn't Tae Ho.

“I wonder.”

Heda smiled as if Tae Ho's gaze wouldn't work on her and left the room first.

&

“My warrior Tae Ho, you returned safely.”

“It's thanks to Idun-nim's blessing.”

Tae Ho kneeled and expressed his manners. Idun, that was standing below an apple tree, looked down at Tae Ho with warm eyes.

“You have raised big merits this time too. I have certainly heard that the warriors of Valhalla and you called my name.”

It seemed like it was true as her voice was a bit excited. Thanks to that, the divine feeling he felt when he first saw her was cut by it but he didn't dislike it. He rather liked it because she felt closer.

“Now, my warrior Tae Ho. I will now reward you as promised.”

“Thank you.”

Idun didn't delay anymore. Tae Ho thanked once again that he belonged to Idun's legion and raised his head to receive the flying horse wing coat. However, Idun just smiled instead of giving it to him.

“Now, choose one.”

“Yes?”

“I prepared options this time too.”

Maybe it was his feeling, but he felt a bit of playfulness in her voice. It seemed like she was enjoying that she made Tae Ho surprised.

“Okay, one is the wing coat you know well. And the other....”

Idun paused for a moment and then took out something that was a bit big. It was an item even Tae Ho could recognize.

“It’s a Saddle of the beast.”

The thing Idun raised her arms with difficulty really was a saddle. Although it was the first time Tae Ho had seen it with his own two eyes he had seen it so much in places like games and movies that it was really familiar to him.

Idun raised the saddle up with a groaning sound and then patted on it and said.

“It’s a saddle you can put on any kind of beast, monster or bird. It’s because it has transformation magic cast on it. This is also a gift that came from Olympus a long time ago.”

It was a saddle made of heavy and thick leather and added a red and glossy leather on top of that. And the part you rested your feet also seemed to be sturdy.

“I will show you some examples, so wait a bit.”

As Idun flicked her finger, rocks with the shape of animals started to surge up. They were a horse, a pig and a something unknown but was big.

“See well.”

Idun placed the saddle on top of the rocks one by one. And then, just like Idun had said the saddle transformed to become suitable to get on. Lastly, as it was impossible to wear it, it turned to the shape of a chair and got stuck in the rock.

“As it’s a saddle, it doesn’t give you a stable riding but it also has controlling magic so it will be easier to control your mount.”

It was an understandable thing. Because when he rode on the monster on the cave of the dwarves he was troubled because he didn’t have where to seat.

“Now, pick one.”

Idun spread her two hands. Although he couldn't see her well because of the light, he was sure that she was smiling.

‘Oh, Idun.’

Tae Ho started to think deeply when he was faced with choices. He was leaning more towards the saddle rather than the wing coat.

‘I need something to ride on with the saddle.’

The saddles were solely a supportive item. If he didn't have anything to ride on, then this thing became useless.

However, Tae Ho thought differently.

‘A saddle you can wear it with anything.’

Then it became useful. Because Tae Ho already had one wing coat.

The hawk's wing coat.

As it was a coat that let you transform into a hawk, he had used it to transform himself to fly because there was no way someone could ride on it.

But if he had the Beast's saddle then that became possible. Through this expedition, he realized that you were able to transform into a big animal if you had enough runes.

‘If it's captain Siri, she should be able to transform into the size of a human.’

Because the number of runes she had was already close to being at the intermediate rank.

Tae Ho thought of Siri transforming into a hawk reflexively. He thought of the warriors riding on big eagles just like in the movies.

‘It will be quite useful.’

It was indeed useful. In addition, if he stored it in Unnir then he would be able to use it on a wild monster, or take the beast of the

enemy and use it for himself.

‘There’s nothing else to think about.’

Tae Ho made a fast decision and spoke to Idun.

“I will choose the Beast’s saddle.”

“Right. The wing coat should be regretful, but it’s unavoidable. Another chance will come someday.”

Idun agreed freshly and then kissed Tae Ho on his forehead after giving him the saddle.

“My warrior Tae Ho. My strength shall accompany you.”

The now familiar power of Idun covered Tae Ho’s body. Tae Ho closed his eyes with a satisfied face.

&

“Did you have a nice meeting?”

“Yes.”

“You received something.”

As he got out of the shrine he saw Heda and Ragnar waiting for him. As Ragnar glanced at the saddle that was in Tae Ho’s arms, he smirked and explained.

“It’s a Beast saddle. You can use it on any beast and it’s said to also help you in controlling it.”

As he raised it as if it was worth it, Ragnar nodded slowly.

“It seems like she’s in deep thought regarding what you need. You are really being treated well.”

It was an adequate reward for Tae Ho that faced several things. You could only think that she prepared it especially for him.

Tae Ho thanked Idun and nodded. Thinking about it, all of this was thanks to Idun’s legion being small in number.

“First of all.....”

Ragnar looked Tae Ho up and down and let out a small exclamation.

“You became really strong. The number of runes you have increased by a lot. I should move up with the pace of the training of the strength of a God by quite a lot.”

Even Ragnar hadn't expected for a warrior that had just become inferior ranked to become close to being an intermediate warrior at once. Just like he had said, he should hurry with teaching him about the strength of a God.

However, Heda stepped up at that moment.

“That's good, but let's rest for today. Resume the training tomorrow. Looking at it, it hasn't even been a day since the battle ended.”

When Tae Ho fell asleep it was the afternoon, but it was morning right now. As he was quite sturdy, also had Idun's blessing and in addition, rested in the residence of Idun's legion that had a higher recovery rate, so there was a high chance that Siri may still be lying on the bed.

Ragnar stepped back simply to the point that it was unexpected.

“Right, resting is also important. It would be good to let him rest today.”

“Then, will the two of you help me organize the items?”

When Tae Ho spoke, the two of them tilted their heads as if asking him what he meant. Tae Ho just opened up Unnir instead of replying.

Several weapons of different kinds were lined up in the floor of the classroom. Ragnar looked at the dozens of weapons and laughed as it didn't make sense.

“Do you have a warehouse we don't know of?”

Actually, it was easy to distinguish that these weapons were

items picked up from the trace of the Great War. However Tae Ho didn't only take the weapons that were in a good state, he had also taken the broken weapons differently to a normal warrior.

Heda, that was checking the weapons while sitting on the ground, opened her eyes sharply as if she was appraising and said.

“They are all magic weapons. You brought them from the trace of the Great War?”

“Yes, I only picked the ones that had magic engraved on them.”

Heda and also Ragnar knew about Tae Ho's 'sword of the warrior'. Thanks to that they didn't ask him why he had brought these broken weapons.

Ragnar looked at the daggers that were closest to him and said.

“This is only my thought but I think that it will be better to return them to their respective legions. There should be many historical weapons among them.”

They were lost articles before it became looting for Tae Ho. The dagger he just grabbed had the symbol of Hermod's legion engraved on it.

In addition, it was a question whether he needed another weapon when he already had the Unknown sword piece.

“Well, that should be for the best.”

As Tae Ho nodded obediently Heda put on a slightly surprised and a happy face.

However, Heda's thoughts weren't as pure as Ragna or Tae Ho. She exchanged glances once and then Ragna smirked once and said.

“The rewards will be quite good. As they also have a face to care for.”

“Yeah, right?”

They weren't normal artifacts, but artifacts from the warriors that participated in the Great War. And all of them were magical weapons and were also historical just like Ragnar had said.

He would give them the broken, unusable and useless weapons and receive new items.

And as Idun's legion wasn't in need of many weapons it was also a great benefit for him.

Heda looked at Tae Ho and Ragnar looking at themselves and smiling satisfactorily and then let out a sigh comparable to her expectation.

Tae Ho called at that Heda.

“Um, Heda. There's something I want to ask.”

“What is it?”

“Can I get something to ride on? I think that it will be good to have a fixed mount. Even if it's not a flying thing, something like the horses the dark fairies rode on....or the White silences of Ullr's legion.”

He did think of Siri reflexively when he picked the saddle, but Siri wasn't Tae Ho's mount. She was also a prestigious warrior of Valhalla.

Depending on each situation, riding on her would be the best and perhaps he may be able to ask her a few more times but that would be all. Rather than relying on Siri, getting a mount for himself was also proper for Siri.

Heda smacked her lips at Tae Ho's question and then frowned.

“Sorry, Idun's legion doesn't have a particular summon like Ullr's legion.”

Ullr was the God of hunting, and Idun was the Goddess of life and youth.

Ragnar put down the dagger he was touching and said.

“If it’s a simple thing like a horse you can just buy it in Anaheim, or you can request for one and get it but its lacking. You aren’t going to use it as a transportation means.”

Actually, that was true. He did speak of a horse but if it was a normal one like the one the dark fairies used, then he didn’t feel the use of it. Of course, it would be better than not having anything, but thinking about how painful it would be to take care of it, it wasn’t that great.

‘Is that unavoidable?’

Tae Ho decided to give up. Because if he just dragged it, Heda would just feel more sorry.

But it was then.

“So I was saying, shall we go catch one?”

Ragnar said. He saved his words as if enjoying the looks given by Tae Ho and Heda and then shrugged his shoulders.

“We will catch a wild gryphon. I know a place in the boundary between Asgard and Olympus where gryphons live. We can just catch one.”

“Oh.”

If it was a gryphon then the story changed. It could fly in the sky and it wasn’t only stronger than a horse, its battle power was also quite great.

“But only, the trip takes some time. Heda will know if it will be possible.”

Basically, the warriors of Valhalla were always in a standby state. Ragnar was asking her if she could regulate the tasks so he wasn’t called and then Heda nodded.

“I will do what I can.”

It seemed like she had become quite determined that even her eyes had become sharp.

“Then it’s been decided. Let’s depart as soon as Heda solves things. I think that it will be good to train the strength of a God on the trip.”

Looking at how he spoke, it seemed like that place wasn’t reachable through a space door. It seemed like they had to travel an additional distance just like what happened in Svartalfheim.

‘I’m getting excited.’

He would go catch a gryphon he would ride from now on. He felt happy just by talking about it.

He felt that it was an adventure more than a simple expedition.

Ragnar kept talking about gryphons and separated the weapons by their legions at the same time. And as Heda also helped him, they could finish sorting the items in a few minutes.

Odin, Thor, Tir, Ullr, Hermod, Heimdal, Vidarr. Seven legions in total.

There was only one item left among the dozens of lined weapons.
The Unknown piece of equipment.

“Is this the same kind as the Sword piece?”

“Sorry, I don’t know whose God this belongs to.”

Ragnar and Heda spoke after checking the fragment once.

Tae Ho looked at the Unknown sword piece that was in his waist but there was no reaction this time.

‘Perhaps, it may be from another world.’

What Siri had said.

Tae Ho took in a deep breath when he received the Piece of equipment from Heda. He gripped it tightly and said.

“I will check.”

What he could do with this.

[Saga: Sword of the warrior]

Tae Ho activated his saga. And at that moment, something no one had expected happened.

< Episode 14 – Garmr's soul fragment (2) > End

Episode 14/Chapter 3: Garmr's soul fragment (3)

The king of Gods Odin kept many secrets.

The location of the fountain of Mimir that was said to exist in one of the roots of Yggdrasil was also one of the secrets.

The three sisters that gave Odin the strength to guess the future was also a projection of Mimir. You couldn't know where exactly it was.

Odin wasn't alone. There was one more father that was facing the head of Mimir.

“Father.”

The God of thunder that was called as the strongest warrior was standing proudly. While Odin and Mimir were conversing soundlessly, he who had been silent the whole time spoke up as if he couldn't endure it anymore.

Although he was happy that his father had revealed one of the secrets to him, even so, the wait was too long.

Odin nodded towards the God of thunder.

“So it has been roughly shaped.”

Odin stood up. When he was shriveled down he looked like a weak old man, but when he stood up he had the dignity of the king of Gods.

Odin passed his ash and white hair over. He touched the patch that covered one of his eyes and then approached Mimir's head. Odin's right hand had Garmr's soul fragment.

“What they are aiming for is certainly Fenrir, right?”

“Probably. Just like you know, Garmr is a really strong devil. However, I don't think that they are doing all this just for Garmr.”

Mimir closed his eyes and said. Odin got convinced but Thor was different. He looked at Mimir's head and Odin alternately and then asked as if he didn't know well.

“How is gathering Garmr's soul fragment and reviving Fenrir related?”

He had asked towards Mimir but it seemed like he had wanted to ask Odin that his eyes were looking at him.

Mimir's head answered.

“The thing that will wake up the world wolf from its long slumber will be the roar of the hell keeper Garmr. Garmr is one of the keys to awakening the Fenrir.”

It was also like that in the Great War. The restrains that were made with things that didn't exist in the world and were binding Fenrir would be broken by Garmr's roar.

“Thor, destroy it.”

Odin extended his hand that was holding onto Garmr's soul fragment. Thor, that had just listened to the importance of it, blinked as if he was surprised.

“Father?”

“It's the most certain way to stop Garmr's resurrection. We don't need Garmr nor Fenrir.”

Odin said with one of his eyes. Even though the enemy was gathering the soul fragments, it was something this side didn't need. Destroying it to not let them do anything about it is the most simple and effective method.

Thor nodded late and put the soul fragment in between some roots and then raised Mjolnir. He started to gather thunder and then Garmr's cry and the sound of thunder rang at the same time.

Kwaaang~!

The thunder gulped down Garmr's cry. They could feel that

Nidhogg had gotten surprised because of the loud sound.

Garmr's soul fragment, that had turned to dust, got scattered by the wind and was spread in Mimir's spring. The things that remained once more in this place were the two Gods and the head of a giant.

Thor retrieved Mjolnir and then turned to look at Odin and Mimir's head as if asking how it turned. Mimir's head opened his mouth first.

"The thing the Giants need is the roar of the hell keeper Garmr, that will wake up the world wolf. They don't need a complete Garmr. If they gather enough pieces, they will be able to achieve their objective."

"Right, there's also someone among them that can use saga."

If it was the strength of a strong saga, it would be able to recreate Garmr's roar with just the pieces.

Loki.

Asgard's traitor.

Thor thought of the name of the giant king, that was once his brother and best friend, and gritted his teeth to press down his grief and pain.

Odin sat down again and said.

"The magician king Utgard Loki is a cunning one. Although you may think that luck has been on our side, I feel like their intentions have been revealed too easily."

"Are you saying that all of this is a trap?"

"That may be possible. However, I can only play into his hands."

Odin gestured towards the crow Munin that was seated on his shoulder. He transmitted the will of the king towards Hugin, that was at a far place.

&

He had certainly activated the strength of the saga.

However, nothing had happened. The fragment of the equipment remained the same, and the Runefang Tae Ho had thought of in his head wasn't recreated.

Was it wrong that he tried to recreate a sword?

Tae Ho activated the 'sword of the warrior' again. What he thought of this time was a beginner's spear.

However, it remained the same. His saga didn't activate.

Tae Ho raised his head and looked at Heda and Ragna. The expressions of the two people were different from Tae Ho's. Ragna was glaring at the fragment of equipment and Heda raised her head abruptly and looked at Tae Ho. She tried to yell something in her bewilderment.

Heda's voice.

He couldn't hear it.

And Tae Ho realized.

It wasn't that nothing had happened.

His saga had certainly activated. However, it broke down right after. The strength that remained in the fragment of equipment rejected Tae Ho's saga.

And it didn't stop there.

A strong light that emanated from the fragment of equipment gulped down Tae Ho.

"Tae Ho!"

Heda yelled and extended her hand. However, she couldn't reach him. The world surrounding Tae Ho changed.

&

That place was an island.

A man, that crossed the sea with a small boat, smiled. His big stature was that of an adult but his face was still childish. Actually, he was close to being a kid rather than a youth.

The chest of the boy started to beat. His eyes shone with curiosity towards the new world.

Tae Ho couldn't see the face of the boy. He was looking at the world through the eyes of the boy.

The wind that carried the scent of the sea was directed at the island. It was a scary land that could be called as the world of shadows.

The boy wanted to meet someone on the island. He had just listened to rumors, there were very few people that had actually seen him.

There were also scary rumors. They said that that person ate other people and that he bathed in the blood of virgins.

In the first place, this person lived in an extraordinary place. The fortress that was surrounded by seven castle walls and nine wooden fences that had the heads of people stuck in it was the house of that person.

However, the boy didn't fear. He was planning to judge through his own eyes and ears instead of baseless rumors.

The boat reached the shore and the boy jumped down.

The boy was facing a beautiful lady. She was one of the prettiest beauties that Tae Ho had seen until now, and her beauty was one that rivaled Heda.

However, she gave a different feeling. Compared to the soft and refined Heda, she was a lady that had eyes that were sharp like a cat. Tae Ho could realize. That this person was the one this boy wanted to meet.

The boy loved and admired this lady. And the lady also loved and appreciated the boy.

The woman, that had black and abundant hair, gave the boy a wooden chest. She was expecting what kind of reaction the boy would make. Tae Ho saw her lips that were slightly curled up to hide her excitement and thought of Idun.

The boy opened the wooden chest. And the thing that was inside it was something the boy knew well. Because of that the boy got surprised and turned to look at the lady.

“Starting from now, it’s yours.”

The woman, that was satisfied at the expression of the boy, said with a soft tone. The boy turned to look at the chest again and he smiled like a child that couldn’t hide his feelings.

The thing inside of the chest was a white spear made with the bones of a sea creature.

The boy left the world of shadow. However, the spear that was given by the woman was always by his side.

He had conquered several battlefields. He defeated the army of the greedy queen, hunted huge monsters, and fought against fierce bandits to rescue a beautiful lady.

The boy always won. The people praised him, and the name of the boy spread to several places of the world.

However, there was an end to the victory of the boy that seemed to be eternal.

The world crumbled.

The man fought with his allies but had been defeated in the end.

“Loki.”

The man, that was as exhausted as he could be, leaned his body on a boulder and said in a low voice. There was a tall man with green eyes and long black hair in front of him.

The sound of thunder was heard from far away. The sound was certainly made by the one that had stood on the front lines to rescue the crumbling world, but he was too late.

The man that was called Loki looked at the direction where the thunder was heard from with vague eyes and then put on a faint smile. The man tried to tie him down, but he was already at his limit. He couldn't have any more strength to resist. He had lost too much blood.

“Master.”

The man said in a low voice and closed his eyes. He dropped his spear he didn't let go until now and thought of the cat-eyed lady.

The world burned down and then got destroyed.

The man had lost his world.

He lost his family, lost his partner and lost his friends. The things he had tried to protect had all perished.

However, the man didn't give up. He couldn't do it.

Because he was still alive. He couldn't witness the death of his master.

The man didn't despair even in the deep darkness.

He had battled until the end a battle which he couldn't win.

And then, his spear broke. The memory of the man got cut off there. Perhaps, he may have seen the memories of the spear.

Tae Ho was inside the darkness. He saw the face of the man there for the first time.

It was a really handsome face. He, who had black hair and grey eyes, turned his back instead of facing Tae Ho. The man was shining even when he was in the darkness.

At that moment Tae Ho could know the name of the man.

He remembered that this memory was from the destroyed world.

The name of the man was Cu Chulainn. His nickname was the prince of light.

The strongest and greatest hero in the Celtic mythology even among the warriors of the already destroyed Erin.

The man told him. The name of the spear given by his master and the woman he loved the most, Scathach.

Tae Ho opened his eyes.

He grabbed the fragment of equipment that was still broken but started to emit another strength, and then he activated the 'eyes of the dragon'. He read the names following the shiny rainbow letters.

“Gae Bolg.”

The spear of the light prince Cu Chulainn.

A strong light was emitted as if answering to his call.

< Episode 14 – Garmr's soul fragment (3) > End

Episode 15/Chapter 1: Alpha Male (1)

“Stop!” Ragnar yelled thunderously and stood up. He hurriedly extended his arms and stopped Heda and then calmly checked Tae Ho’s state. Tae Ho was standing with a surprised expression while still holding onto the fragment of equipment. He seemed to be more surprised at Ragnar’s shout, rather than the light of the fragment.

However, Ragnar pushed Heda aside and then asked as if he was relieved, “Are you okay? Your strength didn’t get sucked into the fragment or anything?”

“Yes.”

“Whew.”

Ragnar let out a sigh of relief and then released Heda. She realized that Tae Ho was fine and then asked a bit quickly, “Tae Ho, did you see something?”

“A... memory. From the owner of this spear.”

Tae Ho started to think back and answered slowly. Then Ragnar opened his eyes sharply.

“You said it was Gae Bolg?”

“Yes, I’m sure. Gae Bolg.”

He was certain because he could still read the rainbow-colored words through the eyes of the dragon.

[Gae Bolg’s Fragment]

It wasn’t an unknown equipment anymore. Tae Ho knew the name of the weapon.

“My God, it was a weapon of Cu Chulainn.”

Ragnar said with a voice that was filled with excitement and amazement.

Tae Ho asked Ragnar, “Ragnar, just who is Cu Chulainn?”

Although he did remember something, it was too short. Because for Tae Ho, Cu Chulainn and Gae Bolg were completely unfamiliar existences.

However, that didn’t seem to be the case for Ragnar and Heda. The two people, especially Ragnar, looked bewildered and then let out a sigh.

“Right, you are this kind of bastard.”

Because he didn’t even know about Ragnar.

“He was a warrior that was described as the strongest in Erin... and now the destroyed planet. If you were to compare him to someone in Valhalla, he would be like Sigurd.”

“Sigurd...”

He did hear that he was one of the strongest warriors in Valhalla. If he was at such a level that he could massacre tens of dragons, then it was understandable for Heda and Ragnar to show those expressions. Because he was so famous, his name spread even on Valhalla.

Ragnar calmed himself a bit and then looked at the fragment of Gae Bolg that was in Tae Ho’s hand.

“Gae Bolg is the strongest weapon among the ones Cu Chulainn had. It was made by the monarch of the Land of Shadow, Scathach, from the bones of a sea creature. It’s also the first time I have seen it.”

“Scathach...”

He had certainly heard that name in the memory of the man.

She was the owner of the fortress that was surrounded by seven layers of walls and nine wooden fences. The only woman Cu Chulainn had loved more than himself and his teacher.

Tae Ho closed his eyes and tried to think of Scathach’s face. Cu

Chulainn had thought of her until the end, without letting go of his spear. Because of that, he could remember her face too clearly.

The lady with cat-like eyes. The Queen of the Land of Darkness, who only showed a kind smile to Cu Chulainn.

“If it’s really Gae Bolg, it’s understandable that your saga doesn’t work.” Ragnar said in a low voice. After he stopped talking, Tae Ho opened his eyes and continued to speak.

“It should be that it doesn’t allow you to take the shape of another weapon even if it’s temporary. Gae Bolg is a weapon of that caliber.”

Putting the shape of another weapon in it was more than it could tolerate.

This was something that could happen if a weapon had belonged to a warrior that represented a whole world.

However, Heda spoke with a careful tone.

“That’s all a possibility. Don’t try your saga on Gae Bolg for now. Perhaps it may not be something like permission but it may have a strong geas in it.”

“Geas?”

Ragnar explained immediately about the word he had heard for the first time.

“Geas means pledge. It’s the strength in Erin, just like the sagas in Valhalla. You obtain a strength instead of pledging something with a restriction.”

Each world had a magic that represented it.

Erin’s geas was a power as strong as Valhalla’s saga.

“Cu Chulainn possessed several geases, just like the strongest warrior. And among them, there are some that become stronger when the owner dies, so you have to be careful.”

A geas was a two-edged blade. It granted a strong force instead of enforcing a restriction; however when the pledge was ignored, a punishment greater than the strength obtained through it had to be faced. Because of that, a strong geas was compared to a strong curse.

However, Tae Ho couldn't feel any sort of evil in this fragment of Gae Bolg. It seemed like that was also the case for Ragnar, since he pointed out another thing instead of the danger of the geas.

“Although it's only a fragment, if it's Gae Bolg it should be strong enough in this state. And honestly speaking, it's too excessive for the current you. You could say that it's a weapon that you can't be sure you could cope with.”

Ragnar wasn't planning on taking the fragment from Tae Ho. But even so, it wasn't that he was going to leave it alone.

“If it's not a really important moment, don't try to use it. Think of it as the last card you can take out before you mature enough.”

“I understand.”

As Tae Ho answered seriously, Ragnar nodded satisfactorily and then loosened his expression.

“First of all, if this spear is really Gae Bolg... There's a high possibility for that sword piece, so much so to say that hilt is also a weapon from Erin.”

It was quite a logical guess. However, Heda shook her head.

“That's not certain. If it's just like Tae Ho said, it simply reacted after seeing Gae Bolg. That doesn't mean that it's from the same world, but it recognized Gae Bolg and told Tae Ho.”

This side also had some possibilities.

Although he wanted to just ask the sword piece directly, after he got out of the trace of the Great War, the sword piece was just silent.

Because of that Ragnar continued to guess something not certain.

““However, if it’s really a weapon from Erin...there’s a high possibility for it to be Caladbolg or Excalibur... What’s wrong with your expression?”

Ragnar looked at Tae Ho and Tae Ho yelled inwardly, ‘Excalibur!’

Although he didn’t know about Caladbolg, he did know about Excalibur. Wasn’t that the most famous and legendary sword in his world?

“You mean the Excalibur of the legends from King Arthur, right? The thing that was stuck in a rock.”

“So you do know about King Arthur...” Ragnar said with lukewarm eyes. Although his face showed that he was really discontent, looking at his expression, it seemed like it really was the Excalibur he knew about.

“Erin has already been destroyed. As countless legendary weapons disappeared along with their owners... Even if the weapon of Arthur Pendragon appears there would be nothing strange about that.”

“But it is a bit weird.”

Heda stepped in. She looked at Tae Ho and Ragnar and then shrugged her shoulders and explained.

“If it really is Caladbolg or Excalibur, it means that it’s almost at the same level as Gae Bolg. Gae Bolg rejected transforming into another weapon but this sword piece is accepting Tae Ho’s saga.”

“Mm, perhaps it may be at a lower level than Gae Bolg. Or it has no pride.”

“Ragnar.”

As Ragnar spoke with a smirk, Heda looked at him as if he was hopeless and Tae Ho also butted in.

“It’s not low-ranked. I’m sure it’s the same rank as Gae Bolg.”

Because the two of them were rainbow-colored. In addition, they both didn't dim in brightness.

“Perhaps it may have a good temperament. Or it really likes you, Tae Ho.”

Heda suggested a new possibility. Seeing that it could be answered with yes and no in the trace of the Great War, they were sure that it had some ego so it wasn't baseless words.

Tae Ho looked at the sword piece in a new light. If it really had an ego like Heda had said, it was a really thankful fellow. Because even if it was at the same rank as Gae Bolg, it was lending its strength to Tae Ho.

Ragnar said again in a serious voice, “Tae Ho, listen well. There's no coincidence in a meeting with a weapon. The reason why you have met with the sword piece and obtained Gae Bolg's fragment was that you were fated. It could be said that it was a strong attraction. Perhaps, you may meet more fragments of other pieces of equipment.”

There was a high probability that fragments of pieces of equipment were scattered in the world, just like Garmr's soul fragment.

“A fragment of Gae Bolg and the sword piece. They both are now yours. However, don't get swayed by the weapons. And don't even count on luck. Grow strong enough so that the two weapons become suitable for you. Understand?”

“Yes.” Tae Ho replied sincerely. Maybe it was because he had seen Cu Chulainn's memories that he could feel the weight in Ragnar's words.

“Now, you can go to rest, as we have finished the classifications. You don't look good.”

Heda clapped and turned the mood to a good one. Although she was smiling, you could see that she was worried about Tae Ho.

“Now that I see, I am a bit sleepy.”

He did feel a great exhaustion. This also seemed to be an aftershock of having lived through Cu Chulainn’s memories.

“I will deliver the weapons of the Great War. You should rest for now.”

“Thank you, Heda. For helping me with everything.”

Heda smiled brightly as Tae Ho expressed his gratitude.

“This is also the task of a legion’s Valkyrie.”

“Even so.”

“I also helped. I helped.” Ragnar interrupted with a pouty face and Heda laughed and started to load the weapons in the wooden boat that had arrived.

&

He did remember until he closed his eyes, but he didn’t remember anything else after that. He had slept without dreaming of anything.

It seemed like he had slept so well that his eyes also opened rather easily.

“You woke up?”

As he turned to look, he could see Ragnar reading a book next to him.

“And Heda?”

Ragnar started to laugh at Tae Ho’s question and then pointed outside the door with his chin.

“She’s outside, it’s because of some guests. You woke up at the right moment.”

“Guests?”

No one else aside of Ragnar had come to Idun’s legion’s

residence. Tae Ho blinked and then raised his head.

“Ah, are they perhaps warriors of Idun’s legion...so, my superiors?”

“I’m sorry but no. However, they are good guests for you.”

Ragnar looked at the book he was reading and then pointed at the basin.

“Wash yourself and go. You will know then.”

Tae Ho finished washing his face roughly and then emerged from his lodging. He could see Heda standing at the wooden dock without having to search for long.

“Heda?”

There were fairly big wooden boxes lined up next to her. Tae Ho asked naturally after getting closer, “Did packages arrive?”

“Packages? Ah, they came from the other legions. Reciprocal gifts.”

Tae Ho tilted his head as if he didn’t understand but then said, “It really came.”

He had been in doubt, but for it to really come... Tae Ho looked at the lined up boxes. Each of them had a symbol of a legion in the lid or a name engraved on it.

‘Wait a moment. That’s from Odin’s legion, that’s Thor’s...’

While he was reading them one by one he heard the sound of a bell. He raised his head, as he thought that it was a dispatch order, but then Heda shook her head.

“It’s the signal of a ship approaching.”

A big ship was really approaching from far away. There was a sculpture of a big wolf at the front.

“Ullr’s legion.”

He couldn’t see any boxes belonging to Ullr’s legion. As the big

ship anchored down, Heda said with a surprised face, “Gandur? You yourself came here?”

She had her doubts when she saw a big ship, but for a real Valkyrie to come... Gandur snickered and waved her hand.

“Nice to meet you, Heda. And also, Warrior Tae Ho. I came to keep the promise.”

“Promise?”

“Didn’t I tell you when you defeated the regenerator? That I would tell Ullr-nim about your merits? I put more thought into the gift.”

Gandur stopped speaking then and jumped down from the ship. Following her, a familiar warrior jumped down with a big sack.

“Captain Siri.”

“So this is the residence of Idun’s legion.”

Siri started to check her surroundings slowly after landing. It seemed as if it was quite different to Ullr’s legion so she was amazed.

Tae Ho approached her and then gave a joke.

“Are you going to move to our legion?”

“No, that’s not it. I came to help Gandur-nim. I also wanted to see how the other residences looked.”

“Don’t be like that, Tae Ho and come to our legion. I will get you a partner and also Siri. And I will also get you a wing coat,” Gandur said hurriedly. Seeing that she was looking at him with expectant eyes, it seemed like she still hadn’t given up on taking him to Ullr’s legion.

“Leave it.”

“I’m also okay.”

Heda and Siri answered instead of Tae Ho. Siri had especially

cold eyes, as if she felt betrayed by the words ‘partner’ and ‘wing coat’.

“Anyways, this is the gift.”

Gandur changed subjects impudently and then gave Tae Ho the sack Siri was holding.

“It’s a stealth cloak. You do know about the stealth blessing right?”

He obviously knew. As Tae Ho nodded, a vague smile appeared on Gandur’s face again.

“You will be able to use the stealth blessing when you wear it. And it’s also a high leveled one at that.”

“Thank you.”

The stealth blessing had many uses. Heda was also happy as Tae Ho became sincerely happy, however, she turned to glare at Gandur.

‘It’s a bait in the end. In the end, the members of Ullr’s legion can all use the stealth blessing.’

That was right. Looking at it from the perspective of another legion, it was indeed a treasure. But inside of Ullr’s legion, it couldn’t be described that way.

As Gandur became aware of Heda’s gaze, she also answered with her eyes.

‘It’s useful anyways. That’s enough. In addition, doesn’t Warrior Tae Ho like it?’

‘Well, it is indeed useful.’

‘Right, and in addition, that isn’t all.’

Gandur turned her eyes to Tae Ho and then took out a silvery rope from the sack.

“And this is a hunter’s rope.”

The tip of it was tied in a circle. Looking at it reminded one of the ropes that cowboys had on them.

“Although it’s lower ranked than the cloak of stealth, it will be useful to you. If you tighten around the neck with it, the strength and resistance of your prey will weaken. It’s a good item to catch a monster alive.”

“It’s just right.”

“Just?”

“I was going to go catch a wild gryphon – to use it as a mount.”

“A wild gryphon? Do you know where they appear?”

The last speaker was Siri. Tae Ho nodded and answered.

“Ragnar knows.”

“Ragnar-nim?”

Siri’s eyes started to shine. Tae Ho remembered something when he looked at Siri and then asked Gandur, “Gandur, seeing that she hasn’t returned to Svartalfheim, is Captain Siri on a break?”

“Right, she rendered many merits. So compared to me, who has to return to the scene, Siri is on a temporary break.”

Compared to Idun’s legion, as there were many people in Ullr’s legion on standby, there was no need to be worried about when they would get called.

Tae Ho looked at Siri again and asked, “Captain Siri, do you want to go with us?”

“To catch a wild gryphon?”

“Yes, Ragnar will also come.”

Ragnar treated Siri and the warriors of Ullr’s legion with delight. He wasn’t someone that would care about one more companion.

“With, with Ragnar-nim?”

Siri's voice trembled. Siri turned to look at Gandur when Tae Ho gave a nod. At her eyes, which were begging for permission earnestly, Gandur laughed pleasingly.

"I allow it. An opportunity to accompany someone like Ragnar is rare. If you can catch a wild gryphon, it will also be of big help to Ullr's legion."

"Thank you."

Siri smiled brightly. She had the face of a girl that had received a concert ticket for the idols she liked.

"Thank you, Tae Ho."

"I'm the one that should be thankful."

In the end, Tae Ho was the one paying off the debts to her by telling her to accompany them. Although it had been in battle and had taken into account the effectivity of it, Siri had let Tae Ho ride on her without any complaints.

Tae Ho still couldn't forget when she wore the wing coat and chanted when she wanted to fight alongside the warriors of the Great War.

"Hey."

"Yes?"

"If it's about what happened on the battlefield, don't let it affect you too much. If you need it from now on, I will wear a wing coat however many times you want." Siri said with a bitter smile. It wasn't because Tae Ho had let her come with them, but her sincere feelings.

"Thank you."

Siri was really a warrior of Valhalla. As Tae Ho expressed his gratitude, Siri shrugged her shoulders, as if it was embarrassing.

"Hmm."

Then Heda let out a small sound. Thanks to that, Tae Ho realized that there was one more person to ask to and then hurriedly said “You are fine with Captain Siri coming with us, right?”

“It’s not that she can’t.”

Although she didn’t permit her as pleasantly as Gandur, it was still a permission.

Gandur forced her smile and asked Heda, “Heda, when are you departing?”

“Tomorrow morning.”

“Then I will come tomorrow with Siri. As there are many people, we will go to the hall with our ship.”

It was because the wooden boat of Idun’s legion was too small.

It seemed like Heda had realized the meaning behind that, that she glared at Gandur and Gandur urged Siri and got on the ship.

And the next day, the ship of Ullr’s legion arrived in Idun’s legion one more time.

< Episode 15 – Alpha Male (1) > End

Episode 15/Chapter 2: Alpha Male (2)

The trip was smooth. Ragnar took in Siri as expected and even held classes with her and Tae Ho. A beautiful student is better than a black man, that was Ragnar's claim.

After passing through the space door that was located at the center of the hall, they reached the outer areas that connected Olympus and Asgard.

Heda borrowed a carriage marked with the name of Idun's legion and drove it, and the three people behind focused on training the Strength of a God.

After two days, Heda changed seats with Ragnar and then looked at Tae Ho and Siri that were seated in a corner.

The two persons had their eyes closed and were operating the Strength of a God. It wasn't strong as an explosion, but it was spread thinly and faintly.

The two of them had talent. It seemed like it was because of Siri's strong persistence and calm nature that she had few mistakes when handling the strength and Tae Ho handled the power so well, it was unbelievable that he was an inferior rank.

'He's a cheat by several means.'

Ragnar knew about Tae Ho's saga and where he came from. Although he had an unimaginable saga, before coming to Valhalla he had never grabbed a sword and just played the thing called 'Dark Age' or something in front of a desk.

When he had first heard that, he couldn't believe it easily. It wasn't because it was too bewildering. It was because Tae Ho's existence made it hard to believe.

'He's overflowing with talent.'

Tae Ho fought well. It wasn't only because he received the

strength and techniques from the strength of the saga with the synchro rate. His battle senses, fast judgments, and the ability to find a path made him a born warrior.

Heda had said that Tae Ho's world was a peaceful world without any fights, different from Midgard. And perhaps that was the reason he wasn't aware of his talent.

It wasn't the only talent in fighting, but handling his saga and the power of a God was so outstanding, to the point normal warriors would find it hard to do. As for the precise control especially, it could be said that he really was born with it.

There were cases like Tae Ho at times, of people that came to Valhalla even when they were from another world.

Although he hadn't met them all, each one of them had outstanding talent.

'Perhaps it may not be a coincidence but a necessity of the story.'

That shining existence from another world was led to Valhalla.

Ragnar thought of the words he had heard from Sigurd once and looked at Tae Ho. He imagined Tae Ho having been born in Midgard and not in the world that the job of a pro gamer existed.

'He must have become a powerful warrior.'

Although he would have been different to his current self, he would have entered Valhalla with his own saga.

"Stop. We are resting for a moment."

As Ragnar spoke in a low voice, Tae Ho and Siri let out simultaneous sighs and loosened their bodies. They were both dripping with sweat.

"The two of you are good. You are fast in learning."

"Thank you."

Siri flushed and smiled. If Rolph or the other warriors who knew

her usual self saw her right now, they would have been really surprised but it was now too familiar for Tae Ho.

Ragnar, who had been ignored by Tae Ho until now, put on a good smile and then looked at Siri fixedly.

“Siri, you aren’t planning on moving to Idun’s legion? Then I would be able to keep teaching you.”

“Yes?”

“Oh, that’s a good idea.”

“Hmhm. Gandur won’t like it.”

The one that liked the idea was Tae Ho and the one that cleared her throat was Heda.

Siri was seduced by Ragnar’s direct proposal for a moment, but it seemed as if she had gotten a hold of herself after listening to Heda’s words and then trembled and said, “I’m grateful for your words but I’m sorry. I can’t leave behind my comrades.”

“I like you even more. You are a good warrior.”

Ragnar spoke as if he was still interested in her, and Siri forced herself to look in another direction. It seemed like she was trying her best to remain calm.

‘So...the hero she admires not only recognized her but also suggested to work together?’

Tae Ho understood Siri’s struggle, after having analyzed the situation.

‘I’m sorry for Rolph, but it would really be great if she moved.’

Because Siri was a great warrior, just like Ragnar had said. Having an ally you could trust at your back on a battlefield and not having one was a big difference.

Even while this was happening, the carriage reached a forest. It was a really big forest that was naturally connected to a mountain.

“Heda, stop the carriage around here.”

Ragnar tied down the horses from the carriage and then grabbed the reins and said, “Gryphons like to eat horse meat. We will use these guys as bait. You remember the things I told you, right?”

“Yes.”

“Of course.” Siri answered immediately. Ragnar took out a knife from at his waist and then made the horses bleed a little. As Heda recited a chant, the scent of blood was spread with the help of the wind.

And after a few minutes passed, Ragnar opened his eyes sharply. The veteran hunter Siri also turned her eyes.

“They came.”

They could hear the noise made by the fluttering of big winds. Three wild gryphons flew above the trees. The monsters that let out cries like eagles started to gather like a flock of birds.

Ragnar simply took a big step back, as if he would just watch. As Heda also stepped back, Heda and Siri took out their weapons.

Siri was the first to start. She fired arrows that had been smeared with paralyzing poison, and the gryphon that was in the middle lost its balance and crashed. While the ground shook, Tae Ho swung the executioner’s sword. One of the gryphons that were trying to take a horse with its hard feet dodged Tae Ho’s sword and flew up again and the other one just grabbed some dirt and flew up.

“They will come again! Go from the ground and the sky!”

As Ragnar yelled, Siri fired one more arrow into the crashed gryphon, assumed a firing posture and Tae Ho spread out the hawk wing coat that he withdrew from Unnir.

The hawk wing coat.

Siri and Heda flinched at the same time.

Siri remembered the thing they had spoken of and glared at the gryphons and Heda, who hadn't heard of the plan, didn't know what to do and moved towards Tae Ho.

However, Tae Ho didn't look at the two of them. As soon as he wore the wing coat, he glared at the sky and yelled, "Chant!"

Tae Ho became a big hawk and flew to the sky.

Siri let out a sigh of relief unconsciously and Heda flinched again.

"Uh... Should I have told them to fight together?"

Ragnar, who had planned the tactic, laughed awkwardly and then Heda said with a casual face, "It's not like that!"

However, her face was red. The embarrassment of a person whose thoughts had been read could be seen on her.

'Her childish side didn't change at all.'

Ragnar laughed refreshingly. Because it was good to see this side of Heda. After 'that day' a lot of things changed in Idun's legion.

"Anyways, let's keep watching."

Ragnar moved his eyes to the sky in consideration of Heda, who didn't know what to do.

&

Tae Ho executed the hawk's breathing he had learned from Ragnar. He flew higher and faster with strong strokes of his wings.

The one Tae Ho was aiming for was the gryphon that had lost its balance, having dodged Tae Ho's sword.

The strategy was simple. He would get on it however he could.

[Bewildered]

[Wild Gryphon (♀)]

Just like Ragnar had said, the two of them were female. One of them saw Tae Ho approach them at an unbelievable speed and

increased its speed, but it was pointless. For Tae Ho, who was in the shape of a simple hawk, being faster than the lion-bodied gryphon could be said to be a natural law of nature.

Tae Ho caught up to the gryphon in an instant and took hold of it with his claws. The moment his claws carved into it, the gryphon let out a roar filled with pain and twisted its body.

“Chant!”

Tae Ho recited the chant again and hurriedly put strength on his legs. He grabbed its waist tightly and activated “The One That Handles Dragons’.

The red letters started to become white. They weren’t green yet but he could control it to a certain extent.

Tae Ho took out the rope of the hunter immediately and put it on the neck of the gryphon. Then the eyes of the gryphon turned calm.

A smile appeared on Tae Ho’s face. It was because the white words changed to green.

However, he couldn’t be satisfied with just that. It wasn’t because there was one more wild gryphon remaining, however.

In the first place, the real objective Tae Ho and Ragnar were aiming for wasn’t the one he had caught. This was just a bait for the real one.

The remaining gryphon cried towards the direction it first appeared from. Just like he had heard from Ragnar, he made the gryphon he had caught cry. It was quite a bright cry compared to the one in front of them.

“It’s coming.” Ragnar said from the ground. Siri could also sense it approaching. Its appearance was completely different from a normal gryphon.

Papapapapak!

Small birds flew up from the forest and made some noise. They were escaping because of the rage they felt.

Alpha Male.

The strongest male that led a pack.

The gryphons showed a similar ecology to the lions, as if their lion bodies weren't for nothing. One strong male commanded several females and made a group called a pride.

The alpha males didn't usually move. They also didn't participate in the hunts. Becoming stronger by eating the things the female gryphons brought it was their role.

However, this situation was different.

Tae Ho had taken its female. And the other one had requested assistance.

If it still didn't move in this situation, then a pride couldn't be maintained. And just like Ragnar had expected, the alpha male showed itself.

[Enraged Alpha Male]

[Wild Gryphon (♂)]

Its size was as twice as big as the female gryphons. Seeing it flying with strength made it look like a tank.

Tae Ho gulped saliva drily and glared at it. Not killing it and restraining it wasn't as easy as it seemed. If he made a mistake he would be the one to die.

However, that made his heart vaguely beat. It seemed like he was challenging a new title.

“But before that...”

There was one thing he had to check.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior (Synchro rate 20%)]

The synchro rate had increased from 19% to 20%. It was the

result of capturing a female gryphon, as it was right before 20% when he beat the fire giant along with Rasgrid.

It was just like he had aimed for. He could now feel that he could see the mechanism in the increase of the synchro rate.

In addition, he was certain that there would be a change at 20% just like there had been one at 10%.

[Saga: The Warrior's Equipment]

The Sword of the Warrior had changed to that. It hadn't stopped there and a new small story had been added.

[Saga: The Hammer of the Blacksmith Doesn't Slip]

The saga that had been added to the record of the weapons Kalsted had used.

The moment Tae Ho saw the title of the new saga, he nearly fell from the female gryphon, but he somehow maintained his balance. He had understood the effect of the saga instinctively.

'How crazy.' He laughed and cursed at the same time. He glared at the Alpha Male that was still charging at him and activated his saga.

[Saga: The Hammer of the Blacksmith Doesn't Slip]

The shape of a huge man holding on to a hammer appeared at Tae Ho's back. The man, who had a black beard, smirked and then hit down onto the hunter's rope with his hammer.

Kang~

A light shone on the hunter's rope with a pleasing sound.

The strengthening of an item.

The devil's content that also existed in Dark Age!

Kalsted was Dark Age's best warrior, and countless weapons had passed through his hands. And obviously enough, most of them had passed through the strengthening blacksmiths.

Countless weapons were destroyed by the strengthening failure.

There were even weapons he couldn't retrieve because they had been pulverized.

Only a minority succeeded. However, the weapons that survived the hands of the blacksmiths could become much stronger.

The stories of the weapons that piled up like that.

The saga of the broken weapons that could inevitably accompany the 'Warrior's Equipment'.

The shape of the man smiled refreshingly and disappeared. Tae Ho looked at the hunter's rope through the 'Eyes of the Dragon'.

The blue words became gold, which were a rank above that. Although it was a temporary effect, it was enough.

'Come on, a strengthened weapon is a first for you, right?'

Tae Ho removed the rope from the female gryphon and smiled brightly while looking at the Alpha Male which was starting to make big circles. It was that smile that Siri said was evil.

< Episode 15 – Alpha Male (2) > End

Episode 16/Chapter 1: Legend (1)

The alpha name had a name. It was the name given by the ones that came to visit this forest, to the strongest one that led the strongest gryphon pride for 4 years.

Rolo.

Rolo was in a really enraged state. Actually, he was in a really good mood a few minutes ago. Because he had smelled the blood of horses. he saw the three female gryphons, that were the strongest even inside the pride, fly up and imagine the horse meat he would soon eat.

It was hard to wait because he hadn't eaten horse meat for a long time. Although he remained calm because he couldn't show an unsightly look to the remaining females, what he wanted was to go hunting with them.

When would they return? They wouldn't be eating among themselves, right?

While he was thinking of such things he heard a cry. It was a rescuing request from a female. This sound was surprising enough, but the sound it heard next shocked him even more. A female of the pride was showing its cute side to someone else!

He couldn't forgive it. If it was a new male, then he would peak its eyes with his beak. There was no way that the horse, that was merely food, threatened them.

Rolo flew quickly. After fluttering his strong wings, he saw a shocking scene. One of the females was collapsed on the ground, and another one was crying as if it didn't know what to do. And the last one, the female he treasured the most was letting an unknown guy ride on her.

Rolo roared. His cry filled with rage shook the ground and sky. The female that requested help cheered as if telling him to come

quickly.

However, Rolo wasn't satisfied. It wasn't because it was afraid of the human riding on the female. The female was putting a relaxed expression and the one above her was smiling.

He would take him in an instant. After throwing him to the ground he would crush his head and chest with his beak.

Rolo charged towards the human like a thunder. However, he could only turn his direction before snatching him. It was because the human riding on the female jumped up.

The human couldn't fly. So he could snatch him when he landed but this human was a bit different. He made a turn on the air and then transformed into a hawk and charged into him.

He was bewildered but Rolo rather felt pleased. Because a big hawk was more delicious than a human. In addition, it seemed like more places to eat has been added.

He was planning to teach the arrogant hawk that was attacking him, the head of the pride and the ruler of the forest, what an aerial attack was. However, it seemed like the hawk didn't have any thoughts of fighting that the moment it was about to exchange blows with Rolo it twisted its body sideways as if running away.

Rolo wasn't disappointed. Because making quick turns and chasing was Rolo's specialty. If he fled in that state, then it would be better for him because he would be able to catch up.

But another disaster occurred. The hawk transformed into a human again instead of flying past him. Even before Rolo could do something the human got on his back.

Rolo roared again. He shook his body trying to make the human fall and tried to fly fast.

However, the human was a bit faster. The moment he was about to flutter his wings the hands of the human got placed in his back, and Rolo fell in a weird feeling.

‘My, my strength is getting drained.’

His body didn’t move as he wished. It didn’t stop there that his rage had weirdly subsided. Although it had certainly tried to fly fiercely, he was soon flying softly.

‘Thi, this isn’t it. I can’t be like this.’

His consciousness faded more and more. He just didn’t want to think about anything. However, Rolo tried his best to get ahold of himself. He remembered the rage burning in his chest.

‘Wake up! You are waking up Rolo!’

It was when he was telling himself to wake up.

A rope got laced in his neck. He was sure it was the arrogant human. But the moment it got tied in his neck he started to think of the human as the human master.

‘My, my strength is draining again.....’

His will to resist disappeared. And the cry of the bewildered female couldn’t make him feel anything

[Saga: The one that handles dragons]

[Strengthened hunter’s rope]

[The feeling to resist disappeared]

[Alpha male: Rolo]

The moment the red letters turned green, Tae Ho let out a sigh of relief. He maintained ‘the one that handles dragon’s that he had executed with all his strength and then took out the Beast’s saddle from Unnir.

As the Alpha male was flying too smoothly, it was also easy to place the saddle on it. When the saddle transformed into a suitable size, Tae Ho found it easier to control it.

“Tae Ho!”

Heda’s voice was heard from below. As he turned around while

smiling in a good mood, he saw that she was waving towards him. Siri was still vigilant of the remaining gryphon but her eyes were smiling.

“I got him!”

His strength was good just like its size. Although its physical capabilities weren't as good as Siri that had transformed through the dragon wing coat his flight ability would be a level above hers.

‘In addition, it's cool.’

It had the same eyes as a bald eagle. Even though it was calm because of ‘the one that handles dragons’ and the hunter's rope, its eyes were still sharp.

“I just have to get reins and armor for it.”

The three set in Dark Age were the reins, armor, and saddle. Although it was vague for the armor, if you had the reins it would become easier to control it.

Tae Ho looked at the direction Rolo came flying from. Because of ‘the one that handles dragon's he could read Rolo's thoughts a bit. It seemed like there were some female gryphons remaining in this nest.

‘Let's go down for now.’

It seemed like the first gryphon he had caught was released from the effects of ‘the one that handles dragons’ that was looking at them with bewildered eyes. He thought that he should capture Rolo and then capture the remaining female gryphons or not.

“Tae Ho!”

Heda's voice was heard again. But it was different to before. Tae Ho got surprised at her yell that was close to a shout and turned to look at Heda hurriedly. Heda and even Siri and Ragnar were looking at the same direction. It wasn't at Tae Ho but behind him.

Popong!

The sound was heard late, just like what happened with thunders. A signal beam exploded from a far place. It was a red signal signaling an emergency.

In addition, it wasn't only one. One more signal beam surged up from another place. It was also red this time.

Tae Ho hurriedly turned Rolo and went to the ground. As soon as they landed Ragnar approached and said.

"It's an emergency signal. Looking that they set off at the same time, the troops that were searching the surroundings must have been attacked."

It has already been a few days since Valhalla became aware of Garmr's soul fragment. It was obvious for them to search a wide radius from the remaining traces of the Great War.

This place also belonged to a far place of Asgard. The closest post two days in a carriage to reach. The only ones that could help them right now were Tae Ho's group.

"We are splitting the group in two."

In the first place, as it was merely searching a wide area, only lowest ranked warriors and some inferior ranked warriors would have been dispatched. Although there may be an intermediate ranked warrior among them, even if that was the case Tae Ho's group would still be of help.

Tae Ho nodded at the word of splitting their group. Because it was also the most effective method for him.

Ragnar got on top of Rolo. Heda transformed into a big and beautiful swan and made Siri ride her.

It was proper for Ragnar and Heda to go to different places. That's why Tae Ho, that became able to fly because of the gryphon went with Ragnar that couldn't fly and Siri getting on Heda was also a natural thing.

“Be careful.”

Heda left those words while looking at them and flew up. Siri was grabbing onto Heda's neck and said something towards them really quickly. It seemed like she was wishing them to be safe like Heda.

“Let's go.”

Ragnar grabbed Tae Ho's waist. His arms were as strong as steel.

Tae Ho felt a strange feeling and urged Rolo. Rolo flew up with its big wings.

&

The traces of the Great War weren't only present in Svartalfheim but were scattered in places where Asgard was in control of, just like Asgard, Midgard, and Vanaheim.

After passing through the mountains that were connected with the vast forest, a plain land appeared as if the scene he had seen until now was a lie. This landscape was the aftermath left by the Great War.

A signal beam exploded from a really far place. It was obvious that if it wasn't a warrior of Valhalla with quite a lot of accumulated runes, they wouldn't even have been able to recognize it properly.

Because of that, Tae Ho felt anxious even though he was already flying at a fast speed. He didn't know who was in danger, but his heart was moved by the fact that it was fired by the warriors of Valhalla.

Perhaps it may be because he had seen the warriors in the trace of Great War in Svartalfheim.

The warriors of Valhalla that were prideful. Tae Ho had already become one of them.

“Over there!”

Ragnar yelled. A battle was occurring on the ground. Tens of

warriors were fighting against a big monster, and you could even see three giants that were 7 meters tall at the center.

“I will take the giants. You take the sky.”

Ragnar spoke quickly and then loosened his arms that were holding onto his waist. Then he jumped down the moment Rolo passed over the battlefield.

Although it was tens of meters high, it wasn't that big of a problem for Ragnar that had once been a top ranked warrior. Ragnar's body, that was falling down, started to emanate white light and that sight was beautiful to behold.

Tae Ho looked below his feet instead of still looking at Ragnar. The reason Ragnar entrusted Tae Ho the sky was because the enemies weren't only in the ground.

Now, there weren't only the harpies he was accustomed to, but there were also wyvern riders which he hadn't seen since Black Fortress attacking the warriors of Valhalla. Defeating them was Tae Ho's role.

“Let's go Rolo!”

If you got a new car you have to step on the pedal!

Although they hadn't known for long, Rolo elevated Tae Ho from being a human to human-nim, was faithful to his orders. When he spread his big wings and let out a roar, all the harpies and wyverns turned to look at them.

“Tae Ho!”

“Idun's warrior!”

The voices of the warriors burst out. Although Tae Ho couldn't distinguish them one by one, there were many familiar voices.

Tae Ho created a strong wind through the 'charge of the warrior' and looked at the ground after passing by the harpies. He could see a familiar troop flag and familiar faces.

‘Thor’s legion!’

They were the lowest ranked warriors that had taken part in the expedition of Black Fortress with him. And there was also an inferior ranked warrior among them.

“Bracky!”

“Uoooooooo!”

Bracky roared as if answering to Tae Ho’s call. He, who was facing one of the giants, had small blue sparks around his body and was also bigger than the last time he saw him.

[Saga: He’s the son of a God]

He was a warrior so outstanding he was called as Thor’s son in Midgard. Just like Tae Ho’s saga had evolved, his saga had also done the same.

Even though he was facing against three giants, he could know the reason Thor’s legion didn’t break down easily. It was because of he, who wasn’t excessive to call him as a little giant, was there.

Babang!

Thunder fell down in that instant. Everyone covered their ears at the loud sound shaking the entire battlefield and turned their eyes. It was Ragnar. He fell down from the sky like a God and landed on the ground with a loud sound. The moment his sword that was covered with white light touched the ground, one of the giants collapsed. It was completely split from its shoulder to its groin.

It was a really superhuman scene. In addition, it didn’t stop there. Ragnar raised his sword and yelled.

“Ragnar Lodbrok orders you! Warriors of Valhalla! Fight!”

His shout covered the battlefield. And his yell woke up the warriors. It gave courage to the warriors and gave them strength.

Tae Ho admired.

Ragnar's shout wasn't a saga. It was really just a shout. However, this was the results of Ragnar Lodbrok's strong charisma.

“Ragnar!”

“Ragnar Lodbrok!”

The warriors of Valhalla chered. Just like what happened in Ullr's legion, they also started to call his name.

Did you see?

Ragnar glanced at him. Tae Ho just smirked at his smile that seemed like telling him that he was this amazing and then he turned his head.

They were still in the middle of fighting. They could listen to the stories after the fight.

“Let's go first.”

He could do more things as he had obtained a gryphon. Lance Charging wasn't the only thing Tae Ho could do. The only thing that had advanced wasn't only the 'sword of the warrior;

[Saga: The charge of the warrior is like a storm]

Until now, the only wind was added to it. However, it was different now.

Because the storm that swept up the battlefield in the election of the national representatives wasn't a normal one.

A sparking sound was heard at the wings of Rolo, that was gliding through the wind. The small sparks got connected and then mixed in with the wind.

And then, the thing that was made. The thing that occurred.

“Thunderstorm.”

Tae Ho mumbled. He reproduced the battle of that day along with Rolo.

< Episode 16 – Legend (1) > End

Episode 16/Chapter 2: Legend (2)

Rolo's flight was fierce. And the storm and lighting that followed up were even fiercer.

The harpies that got swept let out cries. Their feathers got burn and they got burnt.

The harpies weren't the only ones that fell like leaves. Tae Ho had also charged through the wyvern riders. As it flew like it was about to body slam them but changed the trajectory at the last moment, the wyverns couldn't withstand it. There were some that fell because they had lost balance and there were even some that got burnt by the lightning and yelled.

Rolo gained more strength the more he flew. Tae Ho scattered the storm and the thunder that was in the tip of the wings and increased his speed.

Pzzzzzt!

The remaining thunder exploded in consecution. Tae Ho cheered at Rolo's big wings and looked at the battlefield.

Ragnar's sword was cutting the head of a giant. It looked like there would be nothing that the sword with white light couldn't cut.

Bracky didn't stay still either. He was able to concentrate solely on the giant in front of him thanks to Ragnar and Tae Ho and then dealt a massive blow with his big hammer.

Bang!

The first attack was at its ankle. The giant lost balance and Bracky crushed the knee of the giant. As the giant lowered his body with a yell, he hit his hip now.

The sound of bones getting crushed was terrible be it a human or a giant and it also couldn't endure it.

The giant that couldn't endure the pain laid down on the ground. Thanks to that, his head got low and Bracky smiled brightly and hit the chin of the giant.

A cry exploded out instead of a yell. As blood started to pour down from the mouth of the giant, Bracky took a big breath. He moved to show compassion to the giant.

Bang!

The last attack hit in the crown of its head. The giant didn't move anymore.

“Whew.”

Bracky let out a long breath. White steam was surging from his hot body.

‘Certainly.’

It really was Bracky. He wasn't called the son of a God in the mortal world for nothing.

Tae Ho looked at Ragnar again. He didn't let the fact that the aerial forces and a giant, two factors that caught your eye the most, had disappeared.

He raised his sword. And it was naturally followed by the gazes of the warriors and their cheers.

“Ragnar!”

“Ragnar!”

“Bracky!”

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

The warriors yelled the name of the new warrior and a nickname. Tae Ho, that was called with the long nickname, let out a laugh and turned in the air. There were some monsters, that had lost their will to fight, that gave up on fighting and started to flee. It was a complete victory.

“Tae Ho!”

The call that was like thunder came from Bracky. Even if that wasn't the case, Tae Ho was going to land on the ground, and then he landed next to Bracky.

“Bracky.”

Bracky started to laugh refreshingly when Tae Ho called him and then he turned to look at Rolo and asked.

“And her? To which legion does this Valkyrie belong to? Is she from Idun's legion?”

Bracky even bowed towards Rolo while waiting for an answer. It seemed like he completely thought that it was a Valkyrie.

However, Tae Ho answered with warm eyes.

“No, it's just a gryphon.”

“What? It's not a Valkyrie?”

“It really is just a gryphon. In addition, it's a male, male.”

“Impossible! Then you aren't the warrior that rode on a Valkyrie anymore?”

“It wasn't a Valkyrie.”

“You are too much!”

The warriors near Bracky started to say. Just what was too much?

“Anyways, Tae Ho. It's an important thing. We can't stop here.”

Bracky took one more step towards Tae Ho and said hurriedly. His eyes and voice were completely serious.

“What are you talking about?”

Ragnar, that had soon approached them, asked naturally. Bracky looked at Ragnar reflexively and then cheered with round eyes.

“Ragnar Lodbrok!”

“Right, I’m Ragnar. So speak. Why can’t you stop?”

Originally Ragnar would have accepted Bracky’s surprise, but they were in the middle of a battle right now. As Ragnar came out heavily Bracky also got a hold of himself and said quickly.

“We found a thing called Garmr’s soul fragment. However, we found it at the same time the Giants did.”

“Are you saying that the Giants have already retrieved it?”

“Um, it’s a bit different but it’s similar. Anyways, they left some forces to stop us and that force was the one we just fought against.”

Looking at how he spoke, it seemed like they were chasing at Garmr’s soul fragment as a competition.

“We did a request for assistance, but it’s not the time to be waiting. We have to chase them immediately!”

Bracky pointed a direction with his hammer that was stained with the blood of a giant. The majority of the monsters were fleeing to the same direction.

As Bracky and the Warriors finished their explanation of the situation, they turned their bodies to depart. However, Ragnar grabbed him.

“What about the scale of the enemy? Simply chasing them isn’t always the best option.”

If it was someone else he would have just ignored him. But these words came from none other than Ragnar. Bracky seemed to have endured himself and answered quickly.

“It’s similar to the ones that were here.”

“Wait, then what did they move for?”

If they had a force like that, wouldn’t have been better to massacre Bracky’s force?

Bracky hit his chest as if Tae Ho’s question made him frustrated.

“Ugh! The fragment of a soul is moving! Precisely speaking it’s stuck on the head of a hog!”

It was a bit difficult to understand but Ragnar seemed to have understood it. He nodded and said.

“So the beast transformed because of Garmr’s soul fragment.....So you are saying that not even the giants could completely capture it.”

They may still be chasing it by now.

“Let’s hurry. If it’s like Bracky had said we still have a chance.”

Ragnar got on Rolo right after that and grabbed Tae Ho’s hip. However, Tae Ho looked at Bracky and the others instead of flying up.

Although the situation was urgent, the difference in mobility was too big. Did he have to go first with Ragnar and buy time?

It seemed like Bracky felt Tae Ho’s worry that he brought out bones of a monster from his waist and spread it on the ground.

“Tanngnjostr!”

When he yelled a weird name, the bones that were on the floor started to connect with each other and formed the shape of a small goat. And when Bracky took off the leather that was covering his shoulders and put it on top of the bones, a surprising thing happened.

The bones and leather got connected and flesh started to be created inside. It then became a real goat and then transformed into a huge goat in an instant.

The goat was so big that several warriors would be able to get on it.

While Tae Ho was looking at the goat with a dumbfounded face, Ragnar let out a low exclamation.

“Impressive. For an inferior ranked warrior to have

Tanngnjostr.”

Tanngnjostr was one of the treasures of Thor’s legion that was said that it was able to revive itself countless times if you just had its bones and leather.

It was a bit terrible to say this, but there was a time that they traveled with Tanngnjostr and fed on it as they could revive it whenever they wanted.

The Tanngnjostrs Thor’s legion had wasn’t only one. But even if that was the case, it was too precious a treasure for an inferior ranked warrior to possess it.

You could know with this how extraordinary of a warrior Bracky was and how Thor’s legion thought of him.

Bracky’s mood turned good at Ragnar’s admiration and then rode on Tanngnjostr. Followed by him, seven warriors that looked especially strong, hung on its back.

“We will go first! Some of you will stay back to treat the injured and the remaining one shall follow us!”

“Ou!”

The warriors replied at Bracky’s order. Lastly, Bracky looked at Tae Ho and Ragnar and Ragnar nodded. Tae Ho made Rolo depart.

Rolo flew up high. Tanngnjostr crossed the land with a speed that didn’t lose to Rolo.

And how much had passed since that? Tae Ho, that was looking at a far place, could discover the enemy forces. He also heard Bracky’s voice from the ground.

“Over there!”

A hog that was as big as Tanngnjostr was lying down on the ground, and orc shamans were gathered near it. Just like Bracky had said, almost a hundred monsters were along a giant.

The giant, that you could know was the leader at a glance, looked

at them. The monsters also started to raise their voices and took on fighting postures.

Tanngnjostr raised its speed without a hint. Ragnar glared at the armored giant and then spoke towards Tae Ho in a low voice.

“It’s only the giant. I will entrust the rest to you and Bracky.”

“Ragnar?”

“Go to the fragment! I will take the giant!”

Ragnar threw himself into the air after yelling just like he did in the last battle.

Tae Ho looked at the ground while throwing the lingering attachments. Bracky’s group started the fight while still being on top of Tanngnjostr. It seemed like they didn’t fear anything even though they were twenty times their number.

“Tae Ho! We are going to the hog!”

Bracky jumped down Tanngnjostr and then started to charge towards the hog.

“Thor’s legion! Destroy the monster!”

“Ou!”

The warriors that were riding Tanngnjostr started to throw their axes or fire arrows while circling around it. Tae Ho looked at Bracky, that had an axe and a hammer in his hands, and thought of the machine that cut grass. Although it was a weird comparison, his reckless charge towards the monsters and cutting them down was just like that.

Ragnar started the battle with the giant. He took a peek with the ‘eyes of the dragon’ and saw that it was weaker than the one Rasgrid had fought, but it was by no means easier to handle.

However, the one battling was none other than Ragnar. Tae Ho focused on his fight once again.

The orc shamans surrounding the monster hog started to hurriedly recite chants. Although he didn't know what they were doing, it didn't seem good to leave them alone.

“Let's go Rolo!”

Rolo answered with a big cry at Tae Ho's order. Tae Ho grabbed the Executioner's sword after passing over the heads of the monsters in an instant. He swung his sword in consecution on top of Rolo that was flying low and the orc shamans didn't have a means to resist him.

Rolo was certainly an Alpha Male that led a pride. It didn't simply fly that it could run on the ground with its four legs and it even started to take down the orc shamans with its sharp beak and claws.

As the number of the orc shamans got halved, a change occurred from the hog. The hog that was breathing roughly raised all of its furs and rose up and then started to bite and crush the orc shamans.

“Kuaaang!”

The monster hog roared. Just like Garmr's soul fragment was in the trace of the Great War, the chest of the hog was dyed in blood. It checked the battlefield with its yellow eyes and then focused his target. It was towards the one charging towards it.

“Bracky!”

Tae Ho called Bracky. Even the monsters that had gathered to stop Bracky however they scattered because of the monster hog.

However, Bracky didn't stop. He also charged towards the hog and raised his hammer high.

“Tae Ho! A big thunder!”

It was a sudden request. However, Tae Ho seemed to have understood it a bit. No, he felt like he just had to do it even if he

didn't know what he was talking about.

“I'm going!”

[Saga: The charge of a warrior is like a storm]

Rolo, that had Tae Ho on top of him, passed over Bracky. He spread a thunderstorm and Bracky got satisfied. He laughed and activated his saga.

[Saga: Thunder enters his hammer]

It was a thing of the past.

However, Bracky remembered clearly.

The day that a rainstorm fell down. The day that the rage of the God of lightning fell from the sky.

He was fighting against a huge monster. It was a terrible bear monsters that were made by the shamans.

The moment Bracky's hammer hit the chest of the bear, lightning fell down. And the lightning that fell down from the sky finished the bear.

It was a coincidence.

However, Bracky didn't think it that way. And the ones that had been present that day also didn't think that way. He believed in the miracle that happened in front of his eyes and that was made as a story and transmitted.

The hammer that calls for lightnings.

The one that has been blessed by Thor!

“Uooooooooo!”

A thunderstorm entered Bracky's hammer. Bracky, that was swinging thunder and lighting that was even bigger than his hammer, made him resemble the God of thunder Thor.

The monster hog tried to stop its charge. But it was too late. In addition, Bracky wasn't planning on letting the hog go at all.

Bang!

The attack hit the mouth of the monster. Thunder exploded and the monster hog let out a cry and fell sideways.

The monsters froze at the amazing sight. However, Bracky cursed inwardly. He had attacked with all his might but he wasn't able to beat it. In addition, he wasn't in a good state. Thanks to the blow that contained the thunderstorm behind it, there was an aftershock in his body even though it was strengthened. It seemed to be temporary but his arm didn't move at all.

The monster hog that had become bloody raised its head. The monster that became mad because of the pain tried to crush down Bracky however it could.

He would die.

It was for a moment but he did think of that. Thanks to that Bracky just glared at the monster instead of closing his eyes.

But he could see it because of that. He could hear.

The thing that crossed the sky. The small voice that was heard like a miracle.

It's fine Bracky.

This wasn't the end. There's still more remaining.

Because Kalsted's storm hit twice!

[Saga: Dragon's charge]

Bracky looked at the second lightning. He saw the beautiful trajectory that was drawn in the sky.

The thing that fell down was a lightning.

Draconic Ballista!

Bang!

A loud sound exploded with the lightning. The monster, that was hit on its side, rolled on the ground roughly. It could stop after

rolling for a while and crushing down the other monsters.

It was the result made by one Lance Charge. Bracky admired the miracle that occurred in front of his eyes.

“Amazing!”

Tae Ho heard his yell in the sky. He didn't use the Sword piece on purpose. The Heavy Lance got destroyed and Tae Ho's right arm wasn't fine either. If it wasn't for Idun's blessing his arm would have been twisted or broken even if it was strengthened by the runes.

Rolo let out a groaning sound while fluttering its wings. The attack was that powerful.

But it was enough with this. The satisfied Tae Ho looked at the ground again. He saw Bracky that was running to retrieve Garmr's soul fragment, Ragnar that had slain the giant, and the warriors of Thor's legion that were driving Tanngnjotr recklessly.

That's why he could see it.

Ragnar, that had slain the giant, opened his eyes widely and looked at the sky and then turned to look at Bracky and yelled.

“Bracky! Stop!”

How?

Tae Ho also looked at the sky and could know then.

A black calamity was approaching.

< Episode 16 – Legend (2) > End

Episode 16/Chapter 3: Legend (3)

The Giant of the Night, Avalt, was inside the darkness. However, he could see several things at the same time.

One of the five commanders of the magician King, Utgard Loki.

That name wasn't low at all. It was a place a normal giant couldn't climb to at all.

Because of that, Avalt recognized his allies. Although each of them had their own defects, they were strong enough, even when taking those into account.

The Giant of Strength, Harad, disliked Avalt. And it was the same for Avalt. However, just like it was said previously, they recognized each other and they had a comradeship, even though it was weak.

Because of that, he was feeling regret.

'We were too rash.'

He knew what had caused that one big mistake. And the Magician king was not responding to it. It would be that he didn't tolerate two mistakes. He would have wanted to make some achievements, even when forcing it. Even though it was a compliment or a scolding, he must want the attention of the magician King.

The Giant of Strength, Harad, was strong. If an existence like him moved, Asgard wouldn't stay still. His existence could be felt from a distant place.

"So hurry up."

Finish it quickly. Retrieve the fragment of soul and return.

The Giant of Night, Avalt, spread the darkness. It hid the existence of the Giant of Strength when he descended to Asgard, even though it was by a small amount.

&

Heda climbed to the chest of a giant and then looked at her surroundings.

They had won the battle. She could arrive on time and defeat a giant, and the warriors of Valhalla defeated the monsters.

Siri had also performed well. After she had a short conversation with an inferior-ranked warrior of Thor's legion, she started to approach Heda.

She already knew the general situation. It was because she had overheard the conversation Siri and the inferior-ranked warrior had. The sensitive ears of a Valkyrie could differentiate several sounds ringing in the battlefield at the same time, one by one.

And the place Tae Ho went to would also be fine. Based on the words of the inferior-ranked warrior, the best forces had been gathered there. In addition, Ragnar was with them. Although he had retired because of a fatal injury, he was still someone that had once climbed to the top rank. He would be able to crush down ordinary danger.

That's why she was able to do it. She pressed down her anxiousness and it wouldn't be too late if she flew again along with Siri and the warriors.

But it was at that moment that Heda raised her head and knew. That was why she was shocked..

How?

How did an existence of that caliber-?

Siri became flustered at Heda's sudden change but then she wore the same expression. It was because she could also feel it. Even if one wasn't a Valkyrie that Gods were dependent on, the uneasy aura could still be felt.. It felt like that strength was enough to cover the entire plains.

The warriors of Thor's legion turned to look at the same direction at the same time. They could also feel it now. Even if one was dull enough, they couldn't not know about it.

A storm was approaching. It could only be expressed that way..

“Tae Ho!”

Heda, who yelled like thunder, couldn't endure it anymore. She jumped up and transformed into a swan. Even before Siri could yell something towards her she had already flown up high.

Please, please, please!

Don't let Tae Ho be at that place. Let him be at a distant place just like Siri and the others!

Heda's wings started to move faster, and golden light started to shine on the tips.

&

That had been a really sudden change.

The sky had been dyed in black, as if an eclipse had occurred.

The ground shook. The ground which was already devastated started to scream.

He could see it but he couldn't react. It seemed as if time had stopped.

A black meteorite fell to the ground. It was just like looking at a star falling down.

There was no sound. Nor an explosion.

It just existed there on the ground.

Giant.

The one that looked down at everything and the ones that were as proud as the sky.

It was a black and red giant.

It was really tall. It seemed to be the same size as the giant that had appeared in Black Fortress.

However, they weren't the same.

Different from the lowest-ranked giant, which seemed to have been made by gathering rocks, it couldn't be compared to the complete giant in front of them. It was a workpiece made to have a shape that could exert the most strength, and the most battling one.

Its shoulders were broad and its arms were hard. The muscles that showed from beneath the black and red armor resembled metal.

His eyes were burning from between the helmet, which had no decorations or symbol.

The Giant of Strength, Harad. One of the fingers of the magician King.

Thor's legion, that was running to that side, stopped in their tracks. They couldn't charge forward anymore. They could only stare, as if they were looking at a fierce storm.

And that was lucky for them.

Because they couldn't reach the battlefield. Because they could distance themselves a bit more from the giant.

The giant swung his arm. It was a light movement. However, the ground and the sky shook with just that. What exactly it did couldn't be grasped, but the result was in front of them.

Tanngnjostr disappeared.

Precisely speaking, it broke into pieces and was scattered. The warriors riding it disappeared along with it without even being able to scream.

Bracky couldn't breathe. He couldn't even feel that he was out of breath.

Just what had happened?

What was the existence in front of their eyes?

The giant looked at Bracky and swung his arms again. Bracky couldn't move. It was the same for Rolo and Tae Ho.

The battlefield had stopped excluding the giant.

Bracky was fated to disappear just like the Tanngnjostr.

If only he wasn't in this place.

There was no sound.

However, the ground split up. The strength of the arm that was swung by the giant got offset and was dispersed.

When everyone had stopped, he moved. He stood in front of Bracky and swung his sword.

The crack had been made like that.

Bracky could finally breathe. Rolo, which was falling from the sky without strength, also got a hold of itself and started to flutter its wings. Tae Ho also breathed roughly and looked at the one that stood up against the giant.

“Ragnar Lodbrok.”

The Giant of Strength, Harad, spoke. Ragnar smiled faintly.

“You are crazy. For you to come here yourself!”

“You have fallen down.”

The Giant of Strength recognized Ragnar. It was impossible to not recognize the top-ranked warrior that had battled in the Great War and there was also his legend in his times as a Viking.

That's why he couldn't act, even though time was precious right now. He put on a smile that had joy and compassion behind it.

Ragnar Lodbrok had fallen. He was too weak. In addition, Tae Ho and Bracky didn't know, but Harad did.

Ragnar was now at his limit. Even though he had merely faced inferior giants, he was already exhausted.

He did have the strength, but he couldn't display it properly.

That was the reason why Ragnar could only retire.

'There's no time.'

Ragnar and Harad thought the same thing.

However, the meaning was different.

Harad needed to hurry. And Ragnar had to extend this confrontation for as long as possible.

The two exchanged glances. Ragnar and Harad laughed together and moved at the same time.

Bang!

Harad's fist hit down the hog, and the hog was extinguished at his attack. Its leather and muscles burnt down and Garm's soul fragment also disappeared, as if it had evaporated. The fragment that was stuck on its head rolled on the ground.

Ragnar swung his sword. Although he was at a distance that wouldn't reach the giant, it did. The force which could only be expressed as a sword slash, aimed for the arm of the giant and prevented him from picking up the fragment.

"Run." Ragnar smiled bitterly and said. Harad swung his fist once again as Bracky couldn't react.

The ground exploded. The monsters near it got swept up with just the wind generated.

Ragnar picked up Bracky, who was standing dumbfoundedly instead of resisting and started to run. He entrusted his body to the wind.

And the giant started to chase Ragnar. The chasing speed coming from its huge body was amazing.

“Ragnar Lodbrok!”

He had fallen. He had already retired. But his head still had value. The legendary head of the Viking King could become the best offering to the magician King.

Harad’s fist hit the air again. Bracky got ahold of himself at the feeling that a huge hail was approaching.

Actually, Ragnar wasn’t that different. However, he rolled his body instead of breaking down at the hail. He tried to create some distance while riding in the wind.

Ragnar surged high into the sky. Harad glared at the sky, and the monsters that were unable to breathe properly fell to the ground. And Rolo fluttered its wings while it began to lose consciousness.

“Ragnar!”

It was Tae Ho. He controlled Rolo with the ‘One That Handles Dragons’. He made Rolo fly up forcefully and tried to grab Ragnar.

Tae Ho extended his hand. Ragnar looked at his hand and then looked at Tae Ho’s face. He was smirking, even though it was a serious situation.

“You really are extraordinary.”

At the very least, Sigurd.

He wasn’t someone that should die in this place. He couldn’t die.

“Flee.” Ragnar spoke again. He threw Bracky instead of grabbing his hand. Tae Ho stumbled while grabbing Bracky reflexively and then hit his chest lightly.

“Ragnar!” Tae Ho yelled again. Ragnar smiled and turned back. He threw himself towards Harad, just like Tae Ho could do.

He would save Tae Ho and Bracky.

He would also stop the giant from taking the fragment of a soul.

And he would buy as much time as he could.

Harad swung his fist once again towards Ragnar. It was different from the ones until now.

There was a strong force behind the wind. This time it could really be said that the hail could destroy everything.

Ragnar breathed out. He swung his sword, trying to find an opening in the hail. And then he passed through it like a lie and landed on the ground as if he was dancing.

How much could he endure? How many more breaths did he have?

Harad used a greater strength. His underlings started to descend from the sky.

Just what the hell was happening when he had just come to catch a gryphon?

Ragnar opened his lips and then whispered while storing the strength of magic. He told Tae Ho, who didn't flee even though he was told to do so.

It was the first thing Tae Ho asked when they first started with the classes.

If the intermediate rank is the stage where you handle the Strength of a God, what did you do at the superior and top rank?

It was still too early.

Even more than he thought.

But the situation was special. It wasn't the time to be saving it.

"I will teach you."

The strength of a superior-ranked warrior.

The new boundary he would have to face then.

Harad's strength had become the best. The fire that was covering his entire body made him look like a God of Fire.

And Ragnar raised his sword against Harad. He used the white

Strength of a God, the strength of the King of Gods, Odin.

‘The inferior rank is the process to reach the intermediate rank.’

It was also the same for the intermediate rank. It was all to reach the superior rank.

It didn’t only stop in inserting the Strength of a God in your weapon. It even surpassed the level of holding it in your body.

The origin of the strength of the warriors of Valhalla was their saga.

They added the Strength of a God to their stories.

Led their sagas to a higher place.

‘Passing through the anecdotes.’

Surpassing the legend to finally reach the myth.

[Mythology Ranked Saga]

[King of Vikings: Ragnar Lodbrok]

On top of the destroyed land, on the traces of the Great War, another myth began.

< Episode 16 – Legend (3) > End

Episode 16/Chapter 4: Legend (4)

He was an exalted king.

He was a brave navigator that had sailed to seas no one had ever dared to and had never been defeated once until Odin called him.

People remembered him.

And those people transmitted his name to the generations to come.

The start of the Vikings.

The king of all Vikings.

He carried a big round shield on his back and held the Viking sword Ulfberht with one hand.

The blue and red pigments painting his face made him look more flashy.

Ragnar took a deep breath. The cold air reaching his lungs cleared his head.

His eyes, resembling those of a wolf, that held mysteriousness and madness, flashed. A face was drawn in his face.

He was the one that was an explorer, plunderer, warrior, king, navigator, farmer and a strategist.

The images people believed in, imagined and remembered became one and created the first and most powerful Viking. The current Ragnar was an existence like that.

It had been a really long while. Nearly a hundred years. It was the first time after the Great War.

The giant of Strength, Harad, shivered and then smiled. Although he had come to this battlefield as if chased by anxiety, he was still a warrior. Now that he was facing a Great Warrior, he had also become a Great Warrior.

Red and black fire surged up from Harad's body. The self that was behind his fist was difficult to imagine.

"Damn." Ragnar cursed like a joke. It seemed as if he looked at another place for a moment and then charged forward.

"Ragnar!"

Harad laughed freshly and punched. Ragnar also swung his sword.

And at that moment Tae Ho knew why this battle had reached the boundary of mythology.

Kwagagagagang~!

An earthquake shook the ground. The ground split tens and hundreds of times with the epicenter at the center. The monsters that were near it got swept up and were shredded. This wasn't a fight between individuals anymore. They would have to rewrite the map because of this one attack.

The aftershock of the attack also affected the air. Rolo, which had lost consciousness for a moment, let out a cry but then regained consciousness. It got pushed back because of the strong wind.

Ragnar cursed while being inside the big dust cloud that arose. The clash just now wasn't simply an exchange of a fist and a sword. It was a competition of complicated and mysterious techniques that had the essences of them both melted in it.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

A loud sound exploded in consecution. The fist of the giant of Strength was able to shake the ground and sky. Just looking at strength, he was the best among the five fingers of the magician King.

Ragnar was small and he was big. However this wasn't a problem anymore. Harad's fists were precise and Ragnar dodged Harad's attacks, using his senses that were as sharp as a sword. He fended

off his fists with the Viking sword and at the same time threw the axe he had taken out.

It was small but strong. Not even Harad could see the meteor-like attack easily. The axe that had grazed Harad's waist split the ground with a white light. Smoke surged up from Harad's waist instead of blood.

It was merely 10 seconds. However, after the battle that was enough to kill thousands of people, Ragnar let out a curse. He had already reached his limit. He didn't even have the strength to use the small sagas inside the big ones.

It was really awful. He just had to stall for time but he couldn't even do that. The only way was to win with one attack.

‘One sword.’

Ragnar distanced himself from Harad. It was a really short interval but that was enough. Ragnar prepared the best attack he could execute.

But Harad also felt it. It was a terrifying thing. Even though he had fallen, he was still the Viking King. Even though the attack Ragnar was preparing hadn't been executed, it still made Harad really nervous.

Because of that Harad moved faster. He remembered the fact that Ragnar wasn't a simple warrior, but a King, and then attacked.

What he fired was red and black fireballs. And a strong wind, which was like hail, was added to that.

It wasn't towards Ragnar, but towards Thor's legion, the small existences that were overwhelmed at the mythical scene that was occurring in front of them and at Harad's appearance.

It was also a gamble for Harad.

If Ragnar ignored his attack, he wouldn't be able to dodge a fatal wound because his defenses were low since having executed the

earlier attack.

Ragnar moved and Harad smiled.

The black fireballs were cut off. The hail-like wind was split in two and scattered.

The warriors of Thor's legion realized instinctively that death had just passed in front of their eyes. Ragnar was standing in front of them while holding the Viking sword Ulfberht.

Ragnar couldn't ignore them because he was the Viking king. He was someone that led warriors.

Ragnar closed his eyes and forced a laugh. His strength had left his body. His mythical-ranked saga was leaving his body.

'Damn it.'

He couldn't beat Harad. Although he had spent quite a lot of strength, that was all.

If only he had chosen to attack instead of defending.

Ragnar threw away his regrets. He saw Harad rushing at him. He looked at him, laughing and extending his fist and said as if lamenting, "I told you to flee."

Ragnar's eyes moved to the sky. At that moment Harad knew.

Harad's eyes moved upwards. It was also to the sky. He saw the thing that was falling down towards him from the sky.

Harad swung his hands. The black fire became raging billows and covered the sky. However, the arrow coming from the sky didn't stop.

"Hu! Ah! Hu! Ah!" Bracky breathed out weirdly. It was a method he had come up with to not get buried by the myth in front of his eyes.

The raging billow covered them. Just a normal billow was terrifying enough, but this one was made of fire. But they couldn't

dodge it. They had to overcome it just like the storm.

[Saga: He's The Son of a God]

[Saga: Thunder Gets Immersed in his Hammer]

Bracky jumped down from Rolo. He charged into the raging billow and swung his hammer, which had thunder in it.

The thunder opened a path. Although it merely split it for a moment, that was enough.

“Go!”

Bracky yelled as he fell. Rolo passed through the path of flames along with Tae Ho.

[Saga: Charge of the Dragon]

Harad stopped his charge and stepped on the ground. And then he extended his fist.

It was an attack that could split the sky in two. It was impossible to face him head on.

‘Just like I expected!’

Tae Ho jumped down from Rolo. Rolo drew a sharp trajectory as planned and moved towards Ragnar and Tae Ho twisted his body in the air.

“Chant!”

He fluttered his wings after having transformed into a hawk. He passed over Harad's fist, which was covered in flames and made him think that he was riding on a wall.

It was hot. No, he felt like dying. He felt as if Tae Ho's existence was getting crushed just by being close to him.

But he had to endure it. He activated the Strength of a God. Idun's power covered Tae Ho's body and Heda's blessing that remained in his forehead protected him.

Tae Ho fluttered his wings again and flew. Rolo was being

controlled by Ragnar. Bracky fell to the ground after having become a mess and then Tae Ho realized.

They couldn't escape.

Dodging Harad was impossible now. Harad had already pulled his fist back. Even if he flew up like this, he would only get crushed by his fist.

‘Heda.’

He got some strength just by thinking of that name. Tae Ho cursed himself, saying that he was crazy, and charged forward. Whether he became porridge or rice, he could only attack now.

“Chant!” He yelled and transformed to a human again. He could feel Harad's eyes chasing him back. Tae Ho ground his teeth and activated the strength of his saga.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior]

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

He gripped the sword piece. Then he tried to kick the air, followed by a thunderstorm.

Just then, when he was about to yell Heda's name for the last time, Gae Bolg's piece, which was at his waist, moved.

‘I will help you.’

It entered Tae Ho's hand by its own.

It wasn't the time to understand it with his mind. Tae Ho grabbed the piece of Gae Bolg tightly. At that moment, white light started emanating from the piece.

Shining Spear.

The incomplete thing was certainly Gae Bolg.

Tae Ho could feel Cu Chulainn. Perhaps it may only be playing his memories again. However, he knew what he had to do and how he should use Gae Bolg!

He kicked the air. Then he threw himself to the ground and fired Gae Bolg with all his might.

He felt as if his left arm might explode. Gae Bolg emanated a strong light.

Bang!

Gae Bolg hit Harad's right shoulder. The strong force of destruction that had been inserted by Scathach, the Queen of the Land of Shadows, was activated. A white light started to shine in the shoulder that it had hit and gulped down the black fire.

Ragnar opened his eyes widely. Harad was also shocked. Tae Ho cheered in the midst of his pain.

But it only lasted for a moment.

Harad tore off his shoulder. He had cut it down with his left hand. He got rid of the force of destruction, along with his right arm and then gritted his teeth and laughed.

A fierce fire surged up. Tae Ho couldn't listen the sound made when Harad's right arm fell. Ragnar's yell and Bracky's despair also didn't reach him.

Tae Ho, who was bounced back, rolled on the ground. All the bones of his body were crushed. He coughed out blood while laying on the ground. His left arm that he had used to throw Gae Bolg didn't move, and he couldn't even feel it.

Tae Ho rolled his eyes absentmindedly. It seemed like veins had exploded, since his vision was red. He could see Harad approaching him.

'Heda.'

His lips didn't move. He felt like Idun's blessing was barely holding onto his life.

It was the same as Black Fortress. No, it was worse than that. He didn't even have a piece of a golden apple now.

Harad clenched his fist.

&

Heda breathed roughly. Sweat flowed down like rain. Idun's blessing had activated from a place not that far away. There was only one person in the land that could activate Idun's blessing.

'No, no.'

It was the first time since that day.

He couldn't repeat what happened on that day.

Heda turned back to a Valkyrie from a swan. Rather than cursing at her immature self, she tried to bring out a greater strength.

But right at that moment, Heda turned back reflexively. Unconsciously, she started to let out tears of joy.

&

Ragnar ground his teeth. Even though it was hard to even stand, he was raising his sword.

Because he couldn't let him die in this place.

He wasn't someone to die here.

He opened his mouth to try to get its attention for even a moment. He was even planning to tell him to kill him first.

But then Ragnar saw it. He laughed pleasingly with his mouth which had been about to yell angrily.

&

Harad thought in the middle of his strong pain. He had to kill him. It wasn't because he had inflicted a wound as big as that.

He didn't know into what he would turn. He didn't know how Gae Bolg had appeared or how he could use it but he had to finish him here. Perhaps, it might be more important to do than killing the already broken Ragnar.

The unknown warrior.

He was covered in a golden light as he died. He was sure that the blessing of a God was holding on to his life.

He would kill him. He would remove a root that would be a calamity in the future.

But right before he swung his fist, Harad turned to look back.

&

Tae Ho vomited black blood. Idun's blessing took care of him. Heda's blessing was trying to extend his life however it could.

[Saga: Immortal Warrior]

Tae Ho opened his eyes again. His vision was still blurry. However, he could vaguely hear through his ears.

Tae Ho understood why Harad hadn't finished him off. And why Bracky was cheering like that.

In a distant place, where Heda was supposed to be, the sound of thunder was approaching.

< Episode 16 – Legend (4) > End

Episode 17/Chapter 1: The God of Thunder (1)

They could only stop, as it was impossible to ignore the sound of the thunder, regardless of what they were doing at the time.

It would be good to call it the instinct of the giant or, perhaps, a fear that was engraved in his soul.

This was because the thunder was like that.

Avalt, the Giant of Night, let out an exclamation of surprise. Even though he was looking from a distant place, it still made his body turn stiff.

“Harad.”

They had wasted too much time. No, the opponents had reacted too quickly.

However, it was meaningless whichever it was, as now wasn't the time to be thinking like that.

“Harad.”

Flee.

Avalt spread the darkness of the night.

&

The giant of strength Harad looked backward. He could hear the lightning flashing from inside the black clouds.

Harad curled himself, hurriedly turning his fist, that was about to hit Tae Ho, and defended. It was the right decision.

Because lightning was always faster than thunder.

Babang!

The thunder hit after the lightning. It crossed the cracked ground and blue thunder fell.

The clouds were gathering in the sky, slowly revealing him

standing in the middle of the rough wind.

“Hello.”

The greeting that seemed to be as soft as a murmur was heard all too clearly. The God of Thunder laughed like a man, suitable to be the strongest warrior in Asgard. He, that had already closed in Harad, swung Mjolnir.

Short and fast, yet like the beginning of the world.

The strength behind Mjolnir hit Harad's domain. The ground exploded once more, and Harad's huge body got sent flying hundreds of meters.

Kwagagagagagang~!

Thunder fell from the sky as if chasing Harad. A pure white light exploded and called for a thunder.

Thor looked at Harad, who was being pushed back. A curtain of the night appeared in the air and covered Harad. It was the power of the giant of the night, Avalt, who wanted to make Harad return however he could.

However, Thor saw that and still didn't let it go.

Sparks appeared in his blue eyes before blue thunder started to explode from his body.

That was his strength, and also the strength Mjolnir had.

Thor flung Mjolnir, the weapon that was made with the unts, the weapon that was like a thunder of a God itself. Thunder fell down from the sky once more, as if it were declaring that all of this territory belonged to Thor.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

The thunder pierced the curtain of night. It teared up the darkness.

The giant of night Avalt cursed. He despaired at the strength of

the really strong God of Thunder.

The giant of strength parried Mjolnir with all of his might. The sky and the ground cried in pain due to the aftershock generated by the clash between Mjolnir and Harad's fists. Harad roared and Mjolnir and Harad's fist bounced back at the same time.

Mjolnir returned back to the hands of its owner while black smoke floated up from Harad's fist, in place of red blood.

Ahh.

Ahhhh.

Harad sighed and admired to himself, determining that he would die in battle. He wouldn't flee. How could a warrior flee from battle?

He was the giant of strength. In the first place, fleeing didn't suit him at all. He couldn't imagine himself dying with his back turned.

Everything was a mess. He couldn't retrieve the soul fragment, couldn't kill Ragnar, and couldn't even trample on the root of the future. It was a really grim failure.

If it was the giant of night Avalt, he would be analyzing even in this moment.

How did Thor arrive so quickly? Was there no path for Harad to flee on? A method to trick his eyes?

Thor was someone Harad didn't want to see. Thor didn't suit with him, Harad at all.

However, just like Avalt did, Avalt also recognized him. Because of that, he requested in a low voice.

To give him strength.

To let him fight on the last battlefield with all his strength.

No, it wasn't the end. It wasn't the last. Because he would fight against the God of Thunder with all his strength!

Harad laughed, but the giant of the night didn't curse out. He just closed his eyes and moved his fingers, controlling the threads that were on the tip of his fingers and retrieving the curtain of night that was meant to hide Harad. Instead, he gave more strength to Harad.

The black night took shape and became the right arm of Harad.

Thro gripped Mjolnir. But he didn't charge towards him immediately. He was just glaring at him with his eyes covered in sparks.

He was waiting for him. As expected of the God of battle of Asgard. The great warrior that leads Valhalla.

Harad clenched his fist that had black smoke surging from it and then expressed his last manner to his lord.

“My king! Observe my last battle!”

He retrieved his fist that pierced through the sky and looked at the front. He created big black fire that resisted against the thunder.

“I'm going, God of Thunder.”

He could guess the reason why Thor had pushed him back with the first attack. It was to protect them by getting them far away.

He wanted to match him. He wanted to the favor for having waited for him.

But he couldn't.

Because he was the giant of strength: he was a commander of the magician king, Utgard Loki!

He would make an achievement, make a situation that was a little bit more favorable for his lord.

He would sweep them all up with the aftershock of the fight.

He would trample on the root of the future along with Ragnar.

Harad charged forward, his body of a huge giant enough to cross the plains in an instant.

Thor's red cape fluttered in the wind as he read Harad's intentions clearly, making thunder explode and charged towards him.

Kwagagagagagang!

He covered the sky and the ground with thunder. It seemed like the white and blue light that exploded was enough to make you blind.

Bracky looked at the thunder and lightning and cheered. Rolo, who was knocked out, was luckily rolling about in a place far away.

Ragnar spat out some bloody saliva and woke up the warriors of Thor's legion. While they had their hearts and souls taken by the mythological scene occurring in front of them, the voice of the Viking king Ragnar still worked.

Thor was pushing back Harad. Ragnar spat out once and was about to go to Tae Ho.

However he stopped before he could take two steps. Although he was covered in thunder so you couldn't find him easily, he stopped because he saw a white swan covered in golden light descending towards the ground.

“Fall back! If you get swept up, you will die!”

Ragnar urged the warriors of Thor's legion again, that were absent minded. Before he returned he looked at the place the swan descended once more.

&

It seemed like he would go deaf because of the thunder. The red and dim vision became darker every time.

He would die like this.

Even if he had Idun's blessing, it still had its limits.

However, Tae Ho didn't let go of the thread of consciousness he had left. Even though he knew that it wouldn't be painful anymore if he let it go, and that it would be more comfortable then on, he didn't do so.

This was because it wasn't his strength alone. Heda's blessing that was added every night became an anchor for Tae Ho. He closed his eyes. He was losing the senses in not only his arm, but his entire body.

He couldn't hear the thunder anymore, but he could hear another thing.

Something soft touched his cheeks and warmth instantly spread to his numb senses. A moist aura of life passed from his dry lips.

'Heda.'

He could see Heda's face from beyond his dim vision. It seemed like she was crying and also angry.

"Don't die!"

Heda yelled sharply and hurriedly moved her hands. She sucked the coagulated blood in Tae Ho's mouth and then stole his lips. She placed her lips on Tae Ho's, that were a bit open, and gave him the best blessing.

Tae Ho opened his eyes. However, they had lost focus, instead replaced by dark eyes that seemed to accept their impending deaths.

Heda breathed. She extended her trembling hand and then took out a piece of golden apple from her waist. She chewed it herself for Tae Ho, that didn't even have the strength to close his mouth, and kissed him again, pushing the crushed apples with her tongue.

Tae Ho gulped that down. It was really slow, but it eventually passed through his throat.

Vitality started to return in Tae Ho's eyes. Heda cried and smiled.

She put the remaining piece of golden apple in her mouth and delivered it to Tae Ho again.

It would be different from that day. She wouldn't lose again like that day.

Heda touched Tae Ho's face. She placed her lips again on his and started to cry golden tears.

&

The sound of thunder was heard from far away.

He could also hear warm whispers from far away. It seemed like everything was beyond a curtain.

'Heda.'

Tae Ho could somewhat guess what had happened.

Asgard's greatest God of battle he saw the first day he entered Valhalla — Thor, the God of Thunder, had come.

It seemed like Heda had also come. Although he didn't know what she did, he was sure that his body was recovering.

They had come to catch a wild gryphon but what the hell was this?

Tae Ho thought the same thing as Ragnar and dropped his shoulders. Because whatever the case, it seemed like it had been solved.

'I can just leave the giant to Thor.'

While he was a bit worried about Ragnar and Bracky, he felt like they would be fine if it was them. But rather, the one he was worried about was Rolo.

'Let's wake up.'

Maybe it was because he had eaten a piece of a golden apple that his body was recovering quickly. He had to open his eyes quickly to make Heda relieved.

However, he couldn't open his eyes. The sound of the thunder was too far. It seemed like Heda's breath and warmth was blocked with an unseeable wall that he couldn't reach.

How so?

He got scared. What if he had brain paralysis? That his body was alive but his consciousness wasn't.

No, there was no way. If that was the case he wouldn't even be able to think right now. And in the first place, didn't the warriors of Valhalla go to Valhalla to become steel warriors when they died?

"How pretty. She is almost master's equal. But of course, master is much prettier."

A voice was heard from behind. Only then did Tae Ho realize that he was standing inside the darkness. And he had certainly heard the voice that was heard behind him, before.

In the memory he saw through Gae Bolg.

No, before he rolled on the ground, before he threw Gae Bolg to the giant of strength.

'I will help you.'

Tae Ho turned back.

Just like he had expected, a handsome man was standing in the darkness. Except, it wasn't dark anymore. Replacing the darkness were green plains that was below a bright sky.

The man that was standing in the middle of the plains was wearing white clothes. He was holding a white spear with one hand, and he was putting a charming smile while looking at Tae Ho.

"Nice to meet you, Erin's successor who will receive everything from me."

"Sorry?"

As Tae Ho asked back at the nickname he hadn't even thought of, he slightly frowned. And then he mumbled in a low voice as if he didn't have any choices and said directly.

“I, Cu Chulainn, will become your teacher from now on.”

The prince of light, Cu Chulainn.

The great warrior of Erin, the destroyed world, extended his hand towards Tae Ho.

&

< The God of Thunder (1) > End

Episode 17/Chapter 2: The God of Thunder

(2)

Tae Ho frowned. And then he thought about the situation and the place he was in just then.

‘Is it...something like a consciousness?’

Or, a meeting or a conversation occurring in his heart, just like what commonly happened in mangas or novels?

Gae Bolg had Cu Chulainn’s soul in it, and that soul was talking with Tae Ho inside of his heart.

Although it was all a guess, he could draw the situation in his head somewhat.

In the other hand, Cu Chulainn frowned and looked at Tae Ho. Then he nodded as if he understood and smiled calmly.

“Of course the current situation should be bewildering to you. Just the fact that you are facing none other than me, the Cu Chulainn of the Red Branch Knights, I understand that you aren’t able to calm yourself.”

Tae Ho couldn’t react at the misunderstanding. However, Cu Chulainn felt that it was also because of his nervousness, so he continued speaking.

“But you should calm down and receive it. You are Erin’s successor who was selected by me, Cu Chulainn.”

Tae Ho thought of what he should answer for a moment. Did he have to say that he didn’t know him well, just like what he did with Ragnar, or did he have to pretend?

‘Wake up, please...’

He heard a voice at that moment. Tae Ho flinched and looked at his surroundings. He was sure it was Heda’s voice but it wasn’t

heard near them.

From beyond the curtain.

He was sure it came from outside. There was anxiousness mixed in Heda's voice.

"Do you...not know about me?" Cu Chulainn opened his eyes sharply and asked. It seemed like he was facing a person who couldn't believe what was happening.

"No, I...do know you." Tae Ho answered and then bit his lips. Heda got on his nerves too much. He wanted to wake up a bit faster to put her at ease.

But even so, he couldn't just ignore the man in front of him.

Honestly speaking, he didn't know much about him. Because he had only heard the simple details from Ragnar.

The strongest and greatest warrior of the destroyed world, Erin.

Although it was merely a sentence, the contents of it couldn't be ignored at all.

Although he didn't know it well, he was sure he was a hero comparable to Ragnar.

And that great hero was telling him that he would become his master. In addition, he had said that Tae Ho was the successor who would succeed everything.

'I'm getting a feeling.'

In game terms, he had gotten a great hidden quest.

So he had to continue speaking with him for now.

'I'm sorry Heda. I will finish the fastest I can and return, so wait a bit more.'

Tae Ho, who had made up his mind, took a deep breath and faced Cu Chulainn. He was wearing a confused expression but then shook his head and fixed his posture when he saw Tae Ho's

attitude change.

“Good, let’s talk about me later. The time is limited... I will speak of something more important now.”

The distance between Tae Ho and him closed. The two of them were facing each other behind a big tree. They were three or four steps from each other.

Cu Chulainn said with a serious face, “Warrior of Valhalla. I’m already dead. The one in this place is the remnants of myself, that is inside of the fragment of Gae Bolg... You could describe it as a soul fragment. Originally, I tried to leave all of my memories and consciousness behind but Gae Bolg got destroyed in the last moment, so it turned out like it is now.”

Although Cu Chulainn was certainly a great warrior, he also had such talent in magic that he had several mysterious magics.

The reason he left behind his soul in Gae Bolg at the last moment wasn’t because he was afraid of death. It was because of the responsibility resting on his shoulders.

“You have discovered a fragment of Gae Bolg. And Gae Bolg also recognized you. Because of that, it can be said that I also recognized you.”

He couldn’t say that it was mere coincidence. If they weren’t worthy at all, they wouldn’t even have been able to discover Gae Bolg.

“I will become your teacher and transmit everything from Erin. So, Warrior of Valhalla, gather the remaining fragments of Gae Bolg from the traces of the Great War. The fragment that is with you will tell you the path.”

It wasn’t only to return Gae Bolg to its original shape. There were the fragments of the soul of Cu Chulainn in each fragment.

Cu Chulainn was currently unstable. Just like it was a fragment, there were also defects in his memory. If he wanted to transmit

everything about Erin, he would have to regain his complete memories first.

Cu Chulainn looked at Tae Ho's eyes and then the scene changed.

It was a battlefield. There were black spots, as if there were missing holes in his memory, but he could recognize the battlefield.

The Great War.

The only way to express the Festival of Gods.

What Tae Ho witnessed was an explosion of a force. The great explosion didn't simply stop at destroying the geography. It didn't only destroy space, but also twisted the world and created countless cracks.

The battlefield, which had turned into pieces, followed the cracks that had been created and got scattered throughout the world.

Tae Ho realized why there was a trace of the Great War in the boundary between Asgard and Midgard, and not only in Svartalfheim.

'So that was why.'

It was the reason why he had also discovered Garmr's soul fragment in Asgard.

It was the same for the Unknown sword piece and Gae Bolg.

Their surroundings changed to a plain again. Cu Chulainn grabbed Tae Ho's shoulders.

"Complete Gae Bolg and find my master, Scathach."

At that moment, strong desire appeared in Cu Chulainn's eyes. Tae Ho, who had seen part of his memories, thought of the cat-eyed lady with black hair.

Cu Chulainn loved her. However, telling him to find her wasn't because of a love he couldn't fulfill. It was for a real completion.

The day Erin was destroyed, many things were destroyed along it. Even the last survivor of the Red Branch Knights, Cu Chulainn, could be described as the successor of everything left. But he hadn't really received everything.

“Get the teachings of my teacher. Then you will be able to succeed Milesians and Tuatha De Dannan.”

Milesians and Tuatha De Dannan.

It was the first time Tae Ho heard those words, but he could vaguely know what they were because of Cu Chulainn's memories.

They were the race that could be described as the owners of the destroyed Erin, Tuatha De Danann and their Gods.

As well as the strong human race, the Milesians, that drove Tuatha De Danann to the underground.

The only thing Cu Chulainn could transmit was the power of the Milesians.

To receive the power of Tuatha De Danann, he needed the assistance of the Queen of the Land of Darkness.

Their surroundings changed again. It was the world filled with darkness.

“We don't have time anymore. I will wait for our next meeting.”

Cu Chulainn looked at the sky with dim eyes. Tae Ho could hear Heda's voice that had been interrupted.

“But I can't just leave the successor I have just met empty handed.” Cu Chulainn laughed and then grabbed Tae Ho's hands. Tae Ho looked at him reflexively and flinched. It was because he had closed the distance in an instant and placed his lips on Tae Ho's forehead.

It was certainly a blessing. No, it had to be.

Cu Chulainn looked at Tae Ho, who was bewildered, and then smiled as if he was also bothered since he let go of Tae Ho's hands.

“Erin’s strength will accompany you.”

Cu Chulainn was covered in darkness. Tae Ho also closed his eyes. He could hear Heda’s voice.

“Tae Ho!”

He opened his eyes. Then he let out a breath. Heda was right in front of him.

Even though she was crying, she was still pretty. Her golden eyes were brilliant but as sad as the morning glory.

“Heda.”

He let out his voice. And then Heda’s face distorted. She started to smile and then embraced Tae Ho’s head strongly.

It would have been nice if he felt something soft and warm, but it was hard because of the armor and it hurt. However Tae Ho let out a small smile. Even though he didn’t have strength and it hurt, he realized that he was alive. Seeing that the senses were returning to his body, it seemed as if Heda had given him a piece of a golden apple while he was speaking with Cu Chulainn.

‘Wait, how did she feed me?’

He must have lost consciousness and so wouldn’t have been able to chew properly.

There was something he remembered. Perhaps it might be his body remembering it. However, he couldn’t remember how it felt. He just felt that it was unfortunate.

Babang!

Right then, the world became white, along with thunder. The transparent barrier that was covering Heda and Tae Ho shook violently. Heda embraced Tae Ho even tighter and Tae Ho somewhat realized the situation they were in while being pressed by the armor.

It was the God of Thunder, Thor. He was executing his last attack

on the giant of Strength, Harad, with the strongest weapon in Asgard, Mjolnir.

The thunder ripped away the darkness and the fire.

The sound of the thunder faded away. As the world found its light again, Heda slowly let Tae Ho go. She looked into the distance and then put a bright smile.

“Thor will come. Ragnar is also safe.”

He wanted to ask about Bracky but his lips didn’t open. It seemed like he was really exhausted.

‘Rolo...should also be fine right?’

Thinking about it, they had gotten swept away by all of this when they had come to obtain Rolo.

Tae Ho let out a sigh of relief. Although he felt sorry for Rolo, it meant that the situation was so chaotic, it caused him to have such thoughts.

The surroundings became quiet.

A thunder exploded, just like the storm after the calm, and then it seemed like even the wind was silent.

However that didn’t last long. It was because the cheers of the warriors of Valhalla were heard.

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

“God of Thunder!”

“Father!”

Based on the last shout it seemed like Bracky was also fine.

“I’m glad. Really glad.” Heda smiled brightly after speaking in a low voice and then placed her lips on his forehead again. It was to give him the blessing of a Valkyrie.

But it was at that moment... The moment Heda placed her lips on his forehead she flinched and trembled, and then blinked with a surprised face.

It wasn't because she sensed the scent of an unfamiliar man from Tae Ho's forehead. It was because she felt something strong that had been added on top of the blessing of a Valkyrie.

And Tae Ho also knew. What Cu Chulainn had given wasn't a simple blessing.

‘Because I can't leave you empty handed.’

The thing he had left, what he had transmitted to Tae Ho...

Cu Chulainn didn't speak empty words. He had really passed over Erin's power to him.

Geas.

Erin's power, which was comparable to Asgard's power.

Heda turned her head again. Ragnar and Thor were approaching.

< The God of Thunder (2) > End

Episode 18/Chapter 1: Anaheim (1)

“Tae Ho! Heda!”

“Ragnar!”

They were that glad to see Ragnar, rather than the sense of incongruity towards Tae Ho, that Heda smiled brightly and answered his call.

Ragnar was running towards them with a frowning face. It seemed like it was even hard to run like normal.

“Pant...pant...I’m too...decayed.” Ragnar barely managed to reach them and cursed out. It was because Tae Ho was lying on Heda’s lap.

However, his eyes were laughing, compared to his expression.. He clearly showed that he was happy that Tae Ho was alive.

Babang!

Right then, thunder descended.. Heda and Ragnar turned their eyes hurriedly and Tae Ho also turned his head with difficulty.

“That was the case? The policy of immediate destruction Odin laid down...” Ragnar said in a low voice. The sound that had been heard seemed to be made by destroying Garmr’s soul fragment.

“Heda, Thor is coming.” Ragnar added in a low voice and fixed his posture. Heda pressed Tae Ho’s shoulders slightly, as if it wasn’t necessary to stand up and looked at Thor, who was coming to them.

Thor flew with his red cape fluttering and then landed a bit far away from them and started to walk towards them. He was certainly being considerate about the dust flying because of him.

“He’s really delicate.” Heda smirked and mumbled in a low voice. Thinking about it, Heda had said something similar the first time they met.

‘He has a lot of affection and is a considerate man.’

And then Thor finally entered Tae Ho’s eyesight. He was a handsome beauty that had perfect muscles to the point that he could be called a moving sculpture.

He had gold hair and a beard and was wearing silver and black armor and leather pants, but his arms, which were like steel, were on display, so one’s attention was diverted.

‘So that is Mjolnir.’

A throwing hammer that had a short handle.

The way it looked was really simple. It seemed like it was a rectangle with a handle on it.

However Tae Ho stopped breathing the moment he activated the ‘Eyes of the Dragon’. Thor and Mjolnir were both amazing. Mjolnir’s letters were obviously rainbow-colored but it was emitting a strong light, perhaps for having shown its strength recently.

And Thor was more than that. He could see his name and the green color because he clearly knew that he was an ally, but that was all.

‘Well, it was obvious.’

Because Thor wasn’t a normal God. He was the God of Thunder, who stood on the peak along with Odin and was the best fighter.

“Heda.”

“Thor-nim.”

As Thor greeted her with a smile, Heda bowed slightly and returned the greeting. Looking at Thor’s expression, it seemed like they were quite friendly.

“I’m greeting Thor-nim.”

“Ragnar Lodbrok. It’s been a while.”

Ragnar hit his chest twice as if expressing his manners to Thor, who had greeted him in joy.. Then Thor also hit his chest while laughing.

When they finished the greetings, Thor looked at Tae Ho lying down in Heda's lap and asked, "Right, is this Idun's warrior that's rumored that you treasure him?"

'What should I say...'

Did he have to stand up now? But it was hard. Honestly speaking, he had barely managed to call Heda before.

Perhaps Heda had felt Tae Ho's conflict, as she pressed down his shoulder once again and then nodded with a flushed face.

"You are still cute." Thor laughed and looked at Tae Ho again. "Idun's warrior, I heard that Ragnar is teaching you. This is a really rare case. I'm waiting for the day we stand on the same battlefield."

His smiling face was really friendly.

As Tae Ho expressed his thanks with his eyes, it seemed like Thor understood, so he made a light gesture with his hand and let him rest. Then he looked at Ragnar and Heda and said, "I want to have a deeper conversation with you but I know there are more warriors that need help. Also, I will have to report what happened to Father the fastest I can. It's unfortunate but we will leave it to another opportunity."

"Thank you for assisting us."

As Ragnar expressed his manners again, Thor shook his hand as if that wasn't the case.

"It was an obvious thing. I'm the one that should be thankful to you and Idun's warrior. Thank you for protecting my warriors from the giant of Strength."

Thor moved his eyes to look at Bracky and the warriors of Thor's

legion and grabbed Mjolnir tightly.

“Heda.”

Heda blinked her eyes as if she was surprised that she had been called and then pulled herself backwards a bit and exposed Tae Ho. Then Thor knelt next to Tae Ho and hit Tae Ho’s shoulders lightly with Mjolnir.

“Idun’s warrior, my blessing shall accompany you.”

It was Thor’s blessing. A spark and small blue thunder appeared on Tae Ho’s shoulders.

‘How glad.’

Tae Ho thought of Cu Chulainn’s blessing and was relieved; Thor seemed to have read that expression as thanks, and laughed again.

“Then, let’s meet on another occasion.”

Thor finished saying his farewell and then walked a few steps and flew up. He raised Mjolnir and yelled, “My warriors! Let’s meet in the residence again! For Asgard and the nine planets!”

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

“For Asgard and the nine planets!”

The warriors of Thor’s legion raised their weapons and cheered. Thor swung Mjolnir for those warriors and then turned his body and flew away. The sound of thunder getting farther away was really pleasing.

“He’s still the same.”

Ragnar, who was looking at Thor like a mountain going farther away, smiled bitterly and said. Heda also smiled and then looked down at Tae Ho.

“Now rest. Sleep well.”

Although he had regained consciousness, he was too tired. In

addition, it seemed as if it was thanks to Heda, but it was really comfortable and warm even though he was lying on the ground.

But Tae Ho forcefully grabbed his fading consciousness. He still had something he had to do.

“Gae...Bolg.”

Ragnar hurriedly understood his meaning as he mumbled in a low voice.

“I will take it. I will be able to discern it even without your Eyes of the Dragon, as it had emitted a strength like that.”

Heda couldn't see how Tae Ho used Gae Bolg.

Heda opened her eyes widely at Ragnar's answer but didn't ask any questions. She caressed Tae Ho's head, as if telling him to sleep.

“Sleep.”

Ragnar also spoke and then Tae Ho closed his eyes. He thought about Rolo briefly but he really was at his limit.

‘Let's sleep.’

Tae Ho relaxed his body.

&

Tae Ho had received a full body anesthetic once.

It was a surprising experience, since he received the drug, lost consciousness, and when he woke up, several hours had passed.

‘It's the same.’

He had slept really deeply, to the point he didn't even dream.

Tae Ho opened his eyes slowly and smiled unconsciously. It was because he saw Heda falling asleep while sitting on the bedside.

Just watching this scene made him happy, so Tae Ho just stayed down.. And after some seconds, Heda raised her head, perhaps

having felt something.

“Uh, huh?”

Heda wiped the saliva from her mouth groggily and she stuttered for a moment and then became aware of Tae Ho’s gaze.

“If, if you woke up you should have told me. Really.”

It seemed like she was quite embarrassed; her stuttering was really cute.

“I should have.” Tae Ho answered shamelessly and Heda flushed even more. It was really nice to see this scene but compared to before, there was a voice cutting in.

“Do it in moderation. We are also here.”

Ragnar’s voice was heard from behind Heda. Followed by that, Siri’s voice was also heard.

“Tae Ho, drink some water.”

Siri approached while laughing and gave Tae Ho a glass of water. Tae Ho got up without much difficulty for having slept deeply and then looked at his surroundings and accepted the glass.

“Thank you, Siri.”

It seemed as if they were at a hunter’s hut or something of the sort. The group was gathered in a small wooden house that didn’t have any separations. The fire burning in the stove made the air warm.

“I heard that it was a really big battle. I’m glad that... You aren’t safe, but I’m glad that you are alive.”

Siri retrieved the empty glass and smiled bitterly. And Tae Ho could also smile back.

“You too, Siri.”

Because she had also been on the battlefield.

‘Well, I feel like being alive.’

Tae Ho closed his eyes and let out a sigh of relief. After drinking cold water he felt like his head had become more clear.

“Ragnar, what about Gae Bolg?”

“I brought it.”

After he asked the most urgent thing, he lightly shook Gae Bolg’s fragment. Even when he looked with his ‘Eyes of the Dragon’, there seemed to be nothing wrong.

“Whew.”

He was glad. He had been worried about losing it because the ground had been a mess after all those earthquakes, but it really was Ragnar.

Ragnar placed down Gae Bolg’s fragment in the table next to Tae Ho with a sound and then started to speak about other things.

“Garm’s soul fragment was destroyed by Thor. The members of his legion returned and the giant got taken care of by Thor.”

“What about Rolo?”

“Rolo?”

“The gryphon we caught.”

“You already gave it a name?”

Ragnar laughed as if it made no sense and Tae Ho quickly shook his head.

“No, um...it already had a name when I looked with the ‘Eyes of the Dragon.’”

The wyverns he had rode on the battlefield didn’t have any names. Already having a name proved that Rolo was special.

“Anyways, the gryphon is sleeping outside. It’s really exhausted but it isn’t that hurt.”

“I’m glad.”

“Yeah.”

They had gone to that place to catch Rolo but if it died it would have been for nothing.

Tae Ho and Ragnar shared the same thought and smirked while looking at each other. This time Heda was the one that shook her head and then she grabbed Tae Ho's hands and said, “Tae Ho, what about resting a bit more?”

“I'm fine. Look at me.”

“That's obviously because you ate a piece of a golden apple.” Ragnar said once again with a taciturn voice. He had his doubts, but he had really eaten the piece.

“Thank you Heda.”

“Huh? Ye-yeah.”

It was a normal thanks, but Heda flushed as if she was embarrassed. And she even dodged Tae Ho's eyes for some reason.

‘So the maybe became a really!’

The way she fed him the piece...

However, he couldn't remember clearly.

“Anyways, let us ask something as you are fine.”

Ragnar, who was sitting down, fixed his posture. His eyes and his voice weren't joking like before.

“What happened since you were out?”

Heda looked at Tae Ho, because she had been the first to feel a sense of incongruity.

Tae Ho touched his forehead before answering. He could feel another force other than Heda's blessing.

Ragnar didn't urge Tae Ho. Heda also waited for Tae Ho, while grabbing his hands.

Tae Ho gulped saliva drily and looked at Ragnar's and Heda's eyes and spoke.

"I met...the prince of light, Cu Chulainn."

"Erin's successor..." Ragnar said in a low voice after listening to Tae Ho. His voice was mixed with wonder and lamentation.

On the other hand, Heda blinked with a really surprised face and then asked after approaching Tae Ho, "Really? Cu Chulainn really told you that?"

"Yes, he also said that he would become my teacher."

It was all true. In the first place, he didn't have a reason to lie to Heda and Ragnar.

"Ragnar." Heda turned to look at Ragnar. It seemed like she was asking what they should do.

"So that was why." Ragnar nodded slowly instead of answering and turned to look at Siri. "Siri, what we spoke up to now is a secret belonging to Idun's legion. Can you keep it?"

"Yes, Ragnar-nim." Siri nodded with a stiff expression. It wasn't that she would betray Ullr's legion only for Ragnar. Each legion had secrets that couldn't be revealed to other legions. Keeping it should be something obvious for a warrior.

"Yes, thank you."

Ragnar caressed Siri's head once and then looked at Tae Ho again. "I will first say the most urgent thing. It seems like you are aware of it, but Cu Chulainn left you a power."

"You are talking about...the geas, right?"

"Right, it's Erin's force, which is comparable to the saga of our Valhalla."

Ragnar paused after he spoke. He smacked his lips as if wondering what he should say and then continued speaking.

“Tae Ho, do you remember my explanation about geases?”

“You said that it’s a method that gives you strength instead of a restriction.”

“It’s just like you said. What Cu Chulainn left you is a sentence of a geas. It’s like an empty contract to make a new geas.”

The saga was the life of a warrior. Because of that, every warrior had different sagas.

It was the same for the geas. Because it was like a warrior’s pledge. It wasn’t something others could decide for you.

“I will tell you as your teacher. Seal the geas for the moment. It’s not something that should be used too hurriedly.”

“I spoke about many things with Ragnar while you were asleep. I also think that it’s still too early.” Heda stepped up.

Ragnar looked at Tae Ho’s eyes fixedly and said, “The geas gives you a greater strength, the stronger the restriction is. Because of that you can become strong quickly if you use a strong geas. But it’s too dangerous. Just like it’s a strong restriction, it’s also hard to keep it. In addition, the counter-reaction that happens when you don’t keep a strong geas is also big. I know a few warriors of Erin that perished because of the geas.”

One could become strong quickly but it was that much more dangerous.

Compared to that, the saga, which was something that had to keep accumulating anecdotes, was close to being progressive. Although the growth might be slow, the base it gave was solid and the danger was also low.

“However, it’s true that the geas is a useful power. If you use it in a suitable level without being too greedy, it will be of great help to you. But just like I said at the start, it’s too early for you.”

Tae Ho was a warrior of Valhalla. In addition, he had an

unparalleled saga that never had been heard of. It was right for him to prioritize the saga instead of the geas.

“First, grow your strength as a warrior of Valhalla in your saga and the power of a God. Rather than using the geas now, using it at a later time will be more effective. Do you understand?”

“Yes.”

Tae Ho also understood what he was saying, as he simply nodded. And then Ragnar turned to look at Siri.

“Siri should be fine, because she’s an exemplary student.”

“Yes?”

As she replied unconsciously, Ragnar softly caressed her hair and then asked Tae Ho, “Right, what did you think about having seen a myth-ranked saga?”

“It really seemed like mythology.”

A saga that was added to the power of a God.

The power that reached the boundary of mythology after having passed the normal legends.

“Right, but it’s a boundary you should reach one day. You have to surpass it. Because it’s the power of a superior-ranked warrior.”

“Then...”

“The power of a top-ranked warrior is obviously a secret. Skipping the grades two times is enough.” Ragnar shook his head bluntly and then smiled again. “Now that it turned like this, I will train you with the myth-ranked saga as the objective. Use the geas after you have reached the myth-ranked saga.”

“I understand.”

The myth-ranked saga was the power of a superior-ranked warrior. Although he would soon become intermediate-ranked, it was a power the inferior-ranked Tae Ho couldn’t see lightly.

But not even Tae Ho or Ragnar thought like that, because he would surely reach it in no time.

“Explain it to Siri as well. We will talk about Gae Bolg and Cu Chulainn when we return to the residence.”

Even if that wasn't the case, Siri, who was curious as to what they were talking about, flinched. Ragnar patted her head once again and stood up.

“Ragnar?”

“I will take some air for a bit.” Ragnar gestured with his hand to Heda and thought while getting out of the hut.

‘Amazing.’

Although he had spoken calmly, each and every word was impressive.

The geas, which was the power of Erin.

Cu Chulainn, who was the strongest warrior of Erin.

Scathach was alive. The weapon of the destroyed planet was waiting to be revived in Tae Ho's hands.

In addition to what Cu Chulainn had said with his own mouth.

Erin's successor.

The one who would inherit the power of the Milesians and Tuatha De Danann.

And one more weapon that hadn't revealed its identity.

‘I will go crazy.’

Just thinking about the myth-ranked saga that Tae Ho would reach some day made him excited.

It would be good to describe Tae Ho's saga as already being mythology itself. Then what would happen if that saga became mythology-ranked?

And if Erin's power was added on top of that...

It was night outside the hut. The cold night air was good to clear one's head.

'What do you think will be the best?'

The words Heda had asked.

'Perhaps I may have to upgrade the adjustments a bit.'

A smile appeared on Ragnar's face.

&

"The myth-ranked saga of Ragnar-nim..." Siri said in a low voice while breathing roughly. Her cheeks were flushed and her eyes were looking into the distance.

"Ah...for his name itself to be a saga... How cool."

She was completely dreaming – no, she was a girl who had fallen in love.

Tae Ho looked at Siri smiling merrily and asked Heda in a low voice, "She is Captain Siri, right?"

"That seems to be the case." Heda laughed soundlessly. It was funny to look at Siri's transformation.

"Cheer up, Rolph."

Because Siri's feelings towards Ragnar should only be admiration. That would probably be the case.

'Right, probably.'

"Rolph?"

"Um, there's someone. My comrade that belongs to Ullr's legion."

Tae Ho explained about Rolph in moderation and then checked on Siri and looked at the sky. It was because he had remembered something after thinking of them.

“Now that I understand, Heda. What are our plans for tomorrow?”

“Originally we were planning to stay here for a few more days and train, but we will return to the residence immediately. Although you look well because of the golden apple, you still need stabilization and rest. You are forbidden to train and everything for a moment. Looking for Gae Bolg also comes after you rest. You just have to rest for a few days, okay?”

Her last sentence and eyes were quite firm. However, Tae Ho grabbed her hands instead of answering and said something else.

“Then Heda, what about sightseeing with me now that we are resting?”

“Huh?”

“To Anaheim.”

The place Siri had said to go with Rolph.

If he would be resting anyways, it would be better to rest earnestly.

Heda blinked with a surprised face at Tae Ho's request.

&

“Why are you that excited?”

“I, I'm not. I'm not excited at all.”

< Episode 18 – Anaheim (1) > End

Episode 18/Chapter 2: Anaheim (2)

“Why are you that excited?”

“I, I’m not! I’m not excited at all. I’m not even going to make a lunchbox!” Heda became serious and said.

Ragnar thought of her as a thief that got caught herself and laughed and then lowered his posture and looked upwards. And of course, the thing he was looking at was Heda’s face, which was trying to look calm while hiding her embarrassment.

“Heda.”

In the end, she broke down when he called her. She covered her face with her hands and Ragnar laughed and waited for her.

“Ahem ahem.”

How many minutes had passed? By the time the air outside the hut started to feel cold, Heda lowered her hands. Although the tips of her ears were slightly red, she was wearing her usual expression.

Ragnar, who still had the same posture, shook his head a few times and then touched her with his elbow.

“If you have calmed down, let’s speak seriously.”

Although he hadn’t brought it out in front of Siri and Tae Ho, Gae Bolg and Cu Chulainn weren’t the only important things.

Heda also knew that fact fully well. As Ragnar spoke in a low voice, the atmosphere around Heda turned stiff.

“I have already told you, but the giant of Strength, Harad, appeared.”

Just like Harad knew Ragnar, Ragnar also knew Harad.

The giant of Strength, Harad, one of the five fingers of the magician king Utgard Loki.

The giant kings that existed in Jotunheim weren’t only the

magician King. But because of that, it wasn't that Harad represented Jotunheim because he admired the magician King.

But still, it wasn't that he was weak at all. To face the giant of Strength, Harad, a warrior that was above the superior rank and had a lot of experience and was also strong was needed.

"I don't know if it was an independent movement or if he received orders but...whatever it is, it's certain that the giants care about Garmr's fragment too much."

Last time, giants that had merely reached the inferior rank had appeared. If they were meant to search a wide space, that was the most adequate.

But Harad, who was said to be one of the strongest among the superior-ranked giants, had appeared.

It was enough to overturn the value Garmr's soul fragment had in an instant.

"In addition, Odin has ordered for it to be destroyed immediately."

If the enemy gathered something, then gathering something for themselves was the most normal thing. However Odin had ordered to destroy it. There was a high probability that he had done this taking into account that it may be seized back by them.

Heda let out a long sigh at Ragnar's gaze and then dropped her shoulders and said, "This is also like you have said before. I'm wondering if it's one of their plans to wake up Fenrir."

The warriors of Valhalla had heard that they were gathering Garmr's soul fragments to wake it up, but the Valkyries had heard more than that.

"Starting now, searching won't be that easy."

There were no intermediate-ranked warriors among the warriors of Thor's legion that were searching. Most of them were lowest-

ranked warriors and there were also some low-ranked warriors.

But they couldn't do that anymore. Now that Harad had appeared, a giant at the same level might appear at any time. That side could only increase the quality of their forces.

It was a hard thing. It wasn't because both sides had stepped back from the front lines since it had begun adhering. It was because their strongest forces were glaring at each other while no one was able to move rashly.

Taking out forces from the front lines to search wasn't easy.

But even so, maintaining the same method they had used was also hard.

Heda forced a smile and said, "But Ragnar, they overdid it too much, right?"

"Right, that's what's fortunate. Even if it's the giants, they wouldn't be able to spend giants on the level of Harad that easily."

Perhaps it was a timing game. And one that spent a lot of mental power, at that.

Ragnar also dropped his shoulders like Heda did. His mouth was biting a cigarette – who knew when he had taken it out?

Heda looked at Ragnar's side look and then said something.

"What do you think about Cu Chulainn? You met him once, right?"

Erin's destruction and the Great War were connected. Ragnar, who was a top-ranked warrior, had stood on the same battlefield as Cu Chulainn several times.

"He was an outstanding guy. When I met him he had a really malicious air about him because of the situation...but he wasn't a bad guy. Even though he had an arrogant side, that was because he was Erin's greatest warrior. I think that that much is obvious."

The man that didn't only lose his lover, his family and friends,

but also his world.

Cu Chulainn in Ragnar's memories, was a lonely predator filled with malice. But even so, he had a cool head and a leisure that was capable of thinking of his allies and to read the flow of the battle.

"Erin's successor..." Heda said in a low voice. There was excitement she couldn't hide in it.

Ragnar's eyes met Heda's.

"It's still too early to get excited. I'm saying, until gathering more pieces of Gae Bolg and obtaining more information."

Those were calm words. Heda looked at Ragnar's hand that seemed to be covering hers and laughed lowly.

"It seems like those are empty words."

Because there was also excitement in Ragnar's eyes which he couldn't hide. Ragnar laughed and fixed his cigarette.

"It's a surprising thing."

It was a really amazing thing.

He could vaguely grasp the reason why Cu Chulainn chose Tae Ho. He probably didn't have an option.

But even so, it wasn't that he chose anyone. Because there were no coincidences in the story of a warrior; Gae Bolg and Tae Ho would have been attracted to each other.

The geas wasn't Erin's only power. It didn't mean that even its legacies disappeared, just because it got destroyed.

Erin's weapons, treasures and the warriors of Erin that were still alive.

Ragnar closed his eyes. He pushed aside his thoughts about Erin for a moment and then thought about Tae Ho.

Marvelous guy.

The talent was one thing, but his mentality was also strong.

“Ragnar?” Heda moved her fingers and asked. Ragnar grabbed Heda’s hand tightly, like a joke, and stood up.

“Well, let’s go sleep. You have to depart early in the morning.”

Ragnar turned off the cigarette – he hadn’t smoked much. Heda just looked at him and then asked carefully.

“Ragnar, are you really alright?”

The last day of the Great War, Ragnar’s body and soul was broken. He wasn’t a top-ranked warrior anymore.

But he had used a myth-grade saga. Although it was for a short time, he had fought with all his strength.

Ragnar laughed soundlessly at Heda’s question. He then turned back and patted her head with his big hand.

“Sleep.”

He left his last words that were more from a father, rather than a friend and then entered the hut.

&

The next morning, the group that had left the hut moved to Valhalla hurriedly. Although the group had gotten bigger thanks to the two female gryphons he had caught along with Rolo, there was no big difference in their travelling speed. Rather, if it wasn’t for Rolo’s injuries, they would have reached Valhalla faster.

It took two days to return, just like when they went to that place. They parted ways with Siri in the hall of Valhalla and when they returned to Idun’s residence it was late in the afternoon. After the group finished a quick dinner, they decided on a new nest for Rolo and the two gryphons and then had a quick sleep.

And the next morning: “Heda, did you sleep well?”

“Ye-yeah. And you?”

“I also slept well.”

It could clearly be seen that the both of them didn't get any sleep. First, the black spot below their eyes was the same.

"That's some bullshit you are saying." Ragnar clicked his tongue in dissatisfaction and said. Then Tae Ho looked at him in surprise.

"Ragnar, are you also coming?"

Was he going to follow them?

Ragnar faced the strong rejecting eyes and put on an even more unsatisfied face.

"I will only go to the entrance with you. If you really want to enjoy Anaheim, you have to go alone."

The real Anaheim.

However Tae Ho didn't get extra ideas. He turned to look at Heda and said, "Then, let's go."

To Anaheim.

Heda rowed the wooden boat in a different direction than usual. It was because they were moving to a completely opposite side to the hall of Valhalla, which had the space doors installed in it.

Ragnar acted like a spoiled father that was following the date of his daughter but he disappeared as soon as they reached Anaheim. Thanks to that, Tae Ho could face the second group with a light heart.

"Tae Ho."

"Captain Siri!"

Tae Ho discovered Siri at the entrance of Anaheim and laughed. It was because none other than she was putting on a skirt.

But of course, it wasn't a dress like what the Valkyries wore on the banquets, it certainly was quite pretty.

'Certainly, she's pretty even if she decorates herself a little.'

She was a real beauty, only that she didn't decorate herself.

As Tae Ho was looking at her with admiring eyes, someone said with a regretful voice next to her, “Um, I’m also here.”

Rolph, who seemed to have been picked on all night by the people that knew him, presented himself.

“It feels like it’s been a really long while.”

“I feel the same.”

While actually it had only been a week.

“Heda-nim.”

Siri, who was laughing at Rolph’s conversation with Tae Ho, greeted Heda, who was standing without knowing what to do.

She was always wearing armor and a head decoration that represented the Valkyries, but she was different today. Although she didn’t dress particularly well, it seemed like her atmosphere had completely changed by not wearing armor.

“The warrior that came to play with a warrior...!” Rolph mumbled in a low voice, as if he was surprised and then looked at Tae Ho with eyes filled with admiration.

“Anyways, let’s depart. Captain Siri and Heda have come to Anaheim already, right?”

“Only once.”

“I only know the market.”

“What! You?!”

A rough voice broke the sweet voices of Heda and Siri that were filled with embarrassment.

As he turned to look he saw someone he was usually glad to see, but not today.

“Bjorn?!”

In addition, he wasn’t alone.

“The warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him!”

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“Pant! Is he the warrior that came to play with a Valkyrie?!”

The warriors of Ullr’s legion and Thor’s legion that he had seen the faces of several times were looking at them in shock.

Bjorn looked at Siri and Heda alternately and then looked at Rolph and Tae Ho with cold eyes.

“So you even broke the promise of last time...there was a reason to it. From now on I won’t be as tactless. Tae Ho, Rolph.”

His voice was so cold that others might have thought he was breaking off ties with them.

“Ah, no. I...” Rolph mumbled in a low voice. It seemed like he still had many regrets about the fun night with Bjorn.

However Bjorn turned back coldly and then crossed his arms over the shoulders of the other warriors and yelled, “Now, let’s go! To enjoy the real Anaheim!”

“Ou!”

Bjorn and the other warriors ran towards the alleyway that seemed to be shining in red. Tae Ho looked at their back dumbfoundedly and said, “Bracky was also there.”

Did he come out as soon as he returned?

However Siri put on a disinterested and hard face, just like the one she put on the battlefield, and then hit Rolph’s shoulder.

“Rolph, if you want to go you can.”

“No, I’m fine. I like being here much more.”

As Rolph smirked, Siri also relaxed her expression. Tae Ho grabbed Heda’s hand instead of making fun of the two of them.

“Let’s go.”

Half of Anaheim was an amusement centre and the other half was an arena. Because of that, the place Tae Ho's group could go to was the market, which occupied a quarter of the entire place.

Ragnar sat in a long, wide chair and looked into the distance. The place his eyes reached was Heda, who was laughing at trivial matters.

It was nice to see a real smile, instead of the usual made-up one since that day.

"They are playing well. How good to see it."

A voice was heard next to him. Ragnar stiffened unconsciously. It was because he hadn't felt anyone approach him.

"Stay still. There's no need to stand on ceremony."

It was the voice of an old man. Ragnar breathed calmly and looked to his side. There was a one eyed old man wearing a big gray cape.

"Ragnar Lodbrok meets the Father of the Sky."

He hit his chest while seated and expressed his manners. Then the old man, the King of Gods, Odin, frowned slightly.

"It's been a while."

The black crow, Munin, was sitting on Odin's shoulder. Not only that, but there were several crows in the sky and the ground. There were dozens of them but the people that passed by didn't seem to notice them.

Just like the one that had a thousand faces, he was now a benign old man. His voice and eyes were soft.

"Did you...come to see Tae Ho?" Ragnar asked carefully.

Odin smiled faintly and then looked at Tae Ho and Heda and said, "I came to visit as I also have other things to do at the same time. I was also curious as to what kind of person he was. There are times when I want to see the world with these old eyes of myself...and

not by Hugin and Munin.”

How much did Odin know?

Ragnar just kept silent instead of opening his mouth. Odin smiled again. “Thor said that he seemed to be a warrior you treasured.”

“I’m expectant as to what he will become.”

“If you say so, that should be it.”

Odin didn’t look at Tae Ho anymore. He was looking at a distant place in the sky.

“A time where good warriors are needed...is coming. I can smell the battlefield approaching already. The giants moving could also be one of the signs.”

A hundred years had already passed since the Great War. It was already known, even without asking for the wisdom of Mimir’s head or the three sisters.

“But we can’t be in a rush. Everything has its order.” Odin spoke and then took a bite of a beef sandwich. It was a food sold frequently in Anaheim.

“This is really delicious. I will have to eat it again when I return.”

It seemed like he wasn’t joking, as he cleared the sandwich in two bites and then stood up. Ragnar followed and asked, “Are you leaving?”

“Having seen him from far away is enough. And didn’t I say that I have something else to do at the same time?”

Odin knew why Ragnar was uneasy. He would have already been asked by Heda.

Because of that Odin said a few more words to the retired warrior.

“There’s one thing I learned by watching Zeus...and his other friends of Olympus.”

The neighboring Gods with Asgard.

Odin thought of them for a moment and then smiled bitterly. “Nothing good happens when Gods interfere in the affairs of humans. It’s better to leave them alone.”

Whether their will was good or bad, getting tied up with a God meant the ruin of the human.

“I will leave him to you for now. Let’s meet another day.” Odin smiled pleasantly and then took out a hat from the air and put it on. Ragnar hit his chest first and expressed his manners.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

Odin waved lightly and disappeared just as when he appeared.

Ragnar looked at his surroundings, as if looking for the crows that had appeared with them and then sat down in his place and looked at Tae Ho and Heda. They were enjoying themselves without knowing that Odin had appeared.

“Right, you should enjoy it when you can.” Ragnar spoke in a low voice and bit a cigarette. He was sorry for Tae Ho but it seemed like he would have to increase the level of his training.

&

The sun set and night came.

Ragnar, who had been waiting for the dusk, took Heda and Tae Ho as soon as the sun had set and brought them back to Idun’s residence.

However Heda had a bright face, as if having enjoyed her afternoon was enough, and looking at that Heda, Tae Ho could also smile back.

After two days Tae Ho resumed his training, and even started to go out on expeditions a week later.

Three months passed like that.

A short and long time passed quickly.

< Episode 18 – Anaheim (2) > End

Episode 19/Chapter 1: Intermediate Ranked Warrior (1)

The land of the dark fairies, Svartalfheim, had several divisions.

The shadows of the forest created by the branches covering the sky was the residence of the dark fairies. After leaving the forest, a wasteland covered in gray appeared, and if one went a bit more, a place called Nidavellir, which was the residence of the dwarves that were also called as Dvergs, appeared.

Winter in Svartalfheim couldn't be compared to the one in Asgard or Midgard at all.

The winter in the wastelands was especially harsh. The time the sun showed up was really short, and there were no walls to buffer the winds. It was to the point that some might compare the wastelands at its coldest with Niflheim.

However there were some that were still fine in this harsh land.

“They really are amazing.”

Tae Ho, who was wearing the stealth cloak over the hawk wing coat, was looking into the distance while standing on a branch. It was the camp of the warriors of Valhalla that Tae Ho himself was at just a few minutes ago.

The warriors of Hedmod's and Ullr's legion had set up a big fire and were in the middle of partying. As the search operation had no results for the past month, Valkyrie Gandur had made a feast to raise their moods.

Tae Ho opened his eyes sharply. His eyesight was really at the superhuman level now that he was at the level of an intermediate-ranked warrior. Tae Ho looked at the warriors that weren't wearing any shirts, even though a wind sharp enough to cut was blowing, and felt cold instead of them.

During the past three months, Asgard discovered one more soul fragment of Garmr and succeeded in destroying it.

It was either lucky or unlucky that no soul fragments appeared in the expeditions Tae Ho had participated in.

Following Heda's words, it was estimated that there were between twelve to fourteen fragments. As Asgard had already destroyed three, there were about ten more.

How many fragments did the giants have from the remaining ones?

And how many were needed to wake up the World Wolf?

What was fortunate was that both sides hadn't searching for a long time.

Although the giants were boldly searching for it everywhere in Asgard, they couldn't do so before Garmr's soul fragment appeared before the hundred days.

As they had proceeded with caution to not let their intentions be shown, the search could only become slower. Because of that, even if the giants did have some fragments, there was a high possibility for them to have few of them.

'That's one thing.'

Tae Ho took a deep breath and then looked down at the two objects hanging at his waist.

Gae Bolg's fragment and the Unknown sword piece.

Based on Cu Chulainn's words, Gae Bolg was currently divided in five.

Although not even Cu Chulainn could recognize the Unknown sword piece, it was still useful like this.

Because of that, Tae Ho decided to focus on Gae Bolg for now and he had finally made some progress the night before.

‘I memorized the location of another fragment.’

He had met Cu Chulainn in his mind in the past month and said that with a vague face. Although there were some cracks in his memories, he said that he remembered something after coming to Svartalfheim and more precisely to the center of the wastelands.

The temporary base of the Red Branch Knights.

The Red Branch Knights that Cu Chulainn belonged to were destroyed along with Erin. However, there were some survivors. Cu Chulainn had gathered them and built a temporary base for the Red Branch Knights in the harsh lands of Svartalfheim.

‘I had engraved a returning magic in Gae Bolg in case of the worst. The fragment that has the magic letters engraved in it should have returned to the base.’

In addition Cu Chulainn had said that there were relics, several weapons and treasures stored in the base of the knights.

Tae Ho let out a sigh and touched his forehead after frowning. He could now feel Erin’s power, perhaps for having gotten quite accustomed to the power of a God.

‘Hey, I don’t want to do this to a man either!’

Cu Chulainn had also frowned while giving a kiss blessing on his forehead.

However Tae Ho ended up smiling bitterly. Thanks to Cu Chulainn having blessed him in the forehead, Heda had changed places where she blessed him. He was thankful towards Cu Chulainn in many ways.

“Is it regretful, not being able to join the party?”

A voice was heard behind him. It was Siri, who was nice to see anytime just like Heda.

“How can that be? Thank you for going with me, Captain Siri.”

“That’s your task. I also have to pay back the grace I received

from master.”

The master Siri talked about was none other than Ragnar. He desired Siri’s talent and character very much when they had gone to catch Rolo but now he had taken her as his disciple.

As a result, Siri visited Idun’s legion whenever she had time and had received classes along with Tae Ho for the past three months.

“Anyways, why don’t we prepare to depart?” Siri said in a low voice and started to take off her clothes. As Tae Ho turned his head hurriedly, Siri let out a laugh and activated her saga.

[Saga: The Wolf Witch]

He had already seen Siri’s saga several times, but the result was different from before. It was the result of Siri’s saga having developed and having had the power of a God added into it.

The golden wolf standing below the blue moonlight was really beautiful. It could be believed if someone said that she was a mount of the God of Hunting.

“Tae Ho.”

“I will excuse myself.”

Tae Ho placed the Beast’s saddle on Siri, who had transformed into a wolf as big as a horse, and fixed his posture. As it was troublesome to fly in Svartalfheim, Tae Ho could only ask Siri instead of using Rolo.

“Grab on tightly, I will run a bit roughly.” Siri also laughed that time and then started to run like a White Silence. Different to her words, that had said that she would run roughly, she was charging softly and gently to the point that no footsteps were left behind.

Riding in the wasteland that was covered in white was like crossing a boundless ocean. But the closer they got to their destination, the stronger and faster the fragement of Gae Bolg vibrated, so they didn’t lose direction.

It was when Siri had ridden almost for an hour with her quick feet that the vibration stopped.

It wasn't because they got lost, but because they had arrived at their destination.

Tae Ho got down off Siri and put away the Beast's saddle. Siri removed her saga and quickly put on some clothes.

A rocky mountain was in front of her. Tae Ho was able to find the secret door easily after activating the 'Eyes of the Dragon'.

He placed his forehead, which had the blessing of Cu Chulainn, to the boulder and an entrance appeared with a clunking sound. It seemed to be a passage using the natural cave.

When Erin was destroyed Cu Chulainn had mixed emotions, like rage, hatred, sadness and emptiness. The other survivors must have also felt the same as it was kind of understandable that they had built a base in this desolate place.

Tae Ho made a light ball with the temporary engraving in his right hand. When the surroundings were lit up to about tens of meters, a big cave appeared.

"Erin's knights..." Siri exclaimed in a low voice and looked at her surroundings. There were sculptures resembling the knights of Erin and the Gods. There were also sculptures that seemed to be Gods of Tuatha De Danann.

Tae Ho approached an altar that was at the opposite side of the entrance. If it was like Cu Chulainn had explained, Gae Bolg's fragment had to be on top of that.

However, there was nothing on it. As Siri turned to look at him with a bewildered face, Tae Ho approached the altar even more instead of answering.

Erin's power.

It was obvious. Even though it was temporary, this was still the

base of the Red Branch Knights.

But that wasn't all. Tae Ho felt a strong power from the altar.

Gae Bolg started to vibrate. No, Cu Chulainn's soul that was inside of it was trembling.

Tae Ho placed his hand on the altar. Cu Chulainn's blessing, which was inside of Tae Ho, reacted with the power on the altar.

A light exploded outwards. The cave, which was filled with darkness, was covered with a bright light. At the same time Tae Ho and Heda could see it. The shape of a woman made with the light that appeared from the altar was formed.

"Scathach." Tae Ho reflexively called for her. The woman had long and abundant black hair and cat-like eyes. The Queen of the Land of Darkness, that was located in the boundary of life and death.

She, who was wearing the fur of a black beast, spoke up. It was a hologram that had been recorded tens of years ago and not a real-time conversation.

"Cu Chulainn, my proud disciple."

Her words were short and indifferent.

The day Erin was destroyed, the Land of Darkness had also gotten destroyed. She, who had been struggling to defend the Land of Darkness, fell into an ambiguous flow of time and in the end was able to arrive in Asgard.

The first thing she did was to look for Cu Chulainn. She had been able to discover the Red Branch Knights with her efforts but it was only after Cu Chulainn and the warriors had gone to the Great War.

Scathach retrieved the fragment of Gae Bolg that was placed on the altar. It seemed like a joke of fate, but Cu Chulainn's soul almost didn't remain in it.

“If you return one day, come find me. I will be waiting for you, just like I always did.”

Scathach's welcome ended with a sad smile. A sentence made with light and drawings appeared. Although he couldn't read Erin's words, he felt like he knew what they meant.

The map was telling him where Scathach was.

At that moment, Cu Chulainn's emotions burst out. He laughed and cried. His emotions were so strong it even affected Tae Ho. Tae Ho cried a bit without him noticing.

Because of that Tae Ho and Cu Chulainn couldn't feel the change that occurred in their surroundings. But fortunately, the two of them weren't the only ones in that place.

“Who are you!” Siri yelled sharply and turned back. Tae Ho got surprised and spread his senses. There were things that were moving in the darkness beyond the light that had started to disappear.

Cu Chulainn, inside of Tae Ho, became enraged.

“Fomhoraigh!”

Erin's old enemies, that were also called Fompires. They, who had harassed Erin with countless invasions, hadn't disappeared even after Erin was destroyed. No, in the first place, they were the ones that had brought Erin to destruction.

The Fompires, which surged out from the seas, didn't have a predetermined shape. They were giants that looked atrocious but there were some that didn't have a shape and some had beautiful looks, of that of a God.

The ones that had moved were the rock-like Fompires. They had been waiting for someone to come to this place for tens of years. They had been wondering if they could find a trace of Scathach and they had finally succeeded.

A part of the Fomoires threw themselves to the outside. The rest charged towards Siri and Tae Ho.

It felt as if the walls and ceilings were crumbling and pouring down. However Tae Ho thought instead of fearing.

He had to catch the ones that got outside. He had to find Scathach before the Fomoires flocked to her.

So what he needed to do so.

Tae Ho stopped breathing. He gripped the Unknown sword piece and activated his strength.

[Saga: The Immortal Warrior]

[Synchro rate: 32%]

The black storm that occurred from the tip of Tae Ho's hands swept up the Fomoires.

&

< Intermediate Ranked Warrior (1) > End

Episode 19/Chapter 2: Intermediate Ranked Warrior (2)

Tae Ho already had three masters.

Heda, who helped his growth in runes and magic.

Ragnar, who was in charge of the saga and the power of a God.

Cu Chulainn, who had said that he would transmit the geas and Erin's power.

There was no one that had taught him spearmanship.

Tae Ho's sword was Kalsted's sword.

His swordsmanship and fighting style was all based on Kalsted.

Tae Ho had dug into Kalsted's sword over the past three months. He had worked hard to execute the several techniques in reality that Kalsted had used in the world of Dark Age.

Ragnar and Heda helped him. Cu Chulainn also grabbed some important points and advised him.

Kalsted's sword was completed inside the saga.

He had vaguely followed up. The synchro rate had increased up to 32%.

[Saga: The Warrior's Equipment]

What Tae Ho was grabbing was the Sword of a Winter Wolf.

It was a sword that had strong magic engraved in it, which he had acquired after killing the three troll brothers and conquering Giant Hill.

Tae Ho executed Kalsted's sword. Instead of slashing the Fomoires, which were like rock, with his sword, he aimed for the knots that connected the rocks. He slashed the Fomoires as quickly and naturally as water. His superhuman physique, which had

reached the intermediate level, and the polished sword techniques of Kalsted made that possible.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The Fomoires fell to the ground and cried out. The Fomoires couldn't catch up to Tae Ho as they had become dull, thanks to the snowstorm. They simply got swept by the sword.

“Captain Siri!”

Siri was already emerging from the cave when he yelled. Catching the ones that had escaped was her role.

Siri pulled out the big crossbow she was carrying on her back and fired quickly. The arrows that were added with the strength of the saga hit 100 out of 100 times, but there were too many Fomoires. Siri charged the eighth arrow after having killed seven of the escaping Fomoires and perceived that the last one had already fled too far. Even if she hit it, there was a high possibility for the arrow to get bounced off.

Babang!

A loud sound exploded in the cave. Siri ground her teeth and turned around. And just as expected, she saw Tae Ho, who was breathing roughly.

Siri opened her reluctant mouth with a sorry face and Tae Ho shook his head. Just looking at the seven Fomoires that were on the floor, he could realize that it wasn't Siri's fault. It was unavoidable.

‘Hurry up.’ Cu Chulainn said in a low voice. He could feel that he was suppressing the uneasiness the most he could.

‘Go to the treasury of the Red Branch Knights. There's an object suitable for transportation there. You will be able to arrive faster than when riding on your ally.’

Tae Ho hurriedly made a hand gesture to Siri. After they

returned to the cave again, he was led by Cu Chulainn and opened the secret door of the treasury.

“Huh?!”

Flashy and colorful words shone. The golden words especially blinded him because there were too much.

As Tae Ho raised his hand to reflexively cover himself as if covering from the sunlight, Siri looked at him as if asking what he was doing.

“Tae Ho?”

“There are a lot of treasures.”

Tae Ho evaded Siri’s gaze, which had turned a bit warm and then looked inside the treasury. There were many weapons: swords, spears and shields, but there were also several precious metals like pure gold and jewels.

‘Because someday... Erin was planning on making the second Ulster.’ Cu Chulainn said in a bitter voice. He was filled with prostration as if he had thought about his allies of the Red Branch Knights.

‘The thing you should take is the boat over there.’

[Scuabtuinne]

It was a long boat that didn’t have a sail and was like a canoe. It didn’t seem that different to the boat that was in Idun’s legion.

‘It has no sail and oar but it is a magical boat that moves automatically. It will be able to fly over the plains, as if it’s slipping. You can also regulate the size, so order it to get smaller.’

When he placed his hands on it like Cu Chulainn had told him, the boat became small, like a toy. It seemed to be similar to the magical boat Skidbladnir, that he had heard of once from Idun.

Tae Ho took some more treasures that seemed useful and then left the treasury. He could always return at a later time, so he could

retrieve the treasures then.

‘Hurry up.’ Cu Chulainn said again. The anxiousness in him could now be felt.

Tae Ho hurried up and thought. He was sure that he would also be in a hurry if Heda was in a dangerous situation, but Scathach was none other than Cu Chulainn’s master. He was sure that she would be really powerful.

‘That’s not the case. Master is more of a teacher than a warrior. She’s more specialized in teaching.’

Although she certainly had some strength, she wasn’t as strong as Tae Ho had imagined her to be.

Cu Chulainn thought of the first time he met Scathach. It was a ridiculous first meeting that was about him sneaking into her bedroom and threatening her that he would kill her if she didn’t teach him.

“Really?”

Cu Chulainn shared his thoughts because he wasn’t in a good condition and Tae Ho asked unconsciously. They had been lovers and other things, but their first meeting was that dramatic.

‘I, I was small back then.’ Cu Chulainn said with a bewildered voice.

Although you couldn’t forgive someone having threatened you after sneaking in to your bedroom for being young, Tae Ho just nodded for the time being.

“Tae Ho?”

As Siri asked as if there was something wrong, Cu Chulainn cleared his throat and begged him to keep quiet about it. Tae Ho also promised to keep it a secret.

‘Thanks to that, I was able to calm down.’

Cu Chulainn became a bit calmer than before. Tae Ho placed

down Scuabtuinne outside the cave and thought.

Although he couldn't know for how long the Fomoirs had been hiding in ambush, he could vaguely know how obsessed they were. They couldn't be in too much of a hurry but it was certainly a situation in which they should hurry.

'Master is in Nidavelir. I will be the one to control it so place Gae Bolg to Scuabtuinne.'

Tae Ho got onto the boat and placed Gae Bolg at the front of the boat. Siri released a magical bird, which was provided on becoming an intermediate-ranked warrior, before getting onto the boat. It was to give notice to Gandur of the news the fastest they could.

Scuabtuinne departed. Their destination was Nidavelir, the world of the dwarves.

&

Just like the giants in Jotunheim, the Fomoirs also had several kings.

The tyrant Brass, who was born between the Tuatha De Danann and a Fomoir, opened its eye sharply and looked into the distance.

It had already passed a hundred years since Erin was destroyed. And in that time, Brass and the Fomoirs had reduced in numbers.

What the Fomoirs wanted wasn't the destruction of Erin. What they truly wanted was to take over Erin and rule it.

However, it was too late. The King of Muspelheim, Surtr, had destroyed Erin with his flames. Erin didn't exist anymore.

Because of that, the Fomoirs became obsessed with the survivors of Erin, because they were the only ones that could fill their empty, conquering greed.

'Scathach.'

The Queen of the Land of Darkness. The witch that raised not only that exalted Cu Chulainn, but also several other heroes.

A new flame surged up in Bress, which was almost cooling down and becoming ash.

Nidavelir.

Bress burst out into laughter. He expressed joy and amazement at the same time.

It was good news that it was far away from Asgard for the Fomoires. There were several of their race in that place that Scathach was said to be.

She really was Scathach, the Shadow Witch. She had hidden really well.

Bress rose his body from the throne made of rocks.

&

Scuabtuinne was really fast. After they passed the boundary connecting Svartalfheim and Nidavelir, the sky turned from white to black. Siri opened her eyes widely, as if it was marvelous.

“It’s a white night. Master’s words were true.”

The snowstorm that had been falling until then, also stopped, like a lie. It seemed like they would turn blind because of the white scenery.

The dwarves of Nidavelir all lived underground. Because of that, it could be said that the real Nidavelir was underground.

However Cu Chulainn and Tae Ho had something to do above ground.

‘We are almost there. We are not that far.’

“Tae Ho!” Cu Chulainn and Siri spoke at the same time. Tae Ho looked at the location Siri pointed at and ground his teeth.

Fomoires of various shapes were flying in the sky. They were certainly moving in the same direction as Tae Ho’s group.

In addition, they weren’t the only ones. After looking a bit

farther he could see Fompires that had already arrived. They were attacking the place that was in between the boundary of the white night and black night.

Cu Chulainn thought of Scathach, who was in the Land of Darkness. He was sure that the thing was similar to the fortress that was being protected by an unseen wall.

The Fompires were a bit faster. Just counting them roughly, they were more than a hundred. It wasn't a number Tae Ho and Siri could face alone.

However Scuabtuinne didn't stop. Siri looked into the distance with the eyes of a hunter, as if looking for her prey.

It was then that a huge existence crossed the white plains and appeared. The thing that had surged up by charging forward was truly white and beautiful.

'Adenmaha!' Cu Chulainn said in shock. He could only do so. It wasn't only because Cu Chulainn knew its name.

'It's the servant of the Tyrant Bress. It's a strong sea dragon that can move freely anywhere that has water.'

The fact that Adenmaha had appeared meant that the army that was in front of them was sent by the Tyrant Bress.

However Tae Ho paid attention to another thing.

"Dragon?"

"You are talking about a dragon?!" Tae Ho and Siri said at the same time. The two of them looked at Gae Bolg as if they were going to devour it and Cu Chulainn answered in his bewilderment.

'That's right. Precisely speaking, it's a sea serpent, but it does belong to the dragon category.'

That was enough. Tae Ho nodded and Siri transformed into a golden wolf after smiling sharply.

Tae Ho rode on Siri and activated the 'Eyes of the Dragon'. It was

just like Cu Chulainn had said.

[The Poor Servant of the Tyrant Bress]

[White Adenmaha]

[Sea Serpent(Dragon Race)]

‘Why are they like that? Is it different if it is a dragon?’

It was obvious for Cu Chulainn to not know. As he hadn’t always been with Tae Ho. He didn’t know much about Tae Ho before they met.

“It is different.”

“By a lot.” Tae Ho and Siri said in consecution. Tae Ho glared at Adenmaha instead of explaining more and got ready.

[Saga: The Hammer of the Blacksmith Doesn’t Slip Off]

[The Shining Hunter’s Rope]

[The Beast’s Saddle That Covers You Comfortably]

[The Suppression Reins That Have the Love of Idun]

And the last one.

Just like what happened with the ‘Sword of the Warrior’, the moment the synchro rate reached 32%, Tae Ho’s saga improved one more step.

[Saga: The One That Controls Dragons]

Controlling instead of handling. Kalsted’s saga showed a particularly strong power when used against the dragon race.

Siri, who had Tae Ho on her back, jumped down from the boat. Tae Ho made Siri faster with the strength of his saga.

The Fomoires discovered Tae Ho and Siri. The Adenmaha, which was about to fire an ice breath towards the invisible barrier, also turned to look at Tae Ho and Siri.

He saw one warrior riding a small but beautiful wolf. Compared

to the Fomoirs surrounding Scathach's fortress, they were really unshapely.

However, Adenmaha trembled unconsciously. The warrior and the wolf smiling while looking at it was really frightening.

What was it? What did they want to do?

Adenmaha breathed out for now. But it didn't work at all. Siri was accompanied by thunder and storm and charged over with an amazing speed and passed it from below. She kept running like that in order to jump over the Fomoirs and then she got on top of Adenmaha.

At the same time Tae Ho jumped down from Siri. Although it was huge, it was a normal sea serpent. He ran on the neck of the Adenmaha, which had a long neck, long body and long tail, and reached its head in an instant.

“Chant!”

Tae Ho transformed into a hawk. Adenmaha shook its head to try to shake off Tae Ho but it got bewildered once more and Tae Ho transformed into a human once again in the air and threw the wide Hunter's Rope.

Adenmaha's neck got caught in it. Tae Ho kicked the air to stick to its neck and after taking out the Beast's Saddle he activated the 'One That Controls Dragons'. In addition, he threw the suppression reins he had received from Idun in the last expedition. The magical reins enlarged on its own and hooked Adenmaha's neck.

Tae Ho inserted more strength into the 'One That Controls Dragons' once again. And then something that shocked even Cu Chulainn occurred.

[The Really Bewildered]

[The One That Has Changed Owners]

[White Adenmaha]

While Siri was smiling while growling, the ice breath of the Adenmaha fell down onto the heads of the Fomoires.

< Intermediate Ranked Warrior (2) > End

Episode 19/Chapter 3: Intermediate Ranked Warrior (3)

Adenmaha's body length easily surpassed 20 meters. The head of the wild dragon was big, and the range of the breath that got out of its mouth in the shape of a fan was also wide.

“Wider!”

The moment Tae Ho ordered, the Adenmaha turned its head while still breathing out. The fomioires that were close to the Adenmaha got covered by the breath and cried.

The weak ones got frozen on the spot and the ones that were a bit strong couldn't move properly. As almost thirty fomioires got dealt with in an instant, the remaining fomioires that were surrounding the invisible barrier all turned to look at Tae Ho.

‘Good, it seems like it's working well. Hand me over to your comrade. If it's me I will be able to enter the fortress of master.’

In the first place, the reason they were fighting like this was to rescue Scathach. Rather than facing the fomioires that may bring who knows how many reinforcements, taking Scathach and escaping was the right choice.

“Captain Siri!”

When Tae Ho, that was on top of the Adenmaha, yelled Siri raised her head. Tae Ho threw the fragment of Gae Bolg, without explaining anything, and Siri jumped up and caught it with her mouth. It seemed as if her instincts had taken over.

“Deo?”

Siri let out a strange sound because she was biting Gae Bolg but she then jumped down from Adenmaha's back. It seemed like Cuchulainn had explained her himself now that they were in contact.

Tae Ho looked at Siri's back that had taken a big turn around them and then he looked at the front again. Although he had defeated more than thirty fompires with the ice breath, there were still more than two hundred of them.

'How many breaths can you fire? Will it also be strong physically?'

Although it was the first time he rode on a sea serpent, he felt like he had grasped how he should fight.

"Good! Let's go!"

'Where do you dare!'

The moment Tae Ho pulled on the reins, a sharp and high pitched voice penetrated his head. Tae Ho looked at the front without having to look at his surroundings. This one was the only one that could possibly talk to him!

"You, were you a girl?"

'How do you dare to put reins on a lady!'

It really was Adenmaha. Tae Ho gripped the reins tighter and nodded.

"That's why you were so pretty."

'Ugh, what?'

Adenmaha let out a bewildered voice. She was a really funny one to converse with but he didn't have that much leisure right now. The fompires that had curled themselves because of the ice breath were slowly starting to move towards them.

'Is it certainly of the dragon race?'

Rolo also seemed quite intelligent but it was impossible to converse with it.

Anyways, he could leave the conversation for later. As Tae Ho pulled on the reins and ordered it again, Adenmaha hurriedly

yelled.

‘Wait! Wait! Erase the slave seal first! If you don’t, then the geass will trigger a paradox!’

A blue light was shining from a scale on the place that was a bit above than the Beast’s saddle. As the blue light shone between the white scales it was easily spottable.

“The paradox of a geass?”

‘My geass is [I will obey my master]. I don’t know how but I currently have two masters. If I receive two opposite orders in this situation, the geass will generate a paradox!’

Adenmaha spoke really quickly without even breathing once. He could feel that she felt frustrated because he didn’t even know something like this.

The paradox of the geass.

He felt like he could vaguely know. Because the original owner of Adenmaha, the Tyrant Bress, and Tae Ho were enemies. If Bress and Tae Ho ordered ‘attack Tae Ho’ and ‘defend me’, then the geass [obey the master] would obviously generate a paradox.

Although Tae Ho didn’t know it because he hadn’t experienced a geass yet, the contradiction of a geass should be what the user feared the most. You wouldn’t be able to do anything, as if you were in a checkmate, and just had to face the paradox.

“Wasn’t a geass the power of Erin? Can Fomoires also use geasses?”

‘I’m not a fomoiere!’

Adenmaha spoke impolitely right away. It was the same for the geass of obeying the owner that wasn’t Bress, and he thought that he would listen to a heartbreaking story, but he didn’t have time to listen to her. Tae Ho changed the Sword piece to a beginner dagger and asked,

“So I just have to remove that blue scale right?”

‘Um.....wa, wait?!’

Adenmaha realized what Tae Ho was about to do next and yelled, but it was pointless. Tae Ho stood up, and after stabbing the dagger in between the scales, he forcefully removed the blue one.

‘Kyak!’

The situation seemed similar to when a human had their nails removed forcefully, causing Adenmaha to let out a pained cry.

Actually, it was more serious and hard thing. If Tae Ho wasn’t Adenmaha’s owner, then it wouldn’t have ended with just pain.

Tae Ho hurriedly executed the power of a God and healed the spot that didn’t have a scale before gripping the reins.

“Done?”

‘Leave it, you bad owner!’

Adenmaha yelled fiercely and Tae Ho laughed refreshingly and ordered.

“Fine! Then let’s fight again!”

[Saga: The one that controls dragons]

Maybe it was because they had removed the slave seal that the synchronization between Tae Ho and Adenmaha increased. Adenmaha yelled again.

‘Wa, what is it. I feel strange!’

“Entrust your body to me!”

Tae Ho concentrated and grabbed the reins. Then Adenmaha released a breath and after that she moved swiftly. She moved on top of the snowy fields as if slipping and swung her tail widely to sweep up the fomoires that were on the ground in an instant.

Tae Ho grasped the number of the fomoires and how strong they were with the ‘eyes of the dragon’ and asked Adenmaha,

“How many more fomoires will come? Is your past owner also going to come?!”

‘I don’t know about reinforcements! And Bress probably won’t come!’

Adenmaha swung her tail roughly once again. The fomoires just threw rocks from far away or fired arrows instead of rushing towards her hastily.

Tae Ho read Adenmaha’s memories and emotions with the ‘one that controls dragons’.

The Tyrant Bress that Adenmaha thought of was cruel, merciless, and vulgar. He cared more about having no wounds inflicted on his body than about the hundreds of underlings dying before him. This showed that he only appeared in places that ensured either his safety or his victory.

Nidavellir was quite far away from Asgard. However it wasn’t that it was completely off reach.

Just like how it happened against the giant of strength Harad, if someone strong enough appeared, then it was possible for Thor or the other Gods of Asgard to make their move.

That was why there was no way for Bress, who cared about his life more than anything, to appear.

Tae Ho asked another thing at Adenmaha’s strong conviction,
“Then someone that may come?”

Even if he didn’t come himself, he could always send an underling like he did just now.

‘Kolga? Midak?’

Every time Adenmaha gave a name, Tae Ho could know a bit more about them. The two of them were human shaped fomoires.

Although he couldn’t exactly know how strong they were, he did think that they were stronger than Adenmaha.

‘But it’s still doable.’

Tae Ho started to think after estimating how strong Adenmaha was and she seemed to have read Tae Ho’s thoughts because of the synchronization that she immediately spoke impolitely again.

‘I’m also quite strong. In the first place, I’m a sea serpent! What do you want me to do in a snowy field!’

She spoke like that and swung her tail again. If you measured her from her head up to her tail she was as long as thirty meters, and she could sweep the entire battlefield with just that thanks to her big body.

Adenmaha sent an emotion as if asking how that was. Tae Ho gave a suitable reply as her owner at her reaction that was more girly than lady-like.

“Use honorifics!”

‘I am strong?!’

Adenmaha didn’t stop and kept moving. It was because the fomoires had started to attack from a distance after having encircled her.

As the fomoires kept distancing themselves, she couldn’t sweep the battlefield anymore like she had been doing. In addition, the flying fomoires that were in the sky started to fall over to Adenmaha’s head.

Those things that looked like crows pecked on Adenmaha’s body. There were some that released acid or fire and there were some that slammed against her.

Adenmaha now had to concentrate on dodging. Tae Ho also attacked the fomoires in the sky with Thunderbolt and yelled.

“You can’t fly right?!”

‘How can a sea serpent! Fly!’

Adenmaha used honorifics forcefully and released a breath. It

seemed like she was weakening that the power in her breath had become weaker.

Tae Ho looked at Scathach's fortress. Actually, it was no different to the cave of the Red branch knights.

What happened at Siri's and Cuchulainn's side? Did they even meet Scathach?

'I can't hold on any longer. As he turned his head, he saw more fomioires charging towards them. Looking that the red letters formed a wave, it seemed like they easily amounted to a hundred.

Tae Ho gulped some air. He controlled Adenmaha and moved her to the opposite side of the fortress.

But he wasn't fleeing just like Adenmaha wanted. Right before they escaped the battlefield, she made Adenmaha stop and turn around.

There were close to a two hundred fomioires in the sky and ground. And once again, there were a hundred fomioires charging towards them from afar. Just like Adenmaha had said, no strong fomioire had appeared yet.

But they couldn't escape. No, there was no need.

Because green letters were also charging in as the red letters!

The sound of a hurn trumpet was heard from their back. The sound that spread to the high black and white sky made Tae Ho feel excited.

"For Asgard and the nine planets."

Tae Ho said in a low voice. And then, everyone's voice was heard from behind him as if they had heard him.

"For Asgard and the nine planets!"

The forty plus white silences charged without making any noise. Valkyrie Gandur was riding at the front and the warriors of Hedmod's and Ullr's legion followed her back.

After the giant of strength Harad appeared, the Valkyries could unseal their battle seal on the searching tasks up to a certain extent through their own will. Even though she had summoned more than forty white silences, no traces of exhaustion could be seen in Gandur's face.

“Go! Warriors! Repel the enemies of Asgard!”

He was sure that they had ridden for more than two hours. However, the warriors of Valhalla didn't seem even a little bit tired. The enraged wave charged towards the fomoires.

“Shield wall!”

The warriors raised a wall of shields. They blocked the fire and arrows. No, it was more suitable to say that they had trampled on the long ranged attacks.

Adenmaha stared absentmindedly. The warriors of Erin were also valiant but there was no one that charged like the warriors of Valhalla.

“Tae Ho!”

Right at that moment, Siri's voice was heard. Tae Ho hurriedly led Adenmaha to the direction the voice was heard. After he took a turn around the battlefield and approached the fortress the golden-furred Siri ran towards them.

“Go to Scathach-nim. It's impossible to escape. Before that, however, there's something I have to prepare.”

There was no time to explain in detail. Tae Ho just listened to the brief story and nodded. As soon as she returned the fragment of Gae Bolg he grabbed Siri that was trying to jump down again and after he made her transform back into a human he covered her with the stealth cloak and coat.

“I will entrust you with Adenmaha.”

Siri understood it immediately when she received Adenmaha's

reins. She sat down on the Beast's saddle and said with a pleasing and troubled voice.

“It seems like it should be nice to ride on one at times.”

Tae Ho listened to Adenmaha's complaints and jumped down. Adenmaha went to the battlefield again along with Siri and Tae Ho activated the 'charge of the warrior'.

‘Over there!’

Maybe it was because he had already met Scathach that even though it was an urgent situation, the uneasiness and anxiousness in Cuchulainn's voice had disappeared.

It seemed like his stiff way of talking had also returned to normal.

Tae Ho passed the fomiores blocking his path without having to defeat them and then threw himself inside the invisible barrier. The barrier that had recognized Gae Bolg let Tae Ho pass.

Cuchulainn showed him the path with showing him his memories instead of telling him himself. After running inside the cave a big hall appeared just like the one in Red branch knight. Blue fire was lighting up the surroundings and the ceiling and the floor and even the walls were made of ice.

At the end of the hall, there was a beautiful lady that was half laying down on the throne covered with a faint blue light.

Scathach.

She, who was covering herself with a black leather of a beast, was pale and didn't have energy in her eyes. Cuchulainn had explained that it was she had just woken up from a long sleep to heal herself from the injuries.

“So you are, Erin's successor.”

Scathach let out a low voice. Her voice was a beautiful one that charmed others even though it was weak.

“Idun’s warrior greets Scathach.”

Tae Ho hit his chest twice and expressed his manners. Scathach wasn’t simply a beautiful lady. She was still the queen of the land of darkness that had disappeared. The noble aura that was covering her like the light of the moon was proof of that.

“Come closer.”

Scathach put on a smile with difficulty. As Tae Ho got closer, she continued speaking.

“I have roughly heard the situation from Cuchulainn. It has already passed a hundred years since Erin got destroyed but the fomoires don’t show signs of changing at all.”

Scathach extended her white and soft hand. When Tae Ho grabbed her hand, information that couldn’t be told with her mouth was transmitted to him.

“A strong fomoire is coming. Warriors of Valhalla are shedding their blood because of me, so I can’t be the one to escape alone.”

Scathach was seated on a throne inside the fortress but she knew everything that was happening outside. Just like she had said, a strong presence was approaching. He was sure it was an underling of the Tyrant Bress, that Adenmaha had spoken about.

“Warrior of Idun, I’m sorry for making your shoulders more heavy with the excuse that you are Erin’s successor. But please do understand me as you are the only one I have to rely on.”

The situation was urgent. Scathach took out the fragment of Gae Bolg she was holding. Tae Ho seemed to have understood her gaze that he gave her the fragment he had.

The two fragments became one in Scathach’s hands. It was short as it was still two of five but at least it now looked like a white stick.

“I will entrust Gae Bolg to you. Although it’s not complete, it’s

still the best weapon made in the land of shadow. Cuchulainn will help you bring out its power.”

Scathach touched Gae Bolg as if she was caressing Cuchulainn’s cheeks and then she made a gesture with her eyes once again to Tae Ho. When he approached her, she rose up and placed her lips on Tae Ho’s lips.

“Let the blessing of the land of shadow accompany you.”

Her lips were as hot as fire. Scathach smiled faintly and leaned on the throne again, and Tae Ho that received Gae Bolg turned around hurriedly and started to run.

A strong Fomoiré was approaching.

He wasn’t bewildered at all at the fact that he was expecting her to kiss his forehead or cheeks.

Cuchulainn feigned a laugh and mumbled.

‘To think of another woman while having received a kiss from master.’

“Huk? You can also read my mind?”

‘No, I just guessed. But it’s true that you thought of that Valkyrie.’

Cuchulainn laughed evilly. Tae Ho couldn’t say anything as he had indeed thought of Heda the moment she had kissed him so he chose to run harder instead.

He got out of the fortress. He saw a distant place beyond the invisible barrier and the warriors that were fighting against the fomoirés.

Adenmaha didn’t lie. The fomoiré that had started to appear from far away was strong. As this place and Asgard was far away, Thor wouldn’t be able to arrive at the right time like before. Ragnar also wasn’t with them.

He felt like all the hair in his body was standing up. As he was

much stronger now than three months ago he could sense how strong his opponent was more clearly.

Tae Ho took a deep breath. Cuchulainn said in a low voice, 'Don't fear. Did you forget what you are holding right now?'

Gae Bolg.

Erin's devil spear that was created in the land of shadows.

Cuchulainn taught him the method. And the blessing of Scathach added more strength.

"Gae Bolg."

The moment Tae Ho called the name the white devil spear replied.

< Intermediate Ranked Warrior (3) > End

Episode 19/Chapter 4: Intermediate Ranked Warrior (4)

A long time ago, the Queen of the Land of Shadows had made a spear using the bones of a sea creature.

Scathach looked at the spear, which was beautifully created, and felt that this would be the secret weapon that would protect the Land of Shadows. She, who had the power of foresight, made her words a prophecy.

Scathach, who was covering herself with the leather of a wolf, walked her path alone. The road was too long and harsh. Scathach had overcome the trial that had lasted for nine nights and placed her spear in the deepest part of the Land of Darkness. It was in order to absorb the strength of life and death into it.

Nine nights passed once again. Scathach was on guard against the specters that were looking at her from beyond the boundary and she became certain while looking at the white light that was emitted from the spear. It was just like she had planned.

The strength of life dyed the spear in white and the strength of death was placed deep in the spear and planted a strong curse.

Scathach named the white evil spear Gae Bolg and used it in the most important battles and the enemies of the Land of Darkness really feared the witch and the spear of death.

However Scathach couldn't keep Gae Bolg forever. It was because she had given it to her disciple, Cu Chulainn, who she loved and treasured very much.

Although Cu Chulainn brought the weapon of his master everywhere with him, he didn't always use it. Just like Scathach had done, he only used it in the most important moments and brought out Gae Bolg's real strength.

Gae Bolg was shining in white. The missing parts of the spear

were complemented by the light.

‘Don’t waste your strength. You have to end it now. Gae Bolg’s real worth is to use a definitive attack to kill your enemy. You shouldn’t use it as you please.’

There was magic in Cu Chulainn’s voice. Tae Ho understood how to use Gae Bolg, thanks to Cu Chulainn’s transmission, and naturally wielded its strength. The white light which was shining dimmed like a lie but Tae Ho could still feel its power.

Tae Ho stayed at a distant place.. He saw a huge pirate ship approaching while flying in the sky. When he used the ‘Eye of the Dragon’ he saw that several red letters surged up from the ship.

[Beast Ruler]

[Underling of the Tyrant Bress: Midak]

It was the clearest and reddest letters. When Tae Ho read it out loud Cu Chulainn said, ‘He’s one of the underlings of Bress. He doesn’t only have the strength to control countless beasts naturally, but he can also transform into a monster himself. It seems as if it had been planning to mate with the sea serpent.’

Cu Chulainn showed him some more memories. The shape of a big and imposing warrior wearing bear fur showed up.

Just like Tae Ho’s saga gave strength to the ones he was riding on, Midak could greatly strengthen the beasts he was controlling.

Tae Ho looked at the approaching ship and thought. He had discovered them first. There was also the possibility that they weren’t even aware of Tae Ho and Gae Bolg.

The most suitable method was sniping them or making a surprise attack.

‘Sniping them is impossible.’

Although Gae Bolg had the shape of a spear, there were many hard points to use it as a throwing spear. Because of that, Cu

Chulainn only used Gae Bolg in a short distance, just like a harpoon.

As a result, the option with the highest possibility was the surprise attack.

Tae Ho rolled his fingers in the air. They moved quickly, like pressing on the keyboard, and formulated a strategy.

There was one thing he had thought of. It was a strategy he had already used in Dark Age once and had succeeded.

Although the pirate ship was flying in the sky quickly there was still some time. Tae Ho hurriedly looked at everyone in the battlefield. He looked at Siri, fighting fiercely on top of Adenmaha, but it wouldn't be possible. To increase the success rate of his strategy he needed something more than simply flying up and quickly.

Tae Ho rolled his eyes again. He discovered someone suitable and ran hurriedly towards that person.

“Gandur!”

Gandur, who was fighting nearby while riding a white Silence, turned her head at Tae Ho's call. And then she frowned and said, “What is it; those eyes are filled with desire as if the day had finally come.”

“When did I -!”

As he refuted reflexively, Gandur laughed evilly. She approached Tae Ho immediately, as if it had been only a joke from the start.

“What's wrong? Is it related to the enemy that's approaching?”

It really was Gandur. It seemed like she had already realized Midak's existence. Tae Ho spoke quickly.

“I will explain it to you while we go. First, transform please.”

His voice and eyes were dead serious. However Gandur flinched and trembled.

“A-are you even aiming for me?”

“Gandur!”

It wasn't the time to joke. Gandur also stopped talking and then sat down and transformed with a chant. Just like a Valkyrie of the God of Hunting, she didn't transform into a swan but into a big black hawk.

Tae Ho hurriedly got on Gandur and activated the 'One That Controls Dragons'. At that moment, Gandur let out an exclamation while trembling and then flew to the sky.

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“Ohh! Finally!”

The warriors that were near Gandur yelled with shining eyes. Tae Ho proceeded to explain to Gandur instead of answering them and Gandur, who had understood Tae Ho's tactic, activated Ullr's blessing.

At that moment, Gandur disappeared from the air. Just like a Valkyrie that Gods were dependent on, her stealth blessing was incomparable to the lowest-ranked warriors.

But of course, some movements could still be grasped if they were checked thoroughly, but it was enough.

Gandur continued to increase her speed. It seemed as if her objective wasn't the pirate ship that was approaching the battlefield, but high in the sky.

Finally, they even flew higher than the pirate ship. It seemed like they hadn't noticed Gandur as planned, since they didn't change their trajectory.

Gandur, who flew as if she was going to charge at the sun, took a big turn at one point. Tae Ho grabbed onto Gandur's neck tightly as she started to descend at an overwhelming speed and looked at the ship with the 'Eyes of the Dragon'. He grasped Midak's

location.

At the prow, over the deck, where he could look down at the battlefield.

Gandur's flight was really precise. Without even needing the help of Tae Ho's saga, she received Midak's location and found the best route possible.

They only had one opportunity.

Tae Ho gulped air. She might get angry because he only found her at times like this, but he called Idun's name. Idun's power, which was filled with affection, covered Tae Ho's body.

Gandur spoke quickly and precisely.

"Now!"

Tae Ho jumped down off Gandur's back. Gandur got pushed back because of him and then turned her body and passed the pirate ship. Tae Ho kicked the air once again and descended to the destined place. He called Gae Bolg's name once again.

Bang!

The rough landing created a loud sound. Only then did Midak notice Tae Ho, who had appeared in the air. Tae Ho stopped breathing. It was different to when he had been attacking the giant of Strength, Harad. Back then, he had activated Gae Bolg with Cu Chulainn's strength and not his own.

But this time he had to do it with his own strength. He had to receive the least help he could from Cu Chulainn, who still hadn't completely recovered his strength since that attack.

The 'Eyes of the Dragon' told him the place he had to stab. White light surged up from Gae Bolg and Scathach's blessing gave strength to Tae Ho.

Midak opened his mouth and then let out a strange sound. But he couldn't hear him. He had put all his concentration to stab that

point.

Something interfered in the trajectory. Precisely speaking, an invisible wall had appeared in front of the spear.

He would stop the charge of the spear for just a moment. Then he would twist his body however he could and dodge the spear.

If it was a Fomoire at the level of Midak, it was possible. In that short moment, Tae Ho and Midak exchanged glances.

They could both feel it. If Midak's plans succeeded, Tae Ho would die. Gae Bolg's one hit, one kill, required a lot of strength. The moment it missed, Tae Ho would become vulnerable.

The tip of Gae Bolg reached the invisible wall.

However, at that moment, a new strength was added to Gae Bolg.

[Saga: The Charge of the Dragon]

Draconic Ballista!

Originally it was a technique meant to be a lance charge. However, he carried that charging power on Gae Bolg. Tae Ho's posture changed to that of throwing something.

The invisible wall was torn off in an instant. Gae Bolg's charge, which became faster than ever, pierced Midak's chest.

A cry was heard. At the same time, Gae Bolg, which had carved to a deep place in Midak's chest, showed its power. Hundreds of thorns surged up from the tip of the spear and tore up everything. The white light was too powerful.

Tae Ho dropped his right hand. It seemed like his arm would get broken at any moment. But it wasn't the time to be resting. Tae Ho gripped the Sword piece with his left hand. He swung the Sword of the Winter Wolf towards Midak, who was struggling until the end, even though his body was breaking.

Midak's head rolled onto the ground. Midak's body, which was covered with a strong death curse, couldn't endure anymore and

was destroyed.

White light exploded once again. At the same time, a huge amount of red runes went to Tae Ho.

A shocking feeling shook his chest. Although it may have been a delusion, he thought he could hear Idun's voice, which was filled with affection and gentleness.

Tae Ho finally let out a sigh and turned around while dropping his right arm. Shock spread among Midak's underlings that were on top of the ship. Some of them seemed to not understand what had happened in front of their eyes.

Finally, Tae Ho's help arrived. Gandur had turned around the pirate ship once after putting down Tae Ho and then she transformed into the shape of a human after returning and landed in front of Tae Ho. It was a really agile and elegant movement.

“You did it. Shall we flee right now?”

Gandur looked at Tae Ho with admiring eyes and asked while laughing and Tae Ho shook his head. Cu Chulainn also added.

‘If you caught the Captain you should take his ship.’

Although it was a really pirate-like phrase, it rather suited Cu Chulainn.

‘In the first place, this is a treasure of Erin. So it's right for you, the successor of Erin, to have it.’

But to do that they needed to control the Fomoirs on the ship. Tae Ho spoke to Gandur.

“Buy some time for me.”

“Are you trying to recover?”

“That's one thing, but I have something I should take.”

The thing Midak left wasn't only his body, which was broken thanks to the death curse.

“That’s so like you.” Gandur laughed and after that she summoned two white Silences to her side and then glared at the Fomoires, while holding a big sword. The Fomoires couldn’t even think of charging towards them, as they had suddenly lost their commander.

Tae Ho entrusted his back to Gandur and approached Midak’s corpse. He put Gae Bolg back in Unnir and as he activated the ‘Eyes of the Dragon’ he saw something that entered his eyesight.

It wasn’t rainbow-colored. It also wasn’t white gold, but normal gold.

But he got a feeling in an instant.

[Summoning Rock]

It was one of the reasons why Midak was described as the Beast Ruler.

Tae Ho held the summoning rock high.

< Intermediate Ranked Warrior (4) > End

Episode 20/Chapter 1: Scathach (1)

The summoning rock, which was a bit smaller than a baseball, wasn't the only one. There was one in each pocket that was hanging on a belt Midak was wearing and they amounted to five.

Although they had some curves, the rocks, which were close to being a circle, had different symbols engraved in them. And seeing that the colors in the engravings were also different, it seemed as if they had a different meaning.

When Tae Ho grabbed one of them and checked it Cu Chulainn said, 'It seems like the magic was erased. Is it because the user, Midak, died?'

"The magic was erased?"

'There are cases like this on contract magic, which uses blood or incantations. The contract itself gets destroyed because the contractor died.'

Tae Ho flinched for a moment but then calmed himself. It was because the golden letters were still hovering above the stones.

"But it's still useful, right?"

'Probably. But you will have to make a new contract. And you will also have to investigate what kind of item this is exactly.'

What Tae Ho knew right now was its name, 'The Summoning Rock'. Inserting magic into a magic tool of an unknown identity was a really dangerous thing.

'I'm saying this just in case, but I will be able to know what it is with time.'

"Ah, yes." Tae Ho nodded aimlessly and agreed. In the first place, he had become convinced that he shouldn't handle it on his own before knowing what it was. Ragnar also used to say similar things.

'If I show it to Heda, she may know what it is, right? Or to

Scathach.'

Heda specialized in rune magic and Scathach was the one who had taught the Cu Chulainn himself. In addition, she was a witch that had some powers of the Tuatha De Danann.

Tae Ho organized his thoughts moderately and then put back the summoning rock in the pocket and put on the belt. But it seemed as if Cu Chulainn had interpreted Tae Ho's short reply in another way, as he started to say things Tae Ho hadn't even asked.

'As I just checked it briefly, so I'm not certain, but there's a high probability that it's used to summon something. As Midak had the nickname of the Beast Ruler... Perhaps it may be a tool to summon a beast that you have made a contract with. Mm, right. Maybe it makes sense that he had five of them. I think it really is a summoning tool.'

It seemed as if he was convincing himself, since the more he spoke, the more certain he got.

It was something he had felt before, but Cu Chulainn spoke quite a lot, excluding when he was serious. It wasn't that he was showing off, but it felt more like he didn't like people to ignore him even a little or treat him casually.

However, Tae Ho didn't have any complaints with Cu Chulainn's personality. What's more, he was currently more interested in what he was saying currently.

'Isn't this a monster ball?'

He thought of the monster collecting game that caught monsters with a ball. But of course, the summoning rock didn't hold monsters or beasts inside of it like a monster ball, it summoned them; but anyways, it was true that it could call monsters without having to carry them.

Tae Ho couldn't bring Rolo on this expedition. It was because food would only be wasted on him as he couldn't even fly properly

due to the branch ceilings of Svartalfheim.

But if he could really use the summoning rock ,like Cu Chulainn had said, then the story changed.

It wasn't just Rolo, but he would also be able to call the big Adenmaha everytime he needed her.

‘Rolo in the air, Adenmaha in the sea.’

If he had only caught a ground monster then he would have all ground, air and water creatures.

‘No, I can acquire even stronger forces.’

There was no way that it would end with just Rolo and Adenmaha, because Adenmaha was strong enough by herself.

‘I have five summoning rocks.’

There were still three empty slots. Thinking about the main battle that would come soon, there were still many possibilities.

“Warrior Tae Ho, are you not ready yet? I think we should start fighting by now.” Gandur said in a low voice behind him. She glared at Midak's underlings and the Fomoires who were glared at couldn't even think of attacking and had been just looking at each other.

Cu Chulainn said quickly, ‘Don't overdo it. You just used Gae Bolg. You need plenty of rest.’

Gae Bolg was a strong evil spear, which was also one of the best in Erin. Tae Ho had gotten much stronger than before by rising to the intermediate rank but he still couldn't use it freely.

In the first place, not even Scathach, who was the one that had created Gae Bolg, could use it in consecution. The reason why she gave Gae Bolg to Cu Chulainn wasn't only because she loved and treasured him. It was because only the strongest warrior, Cu Chulainn, could handle it perfectly.

Tae Ho also simply consented this time. He had already defeated

the most difficult opponent, Midak, and the remaining underlings weren't a proper opponent for Gandur.

“Gandur, I will ask you.”

“You really like to use the Valkyries.”

She did grumble, but there was a smile on her face. She took a deep breath and then charged towards the underlings along with the white Silences. Then the Fomoires started to run away from her, rather than facing them. It was appropriate to say that a wolf was let loose among a herd of sheep.

Tae Ho was partially vigilant of his surroundings, in case someone attacked him and then finished looking at the other items.

[Whip of Abuse]

[Net of Obedience]

[Coercion Gag]

Using Gandur's way of expression, the names were all shady and dampish but if the performance was good then it was enough. He could always put a new name to them.

‘Most of them are blue.’

It was because he had seen several rainbow-colored items, but blue was also quite good. The hawk wing coat Tae Ho was using was also blue-colored.

Midak's items were mostly meant to train or capture beasts. Now that he had obtained the summoning rocks, Tae Ho had decided to become a master of mounts, so these items were quite useful to him.

‘I was lucky.’

If it hadn't been Midak that the Tyrant Bress had sent, then he wouldn't have had this fortune for himself.

‘That’s an evil smile you have there.’

Cu Chulainn clicked his tongue and then Tae Ho took the things he needed and turned around. Gandur, who had already gotten rid of the enemies in the ship, wiped her hands.

“Hmph, cowards.”

Actually, almost half of them had fled without fighting her. But the Fomoirs that fought against her would have also chosen to flee if they could fly.

“You really are Gandur. You are so cool.”

As Tae Ho praised her while raising a thumb, Gandur snorted and said with sharp eyes, “Leave the compliments aside. First of all, are you prepared to take responsibility?”

“Responsibility?”

As he blinked, as if asking what she was talking about, she gulped some air. She grabbed her own shoulders as if she had gotten hurt and said with a teary face, “You tricked me with sweet words and rode on me and now you are playing dumb? They say that people gulp it if it’s sweet and spit it if it’s sour, you are too much.”

Although he was sure she was joking, it was strange to even answer with something. As Tae Ho was feeling troubled, Cu Chulainn spoke.

‘Hey, say that you will take responsibility like a man. She’s a beauty, like a Valkyrie should be and even has a good body. It seems like she also has a good character.’

Tae Ho didn’t know it well, but actually Cu Chulainn was a rumored playboy. It was to the point that he had collapsed more women in the bed than enemies in the battlefield.

Tae Ho simply heard Cu Chulainn’s words with one ear and proposed another thing.

“What about the beer that is sold in Anaheim?”

“I would like two barrels.” Gandur smirked and then summoned back the white Silences and approached Tae Ho.

“First of all Tae Ho, do you know how to control this ship?”

‘I know. Place the fragment of Gae Bolg in the controlling device where Midak was standing.’ Cu Chulainn said immediately. Tae Ho nodded towards Gandur and then walked towards the controlling device.

As the flying ship got closer to the battlefield, the morale of the Fomoirs rose but it only lasted for a moment. Some of them seemed to have realized that something was wrong and then started to flee.

“What an easy victory.”

While Gandur was happy, Tae Ho waved his hand outside the ship. It was because Siri had approached them while riding on Adenmaha.

‘Did you get rid of Midak?! Sir?’ Adenmaha asked with a surprised voice. She was trying to speak as politely as possible because she seemed to want to be loyal to the geas.

“You really did it.”

Compared to Adenmaha, Siri spoke with a calm voice. Her voice and eyes were filled with trust towards him.

“Rest for a moment. We will finish cleaning this place up. You have done well Gandur-nim.”

Siri spoke to Tae Ho and Gandur and then pulled on the reins of Adenmaha, while smiling. It seemed like she had become accustomed to controlling her.

Tae Ho looked at Siri as she moved farther away and put on the same smile and at that moment Gandur let out a sigh.

“Hmph, I’m worried that she may really move to Idun’s legion like this.”

After she started receiving classes from Ragnar, excluding the times she went out on expeditions, Siri lived on the residence of Idun's legion.

For Gandur's situation, who really treasured Siri, it made her feel bitter.

But contrary to Tae Ho, who would be glad if Siri really did move, smiled brightly and answered. "If it's Captain Siri we will always welcome her. Should we also bring Rolph?"

After he had returned to Anaheim, he hadn't been able to see Rolph's face. The moment Tae Ho mumbled Rolph's name in a low voice, Gandur tilted her head.

"Why Rolph? Ah... Siri does treat him like a little brother. She said that he looked similar to her dead brother."

After listening to her, Tae Ho seemed to recall something similar.

'Tch tch, a brother. What bad luck.'

While Cu Chulainn was deciding Rolph's fate on his own, Tae Ho thought about the dead people he had seen in Black Fortress.

The ones who couldn't enter Valhalla.

Hadn't Siri's brother also been among them? Then it was a really painful situation.

"First of all, the Queen of the Land of Darkness is in that fortress?"

Gandur turned to look at the fortress and asked. The magic of the barrier around the fortress was disappearing, perhaps because the battle was almost ending.

"Thank you Gandur."

Tae Ho expressed his thanks to Gandur, because this battle was meant to protect Scathach. Even though she had finished with her searching task, there was no need to help him like this.

However Gandur shook her head. “Don’t misunderstand. It’s true that I treasure you and Siri, but I didn’t bring reinforcements just because of the two of you. If that was the case, I would have come alone.”

There was no way she would mobilize an army for trivial matters just because she was a commander.

“The Fomoires, who are allies with the giants of Jotunheim, are the enemies of our Valhalla. In addition, we have a debt to repay to Scathach.”

“A...debt?”

At Tae Ho’s question Gandur nodded heavily.

“Our warriors of Valhalla weren’t the only ones that shed blood in the Great War. Countless heroes of Erin also shed their blood. And among them, there were several disciples of Scathach. Just like that great Prince of Light, Cu Chulainn.”

The moment his name was called, Cu Chulainn cleared his throat as if it was embarrassing but Tae Ho could feel his ears peeking up. Gandur continued speaking.

“And this is a bit different, but I’m also quite interested in her. She is a really outstanding teacher. I would like to at least learn most of the basics of how she taught her disciples. There really were good warriors among her disciples.”

Gandur started naming the heroes with high names one by one. Every time Cu Chulainn’s juniors and seniors were named, he smiled and said to Tae Ho, ‘I really like her. Why don’t you hand over Gae Bolg to her for a moment?’

It was obviously a joke. Ragnar and Cu Chulainn himself had decided that they shouldn’t divulge the fact that Cu Chulainn’s soul, which was capable of conversation, still remained in Gae Bolg. Only Siri was an exemption.

“I would like to invite her to Ullr’s legion but...she would

probably go to Idun's legion right?"

"Probably?"

"You really are hateful."

But compared to how she spoke, she smiled and then looked at how the warriors finished up the battle. Although she was a bit ill-natured, looking at her as a Valkyrie of a legion, she was really outstanding and capable.

'The barrier has almost completely disappeared. Let's return to master.'

The appearance of Valhalla's reinforcement, Adenmaha switching sides, and Midak's death were all misfortunes for Bress. Now that he had wasted quite a lot of time there, the probabilities of him sending more forces was low. He would aim for another chance.

Tae Ho listened to Cu Chulainn's words and then waited for Siri to return along with Adenmaha. If it was this ship, then he thought that it would be possible to return with Adenmaha.

"The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!"

"To ride on Gandur-nim! You are too much! Too much!"

"But I'm still jealous!"

The warriors that had finished the fight looked at Tae Ho and raised their voices. It seemed as if they were cheering for victory.

Tae Ho laughed with everybody and then got down off the flying pirate ship and went to Scathach's fortress. However, he couldn't not think back.

"Cu Chulainn, don't you think we are forgetting something?"

'Now that you mention it...'

It wasn't particularly important but even so, it was something they shouldn't have forgotten about.

Tae Ho and Cu Chulainn raised their voices almost at the same time.

“ ‘Sgaba Tune!’ “

The magic boat they had rode on from the treasury of the Red Branch Knights.

Tae Ho turned around and then ran towards Sgaba Tune, which had been left alone at the end of the battlefield.

&

‘Will he be late today?’

Heda stood on the wooden dock and frowned. She had thought about going out to meet him as she had some time, but something unexpected had happened and it had become late.

Compared to the Valkyries of the other legions, Heda didn’t spend much time outside of Asgard. If it wasn’t for a particular case, she had to return to Asgard before the day changed.

The place Tae Ho was at currently, so to say, Svartalfheim, was really far from the space door. If she departed now, there was a high probability that she wouldn’t even be able to see his face.

‘Let’s just return today.’

Nothing would happen in a few days. He was also with Cu Chulainn.

‘Let’s give Rolo and the gryphons some food.’

Heda calmed herself and then walked towards the wooden dock again. It was when she was tying off the rope she had tied up that it happened.

“It’s been a while.”

The voice of the woman that was heard above her head made Heda raise her head. She opened her eyes wide unconsciously and called the name of the woman.

< Scathach (1) > End

Episode 20/Chapter 2: Scathach (2)

“Skuld-nim.”

“Heda.”

The woman that spoke while facing Heda had the appearance of a girl. However, she was someone that had lived far longer than Heda.

She, who was special even among the three sisters, was the youngest and was in charge of the future among the past, present and future. Untying the knots of fate that Verdandi and Uld worked hard to make was her role.

Skuld was also at the same time a Valkyrie. Because of that, she wore feather decorations like Heda, Rasgrid or the other Valkyries and armor that covered her arms, chest and shoulders.

As the Valkyries of Valhalla were all mature or beautiful women, the girlish-looking Valkyrie was really eye catching. But marvelously enough, there was no one who could see Skuld standing on the wooden dock. It was because of the future attribute she possessed.

Compared to the past or present, the future, which was said to be covered in mist, was something not just anyone could see through.

Heda hurriedly stood up. Then Skuld waved her long hair, which reached her waist, and grabbed Heda's hand.

“Shall we walk for a moment? That's fine, right?”

“Of course.”

The one who had trained Heda as a Valkyrie was none other than Skuld. In Heda's position, she was meeting her teacher for the first in a really long while.

Although they had met a few times after that day, this was the first time they had spoken alone since then. However, even if that

hadn't been the case, Heda and Skuld didn't bring out a serious topic. They only asked trivial things like how they have been, the weather, etc.

After walking around the hall, Skuld finally said her farewell.

"It's really good, meeting in a long while. Let's meet again at another opportunity."

"Yes Skuld-nim. I also had a good time."

As Heda hit her chest as if expressing her manners, Skuld opened her two arms widely. Heda understood the meaning behind that and then embraced Skuld while wearing a small smile.

The one that was embraced was Heda but because of the difference in height, it seemed as if Skuld was the one being embraced. But Skuld still caressed Heda's head and then whispered in her ear.

"And this is a secret, but you should have some determination."

"Determination?"

"You will know in about two days."

When Skuld laughed playfully, Heda made an uneasy face but then also smiled brightly. In the first place, there was no way Skuld would laugh and tell her this if it was something serious.

The wooden boat departed from the dock of Idun's legion. Skuld, who was seeing off Heda with a valiant face, could feel that much time had passed. Before that happened on that day, the ship of Idun's legion wasn't that small. They had a big ship, just like the other legions.

"In the end I wasn't able to say it." Skuld mumbled while waving her hand at Heda. The reason she had come to meet Heda wasn't to share her thoughts. Although she had warned her about a small thing, that really was closer to a prank.

After Ragnarok had started, Skuld and her other sisters had to

remain in their seats in order to respond to Odin's requests. But the reason why she had still come out like this was because of a strong impulse.

The thread of fate was touching Idun's legion.

The three sisters didn't tie personal fates together. What they did tie was the fate of the world.

There had also been a time in the past when the thread of fate had touched Idun's legion. And that day had come. It would be the most miserable day for Heda.

But still, saying that the thread of fate had touched somewhere didn't always mean something negative. It merely meant that it was related to the fate of the world.

Because of that, rather than being a misfortune, it could also be a great one.

Heda wasn't visible anymore because of the fog that was there. However, Skuld still remained in the same place and looked at the place she had left from.

Although she was in charge of the future, she couldn't see through it clearly. There were also unknown territories in the future for her.

'Let blessings accompany you.'

Skuld gave her a small blessing and slowly turned around.

&

"Skuld-nim's words were right."

Two days later, Heda stood on the wooden dock of Idun's legion while crossing her arms and with sharp eyes. Next to her were Rolo and the female gryphons, lying on their stomachs and looking at them.

"Heda!"

She hadn't even gone to bring him back but Tae Ho had appeared in a big, outstanding ship which was comparable to the ones in the other legions with a bright smile. However, the things inside the ship were a bit strange.

'This is the home I will be staying at? As I'm a sea serpent, I prefer the sea rather than a lake or river.' (Speaking politely)

A sea serpent that was so big it made one wonder how the ship could sail was on top of it, and inside of it there was a woman so beautiful even Heda was surprised.

The woman, who had abundant black hair, was covered by the leather of a black beast and she emanated a really weak aura. It was because of her white face, which was close to being pale and her two eyes, which were so deep it made one think of an abyss.

"He returned after a long while and only brought a lot of women." Ragnar said righteously and Heda nodded unconsciously. Even Siri, who could now be described as an honorary member of Idun's legion, was wearing a bitter smile and that made Heda feel uneasy.

However she ended up smiling. It was because Tae Ho's healthy appearance made her feel at ease.

Tae Ho jumped down from the ship and made the sea serpent get in the lake and then waved towards the beautiful woman. Then the small boat that the woman was in moved on its own and reached the dock.

"She's Scathach-nim, the Queen of the Land of Darkness."

Tae Ho hurriedly presented Scathach. Then the faces of Ragnar and Heda changed. Ragnar put on the same dignified face he wore in front of the warriors of Valhalla and then hit his chest twice and expressed his manners.

"It's an honor to be able to meet the beautiful and wise queen of the Land of Darkness. I'm Ragnar Lodbrok."

The face of Scathach didn't change that greatly, because she had already known that Ragnar was in that place. Then she placed her right hand on her left shoulder and bowed slightly. It was the etiquette of the Land of Darkness.

"I'm glad to be able to meet the King of the exalted Vikings. I'm Scathach."

She, who treated even Gandur inhospitably, treated Ragnar politely. As Ragnar also treated everyone excluding Gods inhospitably, it could be said that it was an honorable treatment between Kings.

"I'm Heda, the Valkyrie of Idun's legion."

Heda also hit her chest and expressed her manners. And then Scathach blinked a few times and started to laugh.

"I have heard a lot about you. Nice to meet you."

Just what did she hear about her? And why was she laughing?

There was a possibility that it didn't mean anything but she started to worry about that. No, it was obvious to do so.

When Heda turned to look at Tae Ho, he pointed at Adenmaha, seemingly as if he didn't know how Heda was feeling.

"Heda, Ragnar. This is Adenmaha. She's a sea serpent from Erin."

'Nice to meet you.' (Politely)

Adenmaha lowered her neck to be at the same height as everyone. It seemed as if it was Adenmaha's way of showing her sincerity.

It seemed as if that worked well, as Heda's expression became softer. Ragnar also seemed to find her cute.

"The names of Rolo's wives, who are over there, are Porsche and Benz."

Tae Ho pointed at Rolo and his wives, who were looking at her with cautious eyes. Adenmaha snorted at their gazes and then said with an offensive voice, ‘Their names are a bit weird.’ (Politely)

She didn’t know about Rolo but the names of the other two were certainly weird.

But Tae Ho paid no attention to that and said, “They are your comrades, so get along well.”

‘Hm.’

She was a bit displeased to be treated as being the same rank with beasts that couldn’t speak properly but she nodded for now. Obeying the words of her master was her geas.

“It has become a complete zoo. What is next, a lion or an elephant?” Ragnar mumbled, as if it was absurd. Heda got a hold of herself and then spoke towards Scathach.

“Scathach-nim. Let’s go inside. Sorry Adenmaha, but can you stay there for a bit? I will give you a place to rest soon.”

The Valkyrie of a legion was also a landlady. She couldn’t keep a guest waiting forever.

“Over here.” Ragnar escorted Scathach. Heda glared at Tae Ho for a moment and then hurried her steps.

‘What can I say? Her eyes are those of a wife that’s glaring at her husband for having brought his friends to his house without giving advice or prior notice.’

How much time had passed after Cu Chulainn had left that life metaphor? As Ragnar and Scathach started to speak between them, Heda treated her with snacks and then left the house and approached Tae Ho.

“How did it turn out like this?”

Perhaps it was because of Cu Chulainn’s metaphor, but Heda seemed scarier than usual. No, her eyes were actually scary.

“No, um...” Tae Ho explained the things that had happened two days before very briefly. Heda, who had finished listening to everything, nodded.

“So it really was unavoidable. And looking at the big picture was a gain for you.”

Scathach was Erin’s celebrity. In addition, just as Gandur desired her, she was an outstanding teacher. If she chose to stay in Idun’s legion among the several legions, then it wouldn’t only help the reputation of the legion, but it would also be a great help for Tae Ho.

In addition, didn’t they obtain a flying pirate ship and the magic boat, Sgaba Tune?

However, the only thing she was worried about was that they had gotten involved with the Tyrant Bress, because his obstination and stubbornness was so great, it was even famous in Asgard. Although he was still their enemy, it wasn’t that good to think about it.

Tae Ho smiled brightly, oblivious to Heda’s worry and then pointed at the pocket he was carrying at his waist.

“And I also obtained this.”

“A magic tool from Erin?”

Tae Ho hurriedly took out a rock from a pocket and gave it to Heda.

“It’s something called a Summoning Rock, and you are able to summon a subject you have made a contract with. The farther the distance, the more magic power is spent, and the summoning time is also short, but it’s useful in many ways, right?”

It was a story that made one nod on its own. Because Tae Ho had gotten stronger when he rode on something, it made sense that he had brought Adenmaha to Idun’s legion.

“Hm, then you don’t need to ride on Siri or the other Valkyries

anymore, right?”

“Uh... Probably?”

As Heda asked with a gentle voice, Tae Ho answered with a bewildered voice. Then, the silent Cu Chulainn raised his voice.

‘That’s impossible. Impossible. He even rode on Gandur in this expedition. He was in a really good mood, saying that he added one more trophy to his shelf.’

Even though they were inside of Idun’s legion, which amplified one’s power, he was certain that he was concealing the fact that he could emit his voice outside of Gae Bolg.

“Wh, when did I!”

Tae Ho hurriedly denied the fact but his voice trembled, because he did feel a bit proud, just as a collector did, when he gathered the blessings of the Valkyries. Using game terms, it felt as if he was doing a challenge.

“Hmm. So you did that. You rode on a Valkyrie again. You raised your name of the warrior that rode on a Valkyrie once again.”

Heda spoke with a voice that had no intonation. When Tae Ho flinched, she started to laugh like a child.

“It’s a joke, a joke. I’m happy with you having returned safely.”

His opponent was an underling of the Tyrant Bress. Tae Ho, who had faced a strong opponent, just did his best as always.

Heda grabbed Tae Ho’s hands gently and then closed the distance to him. Then, Tae Ho also lowered his body towards Heda. It was to receive the blessing he was now accustomed to.

Heda had changed the place in which she gave her blessing to him when Cu Chulainn had started to bless Tae Ho on his forehead.

Tae Ho had recently gotten taller, maybe because the sync rate had increased, since Heda had to stand on her toes to bless him.

But it was when she was about to place her lips on his cheek that it happened.

“Huh?”

Heda’s nose moved. She smelled the scent of an unfamiliar woman – no, a woman she had seen once, close to his lips.

“Tae Ho?”

Heda asked and Tae Ho just rolled his eyes.

&

There were only two lands that were directly connected to the mortal world, Midgard.

The land of Gods, Asgard, and the land of the Dead, Niflheim.

But of course, that was only a normal connector. If one wanted to invade it, a door connecting to Midgard could be opened forcefully, just like what had been done in Erin.

But that couldn’t happen, because it would make a big commotion. Everyone would be aware of what had happened.

Loki, the God of Fire and Lies, stood in Asgard. He crossed the land he couldn’t return to since the Great War and walked towards the rainbow stairs, Bifrost.

Loki, who was hidden in the shadow of the night, walked towards Asgard’s castle. He reached the fortress that Heimdal was guarding by hiding his existence with skills that were so impressive even the God of Magic, Freya, was amazed by.

The sincere Heimdal couldn’t see Loki. The darkness, which completely filled the night, made even the rainbow stairs turn dark. Because of that, even if someone used the Bifrost in the deep night, the existence of a human in it wouldn’t be noticed.

Loki walked towards Midgard. He was holding several fragments of Garmr’s soul.

“Odin.”

And Thor.

Loki wore a faint smile after calling the names of the ones he grieved. He gulped cold air above the land of Midgard that he had reached.

He felt as if he could feel the gaze of the giant of Night, Avalt.

But what if he was watching him? Loki hid himself once again in the curtain of darkness and walked. He scattered Garmr's soul fragments in order to create a big ruckus.

“Let everything happen as the king wishes.”

Loki smiled like a theatre actor and turned around.

And the next morning...

The planned chaos started to burn down Midgard.

< Scathach (2) > End

Episode 21/Chapter 1: Midgard (1)

Midgard, the land of humans, was really vast. In that land, which was even bigger than the land of the Gods, Asgard, countless humans and races and species of plants and beasts lived.

Not even the Gods who were able to look down on Midgard were able to know everything about it.

In the first place, the fact that there were that many crows in several parts of the world to check on it was proof that denied the omnipotence of the Gods.

The humans weren't that different either.

The humans had received Midgard from the Gods of Asgard and became its owners but the humans didn't know everything about it. For them, Midgard was a land that was filled with marvelousness, fear, countless opportunities and danger.

That was why the humans didn't know. Nor were the Gods aware of it.

The seeds of chaos Loki had spread in every part of Midgard had started to bloom. Each one of them could be described as a disaster but it wasn't seen that easily because of the fog of the unknown.

A country island that was covered by the ocean and had a deep forest and a small village in it.

The first one that had realized it was this island.

The ships that left the dock didn't return. If one or two ships had left at the same time or the same day, they would have thought that they must have encountered a terrible storm. No, they wanted to think that was the case at first.

But after one day, two days, the more time passed, the number of ships that didn't return increased. When one week passed, the entire country fell into a state of fear.

What was the reason the ships couldn't return?

Were the Gods of Asgard angered? Was there a storm that didn't know when to stop?

No. There were no storms. If it was a storm that could annihilate an entire fleet, they would have noticed it from on the island.

The island wasn't small. They were able to self suffice economically, even if they didn't interact with a continent. But knowing that the only thing that connected them to outside was cut off was enough to make the people feel choked.

King Sven, who was the King of all fishermen, warriors and farmers, stood on the dock and looked at the ocean. It had merely been a week since the route for the ships had been cut off but he could already smell the stench of death.

It was an obvious thing. Being self sufficient was possible only if you looked at the entire country.

A port that was cut off of its routes could only dry off and die. Not being able to go out to the sea was more than trades having stopped. The fishermen that couldn't go to the sea couldn't catch fish, and the people of the country touched the empty nets and became impoverished.

"We have to go out to the sea and find the cause. We also have to investigate if all the routes have been cut off."

The aide and adviser of King Sven, Ubbe, was a wise and realistic man. His words saying that they had to first find the cause were proper.

However, King Sven couldn't lay down a decision easily. The number of ships and crews he had lost was already large. In addition, to check all the routes he had to mobilize several big ships at once because it wasn't possible to cross the sea with a small wooden boat.

King Sven left the side of his adviser and went to find a prophet

who was at a remote land. The prophet, who predicted the future with the bones and blood of animals, noticed the King having visited, even though she couldn't see. She gave an answer even before the King asked anything.

“You should make a grand ritual. We have to give offerings to the Gods and ask for assistance.”

King Sven didn't really like the prophet. The prophet, who had been in the kingdom even before King Sven had been born, was that old. Her skin was pale because she didn't meet the sunlight and her eyes, which were completely white, were scary. Even though she never had a straight posture, she was big and had a big build, so that made her resemble a coiled snake.

The voice of the prophet was low, rough and creepy. But her voice today seemed to be really proper and sweet.

King Sven immediately prepared to do a ritual. The people of the country agreed with the decision of the King. It was good to try to do something rather than wait for death. In addition, wasn't this an offering for the Gods? If this was caused by the anger of the Gods they would relieve their anger and if it was a disaster, the Gods would solve it.

Offerings were gathered from several places of the island. They gathered nine animals from nine species, just like goats and pigs.

A huge ritual was made at the ninth day since the routes had been cut off. They made a big fire, cut off the necks of the animals and offered their blood to the Gods. Sven, who cut off the necks of the offerings with a knife, prayed towards the Gods.

And someone listened to his voice.

&

Heimdal, who was protecting the fortress built on top of the Bifrost, twitched his only ear. The pleas reached his ear, which could even hear the hair of the goats grow.

Heimdal didn't think of it too seriously. It wasn't something that he should use Gjallarhorn, the horn trumpet that was used to inform the start of Ragnarok, for, but it also wasn't something he should just ignore. His senses were telling him that.

"I should let Odin know."

At Heimdal's decision, the warriors of Heimdal's legion that were protecting the fortress stirred. Even the Valkyrie who was going to Valhalla that had Odin's temple, couldn't hide her excitement.

It wasn't because they were so degraded to the point they enjoyed the misfortune of the humans.

It was because they knew that when something similar had happened had been because the humans had given offerings and their petition had reached Heimdal's ears, and Heimdal had judged that it was worth it to send that message to Odin.

A part of the excited warriors went to Anaheim. The warriors of the other legions looked at them, who were more excited than usual and became curious, and the warriors of Heimdal's legion got more excited because of this and led the warriors to a dark and shady alley or a corner of a bar and opened their mouths carefully.

"This is still a secret, so keep it for yourself."

"You can't go telling this to others, understand?"

"Of course. Just trust me."

"You know how heavy my mouth is." The warriors looked at each other and said, and the next morning, something everyone expected happened.

It was that the rumor had spread to all of Valhalla through their light mouths.

And that rumor even reached a legion which was at the most remote place.

&

Scathach fell into a deep sleep after choosing Idun's legion as her residence. It was a magic consciousness, meant to heal all of the wounds she had suffered in the Land of Darkness.

What was fortunate was that it was almost finished. Although her consciousness was almost cut off because of a sudden attack, as she was already at her limit, she would at most wake up in a few months. That was Cu Chulainn's guess.

Tae Ho left the fragment of Gae Bolg in the consciousness room because Cu Chulainn liked to see the sleeping Scathach and then Tae Ho passed the days like usual. He took classes from Siri and Ragnar and trained in several fields.

"Mm, good. I like your expression more nowadays." Ragnar said with a satisfied expression and looked at Siri and Tae Ho; to be more exact, he looked at Tae Ho. Tae Ho could guess why Ragnar was saying those words.

It was because he hadn't been able to receive a blessing from Heda since Scathach had come.

When Tae Ho looked at him with a lukewarm expression, Ragnar laughed as if he enjoyed it even more and Adenmaha, who had been watching the training by only poking her head out from the river, also laughed soundlessly.

"Cheer up, Tae Ho. She will start blessing you soon."

Although Siri, who could be said to be on his side, patted his shoulders, Tae Ho felt even stranger.

Ragnar burst out into laughter once again at that look and then he shook his head a few times and sat on the ground.

"That's the fruits you reaped from your actions. Anyways, I will tell you something to cheer up my student, who's as dispirited as his teacher."

"What is it?"

When Tae Ho asked while pouting, Ragnar looked at Siri once and then started to speak.

“Midgard has given a big offering, asking for help from Asgard. Actually, those kind of offerings happen frequently, but it’s different this time. Heimdal has judged that it’s worthy to listen to.”

“Heimdal-nim said so?”

As Siri replied with a surprised face, Ragnar nodded immediately.

“Right, so it seems that the Valkyrie of Heimdal’s legion went to meet Odin. As the rumors spread yesterday night, a decision should be made by tomorrow. That’s why all of the warriors are excited. Ullr’s legion should also be in a commotion.”

Siri hadn’t been able to return to Ullr’s legion because she had been practically living in Idun’s legion now. However, she nodded with an absent-minded face, as if she could imagine it.

But compared to the two of them Tae Ho had to tilt his head. Just how was the warriors getting excited related to the mortal world sending an offering?

‘Ah, perhaps?’

The Gods had judged that it was worthy to help them after listening to their request?

Then what would happen?

“It seems like you noticed. Right, the warriors of Valhalla will be dispatched to Midgard.” Ragnar smirked and Tae Ho also nodded with a smile.

Although it was easy to forget when living in Valhalla, the warriors of Valhalla had all lost their lives once in the mortal world. That meant that they were already dead.

If Valhalla was the afterworld then Midgard was the original one. It was obvious for the warriors to become excited.

‘They will be able to meet the ones that are alive.’

They could meet their friends and families. They would be able to step on their homeland again.

Tae Ho turned to look at Siri reflexively. Siri had treated Rolph well, saying that he resembled her younger brother. He was sure she had strong feelings towards her family.

Siri was wearing a dim and dark expression at the same time. Perhaps she was worried about her family that was in the mortal world.

Siri seemed to have realized Tae Ho’s gaze, as she flinched, but then fixed her expression to her usual one. Ragnar pretended to not have seen her and asked Tae Ho, “Do you get what it is about?”

“Yes, it’s understandable to get excited.”

Although it was a little, the last part of his sentence trembled. It was because he had remembered the things he tried to forget.

His parents and friends. His pro gaming comrades and coach.

When Tae Ho’s eyes started to fill with melancholy, Ragnar started to click his tongue, compared to Siri.

“It seems like you thought of a different reason, that is true, but that’s not the only reason why the warriors are excited. No, honestly speaking, there are more guys that think differently because most of them died without regrets.”

It was because the warriors of Midgard desired to go to Valhalla. In addition, there were some of them that had been dead for a long time. If they met their descendants, who were like strangers or looked at their hometown, which had completely changed, they would feel complicated feelings.

The real reason the warriors of Valhalla had gotten excited was because of another thing.

Ragnar didn’t give an easy answer this time either. He turned to

look at Siri but she just smiled faintly. It seemed as if she was going to copy Ragnar.

‘What is it?’

The benefit that would show when a warrior of Valhalla went to Midgard.

Tae Ho took one step backwards and looked around. If the warriors were looked at from one side, they were just the dumb brothers of a town, but it wasn't the case when seen from afar. They were all valiant and great warriors of Gods that protected the world after receiving a call from a God.

The warriors that received the order of a God and went to the mortal world.

Their actions were sure to become a story. And not a normal one at that. It wasn't an anecdote that got made in one of the several battlefields and disappeared, but a legend that would be remembered and transmitted for a long time, perhaps a story that might become a myth!

“The birth of a new saga.”

The origin of the strength of the warriors of Valhalla.

A strength that the warriors, who wished to become stronger, desired.

“Right, that's it.”

The warriors of Valhalla could make a saga even in Asgard. If they accomplished a great task or did something everyone could remember, then the story itself would get strength and evolve to become a saga.

But that wasn't an easy thing. Accomplishing a task great enough that was able to become a saga in Valhalla, where everyone was a hero, was a really difficult thing.

But the story changed if it was in the mortal world. In addition,

there was a high possibility for a story made in the mortal world to become a strong saga in an instant. Because countless people would believe and remember their stories.

Just which legion would be dispatched? How many?

It was understandable for Valhalla to get excited.

“And that’s not the only thing.” Ragnar smirked. His green eyes, which resembled those of a wolf, were filled with playfulness.

What was it? What benefit was there aside from that you could make a new saga?

When Tae Ho fell into his thoughts again, Siri glanced at Ragnar. Ragnar nodded and Siri gave a hint to Tae Ho after smiling.

“Tae Ho, think about your first day in Valhalla. Especially the first night banquet you had.”

Lowest-ranked warriors. The night banquet which was filled with warriors who had entered Valhalla for the first time.

The most important thing that should happen on that day.

‘Assignment of a legion.’

Actually, the legion they would be assigned to was already decided. The only reason Tae Ho had come to Idun’s legion was because he didn’t have a God he believed in, compared to the other warriors in the mortal world.

Heda, who had become surprised when she saw Tae Ho.

She had said that it had been a really long while since a new warrior had entered.

What would happen if Tae Ho performed greatly in Midgard? Just like what happened in Valhalla, if the warriors cheered Idun’s name, if Tae Ho himself yelled Idun’s name earnestly, if there was a warrior that would want to follow Idun from the bottom of their heart... And if they fought well and faced a glorious end?

“Wow.”

Tae Ho opened his eyes widely and turned to look at Siri and she smiled and nodded. Ragnar laughed and said, “Right, you will get a junior.”

A new warrior that would enter the legion.

A fire was lit up inside of Tae Ho, just like the other warriors.

< Midgard (1) > End

Episode 21/Chapter 2: Midgard (2)

“I had my doubts but for it to be true.”

Ragnar received the information from a crow that flew over Idun's legion and smirked.

It was because Tae Ho was among the warriors that would get dispatched to Midgard.

Actually he had been expecting this to a certain extent.

Because the warriors that would get sent were mostly intermediate ranked warriors, and on top of that warriors that just got promoted.

In addition Asgard was pouring a lot of strength in looking for Garmr's soul fragments. The place a big army should head to wasn't to Midgard but to the traces of the Great War.

Adding several more conditions Tae Ho was almost the first candidate.

‘It seems like they were a bit considerate for Siri. Did Idun or Ullr-nim put a hand in it?’

The warriors that would get sent to Midgard were composed by one warrior picked from each legion. As the situation turned that they couldn't send warriors that were from the same legion it seemed like they went with picking one warrior to be the most fair.

The representative of Ullr's legion was Siri. She had also just reached the intermediate rank and had even proved her worth several times. In addition she had really good teamwork with Tae Ho from Idun's legion.

“Midgard.....”

Siri put on a really troubled expression. Her eyes were mixed with happiness, sadness, joy and hesitation.

However it seemed like she noticed Ragnar's gaze that she tried

to act more positive and she then fixed her expression and congratulated Tae Ho.

“You will be departing in one hour. It seems like you are roasting beans with lightning. Get ready to depart.”

“Yes, master.”

“Yep.”

Siri and Tae Ho answered and then moved to their lodgings and started to prepare a soldier's kit. Although the word soldier's kit was used, the only thing they did was to put clothes to change inside of Unnir.

Tae Ho finished his preparations and then walked towards the shrine. It was to say his farewell to Idun.

Actually, one wasn't able to meet Idun whenever they wanted just because you went to the shrine. When he returned to the legion he was almost always able to meet Idun, but when he stayed on the residence it was really a normal shrine that was a bit decorated.

But even so, it was still a shrine.

In addition as today was a special day he could meet Idun even without Heda's lead.

Idun, that was beautiful and benevolent as always, seemed to have known that Tae Ho was going to visit her that as soon as he finished greeting she took out the main topic.

“My warrior Tae Ho, it's good to spread your name but don't overdo it. Understood?”

“I understand.”

“Right, I believe in you.”

Idun lowered her posture and blessed Tae Ho. Expressing etiquette after this and finishing their business was how it should usually work. But it was different this time.

“Also.”

Idun put on a vague smile.

“When you go out go behind the shrine.”

“Behind the shrine?”

“Right, without anyone knowing.”

Idun said with a playful tone and turned around. Although the method was different than usual Tae Ho realized that their meeting had ended. And after he closed and opened his eyes once, the dark insides of the shrine appeared before his eyes instead of a green plains that had an apple tree growing in it.

Behind the temple.

Tae Ho took in a deep breath under the expectation and then went behind the shrine where he would normally never go to. When he opened the door carefully he saw Heda in a corner as if she was hiding.

“Did the meeting finish well?”

“Yes.”

As Heda asked with a low voice, Tae Ho also lowered his voice. Heda looked at another place for a moment and then said casually.

“It’s hard to go meet you to Midgard.”

Because you needed the permission of Heimdall to cross the rainbow stairs, Bifrost.

Heda, that was leaning on the wall, fixed Tae Ho’s clothes and said.

“Be careful, don’t overdo it.”

“You too.”

It was the same exchange as always. But something was different. Tae Ho felt that and that’s why he didn’t leave. Heda let out a long sigh and then grabbed Tae Ho’s hands. She then pulled him to her

side and got on her toes like usual.

But the place her lips touched was different.

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.”

“Let Idun’s blessing be with you.”

Heda finished giving him the blessing and turned her eyes and Tae Ho smirked.

It was at that moment. Tae Ho realized that there was a pair of eyes looking at them. It was Rolo, that was lying below the shade of a tree.

Rolo made eye contact with Tae Ho and then smirked and turned its body around.

His attitude acting as if it didn’t see anything was arrogant but Tae Ho didn’t dislike it.

And how much time had passed?

Tae Ho and Siri got escorted by Heda and Ragnar and got on the flying pirate ship.

&

King Sven looked at the sky with an anxious face. It had already been three days since they started giving offerings but there were no news.

Someone claimed that the sky got enraged because it wasn’t sincere enough, and someone else blamed king Sven saying that he was unworthy.

The advisor Ube, said that they had to look for the cause as they weren’t late. King Sven, that was anxious, started to think that Ube knew it would turn out this way and that’s why he didn’t oppose to the ritual on purpose.

In the middle of this, the prophet that had started all of this, just kept giving offerings with a calm face. The people of the island just

blamed king Sven, they didn't curse the prophet. And that truth made king Sven feel bitter.

It had been 4 days since they started with the offerings.

The complaints of the citizens that weren't able to go out to the sea just spread like fire. In addition they needed someone to blame. King Sven could read the panic in the eyes of his people.

There had to be any result at all. King Sven cursed at his past self that had decided to give offerings and prayed more earnestly.

It was when the sun had moved and was at its peak.

Rain started to pour down the sky. It was only for a moment but the amount was so great it seemed like a hole was made in the sky.

King Sven, that had become a wet rat, couldn't endure it anymore. He was about to curse in front of the offerings that was now lit off.

But it was then.

A rainbow appeared.

It seemed like the rain that poured down was for the rainbow to spread from the sky to the ground.

King Sven opened his mouth that he was about to curse with even wider. The citizens kneeled down in the mud and claimed the names of the Gods.

There was no one living in the island that hadn't seen a rainbow before. However this was the first time they had seen one this close. In addition the rainbow in front of them didn't seem normal. Light started to shine in the end that connected with the sky. There were people coming down the rainbow.

"Odin!"

"Thor!"

The gloomy atmosphere that was pressing down the surrounding

just a moment ago disappeared completely. It seemed like the cheer of the citizens covered the entire world.

Ube got perplexed and the prophet just put a calm smile.

And the the warriors coming down from the sky finally landed on the ground.

A big ship that seemed like it was riding the rainbow stairs stopped above the offerings. Warriors of Valhalla were standing on top of it.

“Warriors of Valhalla!”

“Ohh! Odin!”

In the eyes of the people of Midgard it looked like the warriors of Valhalla were covered in light.

“King Sven, humans of Midgard, i’m Valkyrie Ingrid. I received an order from the Gods and brought some warriors of Valhalla.”

She was one of the three Valkyries that was in the expedition of Black Fortress. Although her voice was heard like usual for Tae Ho’s group, it was heard differently for the people of Midgard. It was as if she was speaking directly to their minds.

“K, Knut’s son, Sven, greets the warriors of the Gods.”

King Sven kneeled in the ground and lowered his head. The prophet bowed down and Ube, that was putting an absent minded expression lied down on the ground.

Ingrid looked down at king Sven with her business expression. In her position, she was just looking down on him without thinking much but it was different for him. It was just like the gaze of the sky telling him to realize the difference between them.

The warriors of Valhalla got down the ship in the middle of this. Tae Ho, that was the first one to get down approached king Sven and made him stand up.

“I’m Idun’s warrior.”

He put a friendly smile and said gently. And then king Sven asked with a surprised expression.

“Are you talking about Idun-nim? The goddess of youth?”

“That’s right. That flying ship also belongs to Idun-nim. Idun-nim has sent me. I, the warrior of Idun.”

Tae Ho emphasized the name of Idun several times. Although it may look awkward, that wasn’t the case for king Sven. He nodded several times and repeated the name of Idun.

The other warriors of Valhalla looked at that Tae Ho and clicked their tongues or laughed. Their eyes were saying that he was willing to go to such extent.

Even when Siri was laughing at him, one of the warriors jumped down from the ship. Everyone started to talk among themselves at the appearance of the warrior that was several times bigger than Tae Ho. The giant human laughed at the gazes directed at him and yelled.

“I’m Thor’s warrior, Bracky! I have come to rescue you!”

It was Bracky that had barely gotten promoted to the intermediate rank. King Sven, that was repeating his name, was at a loss for words at his appearance. Shock that was different from the ones until now swept their surroundings.

“Bracky?”

“Is it that Bracky?”

“Of the Skald knights?”

“Skald?! The one that died not too long ago?!”

“That’s right! I’m that one, the son of a God, Bracky!”

Bracky yelled once again. And then the people started to look at each other and then yelled.

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

“Uaaaa! Thor!”

Bracky was famous. He was an invincible warrior that had spread his name throughout Midgard.

Bracky's death happened merely a few months ago. But that warrior of a God had become Thor's warrior and returned.

Although they had already experienced the miracle of meeting a warrior from Valhalla, the feeling could only be different. They were the ones that got excited instead of the warriors.

At the sudden change in the atmosphere the warriors in the ship started to whisper among themselves. They seemed to be thinking if they had to yell the name of their God after getting down.

But it was then.

The sound of the sharp horn trumpet pierced the cheers that filled the surroundings. It had come from the port.

“It, it's the signal of a ship approaching!”

The advisor Ube yelled hurriedly. But there wasn't only one signal. The sound of drums stating that it was an emergency was also heard.

Just what had happened?

While everyone was perplexed Valkyrie Ingrid raised her voice. In the first place the reason why the Gods chose the noon was because they had expected this to happen.

“Go to the port!”

King Sven and his people flocked over to the port. Tae Ho and Bracky got on the ship again and then went towards the port.

The sky was clear without any clouds. Because of that they could see the ship approaching from a distance. It wasn't a ship that had departed from this place but was a big merchant ship, that visited

this place a lot, coming from the continent.

And everyone got to know the reason why all the ships that departed from the port disappeared.

Big tentacles surged up from the sea and started to wrap and crush the ship. It didn't stop at being torn to pieces but it was also being dragged to the sea.

It was a really scary scene. One tentacle was bigger than the mast of a ship and much thicker.

“Kraken.”

Valkyrie Ingrid opened her eyes sharply and mumbled in a low voice. A sea monster that had that many tentacles and was as big as that was limited.

“We will depart immediately. We will defeat the sea monster and rescue the people.”

Ingrid spoke briefly and quickly. As the owner of the ship, Tae Ho, nodded Ingrid turned to look at Sven once again.

“King Sven, son of Knut. How about going with us?”

King Sven was scared silly after seeing the sea monster but he nodded. He couldn't step back here.

The flying pirate ship flew up the sky after boarding king Sven. The warriors of Valhalla took out their weapons and prepared to fight. Siri also took out her big crossbow.

The color of the deep sea was dense. The huge sea creature that was in a place you couldn't see with your eyes was a terrifying thing by itself.

But the warriors of Valhalla weren't dispirited at all. Although they were only 8, all of them were intermediate ranked.

Tae Ho made a quick judgement. Getting in the sea directly to fight against a sea creature that was tens of meters big was scary enough but he still had to do it. In addition, the only one that could

do that among this group was only Tae Ho.

“Captain Siri.”

Tae Ho called Siri. The two of them could now understand each other with just the light in their eyes. Siri nodded and Tae Ho entrusted her with rescuing the people and controlling the ship, and after that he took a deep breath. He smirked once for himself and jumped down the ship.

King Sven got surprised and let out a shocked exclamation. The warriors of Valhalla also looked at him with surprised faces. Siri was the only one to put a smile. It was because she knew what he was about to do.

Tae Ho kicked the air once and then took out a summoning rock from his pocket. He pointed the summoning rock, that was filled with Heda’s magic, towards the sea and yelled.

“Adenmaha! I choose you!”

Although it wasn’t necessary to yell that he still did it. And then a surprising thing happened.

A space opened up along a bright light. And a beautiful and white sea serpent appeared in that space.

‘I was eating! You really!’ (Politely)

Adenmaha let out complaints but realized the situation in an instant. As soon as she touched the sea she dropped her neck long so that Tae Ho could ride on her easily. Tae Ho placed the Beast’s saddle on her and then put Idun’s reins.

The warriors of Valhalla that looked at him raised their voices.

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“A, a Valkyrie?”

The last voice came from king Sven. He turned to look at Bracky that was standing nearby and asked.

“Th, then is that sea serpent a Valkyrie?”

“That’s right. It’s a really famous story among us. Idun’s warrior that rode on several Valkyries many times! That is that guy!”

“Ohh! Ohhhhh!”

King Sven started to send gazes of respect as if he sincerely admired him. Siri smiled bitterly and Ingrid put on lukewarm eyes. And Adenmaha, that heard the fuss in the ship, mumbled in a low voice.

‘I’m not a Valkyrie.’ (Politely)

Tae Ho also knew it but he didn’t deny the fact. It was because he didn’t have the time to do so but also because he thought that it would be a benefit if he just left it alone.

“Okay, let’s go! Adenmaha!”

As Tae Ho pulled on the reins Adenmaha also started to move quickly. The Kraken, that was destroying the ship, seemed to have felt threatened by Adenmaha’s existence that it started to throw debris towards Adenmaha.

Tae Ho lowered his posture. Adenmaha also moved quickly like a fish that had met water.

“For Idun!”

Tae Ho yelled in a loud voice and activated ‘the Warrior’s equipment’. The Sword of the winter wolf cut down one of the Kraken’s tentacles.

< Episode 21 – Midgard (2) > End

Episode 21/Chapter 3: Midgard (3)

There were several kinds of sea creatures. Big fish, sharks, sea snakes, squids, octopus, etc. But if they had a point in common, it was that they were huge, to the point of surpassing the imagination.

The sea creatures, which received the help of buoyancy from the sea, found it easier to maintain their bodies compared to the land creatures, which were impeded by the gravity.

Just looking at the Kraken which was making a mess out of things in front of Tae Ho, it couldn't be imagined how big it would be. The tentacle he had cut down was like a log.

'It's a fortress. It looks like it's at least forty meters long.' Cu Chulainn said in a low voice. He had caught several sea creatures when learning in the land of darkness.

'It looks like a really rough guy!' Adenmaha complained, yelling and moved quickly. She couldn't even go underwater as Tae Ho was riding on her but she wasn't a sea serpent for nothing, as she showed movements completely different to the ones she had shown on the grassland. She completely dodged the tentacles that attacked them from the sides and the tentacles that emerged from the water.

"Adenmaha! A bit to the left! We have to bait it!"

'That's easy to say!'

However Adenmaha still did as she was told. Maybe it was to keep the geas 'Obey Your Master', but her hard work was really commendable.

Adenmaha breathed out icy breaths while dodging the tentacles and made the water freeze for a moment. That ice became a foothold and at times a shield which blocked the tentacles.

"You fight well."

‘I told you I was strong!’ She grumbled a bit but also showed that she was proud of herself.

It would have been dangerous if Scathach had retired to the sea, because he wouldn’t even have been able to ride on her.

‘You thought of something weird, right!?’

“No, I never did that!?” Tae Ho refuted strongly and swung his sword.

Tae Ho couldn’t be playing when Adenmaha was fighting like this. Instead of the Sword of the Winter Wolf, which was comparatively short, he wielded the Giant’s sword that the eldest brother of the three troll brothers had used. As it was meant to be used by trolls, it was much longer and heavier than a two-handed sword but that wasn’t the case for Tae Ho.

“Urat!”

After showing the strength of an intermediate-ranked warrior he could handle the huge sword as if it was a theatre item made of styrofoam. Tae Ho swung the Giant’s sword and cut down the tentacles.

‘It seems like it’s regenerating its tentacles. After you distance yourself from it, aim for its legs then.’ Cu Chulainn advised him again. The Kraken, which could be described as a giant squid, had ten legs and close to twenty tentacles.

It wasn’t that hard to differentiate the tentacles from the legs, because in the first place, their sizes were different. However, Tae Ho’s primary objective was to lead the Kraken away from the accident place. Because of that, he focused on surrounding it and getting on its nerves.

Tae Ho cut down one more tentacle and looked at the direction he had come from. The warriors of Valhalla were rescuing the survivors from the flying ship.

Just as Cu Chulainn had said, now that he had distanced himself

from it, he would be able to start the real fight.

But now that he tried to do so he couldn't think of any particular method. Cu Chulainn spoke again.

‘I don't recommend using Gae Bolg. Its body is under the sea so if you hit one of its legs, you would have wasted Gae Bolg for cutting down one of its legs.’

Tae Ho had faced a similar thing with the giant of Strength, Harad. He had ripped off his own shoulder and limited Gae Bolg's curse to only his right arm.

‘In addition, Gae Bolg isn't completely charged yet. As you don't have teacher's blessing either, you can't finish him off by using Gae Bolg from start to end.’

Gae Bolg, which had only two of the five fragments, wasn't complete. As he had operated its power by borrowing Scathach's power, he had been able to use it for merely ten days, so it was obvious that he wasn't able to use it properly.

Tae Ho took a deep breath in the tense situation. He pushed aside the thought of using Gae Bolg for now and thought of the things he could do right then.

‘I will first aim for its legs.’

Even though it had dozens of tentacles, it only had ten legs. No, in the first place, the number of tentacles was also limited. If he kept cutting them down, the one that would feel more stifled would be the Kraken.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri's voice was heard from beyond the wave that the Kraken had made. Tae Ho hurriedly turned to look and saw Siri and the warriors of Valhalla riding on Scuabtuinne. As they had more or less finished with rescuing, they had entrusted Ingrid with the flying ship and came to help him.

They would have charged towards the Kraken and slashed its tentacles if they were on land, but they couldn't do much on the sea. Although there were eight warriors, they only had one boat.

But even so, they were reliable, because it was still better than fighting alone with Adenmaha.

It was then Cu Chulainn said something weird.

'Why don't you start fighting with all your strength, Adenmaha. If it's Tae Ho, he's a good owner, isn't he?'

He had used magic to make Adenmaha hear him. Tae Ho blinked unconsciously.

'Fighting with all her strength?'

Wasn't she already doing that?

Adenmaha's movements, which passed through the tentacles, were really fast. Her skills using the ice breath while moving were close to being marvelous.

However, Cu Chulainn had said that she wasn't using all her strength.

Adenmaha just groaned, she didn't reply. It seemed as if she was really hiding something.

Tae Ho thought of Adenmaha's geas.

Obey your master.

It wasn't a light geas in the end. No, it could be said that it had a really big restriction.

The bigger the restriction was, the bigger the price of the geas.

Perhaps Adenmaha's real strength might be even greater than now.

Tae Ho looked at Adenmaha. As he was riding on her neck, he obviously couldn't see her face. Tae Ho placed his hand on top of the scales on her neck.

Actually, it was simple to make her fight with all her strength. Because Adenmaha had the geas ‘Obey Your Master’. He could just order her to do it.

However, Tae Ho didn’t. Whatever their first meeting was, he didn’t want to use Adenmaha, whom he could communicate with, as a slave.

That’s why he said it as a request.

“Adenmaha.”

Adenmaha didn’t answer immediately. She just closed her eyes and yelled sharply, ‘Ah, really! I dislike obvious tricks like this!’

He should just order her directly. So she could hate him more.

‘Well, it’s true that he’s a better master than Bress.’ Adenmaha mumbled as if talking to herself and then fell back and said, ‘I can only exert my full power for a moment. And it also spends a lot of magical power, so you have to take care of me after that, okay?’

Polite and impolite words were mixed in her words. She didn’t particularly say what she was going to do, but Tae Ho decided to believe in her. He looked towards Scuabtuinne and yelled.

“Captain Siri! Bracky! Get ready!”

“Alright!”

“Tae Ho?!”

Bracky wielded the hammer roughly and Siri, who was controlling the boat, wore a confused face. However, she was the one that had been in the most battlefields with Tae Ho. She had already thrown away her questions and was raising her crossbow to aim for an opening.

It was true that the most troublesome point was that it was hiding its body under the sea.

If they could only bring out its body outside of the water, the warriors of Valhalla would be able to combine all of their attacks

and finish it in an instant.

Adenmaha passed the foremost tentacle and then turned again to the center and took a deep breath. She yelled towards Tae Ho for the last time, before showing her strength.

‘Grab tightly!’

Tae Ho grabbed onto Adenmaha’s neck reflexively. At that moment, Adenmaha showed the power she was hiding. White light exploded from Adenmaha’s body.

The ones that were on the port raised their voices when they saw the white light, which resembled a sunrise. The warriors that were riding on Scuabtuinne and the ones that were on the flying pirate ship, Ingrid, King Sven and the rescued ones, all turned to look at Tae Ho.

It was the full power Adenmaha had spoken of.

That wasn’t all. The light was just the preparation phase.

When the light that had dyed the world in white disappeared, the warriors raised their voices even more.

“Uh uh!”

“That!”

There was a beautiful woman with long white hair instead of Adenmaha. As she had a saddle on her back, reins on her neck and also the surprised Tae Ho on her back, it looked a bit shapeless but Adenmaha was as beautiful as a goddess.

‘Well that’s obvious, she’s a real goddess.’ Cu Chulainn laughed and said.

The Tuatha De Danann was a race of Gods. As there were too many Gods, excluding some of them, they were close to being superhumans rather than Gods because they actually had a lower status compared to the Gods of Asgard and Olympus, but even so they didn’t stop being Gods because of that.

Adenmaha, one of the Goddesses of Tuatha De Danann.

The reason Cu Chulainn remembered her name was because she was a Goddess who had surrendered herself to Bress to protect the things she treasured.

‘Power of the sea!’ Adenmaha clenched her fingers and yelled. The strength of the geas amplified her power. The strength she had accumulated because of not using it after having become an underling of the Tyrant Bress burst out in an instant.

The sea split in two. It made the Kraken, which was hidden inside the sea, show up.

The surprising thing didn’t end there. Just as Cu Chulainn had said, the huge Kraken, which was close to being fifty meters, surged into the air a little bit.

It was understandable for everyone to feel shocked. King Sven and the humans of Midgard couldn’t utter a single word.

“She really was a Valkyrie?!”

Bracky said a weird thing. And at that moment, the warriors of Valhalla yelled in joy.

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

Everyone got a hold of themselves at that yell. Even Valkyrie Ingrid muttered the words ‘It was real?’

And at that moment, it was.

‘Uwaa! I’m dying!’ Adenmaha barely managed to say. It seemed like she really was going to die.

“Bracky!” Tae Ho yelled urgently. Then Bracky turned to look at Siri.

“Siri!”

It seemed as if she had already received the request, as Siri hurriedly fired her crossbow. Steel rods started to hit the middle of

the Kraken's head.

“I'm going!”

[Saga: Thunder Enters his Hammer]

Bracky swung his hammer widely and then lightning fell down from the clear sky. It hit the head of the Kraken, with the steel rods acting as a conductor.

Babang!

A late thunder was heard and the sea gathered once again. Adenmaha also returned to being a sea serpent.

But there was one thing that didn't return to normal.

The Kraken, which had lost consciousness after being struck by lightning, floated in the water. This was the opportunity.

“Sorry!”

She had even said to take care of her!

Tae Ho yelled shortly and then jumped from the saddle. Adenmaha had known, with a bit of resentment, that this would happen, but she also knew that this was the only opportunity, so she did the only thing she could, cheer for him.

‘Go, please! Quickly!’

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

He kicked in the air consecutively. It didn't stop creating thunder and storm, but he compressed them by running.

“Let's go too!”

“Ou!” Bracky yelled and the warriors of Valhalla answered. Siri turned Scuabtuinne towards the Kraken and charged towards it.

Bracky burst one of the huge eyes of the Kraken with his hammer and the warriors of Valhalla cut down the legs of the Kraken with their respective weapons and sagas mercilessly.

Then Tae Ho arrived. He threw the thunder he had compressed towards the steel rods Siri had fired.

Babang!

An explosion burst out again. The Kraken, which had regained consciousness after having one of its eyes crushed, let out a terrible cry.

But they didn't think of stopping there. Bracky swung his hammer to wedge the steel rods even deeper, and Tae Ho stabbed deeply with the Giant's sword, right next to him.

The blade of the Giant's sword was three meters long. Although the Kraken was huge, it wasn't a length it could ignore. In addition, the place Tae Ho had aimed for after looking with the 'Eyes of the Dragon' was the spot that contained the core.

Tae Ho stabbed until it reached the hilt and then transformed the Giant's sword into the Sword of the Winter Wolf. He filled the wound created with the Giant's sword with ice.

It was a terrible ice attack. The Kraken struggled as the insides of its head started to freeze. Waves were created and the sea undulated, as if a storm was falling.

However, the warriors of Valhalla had already stabbed the Kraken on several places of its body with their weapons and had activated their sagas. As the Kraken became perplexed, it lost the opportunity to dive deeply and they started to pour lethal attacks on it.

King Sven couldn't shut his mouth. It wasn't because of the flashy attacks occurring in front of him. It was because he had realized how they managed to become the warriors of Gods.

Eight warriors slaughtering a Kraken was like a scene from a mythology. And Tae Ho decorated that scene.

"Gae Bolg!"

Just like Cu Chulainn had said, Gae Bolg was incomplete right now. The power of the curse wasn't as strong as when he had used it on Hadar and Midak. It wouldn't be excessive to say that the Kraken was already half dead. As he poured the curse of death directly into its core, it couldn't endure it anymore.

Its legs and tentacles dropped lifelessly. The waves that the Kraken was making disappeared, like a lie, and the sea became calm once again.

[The Defeated]

[Kraken]

The red letters turned white, as if proving its death. The bloody red runes surged to the sky and became sucked into the bodies of Tae Ho and the warriors.

[Synchro rate: 35%]

It was obvious, as he had defeated strong opponents like Midak and the Kraken. But something he hadn't expected happened.

The empty slot of the saga, which was lined up below the 'Immortal Warrior' and the other lower sagas, was filled up.

Until now it had been something he was accustomed to, because it meant that a new saga was created.

But that saga was too different to the ones until now.

It wasn't a saga that had been derived from the Dragon Knight Kalsted, but a completely new one.

"Are you kidding me?"

It was the thing he had been wondering but now could only accept. And now, it would be good to say that it was his nickname!

[Saga: The Warrior That Rode on a Valkyrie]

Just what was its effect?

Tae Ho burst into laughter unconsciously.

< Episode 21 – Midgard (3) > End

Episode 21/Chapter 4: Midgard (4)

‘It is indeed bewildering.’

For something he thought of more as a joke to really turn into a saga.

While it was unlikely, such an event wasn't impossible, however, as it had already been a few months since the nickname, deeply engraved into the minds of the warriors of Valhalla, was first used. There was a high probability that it got created in this place because King Sven and his people had witnessed Adenmaha's transformation, followed by the shock of the warriors.

‘Although it's embarrassing to show it to others.’

You could somewhat hide your saga if you didn't want to show it to others. Of course, it was still unknown if there were others that could see the sagas of others.

‘Anyways.’

He was curious as to what effects the saga had, since he couldn't exactly tell by its name alone.

‘The contents of the saga....are as I expect them to be.’

The saga had effects that he wouldn't question if someone like Rolph or Bracky used it.

But it was when Tae Ho was still reviewing his saga.

The warriors of Valhalla were debating whether they should grill or boil the Kraken meat. Bracky, that was chewing a sashimi piece of the Kraken as a test, was putting on sharp eyes.

They had defeated the Kraken.

King Sven and the people were happy on the flying ship and the sea and sky had turned calm.

But the warriors felt something they couldn't see.

Siri sniffed, feeling something other than the sea and the Kraken.

The scent, the very feeling of danger — something only a veteran hunter could feel.

Siri frowned unconsciously. It was only for a moment, but even she doubted her hunter side.

The Kraken wasn't a hunter; it was more a piece of bait.

It was an impossible thing. After all, if that huge Kraken wasn't the hunter, then what could the real hunter possibly be?

Siri stood up, hurriedly looking below her feet. Bracky and the other warriors also did the same, albeit with a bit of delay.

‘My God! Master!’

Adenmaha yelled quickly. The moment Tae Ho heard her urgent yell, he also yelled towards Siri.

“They are coming!”

Papapak!

Explosions occurred inside the sea. No, precisely speaking, it was the aftershock generated by something surging up and out of the water.

There wasn't one explosion, but several. The current of water started to flow backwards with the Kraken in the center as drops of water scattered to the surroundings.

As this was all happening, a gargantuan, opaque shadow covered the warriors. When they looked up to see what had eclipsed the sky above them, they could identify the shadow.

Huge sharks.

No, sea monsters that you couldn't even call sharks!

Saying that they had surged up wasn't an exaggeration. Some of them bit down on the corpse of the Kraken and some others threw themselves against the warriors.

Siri quickly moved in order to dodge the attacks of the sharks, as they were large enough to be able to bite down her slim waist in one bite. No, they were big enough to be able to gulp her down entirely!

Bracky didn't dodge them and chose to swing his hammer. Although he was on top of the unstable and slippery corpse of the Kraken, he managed to hit the side of a shark and push it back with his overwhelming strength.

It was similar for the other warriors. Most of them chose to evade them like Siri, but some of them were also able to push them back with their shields or split their stomachs apart with their swords.

The frenzy of sharks also appeared in the side of the flying ship. King Sven and the other people couldn't even scream, as they were frightened out of their wits. Fortunately, however, Ingrid was the one on the flying pirate ship, as she maintained her business-like expression and fired a harpoon to pierce the head of a shark before increasing the altitude of the ship and preventing the sharks from attacking her.

Meanwhile, Tae Ho jumped down into the sea. What he was looking at was Adenmaha, who was strengthless before the fierce sea creatures.

“Adenmaha! Return!”

When he yelled by extending the summoning rock that was almost out of magic power, white light started to cover her. She fired an ice breath towards the sharks that tried to attack her and yelled,

‘Be careful!’

Adenmaha disappeared. The frozen shark hit the surface, creating a big wave as Tae Ho kicked himself into the air and surged up. Adenmaha's last warning was to warn him about the shark that would attack him from below.

“Chant!”

Tae Ho twisted his body in the air and transformed into a hawk. The shark that had surged up only bit down on air as Tae Ho flew over it.

‘Retreat for now and reorganize yourself. The ones on the flying ship are a hinder to your fighting strength.’

Cuchulainn spoke quickly. While those were harsh words, he was speaking the truth. Now that there were several enemies, it was better the more boats they had.

Siri jumped into Scuabtuinne and yelled, “Tae Ho!”

Bracky and the other warriors also got on the boat as Tae Ho looked at Ingrid. She seemed to have made the same decision as Cuchulainn and yelled in a loud voice,

“We are retreating! Protecting the humans is our priority!”

They weren’t escaping. Actually, there was no need to intentionally emphasize that, but Ingrid had specifically chosen those words because there King Sven and the humans were there.

The flying ship turned around first. Scuabtuinne followed its back and Tae Ho flew up once again and looked at the corpse of the Kraken again. While the sudden frenzy of sharks was strong, he felt that there was something else lurking beneath.

And his prediction wasn’t wrong.

Siri was holding her breath while controlling Scuabtuinne when she realized which scent was the scent of the hunter. Bracky opened his eyes widely and cursed.

Babang!

An explosion that seemed to be a crack of thunder and lightning burst out.

It was because an existence that couldn’t be compared to the sharks at all had appeared.

Something similar to a shark had landed on top of the Kraken. A monster that was much bigger than all the sharks combined stood on its four legs and glared at Scuabtuinne.

It had big, sharp horns on its head. Small sparks flickered and exploded about from its horns, as if they warned of a big crash thunder beforehand.

It was the leader that led the herd of sharks. It was the one that had made the Kraken escape to the surface.

The real cause that had destroyed the ships.

It roared loudly as if it was declaring war. Different to the roar of normal beasts, the strong roar that resembled a shockwave spread widely on the sea.

Ingrid opened her eyes sharply and glared at it. However she didn't turn around the ship. The flying ship flew towards the port and Scuabtuinne, that was controlled by Siri followed back with great speed.

Tae Ho, that was left last, glared at it from the sky. It also seemed to have realized Tae Ho's gaze that it raised its head. It had blue and black eyes that resembled the sea.

'Let's go.'

Cuchulainn said. Tae Ho fluttered his wings once more and moved towards Siri and her group.

&

As the warriors of Valhalla started to return to the port, the people of the port started to cheer passionately. They had witnessed the warriors defeat the Kraken, but they didn't fear anything. What should they be scared of when they had the warriors of the Gods at their side?

After King Sven also got a hold of himself to a certain extent, he expressed his thanks to the warriors.

Although they did retreat, it wasn't that they had escaped after fighting.

Their retreat had a meaning behind it.

In addition King Sven had witnessed the mythological fight of the warriors himself. The battle that split the sea and called thunders. As they had defeated the fifty meters big Kraken and had even rescued his people he couldn't have any complaints.

They would also defeat the herd of sharks soon. They will open a path for the ships.

The advisor Ube expressed a bit of concern but King Sven ignored him. He opened a big banquet for the warriors of Valhalla, that had died and returned.

"It was then. The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie....."

King Sven started to relate what had happened today with an excited face and voice. He was already repeating the same thing for the seventh time but no one seemed to be tired of listening to him.

Tae Ho approached that Sven and said silently.

"I'm Idun's warrior. Idun's warrior."

"Ah, yes! Of course! Idun's warrior! The warrior of the beautiful Goddess of youth!"

"The ship also belongs to Idun-nim."

"Ohh! The ship that can fly on air!"

"Idun-nim's treasure!"

As the people of Midgard started to proclaim her name, Tae Ho put on a satisfied face and returned to the place that he originally was at. Siri, that was leaning back on a window and drinking alcohol, laughed.

"You are working hard."

"You have to whenever you can."

Actually, Tae Ho felt more confused when he saw that the other warriors weren't as earnest as he was on promoting his legion.

‘No, is it the leisure the big legions have?’

Because they would still get newcomers even if they stayed still and did nothing.

Tae Ho looked towards the warriors of Valhalla. Although the excited warriors were speaking with the beautiful ladies, they weren't particularly emphasizing the name of their patron Gods like Tae Ho did.

Siri laughed once again and then looked at Tae Ho. Although she stayed silent because Tae Ho's actions seemed cute, she also wanted to tease him.

Because you had to first die to enter Valhalla.

How long would the people, that had started to believe in Idun after listening to Tae Ho, need to enter Valhalla?

There may be battles at any time, so it could be faster than what he thought, but having faith in Idun wasn't something that could be achieved in mere months.

“Why are you laughing like that?”

“It's funny.”

Siri laughed once again and then patted on the shoulder of Tae Ho that seemed like he didn't understand and then said while looking at the warriors.

“I heard that we look different for the people of Midgard. Just like we are covered in light. Should I say that it's a glory? It seems like we become much more pretty, handsome, cool, and flashy. So anyways, it seems like we get beautified.”

Siri was laughing more than usual perhaps because of the alcohol. She laughed once more and then pointed at the women next to Bracky with her eyes. It seemed like they had completely

fallen for Bracky and were putting embarrassed faces while flushing.

“So that was the reason.”

It was kind of weird.

“Then I will also be going.”

“I will cheer for you.”

Siri seemed like she wasn't planning on intervening that she just slightly raised her cup. Tae Ho toasted with her and then started his promotion again.

&

After listening to the stories of the epidemic that had started to spread in the continent and how the routes of the ships got blocked, the night had soon deepened.

Bracky and the warriors wanted to have a close time with the women but Ingrid didn't permit them. As they had enjoyed themselves it was time to prepare for tomorrow.

Although they had enjoyed the banquet for a few hours the warriors of Valhalla were all clear headed. When they gathered on the room King Sven had prepared, Ingrid started their strategy meeting.

The real cause that blocked the route of the ships was the herd of sharks.

Their objective wasn't the annihilation of the herd. The first thing they had to aim for was the leader. If they just removed him, the herd would breakdown naturally.

In the first place, the sharks weren't monsters that formed a group like this. As they were a kind of sea monster, if they just removed their leader that was the center of the group there was a high possibility for them to go their own paths.

“The problem is how we should fight.”

The warriors of Valhalla were proficient in operating a ship, but using a normal ship and fight was like committing suicide. With one body slam of the monsters the ship would turn to pieces.

Although they were big, they weren't as big as the kraken so it was impossible to fight on top of them.

Then how should they fight?

"There's a method if we get the preparations."

Ingrid said in a low voice. Some of them had curious faces and the others seemed to know what it was.

One of the warriors that was on the latter laughed and said.

"Ingrid-nim is the Valkyrie of Njord's legion."

"Ohh!"

"Indeed!"

The warriors understood immediately and exclaimed. But Tae Ho was the only one that didn't understand and asked by whispering Siri.

"Captain Siri, who is Njord-nim?"

Cuchulainn started to laugh at Tae Ho's question as if he was flustered and Siri just blinked as if she was bewildered and then pulled on Tae Ho's ears and answered in a low voice.

"The God of Sea."

The father of Freya and Freyr, Njord.

Ingrid proposed a method to fight in the sea.

&

The night passed and morning came. The warriors of Valhalla had a solid breakfast and finished their preparations and then went to the port that was looking at the noon.

The countless people wanted to go together with the warriors of

Valhalla but honestly speaking they would only be a baggage to them. Ingrid only allowed King Sven to accompany them.

‘They will also be thinking of battling. Having appeared that confidently is proof of that.’

Ingrid and Cuchulainn thought similarly. So they would be able to allure them with some kind of momentum.

‘So, this is how it turned out?’

Adenmaha, that got called back again in one day, grumbled.

The flying ship, that was carrying Scuabtuinne, was so high you couldn’t even see it. The only ones floating in the sea were Adenmaha and Tae Ho.

“Because I believe in you.”

Tae Ho caressed Adenmaha’s scales and then she snorted as if telling him not to spout nonsense.

There was a lot of blood of cows and pigs spread near Adenmaha. It was to lead the sharks that were sensitive to the smell of blood.

“I really do believe in you. I’m really thankful for yesterday. You were really pretty. No, really beautiful.”

‘Le, leave it. Do you think i’m a kid?’

Adenmaha grumbled but Tae Ho could read her emotions because of the ‘one that controls dragons’. She was actually really happy because of the compliment she hadn’t heard in a long while.

‘Now that he thought about it, just what had happened?’

He had only heard the general outline from Cuchulainn.

She was one of the Goddesses that had submitted herself to protect their loved ones.

What kind of story was there? And what was the reason she chose the geass ‘obey your master’.

‘I think they came.’

Adenmaha, that was forcing back her smile, said with a sharp voice. Tae Ho, that was sharing his senses with her, could also feel it.

The second wave in the sea, and perhaps the real game by now.

Tae Ho took a breath once and activated ‘the warrior that rode on a Valkyrie’. This saga affected the one he was being accompanied just like ‘the one that controls dragons’.

‘Uh, huh?’

Adenmaha got surprised blinked and then realized what had happened to her.

‘Va, valkyrie?’

Granting the strength of a Valkyrie to the one that had let him ride on.

A feather decoration made of light appeared in Adenmaha’s head. Her body, that was strengthened by ‘the one that handles dragons’ was strengthened once again.

And it didn’t stop there. Idun’s blessing spread over Adenmaha’s body.

[Idun’s Valkyrie(Temporary)]

[Adenmaha]

What would happen if he used it on Rolo.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly and erased his idle thoughts.

He focused his consciousness on feeling the enemy that was approaching him from below.

< Episode 21 – Midgard (4) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 1: Saga (1)

The sea was a scary place.

There were hundreds of meters of the water below one's feet and it was impossible to see what was below from the surface.

The unknown meant fear. Even Adenmaha, who had lived in the sea, couldn't avoid feeling uneasy when creatures which emanated killing intent approached her from a place she couldn't see.

Adenmaha could feel the slight changes in the ripples of the water. The monsters had gathered after sensing the scent of blood.

Adenmaha wanted to flee immediately. She just wanted to get out of that place.

However, Tae Ho didn't allow her to. He placed his hands on the scales of her neck, as if telling her to calm down.

Adenmaha could feel about five monsters with her senses. She felt as if there were more, farther away, but it seemed as if they were trying to make out the situation.

They needed to be drawn in more aggressively.

“Adenmaha, let's lead them. It's good if you go underwater.”

‘Under the water?’ Adenmaha asked, as if he was out of his mind. Tae Ho nodded quickly and then said, “Ingrid-nim helped me out. It's fine.”

Tae Ho's neck was covered with the temporary rune carving Ingrid had set up. It was the rune magic which was characteristic of Njor's legion, which allowed underwater breathing.

Adenmaha took a deep breath and said in a tone of enjoyment, ‘Fine. I will show you my real skills.’

She hadn't been able to swim properly, because she had to take care of Tae Ho, who was riding on her.

Tae Ho also took a breath and stuck closely to Adenmaha, and then she twisted her body for a moment and dove underwater.

“Kuhuk?!”

‘Master?!’

As soon as they entered the water, Tae Ho let out a sound, as if he was short of breath. As the surprised Adenmaha tried to rise to the surface again Tae Ho hurriedly transmitted his thoughts.

‘I, I’m fine.’

He had simply drank a bit of water because he wasn’t accustomed to breathing underwater. As Tae Ho transmitted his will through ‘The One That Controls Dragons’, Adenmaha looked doubtful but then nodded.

‘I will go then!’

Adenmaha started to swim earnestly. And Tae Ho understood why Adenmaha was a sea serpent.

She was fast and free. She was above Siri, who rode on the plains, or Rolo, which flew on the sky.

Adenmaha reached a deep place in an instant and then shook her tail, as if seducing the herd of sharks, and started to swim away again. The six sharks, which had gathered after sensing the smell of blood, started to chase Adenmaha closely.

Adenmaha moved really simply. It wasn’t that she was stupid, or she that was fleeing from the sharks. She, who was also a Goddess of the Tuatha De Danann, was really wise and knew much about sharks.

‘Certainly!’

As she simplified her path, the other sharks that were checking on the situation blocked her path and encircled her.

There were twelve monster sharks that had gathered.

That number was enough.

‘Surge up with your fastest speed and to the highest possible!’ Tae Ho ordered. He transmitted more of his thoughts with ‘The One That Controls Dragons’.

Adenmaha changed her direction in an instant with a rough movement and then started to swim towards the surface quickly. It was just like a water missile.

The herd of sharks chased Adenmaha. They also surged up and Adenmaha broke the surface before them.

Papang!

A great amount of water splashed. Adenmaha twisted her body after jumping close to forty meters and the sharks, which jumped much lower than her, only bit the water.

“Transform!”

‘Take responsibility!’

Adenmaha transformed into the shape of a woman. There was a feather decoration, which characterized a Valkyrie, on her head in her long white hair..

Tae Ho got from the Beast’s saddle which was placed on Adenmaha’s thin waist and then kicked the air. Then he grabbed Adenmaha’s neck with one hand and threw her high.

“Kyak?!” Adenmaha yelled. She told him to take responsibility, so what was this treatment?

However, Tae Ho had his own thoughts. He checked Adenmaha’s location in the air and recited a chant.

“Chant!”

He transformed into a big hawk and caught Adenmaha in the air. Precisely speaking, he made her ride on him.

Adenmaha just blinked and twisted her body at the sudden

happenings, but then fixed her posture solidly. And when she loosened up the reins she had on herself and tried to put it on Tae Ho, it happened.

“Hey?!”

“Even if it’s for a moment, I have to ride on you properly!”

At her yell, which was an obvious revenge, Tae Ho started to do stunt flying. Adenmaha yelled again and grabbed onto Tae Ho’s neck more tightly.

“You really are bad!”

“Leave it!”

Tae Ho looked at the sky. While he had been bickering with Adenmaha, the warriors of Valhalla were doing what they had to.

The flying pirate ship charged towards the surface. They intersected with Tae Ho, who was flying up, and Siri, who was at the front, took a deep breath.

Siri wasn’t standing alone. The warrior Harabal, of Njor’s legion, was standing behind her as if grabbing her. And once again, warrior Notung of Heimdal’s legion was behind him.

[Saga: The Arrows of a Witch Never Miss Their Target]

[Saga: One Harpoon Pierces Ten]

[Saga: Not Seeing With Your Eyes But With Your Heart]

Three sagas were activated at the same time. Siri was holding a huge crossbow that had ten harpoons which were linked with a steel chain loaded to it, and Harabal placed his hand on Siri’s. Notung just grabbed Siri and Harabal at the same time.

“Fire!” Valkyrie Ingrid ordered. Notung’s saga grasped the location of the ten sharks that were closest to the surface, and Harabal’s saga sent strength to the ten arrows.

Kwagagagak!

Siri pulled the trigger. The ten harpoons, which could be appropriately described as thunder, split up and they hit the monster sharks with the help of Siri's saga.

And that wasn't all. Ingrid made the flying ship surge to the sky once again. As the warriors pulled on the steel chains, the monster sharks rose up, as if they were fishes caught on a fishing rod.

The smallest one was five meters long and the biggest one seemed to be ten meters. But even so, the moment they got out of the water it was the end for them. The warriors riding on Scuabtuinne threw spears and finished them off.

"My god." Adenmaha said with a tired expression. The warriors had instantly reduced the number of the monster sharks to half in an instant.

But it was then that it happened.

Adenmaha looked at the surface and yelled towards Tae Ho.

"It's coming!"

Tae Ho also felt it. He fluttered his wings reflexively and then turned his body and yelled towards the flying ship.

"Dodge!"

But it was impossible to do so. They were currently hanging on ten monster sharks. In addition, they had already changed directions hurriedly once, so they could merely twist it a bit.

Bang!

The surface exploded. A splash bigger than when Adenmaha had surged up occurred.

A monster which had big horns on it surged up like a rocket. There was only one place its horns aimed at.

Kwagagang!

The monster which flew in the sky slammed into the ship and the

ship was destroyed at his overwhelming charge.

“Grab on tightly!”

The ship, which was flying up, shook greatly. The monster wasn't satisfied with that and grabbed onto the ship tightly with two of his feet. It then split the deck with its horn.

King Sven screamed. Ingrid grabbed Sven with one arm and worked hard to control the flying ship. The warriors that were riding on Scuabtuinne threw spears, but it wasn't enough. Most of them bounced back without being able to pierce it.

They got closer to the surface. The monster writhed and then started to gather strength in its horn. It started to spark and then transformed into a strong thunder.

It spread thunder on the deck and at that moment, Bracky jumped and activated his saga.

[Saga: A Thunderbolt Enters His Hammer]

The thunder the monster fired gathered in Bracky's hammer. It was just like a conductor gathering the thunder.

“Uoo!”

Bracky stuck his fist in the deck to gain some balance and then flung his hammer to spread the lightning.

Babang!

Thunder was heard. The warriors on top of the deck held their positions and started to attack the horned monster.

Then, it emanated a roar with ultrasonic sounds and twisted its body. It intended to get off the deck and return to the sea.

The flying ship shook greatly. It threw its body into the air and Harabal grabbed onto Siri's waist tightly. Notung threw a new crossbow to Siri.

[Saga: The Arrows of the Witch Never Miss Their Target]

[Saga: The Arrows of the Witch Are Like a Curse]

Siri hurriedly pulled on the trigger. The harpoons, which were connected with steel chains, flew at an overwhelming speed. It was the effect of having developed a new saga through the classes with Ragnar.

In addition, Siri once more proved that she was a veteran hunter. Even though it was a short period, she grasped her target exactly.

“Kaak!” The monster, which was hit in its gills, cried.

Bang!

When it entered the sea, the water splashed once more. Ingrid turned the deck of the flying ship horizontally and Harabal and Notung grabbed onto the chains that was connected to the harpoon. As they pulled on it they were able to slow down its movements a little bit.

“Tae Ho!” Siri yelled and Tae Ho knew what she was requesting him to do.

“Let’s go!” Tae Ho said to Adenmaha. Even though he hadn’t activated ‘The One That Controls Dragons’ she understood what Tae Ho wanted to do. She released her arms, which were grabbing onto his neck, and threw herself.

“Get on!”

Adenmaha transformed into a sea serpent. Tae Ho rode on her neck and activated sagas in consecution.

[Saga: The One That Controls Dragons]

[Saga: The Warrior That Rode on a Valkyrie]

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Just Like a Storm]

[Saga: The Eyes of the Dragon See Through Everything]

[Sea Monster]

[Karagul, which can fire torpedoes]

He could see red letters. And it was really slow, as if it had soon went deep into the sea.

The storm generated by the charge of the warrior split the surface. Compared to Karagul, Adenmaha dove in swiftly and increased her speed.

It wasn't the sky, or the ground. At that moment Tae Ho only thought of one thing.

[Saga: The Warrior's Equipment]

Light began emanating from the Unknown sword piece. A Burst lance appeared in the hands of Tae Ho, which was one stage higher than the Heavy lance.

Adenmaha also knew Tae Ho's thoughts clearly. She followed the will of her master, even though she was cursing. She charged towards Karagul with all her strength.

[Saga: Dragon's Charge]

Draconic Ballista!

Thunder also fell underwater. It could only be expressed that way.. The Burst lance pierced the head of the surprised Karagul. It let out a soundless cry.

But Tae Ho hadn't finished. He still had one more thing.

'Full burst!'

A strong magic exploded from the blade of the Burst lance. Just like the snow which was created from the Sword of the Winter Wolf, it was an innate strength the Burst lance possessed.

Tae Ho dispersed the Burst lance. Then an overwhelming amount of blood started to flood out from the wound. As its insides had become a mess because of the explosion, pieces of its intestines and bones also came out.

[Defeated]

[Karagul]

The red words transformed to white. Tae Ho laughed and Adenmaha let out a cry.

‘My neck hurts!’

It was because he had executed the lance charging on her neck. It was fortunate that her neck hadn’t broken.

‘I will get you a pain-killing patch later.’

‘What’s that?’ Adenmaha let out a cry once again at Tae Ho’s words. He thought of her as being cute, even though she was a sea serpent; perhaps it was because he knew how she looked when she had a human form.

But it was then that a red word appeared from below the white words. It wasn’t a monster that was near them.

[Garmr’s soul fragment]

A huge image surged up from the fragment that was deep in the body of Karagul. It thrust its rough teeth towards Tae Ho and Adenmaha.

‘Adenmaha!’ He yelled but it was too late. It was too close to them.

Adenmaha yelled. The teeth of Garm roughly bit Adenmaha’s neck.

< Episode 22 – Saga (1) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 2: Saga (2)

The cry of Adenmaha, which was transmitted by sharing their senses, was heard very clearly.

Adenmaha's flesh was torn off and red blood flowed like smoke, dying their surroundings in red.

Garmr's soul opened its mouth again. It looked as if it was coming out of the head, neck and shoulders of Karagul's corpse. It aimed for Adenmaha again.

Tae Ho charged through the red curtain, made of Adenmaha's blood, in an instant. He wanted to turn around and check on Adenmaha's wounds immediately, but what he had to do now was to stop the additional attacks.

Burst Lance took shape again from the Unknown sword piece. Tae Ho stabbed into the forehead of Garmr with his spear that was covered with the strength of a God.

This time Garmr was the one to let out a cry. Garmr's body, which was just a materialization, broke down and scattered instead of spilling blood, but it was still only its forehead.

‘Oh power of the sea!’

Adenmaha's voice was heard right then. She had barely managed to say those words while crying in pain.

Currents of water started to surround Garmr and then they crushed it down from the sides.

Tae Ho wanted to look behind him. However, it wasn't yet the time.. Monster sharks had appeared after smelling the blood of Karagul and Adenmaha.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

He only originated thunder and scattered it around his surroundings. Then the sharks, which were sensitive towards

current, became surprised and fell back reflexively.

‘Tae Ho!’

Tae Ho raised his head. He thought he had heard Siri’s voice. It was obvious it couldn’t reach him because he was under the sea, but he still heard it. Perhaps it might have been something like a mental interaction.

Pong! Pong! Pong!

Siri and the warriors of Valhalla entered the sea with their bare bodies. Although they were in the water and therefore weren’t able to move freely, they still charged towards the monster sharks valiantly and stabbed them with their harpoons.

‘Warrior Tae Ho!’

A clear voice was heard following Siri’s. It was Valkyrie Ingrid, this time. Tae Ho saw her holding a trident and then turned his body, looking down at the sea, while holding the Burst lance. Ingrid saw Tae Ho looking to the opposite side and then threw the trident she was holding with the power of a God behind it.

Garmr let out a cry again. It struggled while still being trapped in the current created by Adenmaha.

‘Full burst!’

At that moment Tae Ho made his magical power explode. Garmr’s manifestation, which was breaking down due to the strength of a God, scattered by more than a half.

Tae Ho released the Burst Lance and then swam towards Karagul’s corpse hurriedly. He heard Adenmaha’s pained voice one more time behind him and then the currents of water disappeared. He was sure that she had dispersed it for Tae Ho not to be swept away by them.

‘Adenmaha.’

He pressed down his anxiety forcefully and then Tae Ho forced

his hand, which was enforced by the strength of a God, through Garmr's soul fragment. After searching the insides of Karagul he finally found the canine tooth, which was as sharp as a blade.

‘Oh Idun!’

After plucking the tooth in one try after exerting all his strength, Tae Ho amplified the power of a God even more. He covered the tooth with the power of a God, as if sealing it.

Then, the manifestation of Garmr let out a pained expression and scattered like that.

‘Warrior Tae Ho! Are you alright?!’

Ingrid extended her hand towards Tae Ho. Tae Ho hurriedly approached her and gave her the canine tooth covered with the power of a God and turned towards Adenmaha. She had the form of a woman and was pressing down on the big wound in her neck.

‘It hurts! Hurts! I want to pass out because it hurts too much, but I can’t!’

It hurt but she had a clear head; and that was why she could feel the pain more clearly.

Tae Ho knew the reason for that better than anyone.

‘Idun’s blessing!’

Right now she was a temporary Valkyrie of Idun!

Tae Ho hurriedly swam towards Adenmaha and unfolded the power of a God. Although he was at his limit mentally, since having sealed Garmr's soul fragment, he was also a warrior of Idun. He wanted to pass out as well, but Idun's blessing wouldn't allow him to.

‘Sob, sob. It hurts.’

Adenmaha's cries became a bit lower. Maybe it was thanks to Tae Ho pouring Idun's divine power, which had a healing property, that no more blood was flowing out from her wounds.

Tae Ho felt like he had been sweating cold sweat, even though he was underwater. He caressed Adenmaha's head and cheeks a few times and then expressed that he was tired with his face.

‘Adenmaha, return for now. And receive treatment as soon as you go, do you understand?’

‘It was also like this yesterday. You are always this way.’

Because, looking at it, he had made her fight to the point where she became a mess and then made her return.

However, Tae Ho wore a small smile. Even though she had received a fatal wound, he had treated himself and then Adenmaha. She was still looking at him with resentful eyes but there was a bit of worry in her eyes.

‘Be careful.’

‘Right.’

After activating the Summoning Rock, Adenmaha disappeared. He didn't know if Heda would be at the residence but at least Ragnar would be.

‘Ha...’ Tae Ho let out a sigh and then looked at Ingrid. She was holding Garmr's soul fragment, which had been sealed with Idun's and Njord's powers.

‘Let's return to the surface for now.’

Ingrid's voice was heard clearly, even though they were underwater, as if she had a special method. As Tae Ho nodded, she took out the harpoon she was carrying on her back to throw it towards Karagul's corpse and then swam towards the surface. Karagul's corpse, which was connected by the harpoon, followed her to the surface.

Siri and the warriors of Valhalla finished off the monster sharks they were facing and gathered towards Tae Ho. Tae Ho slowly surged to the surface and extended his hand at Karagul's corpse. As

the other warriors also did the same thing, the runes were distributed depending on their contribution.

“Ha...”

Even though he had Ingrid’s temporary carving magic, breathing real oxygen outside the water was different. Tae Ho breathed out some air and then pulled back his wet hair and looked towards Ingrid. She was looking at Garmr’s soul fragment with a serious expression.

She wasn’t worried that Garmr’s manifestation might take shape again.

Just how had Garmr’s soul fragment appeared in this place?

Was there also a trace of the Great War here in Midgard?

Or could soul fragments be discovered in places that weren’t in the traces of the Great War??

She couldn’t come up with an answer easily, because there was a high possibility that monsters that had turned evil because of Garmr’s soul fragment had come from a far place.

Right then, Ingrid raised their head. She, who wore a bewildered expression, released Njord’s power, which was covering the soul fragment.

Black smoke, which was estimated to be Garmr’s manifestation, surged up. But instead of taking shape and attacking Ingrid and Tae Ho, it just surged towards a certain direction. It seemed as if it was pointing to that place.

Ingrid and Tae Ho looked at the direction the smoke was heading to.

It was to the continent which was beyond the sea.

&

The night in the port was splendid. It was because King Sven, who had been saving food after locking the doors of the supplies

storage, had hosted a bigger and more magnificent banquet than the one he had made last night.

Karagul's corpse and the corpses of the monster sharks were in the middle of the plaza, which was lit up with many small and big fires and made it seem like it was the afternoon. The people on the island looked at the corpses of the huge monsters and exclaimed in surprise and claimed the warriors of Valhalla that had defeated those monsters.

Bracky and the warriors gathered told the story of that day's fight to the people gathered. Not only the little girls listened to their stories with shining eyes, but so did the adult warriors, and the young beautiful ladies looked at the warriors with flushed cheeks, as if they were enchanted by them.

Siri lightly passed the gazes of the men and rather than talking about herself, she focused on gathering information. The other warriors were telling of her performance anyways, so there was no need to say it directly.

The people who had been rescued yesterday started to explain about the situation in the continent and the heat and the castle. The diseases that came from the west were spreading to the east but it seemed like the speed was way beyond what they could have imagined.

Ingrid was holding a ceremony herself. It was to notify what had happened to the Gods and to report about Garmr's soul fragment.

The people in the island looked at the ceremony that was being held by a Valkyrie and were moved and exclaimed. Everyone claimed the name of Njord.

Tae Ho, who was listening to the things related to the continent next to Siri, stood up from his place. He had heard the story to a certain degree, so now it was time to concentrate on what he could do right now.

Siri looked at Tae Ho, as if telling him to do his best but then she tilted her head. It was because he had went with King Sven, instead of going with Bracky and the other warriors.

‘Is he planning to win over the King, just like yesterday?’

It wasn’t a bad thought, but she shook her head, because the stories didn’t always spread from top to bottom. It was also important to spread it widely from below through the normal citizens.

Looking at the situation like that, what Bracky and the others were doing was much more effective.

But of course, it was something Tae Ho also knew. He had approached King Sven for another reason.

“Ohh warrior of Idun.”

As Tae Ho approached him King Sven smiled and faced him. As he had seen his fight differently from the others, he knew Tae Ho’s achievements more than anyone else.

Tae Ho paused for a moment and waited for the eyes of the ones surrounding to gather on them. After gathering enough eyes to watch them and judging that he had made King Sven impatient enough, Tae Ho took out a bar of gold from Unnir and gave it to Sven.

“King Sven, this is gold from Valhalla.”

“Ohh Valhalla!”

“Vahalla!”

King Sven opened his eyes roundly. The ones that were near them also got excited.

A golden bar from Valhalla. Wasn’t that an object from the realm of the Gods?

Tae Ho was satisfied at the reaction he had expected and then forced himself to put on a serious expression and said, “I will give

this to you, so build a shrine for Idun.”

“Ohh, ohhhh.”

King Sven received the gold with a moved face. The ones that were near them sent gazes filled with envy.

“I will definitely do that.”

“Right.” Tae Ho answered shortly and then approached the advisor Ube, who was standing in a corner of the room. Although their force had weakened, he was still the second most powerful man in the island, no matter what anyone said. He would surely regain the influence he had in the past with time.

Tae Ho, who had already investigated about him at the last banquet, also gave him a bar of gold.

“Support the king well. It’s a gift coming from Idun-nim.”

Ube wore a more moved expression than King Sven. How could he have known that he would also receive a golden bar? In addition, for his efforts to be recognized by Idun-nim!.

People would become more moved when they hadn’t even expected it to happen. Tae Ho patted his shoulders and then also gave the prophet a bar of gold. Although he didn’t show that he was as moved as King Sven or Ube, his feelings could be known just by looking at his lips, which were curled.

‘Good, perfect. A little story-telling is fine, but the shrine is a must.’

Because if it gets away from one’s eyes it would also get away from one’s heart.

If one kept looking at it, wouldn’t interest appear in one? In addition, it was the place to leave behind the legend of the warrior of Idun. Perhaps, they might pilgrimage in the distant future.

As Tae Ho returned with a proud face, Siri burst out into laughter. As Bracky and the others were told that they should use

all of their rewards in Anaheim when they received them, they couldn't do anything to those gazes filled with expectation.

“Amazing.”

To come up with a method she hadn't thought about...

As Tae Ho shrugged his shoulders and sat next to her, Siri served him a cup and asked, “How much did you bring?”

“How much do you think fits into Unnir?”

Tae Ho lightly patted the magic pocket and Siri ended up laughing unconsciously.

“Are you planning on cultivating a great army of a million?”

“That's also good.”

Although it was just a feeling, he felt as if there was a high probability that the expedition wouldn't end there. They would probably cross the sea tomorrow or the day after and go to the direction Garmr's soul fragment pointed.

He couldn't be satisfied with just leaving stories and legends in all the places he went to. He would leave a shrine and a sculpture of Idun.

“You really match a hundred men. I think that Idun has a really good warrior.” Siri giggled and offered a toast. Tae Ho hit his cup against Siri's and then looked at the sky.

‘Is Adenamaha fine?’

He could still remember her crying in sorrow, saying that it hurt.

‘After each expedition Heda came to meet me.’

Midgard wouldn't be possible. She herself had said that it would be hard.

The night deepened while he was thinking of this.

&

The curtain of the night was thick. Rather than saying that it was dawn, it was really early in the morning.

As soon as the banquet had ended, a clear voice was heard in Tae Ho's ear, who had gone off to sleep.

“Warrior Tae Ho, it's a meeting.”

He opened his eyes reflexively. However, he still wasn't very aware of what was happening as he wasn't fully awake.

A meeting.

It really was a meeting?

Then would he also get the saga ‘The Warrior That Had a Valkyrie Visit Him?’

It was only for a moment but Tae Ho, who was thinking of such things, got a hold of himself. Then he realized that the voice that had called out to him didn't belong to Ingrid. In addition, the place he was lying at wasn't the bed King Sven had prepared.

It was the wide green plains that had a golden apple tree.

“Idun-nim?”

Idun, who had whispered in Tae Ho's ear, giggled just like Siri.

“Right, my warrior Tae Ho. It's me.”

Should he call it a divine message, as it was a meeting in his dreams?

The meeting with the Goddess had started.

< Episode 22 – Saga (2) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 3: Saga (3)

“Uh....is this for real?”

Tae Ho looked at his surroundings and asked. The scenery was the same he saw in Idun's shrine.

Idun laughed soundlessly and then stood at a distance that was nice to speak.

“Precisely speaking, it's inside your dream. But it will be so real there will be almost no differences.”

“It's true.”

Tae Ho nodded after pinching his cheek once. The pain and the feeling of his skin was too real.

Idun looked at that Tae Ho and touched her hands. As Tae Ho blinked at her slightly relieved look, she hid her hands behind her back and said.

“It's a method the Gods of Olympus like to use so I imitated them as I won't be able to go to Midgard directly.....or send someone to meet you.”

The Gods of Asgard preferred to descend directly. Even Odin preferred to send an order himself when the other party was awake so he could welcome them himself rather than talk in sleeps.

Tae Ho listened to Idun's explanation attentively. He had also heard from Heda that it would be difficult to come meet him in Midgard.

“It seems like Midgard is a bit special, right?”

In Tae Ho's eyes, Svartalfheim and Midgard were in the end outside of Asgard. But compared to Svartalfheim, where he could come and go as he pleased through the space door, you could only go down to Midgard through Bifrost that was protected by Heimdall.

There was obviously a difference between the two.

“That’s right. My warrior Tae Ho. Do you know that Asgard and the nine planets are called by each mythology?”

“Yes.”

He had heard it from Heda before. Each planet, including the mortal world, had several lands in it but they were generally called with the mythological name.

Just like Olympus, Erin, the palace.

“Midgard is the biggest land in Asgard and also the most important for it. Because the strength of the Gods is partially originated by the faith of the humans.”

If there are many people that believe, the strength of a God becomes stronger.

The more loyal your faith is, the more strength you could send to your God.

Just like Idun had said, the faith was merely one of the factors but still it wasn’t to the point you could ignore it.

“It’s similar to the sagas.”

“Right, perhaps Freya may have taken the idea from it.”

Because the stories and transmission was the same.

If there were more people that believed and transmitted it, the saga would become stronger.

“Actually....that’s only one reason from many. There are many more reasons why Midgard is important and we have to control who can enter and leave it. But unfortunately I can’t tell everything to you, Tae Ho. Can you understand me?”

“Yes, it’s fine.”

He was rather thankful that she told him at least one reason. Just like Gandur had said at some point, he could clearly feel how much

Idun treasured him.

“Right, thank you.”

Idun put on a bright smile and then said with a stiff posture.

“My warrior Tae Ho, I heard that the battle in the mortal world isn’t easy. Heda was really worried because Adenmaha returned greatly injured.”

“Is Adenmaha fine?”

Tae Ho raised his voice unconsciously. It may seem as a rude attitude but Idun didn’t seem to mind and answered him quickly.

“Heda healed her well. Although she did cry a lot, she’s fine. There are also no scars. Only.....”

“Only?”

Tae Ho gulped dry saliva. Was there another problem?

Idun didn’t answer quickly and paused for a moment and then looked at Tae Ho with sharp eyes.

“There was an unexpected reason in why Adenmaha was safe.”

“Uh.....That.....”

Idun’s blessing that had fallen on Adenmaha.

Idun smile.

“It’s fine. Isn’t that better? Because of that we could heal Adenmaha more easily.”

“Thank you.”

“Only.”

The only came out again. As Tae Ho flinched again, Idun said with a casual voice.

“Heda said. Just what do you have to do to create a saga like that? Actually even I am surprised.”

It was understandable. Because even Tae Ho himself got

surprised at the moment.

But the problem was Heda rather than Idun.

“So that happened. He must have enjoyed it. I should now ask Ingrid. Siri will also become a Valkyrie-That’s what she said.”

Idun imitated Heda. It was surprising enough that a Goddess had imitated a Valkyrie but her voice and tone were exactly the same. It felt like Heda was in front of his eyes.

“Uh, mmm.....”

He imagined Heda’s cold eyes and then Idun giggled and said.

“Don’t worry, she’s not angry. At least that seemed to be the case for me.”

Idun spoke up to that point and then glanced at the sky and turned to look at Tae Ho again.

“Time is limited so I will now have to bring out a heavy topic.”

Tae Ho fixed his posture. He could barely guess what Idun was going to say.

“Odin has received the report from Ingrid. Many Gods are surprised that Garmr’s soul fragment was discovered in Midgard.”

“Are there no traces of the Great War in Midgard?”

“No, there certainly are. Although there are a few of them we thought that they wouldn’t get discovered because they are a bit special.”

Although she didn’t specifically say what was special looking at how she spoke you could say that she was almost sure.

“Tomorrow Ingrid will probably say it but Tae Ho, the expedition you are in will get a bit longer. It’s a task to cross to the continent and search for Garmr’s soul fragment.”

It was as he expected. As there were eight intermediate warriors gathered, it was enough to make a searching team.

“Compared to before, you will travel while holding Garmr’s soul fragment. You should always be careful and do your best.”

“Yes, Idun-nim.”

As Tae Ho answered bravely as if telling her not to worry, she smiled brightly and looked up the sky again.

“Mm, there’s a bit of time. Then, let’s keep talking about the fun things.”

“Yes?”

As Tae Ho asked back unconsciously, Idun giggled and then asked after approaching him.

“It’s really surprising. It’s barely been two days but there are much more humans calling my name. In addition, there are even some with strong faith in me. Just what magic did you perform?”

There was no way Idun could know what Tae Ho had done specifically.

Tae Ho smirked once and then started to tell his story of the past two days briefly.

“Shrines?”

“Yes, they will probably get built in a short time.”

Tae Ho said confidently. The ones with strong faith in her Idun had spoken about should be king Sven, Ube and the prophet. As all of the ones that had the greatest power got united in mind, the construction of a shrine was only a matter of time.

Idun dropped her shoulders as if it was absurd and said.

“Perhaps I will have to pick Heda’s junior.”

Because the warriors may increase exponentially.

“I will work a bit harder.”

“To get new Valkyries?”

“That’s obv....Idun-nim?”

“I’m joking. Joking.”

Idun laughed merrily and then asked with a concerned voice.

“I’m saying this just in case, but don’t spread that much gold. It’s not permitted for items of the mythological world to circulate in the mortal world.....but also it’s your expense in the end.”

Looking at her tone it seemed like she emphasized the latter.

“When you return from this expedition.....you can expect it. I will prepare a cool reward.”

Idun said as if assuring it herself.

In Tae Ho’s position, she really was worthy for him to serve.

“I’m always thankful. ANd you should also expect for it. I still have trump more card to spread your name.”

Tae Ho’s eyes shone. Although Idun’s face was covered in light he felt like he could see her blinking.

“I have a really good warrior.”

Idun exclaimed shortly and then kissed Tae Ho in his forehead after fixing her posture. It was because it was time to end the meeting.

“Let my blessing accompany you.”

The world changed and Tae Ho woke up from his dream.

&

‘Why is your face that bright? Did you dream of something erotic while sleeping?’

It was Cuchulainn, that was like the bully of the town when he wasn’t fighting. Tae Ho just shook his head as he didn’t feel the need to answer him and then asked another thing.

“Before that, Cuchulainn, will the flying ship be fine?”

‘It will be fine only if you gathered the good materials just like I said yesterday.’

The flying pirate ship had gotten partially destroyed because of Karagul’s body slam. Although it could somehow return to the port, it was only to that point.

While Ingrid was worried that she would have to ask the humans to repair it Cuchulainn came out with a solution. if they cut down good timber and placed it on the damaged places, the ship would repair by itself.

And actually the ship did start to repair a little bit, although it was a little slow. It was just like adding clay to a ceramic ware and they start to become one.

“It really is a magical ship.”

‘It’s Erin’s treasure.’

Ingrid started to tell the story to the warriors in a little more detailed way.

It seems like Garmr’s soul fragment is in the continent. It was the first place Garmr’s soul fragment pointed a certain direction so they should take extra precaution.

There was an opinion that the reason Garmr’s soul fragment reacted in a different way this time was because the soul fragment was at a close place, but it seemed like there was no clear reason that has been revealed.

A day passed once again. The warriors of Valhalla, that were waiting for the ship to repair itself, left the port when the sun reached its peak.

“For Idun!”

“Idun!”

“Idun!”

It seemed like the propaganda he had done the past three days

had some effect that there were many that called Idun's name among the one that came to see them off. As Tae Ho waved his hand with a satisfied face, Bracky raised his hammer.

[Saga: A thunderbolt enters his hammer]

Thunder fell from the clear sky. And then, the name of the God the people called, changed.

“Thor!”

“Ohh! Thor! Thor!”

“Son of a God, Bracky!”

“He's a strong contendat.”

Siri laughed lowly and said. Tae Ho wanted to say that he was interfering in his business but he just shrugged his shoulders. In the first place, the warriors of Valhalla didn't envy or hate themselves.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

Tae Ho looked at the people and said. And then Bracky swung his hammer once more and smiled. Siri and the other warriors also yelled.

That was the definite reason they fought.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

The flying pirate ship left the port.

&

Time flowed quickly.

When dusk was approaching they started to finally see land.

The warriors of Valhalla, that were strong warriors and outstanding seamen, liked the land they were facing, a lot. All of them hung on the sides of the ship and looked at the land they would land on.

But something didn't feel right. Close to hundred people were running towards the port, that was blocked with a fortress. It felt like they were escaping from something.

Tae Ho looked a bit farther. And then a scene he only saw in movies entered his eyes. Hundreds of corpses were chasing the people that were alive.

"They said that there was a disease spreading. So are they the evacuees?"

Notung, of Heimdal's legion, frowned and said. The other warriors also put on expressions and voices as if they had seen something gruesome but didn't feel doubts at this situation.

"There's a kind of disease that moves the ones that had died by it. It's the most terrible type of disease."

Siri explained lowly and fast. She said that cremation was one of the reasons it got developed in Midgard.

Whatever the case, it wasn't the time to just be watching. Valkyrie Ingrid increased the speed of the flying ship. The warriors also took battle stances. Tae Ho took out a summoning rock and called Rolo.

It seemed like it was also in the middle of its meal like Adenmaha that it bit the air when it appeared. Tae Ho placed the Beast's saddle on the back of Rolo and took out the things he had stored in Unnir.

It was Idun's battle flag that had the symbol of a golden apple in it.

"Let's go."

Tae Ho got out of the flying ship. Siri and the warriors looked at the waving flag and put on absurd faces.

"For Idun."

Tae Ho said in a low voice and charged towards the group of

zombies.

< Episode 22 – Saga (3) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 4: Saga (4)

Katren, which was the name of the first port in Kalik, had been attacked several times by those that sought its fortune and its flourishments.

Every time it was attacked, Katren's defenses became sturdier, and they even built a fortress in all the land.

Blotan, who was the son of Eric the defense commander of Katren, looked down the fortress with a stiff expression. The evacuees that had flocked over there were shouting, telling them to open the gates.

The walls of Katren, which were ten meters high, were hard for the invaders to cross. The evacuees, who couldn't even take care of their own bodies, must have felt that they were facing a cliff.

The number of evacuees was a thousand. In addition there were a lot of women, children, and elders among them.

However Blotan didn't order the gates to be opened. The rookie soldiers looked at the evacuees and Blotan alternately while not being able to stay calm and the veteran soldiers just closed their mouths and forced themselves to look in the distance instead of below the fortress.

The dead ones were approaching. It was certain that they had died with 'Hella's curse', which was the most terrifying among the epidemics.

He couldn't open the gates easily. The evacuees that weren't controlled were a calamity themselves. The dead ones would surely reach the evacuees, even before they could accomodate them and if even one of them entered the fortress, then hell would unleash in Katren. And there could already be some infected people among the evacuees.

The ones that had died by the ones that died through Hella's

curse would also fall under the same curse. As the speed it spread at was really like thunder, if they made a mistake they would be accommodating a thousand dead people instead of a thousand evacuees.

There were tens of thousands living in Katren. In addition, Blotan was the defense commander of Katren.

“Go to another place! We can’t open the gates!”

Katren himself knew that what he was saying was absurd. Where would they go to when the dead ones were right behind them?

The evacuees that heard those words, as if telling them to die, shouted even fiercer. Some of them ran towards the sea, as if there was no answer. It seemed like they were planning to enter Katren, even if they had to swim.

‘Right, that would be better.’

That was because the dead ones weren’t able to swim. They would have more chances to survive then.

But it wasn’t easy. Now was when the sea was at its coldest.. In addition there were many that were accompanied by babies and children. It was doubtful if small kids would be able to endure the swim.

“Prepare to fight.” Blotan ordered the warriors. They weren’t attacking the evacuees. The dead ones were flocking over.

The evacuees hit the gates and there were some that tried to climb it. The cries of the kids shook their heads.

But it was then that it happened.

A light shone in the sky and everyone turned to look at it reflexively. The evacuees that were crying in tears all shut their mouths, like a lie.

It was a beautiful swan, covered in blue light. The swan, that seemed more valiant than graceful, turned its body in the sky.

Then it transformed into a beautiful woman and stood in the sky with dignity.

“Valkyrie!”

“It’s a Valkyrie!” The people that were above and below the fortress all yelled. The Valkyrie – Ingrid, who was still covered in blue light, looked down at Blotan.

“I’m Valkyrie Ingrid. What’s your name?”

“I’m Blotan, son of Erik.” Blotan looked up at Ingrid and said with a hardened expression. Blotan faced the business-like and cold face of Ingrid and then she said with a hard tone, “Blotan, son of Erik, Valkyrie Ingrid orders you. Open the gates and receive the evacuees.”

“Ohh!”

“Ohhh!” The evacuees cheered. And some of the soldiers that were on the fortress also raised their voices unconsciously.

“Bu, but!” Blotan yelled hurriedly. Even if it was the order of a Valkyrie, there were orders which he should and should not follow. The most important thing for Blotan was the safety and the lives of the people residing in Katren.

Some soldiers expressed concern at Blotan’s resistance and some of the evacuees started to criticize Blotan.

However Ingrid was different. She showed a faint smile that hadn’t been seen until then.

“Blotan, son of Erik, you are a brave one.”

The evacuees got bewildered and put on a difficult face.

Ingrid was speaking sincerely. It wasn’t easy to deny the orders of a Valkyrie in this world where everyone knew that God’s and Valhalla existed. However he wasn’t acting that way out of selfish desire.

That was why Ingrid didn’t dislike Blotan. She said with an eased

voice as if comforting him, “Open the gates. The thing you are worried about won’t happen.”

Ingrid turned to look at the evacuees. She put on the dignified face again and yelled, “Humans of Midgard! Don’t fear! Keep in line calmly! The warriors of Valhalla have come to protect you!”

Everyone turned their eyes. Then they saw a big flying ship crossing through the dead ones. They all held their breaths at the grand appearance of the flying ship.

“Open the gates Blotan, son of Erik.” Ingrid said lastly and Blotan didn’t resist any further. He opened the gates of Katren himself.

“Valhalla!”

“Valhalla!”

“Ohh Odin!” The evacuees yelled and entered the fortress. It seemed like it was because they had witnessed the miracle of the Valkyrie and the warriors of Valhalla, as no one was fighting to get inside first. So there was obviously no one that got crushed to death.

Ingrid let out a sigh of relief and then turned to look at the battlefield and ended up smiling unconsciously.

“It’s really eye-catching.”

It was because it was the combination of a coolly armed gryphon and a big army flag.

Ingrid mistook it as being a sacrifice for the Goddess, instead of being a struggle to get more newcomers, and smiled. Looking at how hard he was working she also got the heart to help others as the one that served a God.

“Look! The one at the front is the warrior of Idun!”

“Idun?”

“The Goddess of Youth?”

“Idun-nim also had warriors?”

The evacuees and the soldiers all became confused and looked at the direction Ingrid pointed at. The ones that had good eyesight could recognize that the army flag had a golden apple engraved in it.

‘This much should be enough.’

Was it pushing his back a bit?

Ingrid looked at Tae Ho’s back along with the thousand evacuees.

&

Tae Ho didn’t fight randomly, but checked the terrain. At first glance it seemed like a wide plain, but that wasn’t the case. There were several obstacles like small forests, rivers, etcetera, that impeded your movement.

What Tae Ho had to do now was to protect. It was to not let the dead ones reach the evacuees.

[The Faintly Burning Morning Runefang]

Tae Ho took out Runefang for the first in a really long time. It was because the fire was more effective against dead monsters.

“Let’s go, Rolo!”

Rolo, which got dragged while eating, fought roughly, as if wanting to take it onto the dead ones. Although he didn’t use his beak; his claws were already enough.

The dead ones weren’t warriors. They were normal people that died because of a disease. Tae Ho tried hard to get colder. When a kid that was half rotten showed his teeth and charged towards him, he still swung his sword calmly.

The fire that surged from Runefang covered the dead ones. As the warriors of Valhalla jumped down from the flying ship, they were able to stop the charge of the dead ones even though there were only eight of them.

The warriors of Valhalla didn't group up, but fought scattered. As there were more dead ones trying to get past the gates, they had to attack without resting.

Tae Ho created the fifth fire with Runefang and then looked at the dead ones with the 'Eyes of the Dragon'. It was to grasp how many there were but he saw an unexpected thing.

He saw really small green letters among the red letters, as if it was covered by them. After focusing more, he saw that there were people defending themselves on top of a broken house. They were facing the dead ones that were gathering in their direction in an isolated place.

"Captain Siri! I will entrust it to you!"

"What?!"

Siri, who was firing her crossbow and swinging her sword without resting, turned to look at Tae Ho. Tae Ho just glanced into the distance without explaining and then departed with Rolo.

Siri didn't know what Tae Ho was about to do. But she still chose to trust in him. She fought more fiercely to defend her spot, which had widened twice more.

Tae Ho counted the number of the dead ones. Although Rolo was fast, they were still far away. It seemed as if the ones that were surrounded would be cornered by the dead ones at any time.

He had to increase his speed. As he was already using 'The One That Controls Dragons' and 'The Charge of the Warrior', he only had one method to do it with.

"Rolo! I'm sorry! I still couldn't test it on another being!"

Rolo flinched when Tae Ho yelled. Although he couldn't understand what he was saying, those words were really ominous.

"If it doesn't turn out well I will take res...Let's go!"

Tae Ho couldn't finish saying that he would take responsibility.

Rolo wanted to yell at him to explain properly but he couldn't speak in the first place, and in addition Tae Ho was faster.

[Saga: The Warrior That Rides on Valkyries]

Tae Ho activated his saga. Then a feather decoration appeared on Rolo's head just like what had happened with Adenmaha. Idun's blessing and the strength of a Valkyrie was added to Rolo.

Rolo trembled while increasing his speed. Tae Ho turned to look at Rolo with 'The Eyes of a Dragon'.

[The First Male Valkyrie(Temporary)]

[Rolo]

He was glad. Tae Ho laughed refreshingly and Rolo let out a roar that was like a curse and flew with more strength.

The distance shortened in a blink. Tae Ho arrived at the peak of the broken house and then swung his sword to burn down the dead ones that were climbing the house. Looking at it more closely, he could see that the ones that were trapped were a beautiful woman and three children.

"Are you okay?!"

"I, I'm fine!" The woman, who was estimated to be a shield maiden, and who was fighting fiercely to protect the children, yelled. It was a black haired woman, which was seen rarely among Vikings. Tae Ho could know how much she had suffered just by looking at her half-destroyed shield and her dirty armor.

Tae Ho swung his sword once more and landed Rolo on top of the house. He made the children , who were wearing high-quality clothes, although a bit ripped, ride on Rolo and then turned to look at the woman.

"Get on, the gryphon will take you to the fortress."

The woman put on an absent-minded expression at Tae Ho's words. However she then hit her cheeks and asked hurriedly, "And

wa, warrior-nim?”

Although Rolo was big, he wasn't able to carry three children and two adults. After making the woman ride on him Tae Ho had to inevitably stay behind in the house.

However, Tae Ho shook his head once as if telling her not to worry and emphasized the most important thing.

“I'm Idun's warrior.”

“And I, Idun's warrior-nim?!” The woman said again with a bewildered face. He liked the fact that she worried about the benefactor that saved her instead of fleeing first and also that she had protected the three children when it was even hard to protect herself.

However, there was no time to explain one by one and it was embarrassing to keep speaking in this acting tone. Because of that Tae Ho just placed his lips on the forehead of the woman, who still had childish features, instead of explaining any more.

“Let Idun's blessing accompany you.”

As he had used the power of a God, a golden light shone on the forehead of the woman for a moment. She looked back at Tae Ho with a really surprised face but then flushed and nodded. She hurriedly got on Rolo and grabbed the reins.

“Go Rolo!”

“I will be waiting for you in the fortress! Idun's warrior-nim!” The woman yelled with a moved expression and the children behind her also yelled something. While only Rolo wore a dissatisfied expression, Tae Ho waved his hand once and turned to look at the dead ones.

Actually, escaping wasn't that hard. He could just transform into a hawk.

But he had already entered deep into the forest. Charging

towards the fortress and getting rid of the dead ones at the same time would also be of help to the other warriors.

[Saga: The Charge of a Warrior is Like a Storm]

Tae Ho was accompanied by lightning and storm and jumped down the tower. He spread fire with Runefang and charged between the dead ones. No one could stop Tae Ho, as if it really had become the original story of the saga.

And there were eyes that were looking at Tae Ho from a far place.

They were eyes filled with anger and hatred, rather than amazement.

< Episode 22 – Saga (4) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 5: Saga (5)

The ones that died of ‘Hella’s curse’ turned into the walking dead and attacked the people that were alive. It was a disease that the word ‘curse’ suited well.

The fight ended earlier than expected. Although there were hundreds of walking dead, not all of them were warriors and they only knew how to charge forward.

In addition, they weren’t good opponents. A force of eight warriors of Valhalla was enough to overwhelm hundreds of warriors of Midgard that were completely armed.

But of course, as there were just too many walking dead, there were some that passed through the defenses of the warriors of Valhalla. However, Katren’s garrison didn’t just stay idle. They poured arrows into the walking dead that charged towards them in a manner that one could say was a bit excessive.

“Are you okay?”

“It’s been tough because of a certain someone but I’m fine.”

Siri faced Tae Ho, who had charged all the way here from a deep place in the forest, and spoke while putting on cold eyes and smiling at the same time. He could feel the pressure emanating from her, as if she were telling him to explain properly the next time.

“Thank you, you really are the best.”

As he came out of the forest shamelessly giving a thumbs up, Siri smirked and loosened her expression. He had done that to rescue people in the first place. Siri also knew that it was unavoidable.

As Siri’s mood had eased up Tae Ho, that got relaxed, glanced towards the fortress.

“Captain Siri, I will go first. It’s because of Rolo.”

There was a limit on how long you could maintain a summon with the summoning rock. There were things he had to do before sending back Rolo.

“Alright.”

Siri answered shortly and then pointed at the other warriors while slightly dropping her posture. Tae Ho looked at the warriors that were gathering in groups and ran towards the fortress hurriedly.

“Idun’s warrior!”

“Idun’s warrior is coming!”

“Ohh!”

The soldiers on top of the fortress and the evacuees that were still near the gates raised their voices.

‘Did the shieldmaiden I saved spread the rumor?’

How did he know that he was Idun’s warrior? Did he recognize the army flag?

Whatever the case, it was a good reaction. Tae Ho maintained his serious expression instead of smiling and kicked the air to surge up to the top of the fortress. The soldiers and evacuees raised their voices again when they saw that he had jumped down the wall that was close to ten meters as if nothing.

“Idun’s warrior-nim.”

As he had jumped towards the place where Rolo was, he could meet the ones he had saved as soon as he landed. They were Rolo, that was putting on a vague expression while carrying Idun’s army flag in his saddle, and the three children and the black-haired woman next to him.

“Are you okay?”

“We are all safe. It’s all thanks to Idun’s warrior-nim.”

The shieldmaiden blushed and then bowed towards Tae Ho and pointed at the three children.

“My name is Helga, the daughter of Ivar. These are my siblings Gudmund, Gudrid, and Erik.”

They were two boys and one girl.

‘They were brothers with a bit of difference in their age?’

He thought that they were children of a rich family and their guard.

Looking at the shieldmaiden more closely he thought that she would be a teen as she still had a childish face. On the other hand, the biggest kid among the children seemed to be barely seven or eight years old.

But it was then. The warriors near them put on surprised faces and then looked at each other and started to whisper among themselves.

“They are the kids of King Ivar?”

“So that girl is Princess Helga?”

“She’s a beauty just like the rumors.”

Although they had whispered among themselves, you could still hear everything as they were on top of the silent fortress.

[Daughter of King Ivar]

[Princess of Kataron]

[Shieldmaiden Helga]

He became certain after looking with the ‘eyes of the dragon’. It wasn’t a rich family but she was of royalty.

But of course, there was a low probability for them to be successors of a huge kingdom. Even King Sven merely ruled two cities and a few towns. Based on Siri’s explanation there were small kingdoms the size of cities near Kalik. Ivar King should

probably be the same.

Helga heard the whispers around her and then took a deep breath and said after fixing her expression.

“It’s embarrassing to say this to Idun’s warrior but King Ivar, that rules a part of Kataron, is my father. As my father was on an expedition, I escaped along with my brothers.”

Tae Ho had studied many things about Kalik’s surroundings with Siri while crossing the sea. When he spread a map in his head he could immediately know Kataron’s size and location. Just as expected, it was a small kingdom comparable to the island King Sven ruled.

‘They had a vague relationship with Katren, right?’

They did trade between them but were in guard against each other.

He had heard that the other small kingdoms near it were hesitation in several means as King Ivar was leading a really powerful army.

‘Whatever the case, they are royalty.’

Be it small or big, it was still a kingdom. In addition, the ones in front of Tae Ho were the princesses and princes.

If he did well, won’t he gain diplomatic ties with them? Just like Athens, the capital of Greece, worshipped the Goddess Athena.

He started to see Helga in a new light. He felt like he could see the words [Idun’s warrior(in the future)] or [Estimated to enter the army: Idun’s legion] above her head.

‘Let’s calm down for now.’

Rolo’s vague eyes looking at him helped him in calming himself down.

Tae Ho fixed his expression and then hit his chest twice just like Valhalla’s etiquette and spoke to Helga.

“You have gone through a lot with the body of a princess. Both your courage and commitment to protecting your brothers until the end are really amazing.”

“Ah, no. I just did the obvious as the eldest.”

Helga blushed and bowed. But looking that the corner of her mouth was curled up, it seemed like she was really happy to have heard that.

“I also did the obvious as Idun’s warrior.”

Tae Ho lightly patted on Helga’s shoulders and said. Helga looked at Tae Ho’s hand that was on her shoulder and flinched, and then acted as if she didn’t know what to do and hurriedly expressed her manners.

“I will be going now. I will never forget this grace.”

“Warm up as the night is cold.”

Tae Ho took out a coat he had put in Unnir as a set of female clothing and gave it to Helga. Helga’s face got even redder than it was before and bowed again.

“Thank you.”

Helga left with the children. And Tae Ho, that was looking at that, let out a sigh of relief.

‘It was hard.’

He had taken Rasgrid’s or Reginleif’s way of talking and pretended to act as a warrior of Valhalla filled with dignity, but it was hard to do something he didn’t usually do.

“Rolo, you have done well.”

As Tae Ho smirked and said, Rolo turned his head and snorted. Although it was fainter than before, he still had the feather decoration that was a characteristic of Valkyries in his head.

[The first male Valkyrie(Temporary)]

[Rolo that feels strange]

Fortunately enough, it seemed like there was no confusion in his identity.

Tae Ho slightly glanced at Rolo's lower half and let out a sigh of relief before patting Rolo's legs.

"You got the title of the first, congratulations."

It wasn't a man Valkyrie but a male Valkyrie, so it was good to say that he had written history anew, but Rolo kept looking at him vaguely.

Tae Ho placed the things he had prepared in a pocket that was hanging in the saddle instead of taking it off.

He was returning the summoning rocks that had used all of their magic power and a letter to her.

"Send it to Heda, okay?"

Rolo couldn't speak but could understand words really well. He nodded moderately and then looked at Tae Ho as if asking if he could return back to eat. Tae Ho used the summoning rock again to send him back instead of answering.

As the big gryphon disappeared in front of their eyes, the soldiers that got surprised raised their voices. Tae Ho was wondering whether he should preach them about Idun's beauty and wisdom now that he had caught their attention but he changed his thoughts. It was because Siri and the warriors had reached the gate and Ingrid, that wasn't seen anywhere, appeared on top of the fortress.

"Idun's warrior Tae Ho, you have done well."

"Thank you."

As he approached Ingrid, she spoke to him first. He was really thankful towards her because she called him 'Idun's warrior' instead of just 'warrior' like she usually did.

Although Ingrid seemed to be the silent type, as she always had a business-like expression, he was able to read her expression after spending a few days with her. Although her face seemed to be the same every time, she was expressing her feelings through the faint movements of her eyebrows and eyes.

Ingrid put on a smile only Tae Ho could barely recognize and then put pointed at the young man putting on a nervous expression.

“This is Katren’s defense commander Blotan, son of Erik.”

“Greetings to Idun’s warrior.”

“Nice to meet you.”

As Blotan and Tae Ho ended their short greeting, Ingrid spoke again.

“King Catil, the governor of the city, is coming. It feels like it would turn to become a long story but will you participate in the conference? You can rest as you have just returned from battle. King Catil will prepare a conference room.”

It seemed like the last words were directed to Blotan rather to Tae Ho.

Tae Ho and Blotan, that had flinched, turned to look at a fat man that was being escorted by guards, nodded.

“I will participate.”

“Okay, he’s coming over there.”

Ingrid turned towards the fat man-King Catil.

&

The conference with King Catil took place in a big mansion located at the center of the city.

King Catil was hiding his expression but he seemed to have many complaints.

Like he was going to return to the mansion again so why did he have to go to the walls and why did they end up letting in the evacuees inside the fortress?

It seemed like he had almost never lowered himself below someone else or endured it.

But it seemed like he still knew how to differentiate a bit that he didn't act rudely openly towards Ingrid and the warriors of Valhalla.

‘How new.’

Thinking about it, King Catil should be the image of a standard king.

After having seen warriors of Valhalla that were all bright and good people, when he saw a rotten person in a really long while he felt more marveled rather than displeasure.

The people that were in the conference room could be divided into three groups.

King Catil and his advisor, Blotan, and his followers.

Tae Ho, Bracky, and Ingrid.

Lastly, Princess Helga of Kataron.

King Catil sent a sly look towards Helga without even trying to hide it. It was obvious as the successor of a neighboring kingdom had come rolling while they were glaring at themselves without fighting. In addition, Helga was also a beauty. The eyes of King Catil were filled with lewdness.

Helga pretended to act calm but it seemed like it was still hard to endure it that she kept sending glances to Tae Ho.

“Saying it briefly, the place the epidemic got originated at is from a forest near Kataron?”

“There's a high probability.”

Helga answered hurriedly at Ingrid's question.

The epidemic that originated in the forest got spread in small villages that were located in hills or the mountains but it ended up spreading to a village that belonged to Kataron and even affected it.

Ingrid paused for a moment and then looked at the map that was placed in the middle of the table. It pointed in the same direction that Garmr's soul fragment pointed in.

"Shieldmaiden Helga, where is the army of King Ivar? Can I know the situation of Kataron?"

"Um...By now, father should have also heard of the situation. Hella's curse is a really dangerous plague, so I think that he returned to deal with it. For Kataron's situation.....I'm sorry. Even I don't know."

She was staying in a village outside of Kataron with her brothers and had escaped. It was impossible to know to what extent the disease had spread.

"I understand. Erasing the origin of the plague is the priority here so it would be good to join with King Ivar."

"Are you talking about crossing through the infected regions?"

Blotan, that was silent until now, got surprised and asked.

Ingrid nodded with a calm face.

"We have a flying ship....that was bestowed by Idun-nim. It isn't a problem crossing through the infected region."

Ingrid had finished speaking and looked at Tae Ho. Now that she had determined herself to help him, she was really doing her best.

'It looks like a powerpoint presentation.'

Just like when they presented a mobile game in dramas or only drinking a beverage from one brand and showing it.

While Tae Ho was forcing himself not to laugh at Ingrid's cute side, the advisor that was next to King Catil put on a troubled face and said.

"Then our Katren....."

"Katren's walls are high and solid. There won't be any trouble even if we leave."

Ingrid cut off his words immediately. King Catil put on a dissatisfied face but he just shut his mouth and didn't say anything.

Tae Ho looked at the place the eyes of King Catil were looking at and then said.

"Helga, you and your brothers will come with us. It will be exhausting to leave immediately but get ready to depart."

"I understand. Thank you."

Helga answered immediately. King Catil turned to look at Tae Ho as if he could do such things but he couldn't open his mouth this time either.

He had been planning to capture the successors of King Ivar in this opportunity.

Actually, that was a mundane thing, and it wasn't that King Catil was doing anything evil in particular. But whatever the case, he would have to deal with the thousand of evacuees that would remain in Katren.

However, Tae Ho didn't need to side with Katren. He would be leaving Katren soon so it was obvious that he would invest more in Kataron that had a well polished base and where he would be acting from now on.

'Right, now that it came to this why don't I make a national religion?'

He would build a city with Idun's name and also build a big

shrine!

That was Tae Ho's ambition but it seemed like Ingrid mistook Tae Ho's eyes and shook her head while looking at Helga that was looking at Tae Ho with her face flushed.

However she really was sincere. She prioritized her things and stood up.

"King Catil, I entrust you the evacuees. You and the evacuees are all humans of Midgard."

King Catil's face stiffened when he heard the warning not to mix the mundane things with the things related to Valhalla.

As soon as they got out of the conference room, Ingrid gathered the warriors of Valhalla that were resting. It was doubtful as to how Garmr's soul fragment was influencing things but whatever the case, Hella's curse was a terrible disease they had to take care of.

If more time passed, there was a high probability that vampires like the Stragos or undead monsters would appear.

Hella's curse became stronger the more walking dead there were.

The flying pirate ship, that was carrying the warriors of Valhalla, left Katren.

King Catil and the several others looked at them and had their own thoughts.

And at the same time, when everyone looked at the flying pirate ship.

There was one more existence leaving Katren.

< Episode 22 – Saga (5) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 6: Saga (6)

Helga's three brothers were greatly moved at the fact that they got to ride the flying pirate ship. They giggled and talked like children would and that made Helga feel anxious.

However, that didn't last that long. In the first place, as it was already night when they departed, Helga's three brothers started to fall asleep and then fell into a deep sleep.

The warriors of Valhalla viewed them cutely, especially Siri, who took off her coat and covered the children.

“Do you have something on your mind?”

Siri caressed the head of the sleeping Gudrid carefully and then asked Helga. She flinched at that moment and then closed her eyes and said, “I'm worried about the citizens I left in Katren.”

Although they had said that it was unavoidable, they had still left behind close to a thousand citizens.

“It's fine. Even if you or your brothers stayed behind, how much help could you be? Getting out of that place should be of more help to them.”

“Bracky.”

The one that answered while snorting was Bracky, who was seated nearby. Siri hurriedly called Bracky, as if telling him to stop, but he just shrugged his shoulders.

But it was at that moment that Helga, who had been refuted, asked with a surprised face, “Bracky? Are you talking about Bracky, the one that belonged to the Skald's knights?”

“Right, that's me.”

“My, my God.”

She was already experiencing the miracle of being together with the warriors of Valhalla, but it was impossible not to become

surprised this time.

It was because Bracky was someone who had lived in the same time as her.

He had proved to her strongly that when great warriors die, they go to Valhalla.

Bracky scratched his nose as if it was embarrassing and then finished speaking.

“Just as you know, you are from royalty. If you are with us, Princess, you will suffer along with us, but if you stayed behind, you would have become the window that would listen to the complaints of the people. But that is all. Putting an end to this situation and finding a place for the citizens to return to is much better. And to do that, you and your cute brothers can’t stay behind in Katren. The evacuees without you are just a pain for King Catil... So, if we resolve this matter well, the citizens will soon be able to return to their homes.”

But of course, this was only possible because Kataron and Katren were small kingdoms.

Bracky glanced at Helga after finishing his speech and looked at her as if she understood. However, exclamations came from other people.

“Wow, you speak well.”

“Our maknae knows how to speak like that.”

The warriors of Valhalla let out admiring voices. Tae Ho also said with a surprised face, “So Bracky was a Prince. Let’s apologize to all the Princes in the continent.”

Siri nodded reflexively. For the man that was full of muscles and had a big beard to be a prince... It was too much.

Bracky frowned.

“What bullshit is that? And I’m not a Prince but a son in law of

the King. One of my wives was a Princess. I don't know if she's doing well."

It had merely been half a year since Bracky died. Bracky's eyes became dim, as if he was thinking about his children and wives.

Helga looked up at Bracky for a moment and then gulped saliva drily and asked with a careful tone, "I'm really thankful for your advice. But... is Bracky-nim also a warrior of Idun?"

Helga's eyes moved to the flag in the ship for a moment. There was a golden apple drawn on the white flag, just like the army flag of Idun. It wasn't impossible to mistake all of the warriors of Valhalla as being Idun's warriors.

Bracky stood up from his seat and shook his head fiercely.

"No, I'm Thor's warrior. Thor's warrior!"

Bracky raised the hammer, as if imitating Mjolnir. Siri laughed at him and then placed her hand on top of Helga's and said, "In addition, I'm Ullr's warrior."

The God of Hunting, Ullr.

By now, the other warriors had also butted in and raised their voices.

"I'm Heimdall's warrior."

"I'm Hermod's warrior."

If they had stayed silent at that moment, they wouldn't be warriors of Valhalla. As they started to reveal their legions with an elated voice, Ingrid, who was controlling the ship, said casually, "I'm the Valkyrie of Njord's legion."

Everyone turned to look at Ingrid and then she turned her head and added.

"I'm just saying."

Everyone burst out into laughter. Ingrid also wore a small smile.

Siri said to Helga once again, “Helga, Valhalla is a really cool place. However, I hope you knock on the doors of Valhalla as late as possible.”

It was because one had to die first, to enter Valhalla. In addition, that death didn't refer to dying in a comfortable bed but on the battlefield.

“Yes, thank you Ullr's warrior-nim.”

“Right.”

Siri grabbed Helga's hands tightly and then stood up and moved in Tae Ho's direction.

“I'm sorry.”

It was because if seen from one side, she had spilled the cup when he had been working hard to get a successor. However, he just shook his head.

“No, I'm also feeling the same way, so it's fine.”

“Really?”

“You have to look at it in the long term. What use is there if you only hurry?”

Tae Ho also wasn't a fool. Even if he worked hard right now, the probability of a new warrior entering his legion was really low. Because, just as Siri had said, one had to die first.

Tae Ho was just spreading seeds, as if he was harvesting. Although the hard times would be long, the time of harvest would surely be sweet.

‘And for now...I like it as it is.’

That was because Idun and Heda were all focusing on him.

As Tae Ho smirked while thinking of the two of them, Siri's eyebrows twitched.

“It seems like you are thinking of something bad.”

“How can that be?”

Tae Ho put on a bright expression and Siri looked at Tae Ho with the same eyes Rolo had.

&

Kataron was a small kingdom, composed of three cities and six towns.

The town that Hella’s curse had started to spread from was in a city adjacent to Katren, which was the second biggest city and the land where the small kingdom was first originated.

Tae Ho’s group had discovered the troop of King Ivar faster than they had expected. It was because King Ivar, who had heard that Hella’s curse had spread, had turned their horses around. It was just like Helga had predicted.

The troop of King Ivar was stationed in a hill which looked down upon a city. Although a few days had already passed since Hella’s curse had spread, the city didn’t seem that different from outside. However, the particular liveliness of the city couldn’t be felt at all.

“Ivar, son of Grim, greets you, warriors of Valhalla.”

The man, who had a great build, greeted Tae Ho’s group with a face filled with joy. Compared to King Sven, Ivar had been a warrior before becoming a king. For him, Valhalla was a place he had to go to and the warriors of Valhalla were the seniors he respected.

It was the same for the knights of Kataron, who were the pride of King Ivar. Although their hometown had become a ghost town, they all couldn’t hide their happiness and excitement.

“I’m Valkyrie Ingrid. I thank you for welcoming us.” Ingrid replied with the business-like expression, as always and then proceeded to talk.

The contagiousness of Hella’s curse wasn’t that high. If the

attacks of the dead ones could be effectively blocked, the situation could be solved easily.

The strategy was simple. They would attack the city together with the knights King Ivar led and send back the dead ones to their resting place and secure the city.

The warriors of Valhalla stood on the front again. The knights all exclaimed when they saw the warriors of Valhalla stand ahead of them. Their eyes were shining with respect and envy, and it seemed like they would praise them if they slept, saying that it was a cool sleeping position.

That was why Ingrid had approached the warriors to speak to them in a low voice, instead of giving the order to charge immediately.

“The time has come.”

She wasn't talking about attacking.

It had already been some time since the warriors of Valhalla descended to the mortal world.

Although it had merely been a few days, it was enough for rumors to spread. In addition, a lot of people had witnessed their fight.

The people in the island that saw the battle remembered the warriors of Valhalla. The evacuees and the defense team continued to repeat that the warriors of Valhalla had fought for them several times.

The soldiers of Kataron thanked the miracle that they had appeared before them.

This wasn't Asgard but Midgard.

The existence of the warriors themselves that had appeared riding a flying ship was a miracle by itself.

So it wasn't merely a few days. It was plenty of time for a new

story to be made.

The warriors of Valhalla looked at each other, and then turned to look at themselves.

Tae Ho, who had the 'Eyes of the Dragon' knew. All of the warriors had a new saga.

[Saga: His Courage Calms the Waves]

[Saga: The Kraken Doesn't Have Remaining Legs]

[Saga: Warrior of the Sea]

Most of them were related to the sea.

While all of them were smiling satisfactorily, Siri flushed when she checked her saga.

[Saga: She Is A Beautiful And Proud Flower That Bloomed Alone In The Battlefield]

Because compared to the other warriors, who had told their story every day in the island, she had just silently raised her cup in a corner.

In addition, excluding Valkyrie Ingrid, as she was the only woman in the battlefield, she was really eye-catching.

Tae Ho hurriedly blocked his mouth to stop the laughter from coming out and then lowered his head and pretended not to have seen it.

And Bracky, who was next to him, burst out into laughter.

[Saga: He's The Son Of A God That Has Returned]

The legend of Midgard had returned from Valhalla. That alone was enough to be transmitted extensively and remain as a legend. The part saying that he was the son of a God made him feel especially satisfied.

Tae Ho was the last one to check his own saga.

[Saga: The One That Wields Lightning and Gales]

Every time Tae Ho fought, he used the Charge of the Warrior. It was appropriate to say that the scene of Tae Ho running on the sky while being accompanied by lightning and storm was a myth by itself. In the eyes of the people of Midgard, it would seem as if Tae Ho had been the one to wield it.

Tae Ho activated his saga. Then lightning and gales were created in his hands. He could use it rather freely compared to when he used the Charge of the Warrior.

Babang!

He spread lightning in the air as a test. Although it wasn't that big, a loud sound exploded and white light shone.

The warriors that were checking their own sagas raised their heads at the sudden noise. The warriors who were looking from behind became overjoyed.

“Ohh! Thor!”

“Thor's warrior!”

Because thunder and lightning had to be Thor.

But compared to the reaction of the warriors there were some that refuted it immediately.

“He's not?! The warrior of Thor is me, Bracky?!”

“I'm Idun's warrior!”

Bracky and Tae Ho yelled at the same time. Bracky swung his hammer to create lightning as if telling them to see, and Tae Ho spread thunder once again to create the shape of a golden apple.

The warriors became dumbfounded looking at that lightning and the lightning with the shape of a golden apple that had been created repeatedly, but then cheered. They really were simple and bright, just like warriors of Valhalla should be.

“Don't waste strength on useless things and concentrate.” Siri, who couldn't keep watching them, said to Tae Ho. Cu Chulainn

also added some words.

‘How will you see lightning in the afternoon? Even if so, you will only get misunderstood as being Thor’s warrior.’

They had both said right words. Because of that, Tae Ho didn’t argue anymore and used the last Summoning Rock to call Rolo. As the warriors started to concentrate on them because of the gryphon that had suddenly appeared, the warrior of Idun took out the army flag and placed it on the saddle.

“Can we charge now?” Ingrid asked with a lukewarm expression.

Tae Ho discovered that the Summoning Rocks, which were in the pocket, were recharged, along with Heda’s reply and then smirked and nodded.

“Whenever you want.”

Tae Ho covered the Sword of the Winter Wolf with lightning. Bracky imitated him once again to cover his hammer in lightning and Ingrid, who was looking at the two of them, slowly unsheathed her sword. She said a phrase that would tie up the warriors that belonged to the different legions.

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

“For Asgard and the nine planets.”

The warriors of Valhalla said in one voice. They all charged towards the battlefield at the same time.

&

Kataron was a city built next to the big Olhen river, which was connected to the Kalic Sea.

Just like all the cities that were built next to rivers, it was good because they were spread widely but it was also easy to get invaded.

King Ivar marched his troop from south to north instead of surrounding it. This composition was to push back the dead ones

in the direction of the winter tree forest, which was thought to be the origin of the dead ones.

The intentions of King Ivar worked well. The dead ones that had lost their will couldn't become opponents for the knights. Although they were numerous, they weren't impeded at all because the warriors of Valhalla were in front of them. In addition, the place was like a hometown for the knights of Kataron so that they could use the structure of the city effectively.

The superior races, like the vampires and Stragos, appeared when the dead ones started to get focused and led the dead ones and fled to the winter tree forest.

Tae Ho flew in the sky while riding Rolo. He could clearly see how the group was progressing, as he was looking down from a high place.

'He's accustomed to leading an army.' Cu Chulainn praised King Ivar. Tae Ho nodded as if he agreed and then looked at the direction the dead ones were headed to, as if they were fleeing.

Just counting roughly, their number easily passed one thousand. Adding the number of the dead ones they had defeated in the city, it seemed like they would be two thousand. Although the number of the evacuees that had scattered was much bigger, it seemed like it would take quite a long time for Kataron to recover from this.

Tae Ho, who was looking at things from the distance, tilted his head. It was because he had felt a sense of incongruity.

Saying this was obvious, but it was the first time Tae Ho came to Midgard. Because of that, he had memorized the terrain near the Kalic Sea with the map.

The winter tree forest was certainly a forest that was next to Kataron. But there was actually a long distance between them, to the point that it could be realized just by looking at the map.

However, the forest was closer than he thought. It was at a

distance that could be reached in a moment, even without riding a horse.

Tae Ho wasn't the only one that felt that way. The soldiers of Kataron, who had gotten outside the city, also felt that something was strange.

They could see the forest beyond the dead ones. But the forest was too close. Originally, it should have been seen as the size of a fingernail, but it was the size of a thumb.

King Ivar opened his eyes abruptly. Ingrid, who was checking on Garmr's soul fragment alone on top of the flying ship, stood up.

Tae Ho realized it then.

The Unknown sword piece and the fragment of Gae Bolg that were in Tae Ho's hands vibrated at the same time.

It wasn't something comparable to the Kraken or the monster sharks.

The winter tree forest was approaching the city.

< Episode 22 – Saga (6) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 7: Saga (7)

A scene that broke common sense was always a shocking one.

The knights of King Ivar were all looking dumbfoundedly at the supernatural phenomenon.

The winter tree forest was charging towards them. They could see it more clearly as it got closer to them.

If individual trees were charging towards them it would have been a bit better. Although it wasn't common, there were moving trees called trents in Midgard.

But the march of the winter tree forest was different. It seemed like the entire forest was moving with one will. The intermingled roots tore the ground as they advanced. The movement resembled that of a wave. It would be good to call it the hail of the forest.

The dead ones that ran towards the vampires or the stragoses without thinking couldn't hide themselves in the forest. The winter tree forest stamped on the ones that were in front of them. The trees that were on the outer sides swung their branches to tear the dead ones and the roots crushed them.

The thorn tree that had no leaves tore pieces of flesh. King Ivar and his knights fell in a bigger shock when they saw the dead ones not have a chance to even scream. It seemed like common sense had crumbled once again.

The marching pace of the forest increased. The dead ones got crushed without making a sound and some of the other soldiers screamed instead of them. After all, the ones that had died were citizens of Kataron. It was painful having to kill them with their own hands but looking at how cruelly they were getting crushed was also painful.

King Ivar stood outside the city to look at the winter tree forest and then he grinded his teeth, gulping dry saliva. He was a king

and had to be the one to stay calm when everyone else lost their minds.

Will the winter tree forest attack the forest like this? If so, what did they have to do?

He erased the thought of fighting it head on first. No, in the first place he couldn't even think of fighting it.

They would retreat. He would flee and then try to do what he could.

Right then, Helga, who was next to him, yelled, "Father!"

When he looked in the direction she was pointing at, he saw that the soldiers that had chased the dead ones were about to be swallowed by the forest. Although they were fleeing with all their might, the forest was just too fast. In addition, the entire forest did not move with the same speed. The part chasing the soldiers was faster as if it had a will of its own.

King Ivar couldn't come up with a solution. He called himself a brave warrior but he couldn't do anything.

King Ivar opened his mouth however he could. He yelled with a split voice.

"Flee. Go to the city."

It was an order to give up on the soldiers. And that was a really clear order for a king. No one would be able to criticize him.

Just what could you do against a marching forest!

It was normal. It wasn't weird at all. It was an obvious order.

And this was it.

This was the difference between King Ivar and them.

"Ha, it's unavoidable."

Heimdal's warrior, Notung, smiled bitterly and said this. He looked at warrior Harabl, the warrior of Njord's legion, and

Harabal also laughed while cursing similarly.

A forest was charging.

The damned forest was about to gobble up the soldiers.

What did they have to do then?

The warriors of Valhalla charged at the same time. Bracky, who had started to run reflexively, looked at the warriors that had thought the same way as him and burst out of laughter.

There were few people that could enter Valhalla.

There were even less people that climbed to become inferior ranked, and the ones that reached the intermediate rank were really a minority.

You couldn't become an intermediate ranked warrior just with time. There was only one reason why they could climb to become intermediate ranked.

It was because they were worthy of that.

They were all heroes!

[Saga: The Kraken doesn't have any legs left]

[Saga: Crushing two guys with one blow]

[Saga: He's the son of a God]

[Saga: Doesn't get tired even after fighting for three consecutive nights]

The sagas were activated consecutively. Bracky laughed while looking at the charging forest. Notung passed over the soldiers of Kataron by taking a big leap. He swung his big axe and cut down the tree coming at him from the front.

Kwagagagagang!

An explosion occurred. The tree got crushed. Each warrior of Valhalla, that could be considered as a hero, swung their weapons like six crazy beasts.

That was another scene that defied common sense. The warriors of Valhalla were like breakwaters breaking the waves against the forest.

It was thoughtless and impossible. Even if they were warriors of Valhalla, they were really small existences compared to the forest.

However, they smiled and fought against the forest. They stopped the charge of the forest to a certain degree. The speed of the warriors breaking down the trees was faster than the speed that the trees gathering at.

King Ivar was really surprised and tumbled down. It wasn't much different for the others. They were just watching with absent-minded expressions.

Tae Ho laughed.

It was crazy no matter how he saw it. But those were the real warriors of Valhalla.

“Let's go Rolo!” Tae Ho ordered Rolo. Rolo fluttered his wings with a face that had become a mess. Tae Ho answered Rolo's soundless despair with his actions.

“Adenmaha!”

As he extended a summoning rock that Heda had recharged with magic, Adenmaha appeared in the air. She, who was enjoying a nap in the residence of Idun, looked at Tae Ho with drowsy eyes and then screamed.

‘Kyak?!’

Adenmaha's big body, which fell due to the gravity, crushed a part of the forest that the warriors were facing. Tae Ho pointed at that forest and ordered, “Adenmaha! Roll!”

‘Wa, what!?’

Adenmaha asked back with a stupid face but Tae Ho's orders were too simple and her geass was to ‘obey your master’. She

cursed as she got down and rolled towards the forest.

‘You are too much! Really!’

The forest was crushed. The warriors of Valhalla laughed more pleasantly and King Ivar put on an expression as if he didn’t know what to do. Helga collapsed unknowingly.

Siri, who was fighting inside the city, glanced at the situation too late. She closed her eyes at the supernatural phenomenon occurring in front of her eyes and dropped a thread of her rationality.

Siri charged towards the warriors of Valhalla and yelled, “Everyone, close your eyes!”

The warriors reflexively closed their eyes at the sound of her voice that was filled with urgency. They trusted each other so much that they even closed their eyes even though the enemy was right in front of them.

Siri kicked the ground and went to the front. She jumped over Adenmaha who was still rolling on the ground, and then activated her saga.

[Saga: She’s a beautiful and proud flower that bloomed alone in the battlefield]

A bright light emanated from Siri’s body. Rolo and Adenmaha, who didn’t close their eyes, looked at Siri. It wasn’t out of reflex, but the power of her saga.

King Ivar, his knights, and even Helga that was a girl looked at Siri with absent-minded faces. In addition, even the forest itself had stopped its charge. It was as if it was looking at Siri.

A saga that ignored everything else and made them focus on you.

Siri landed on the ground and yelled with a red face, “Tear it down!”

This was the opportunity as the forest had stopped. The warriors

of Valhalla simply just swung their weapons instead of asking what had happened. They easily slashed over the trees that didn't resist anymore.

Tae Ho could feel the forest's bewilderment.

It was an obvious thing. Who would think of facing a charging forest head on!

'Bastard master-I mean master-nim! Over here!'

Adenmaha called Tae Ho and he flew towards her with Rolo. She then transformed into a human and went behind Tae Ho.

"The objective is to stop the forest, right?"

Tae Ho grabbed her hands instead of answering her question. He explained the situation with the 'one that controls dragons' and amplified her strength.

"Ugh, really."

To only make her do hard work every day!

Adenmaha complained inwardly and then closed her eyes and started to concentrate. She opened her eyes abruptly when the warriors were about to get pushed back by the forest and yelled, "Power of the sea!"

There was no sea here. But they had the Olhen river that was connected to the sea.

When Adenmaha yelled, the Olhen river started to overflow. It charged as if saying, 'eye for an eye, tooth for a tooth'.

Kwagang!

The forest and the river clashed. Adenmaha leaned on Tae Ho's back and dropped her head, but the effects were enough. The part of the forest that was located opposite from the warriors of Valhalla crumbled down. The march was also being greatly restricted.

“Ohhh!”

The warriors of Valhalla were in admiration. Tae Ho grabbed Adenmaha's hands more tightly and said with an apologetic face, “Adenmaha, can I ask for a bit more?”

It was because the situation was like this.

Adenmaha put on a teary face but then jumped down from Rolo as if it was unavoidable. She transformed into a sea serpent again and then started rolling on the ground.

Tae Ho looked at the front again. Thanks to the warriors of Valhalla and Adenmaha, the forest had stopped charging for now but it wasn't the end yet. He glared at the forest with the ‘eyes of the dragon.’

The winter tree forest was no different from a huge creature. But there would be something controlling it, just like a queen bee or a queen ant.

“It's Garmr's soul fragment!”

Ingrid, that was flying on the ship, yelled behind them. She was holding Garmr's soul fragment at the front of the deck. The smoke that was trapped with the power of a God was pointing at the center of the forest.

Tae Ho thought of instantly digging to the center from the air. But at that moment, the winter tree forest started to pour attacks towards the flying pirate ship. Hundreds of branches covered the sky like arrows. The big trees that were mixed in between them were really threatening.

Countless branches got stuck in the floor of the flying ship. He would get crushed like the flying ship if he tried to carelessly approach it.

As it didn't allow to approach it from the sky he would have to open a path from the ground.

Ingrid jumped down the flying ship and landed on the ground. Tae Ho returned Rolo and made Adenmaha transform into a human. He then ran towards Siri.

[Saga: Wolf witch]

Siri had already seen through Tae Ho's thoughts the moment he made Rolo return. Tae Ho rode on her, that had become a golden wolf, and placed the frail Adenmaha in front of him. He activated his saga and gave Siri the strength of a Valkyrie.

“Protect Idun's warrior!”

Ingrid yelled and stood at the front. The other warriors of Valhalla also got close to Tae Ho. Adenmaha gathered the river water that didn't get drained and opened a path.

“Run!”

Siri and the warriors charged forward at the same time. They slashed down the branches coming from the sides and charged.

King Ivar and his knights also didn't stay still. They attacked the outer part of the forest to at least try to be of a little help. Although they couldn't cut down the branches like the warriors of Valhalla, they were still a lot of help. The winter tree forest couldn't solely concentrate on the warriors of Valhalla.

The forest shook greatly. It concentrated the trees to the inside of the forest.

The scene of the trees gathering was like a wall charging at them. However, the warriors of Valhalla just cut it down be it a tree or a wall.

“Go! Tae Ho!”

Bracky swung his hammer and fired the biggest lightning. The blue lightning annihilated the trees in front of him.

Siri ran and Tae Ho saw with the ‘eyes of the dragon’. Although the trees that were standing while covering him were the core, he

could still see with the ‘eyes of the dragon’. The ‘eyes of the dragon’ executed its ability to see through things.

It was an atrocious looking thorn tree. Its skin was red like blood.

Trees gathered from the sides and Siri increased her speed even more. Adenmaha opened her mouth while still having the shape of a human and breathed out an ice breath.

The trees in front of them froze and Tae Ho stabbed them with the Burst lance made with the ‘warrior’s equipment’. He activated Full Burst and broke down the gale and then generated a gale and pushed the remains away.

The thorn tree screamed. He could feel Garmr’s roar.

[Saga: The warrior’s equipment]

The Sword Piece transformed into the Sword of the winter wolf. Siri didn’t stop and Tae Ho swung his sword like that.

Kyaaaak!

The Sword of the winter wolf that was covered with lightning cut down the thorn tree in two. A bigger cry was heard from the thorn tree and blood started to flow out like a fountain.

“Oh Idun!”

Tae Ho yelled and released the power of the God towards the thorn tree. He didn’t repeat the same mistake he made and pressed it down. He grabbed Adenmaha who flinched tightly as if calming her down and waited for Ingrid.

“You did well Tae Ho!”

Ingrid added the power of Njord after arriving. The fragment of Garmr’s soul couldn’t endure it anymore as it was being pressed down by the power of two Gods. The thorn tree scattered to become blood and Garmr’s soul fragment, that was at the center, showed up.

Ingrid retrieved the soul fragment. At that moment the entire

forest trembled.

An evil aura surged to the sky and disappeared. The trees trembled violently but didn't move anymore after that.

Adenmaha dropped her body in Tae Ho's embrace and Ingrid let out a sigh of relief.

But it didn't end yet. Tae Ho spread his palm towards the floor. And then, the entire red aura that was in the forest surged to the sky. There was a bigger amount of runes than what the Kraken and the sea monsters had together.

A rain of runes poured down on Tae Ho and the warriors of Valhalla. Everyone excluding Adenmaha absorbed the runes plentifully.

'It's somewhat unfair.'

Tae Ho smirked while Adenmaha said that with a crying tone and then closed his eyes. Now that he had absorbed the runes, he should rest and enjoy victory.

It wasn't only Tae Ho but the others also thought like that. Ingrid wasn't an exception as she had to hold down two fragments of Garmr's soul.

That was why no one had noticed it yet.

That the existence that was observing them in Katren and in the island of king Sven had made his move.

"Kill them all."

While they were still drunk on victory. When their guards were at the lowest point in the battle.

Tyrant Bress.

He, who had been observing everything through the fomoires he had sent to Midgard.

The one who was waiting for the right moment showed up.

< Episode 22 – Saga (7) > End

Episode 22/Chapter 8: Saga (8)

The Tyrant Bress was an obstinate guy.

He started to hold a new grudge after losing Scathach.

He became enraged at the fact that Adenmaha had been taken from him.

But he didn't move hurriedly. He lowered himself and was patient.

The opportunity came faster than he thought. The warriors of Valhalla had appeared in Midgard. And Tae Ho was among them.

Asgard and Midgard were close, but far at the same time. Although it was certainly closer than Svartalfheim or Vanaheim, the existences of Asgard couldn't easily go down to Midgard.

When he grasped their exact location, the warriors of Valhalla had already cleared a case. But fortunately enough, they hadn't returned to Asgard, but remained for the next expedition.

The Tyrant Bress didn't move himself. As he had already lost Midak, rather than spending more underlings hastily, he chose to think of other methods while sitting on his throne.

Garmr's soul fragment.

...What the warriors of Valhalla were gathering.

However they weren't the only ones looking for it. The giants also desired Garmr's soul fragment.

Bress stayed patient this time as well. He chose to encourage another one, instead of speaking to the magician King Utgard Loki, who was impossible to negotiate fairly with.

He had plenty of subjects. Recently, Harad the giant of Strength, who was one of Utgard Loki's underlings, had died.

The giants also had ambition and honor. He had proposed a

request to the one who wanted to take the empty spot among the five fingers.

To become a soldier of himself and fight in Midgard.

Retrieving two soul fragments that not even Harad could retrieve wasn't a small achievement, so it wasn't impossible to become one of the five fingers.

There wasn't even a need to look for it.

The first giant agreed to the negotiation.

&

A rain of runes fell down from the sky. The warriors of Valhalla laughed and Bracky swung his hammer in joy.

Adenmaha complained. Siri told her to get off her with a joking tone. Valkyrie Ingrid stored away the soul fragment she had retrieved.

Tae Ho soothed Adenmaha. He got down from Siri's back and turned to look at Ingrid while laughing.

Ingrid, who felt his gaze, raised her head. Although she usually had a stiff expression, she was now showing a soft smile towards him.

Tae Ho also smiled towards her. Then the space above Tae Ho's head split up.

There was no sound. It offset the peculiar vibration that occurred when the rain of runes fell down from the sky.

A shadow.

When he realized that it had become dark it was already too late.

'Tae Ho!'

Cu Chulainn raised his voice first. At the same time, the Sword piece vibrated greatly. Tae Ho raised his head hurriedly and Ingrid did the same, but a beat late. Her eyes widened.

Bang!

A fist fell down. The really huge fist crushed Ingrid. The ground split up and the forest shook.

A loud sound was heard in consecution and the giant then landed on the ground. The giant, that was easily twenty meters tall, had the face of a snake. Then the giant, which was covering himself with the leather of a beast, raised his fist again.

[Balzak]

He could barely distinguish his name. When Tae Ho faced the blood-like name of the giant, he hurriedly turned his head. Ingrid's letters were still green. Although they were faint as if they were going to disappear at any time, they weren't white.

It was a perfect surprise attack. The reason why Balzak spent his one opportunity on Ingrid was simple.

She was a Valkyrie and had Garmr's soul fragment.

"Ingrid!" Harabal, the warrior of Njord's legion, yelled. At the same time, the time that had stopped started to flow normally again.

The giant released an invisible force. The forest shook greatly once again and started to move. It wasn't done by Garmr's soul fragment. It was done by the Fomoires, which had soon gathered.

Harabal ran towards Ingrid. Notung, who was next to him, ran alongside him and guarded him. The warriors of Valhalla started to face the Fomoires, which looked like beasts, that started to gather from the sides, and Bracky glared at Balzak.

At the same time, Balzak's eyes moved to another direction. One looked at Ingrid, and the other one quickly scanned the battlefield.

Balzak moved. He didn't forget the fact that he was a giant. He loosened the snake tail that was covering him and thrashed the ground. He executed an attack that seemed like it would sweep all

the warriors of Valhalla and the Fomoires and then surged to the air.

The shadow covered them once again. Harabal ran faster towards Ingrid and Bracky charged the ground. He swung his hammer towards Balzak without even having the time to gather thunder.

Kwagang!

A loud explosion was heard. But the thunder was lacking. It wasn't enough to push back Balzak, who was trying to land on the ground much harder. Balzak looked at the twitching Ingrid and Harabal, who was trying to cover her with his body. He swung his fist with enough strength to crush the both of them.

“No!” Notung yelled. Harabal threw himself over Ingrid and Bracky gathered thunder hurriedly. Then Siri charged the ground.

She moved.

‘Ugh, really!’

The only thing that could stop a huge existence was another huge existence. Tae Ho threw Adenmaha towards Balzak and she transformed into the form of a sea serpent. She clashed against Balzak, who was about to swing his fist towards the ground.

Kwagagang!

The sea serpent and the giant rolled on the ground. Although it wasn't a proper body slam, it was enough to break the posture of Balzak, who was in the air.

Notung opened his eyes abruptly and Bracky ended up laughing while still gathering thunder.

However, Tae Ho couldn't stay idle. As soon as she rode back on Siri, he extended a Summoning Rock.

‘Adenmaha!’

‘Be careful!’

Adenmaha left a warning instead of cursing and returned to Idun's residence. She had already spent a lot of strength against the winter tree forest. If he made her stay behind when she couldn't even raise a finger properly, she might be finished by the enraged Balzak. He had to summon her back immediately.

"Bracky!" Tae Ho called Bracky. Balzak, who let out a roar and rose from his place, was strong. Although he seemed weaker than the giant of Strength, Harad, that was the only thing he knew. He couldn't even grasp how strong he was.

He had to finish him quickly. Harabal carried Ingrid away quickly. Notung pushed away the Fomoires that had gathered and opened up a path.

Bracky swung his hammer once again and gathered thunder. The remaining three intermediate-ranked warriors gathered next to Bracky.

The forest shook once more. The trees flocked over the warriors, as if they would gulp them down, just like when it was being controlled by Garmr's soul fragment.

It wasn't an improvised attack. Just looking at the Fomoires, one could realize that it had been planned beforehand.

Balzak lifted his body. Tae Ho, who was riding on Siri, took out a Summoning Rock. It was the last Summoning Rock which had been charged by Heda that he could use to summon Rolo.

"Go!"

Siri took a big leap and bounced her hips. Tae Ho, who was already prepared, kicked Siri's back to jump even higher and called Rolo. Right at that moment, Cu Chulainn yelled, similar to a scream.

'Close your eyes! Resist it with the power of a God!'

Tae Ho reflexively closed his eyes. However, it only reached Tae Ho. Balzak emanated an explosive magic power towards Rolo, that

had appeared in the air.

They were evil eyes that had the strong power of a curse. Rolo became completely petrified and fell. Harabal and Notung, who were running while showing their backs were safe, but that wasn't the case for Bracky and the other warriors. They were unable to move from their glaring posture.

Balzak raised his feet. He tried to stamp down on Rolo, which was closest to him. Tae Ho hurriedly opened his eyes and then kicked in the air and at the same time, activated a Summoning Rock. He recalled Rolo with the breadth of a hair.

Bang!

Balzak stamped on the ground. The attack was so strong, it split the ground.

Bracky and the warriors who hadn't completely dispelled the petrifying effect fell to the ground. Siri also fell and rolled on the ground, as she was running with all her might. Harabal kept running and Notung turned back to join the fight.

Balzak looked at Tae Ho. He swung his right hand towards Tae Ho, who was trying to continue kicking the air.

It was sharp and fast. Tae Ho couldn't dodge his palm because he had concentrated on sending back Rolo. He suffered the attack, that was like a wall crashing towards him, and was sent flying to the ground.

“Tae Ho!”

Siri trembled and raised her body. Bracky, who had stood up while gritting his teeth, fired a thunderbolt towards Balzak's ankle. He let out a pained roar, but didn't fall down. It stamped down at Bracky's direction, as if trying to soothe his anger.

Bracky rolled to dodge the attack. However, two of the three warriors couldn't dodge it. They flew tens of meters when they were kicked by Balzak. Then trees started to gather in their

direction.

‘Tae Ho! Wake up! Tae Ho!’ Cu Chulainn yelled.

Tae Ho heard his voice. He felt dizzy but he hadn’t lost consciousness. He felt Idun’s blessing and tried to stand up. But it wasn’t easy. The attack of the giant wasn’t merely physical. The attacks of the giant held evil magic behind them, just like how intermediate-ranked warriors wielded the power of a God.

Siri bit the staggering Tae Ho. She hurriedly leapt towards him and Balzak’s tail swept the place Tae Ho was standing before. The head of a snake, which was at the end of the tail, chased after Siri stubbornly.

Siri made a decision calmly. She hurriedly shook her head, which was biting on Tae Ho, and threw him. When Tae Ho was rolling on the ground, Balzak’s tail bit Siri. She let out a pained scream, which came from the pain of having her whole body pierced, and struggled fiercely.

Siri’s golden fur became dyed in blood. A poison, which was appropriate to be called a curse, spread quickly. Siri couldn’t maintain the shape of a wolf anymore.

Balzak’s surprise attack was effective. The warriors of Valhalla couldn’t even attack Balzak and lost half of their forces.

Now safe, Notung started to breathe in and thought. There was no way to win like this. He would have to fight to save one more person.

Bracky also thought the same thing. He glanced towards Olmar, who belonged to Hedmod’s legion, while gripping his hammer.

Bracky and Notung let out a roar and charged towards Balzak. Olmar ran towards Siri and Tae Ho instead of following them.

“Thor!”

“Heimdall!”

Bracky and Notung yelled the names of their respective Gods and used the power of a God. Balzak tried to activate the Evil Eyes once more but reacted instantly. Instead of utilizing the petrify that wouldn't work, he took out the whip he was holding at his waist and swung it.

The forest was split. Bracky and Notung jumped at the exact moment to jump over the whip. Balzak's tail charged towards Notung, as if it had been waiting for them to jump up, but Notung had also been waiting for the same thing. He calmly swung his axe and attacked the tail that had the head of a snake.

The snake let out a scream and crouched down. Balzak also let out a painful scream and Bracky, who had already landed, approached Balzak like lightning.

Balzak hurriedly moved his feet. Bracky rolled on the ground to dodge the attack and leaped towards his feet and swung his hammer.

Babang!

A thunderbolt fell down on the knee of Balzak. In addition, this attack was executed with the full strength of Bracky.

Balzak, who had his knee crushed, let out a scream and fell down. Bracky rolled on the ground, as he couldn't land properly, and then stood up again and gripped his hammer tighter. But he was at a limit. The attack just now was meant to completely tear off one of his legs, rather than breaking his knee. It wouldn't be excessive to say that the attack was executed with all of his strength.

But Balzak's leg didn't get torn off. In addition, it was even recovering. The wound started to close, as if he was reversing time.

"This is crazy."

Bracky let out a curse and then the petrifying curse fell down on him. Bracky, who had used all his strength and the power of a God,

couldn't resist the curse. Balzak kicked the petrified Bracky with his remaining leg. Even if it was Bracky, who had a strong body, he couldn't stand up after this attack.

The speed at which Balzak's knee was recovering got faster.

Notung staggered and stood up, and Olmar ran while holding the unconscious Siri. Tae Ho spat blood and then breathed in.

'Flee. He isn't someone you can face currently.'

Cu Chulainn's words weren't wrong. However he, who had said those words, and Tae Ho himself knew the truth.

They couldn't flee. It wasn't because they couldn't give up on Garmr's soul fragment.

They couldn't leave Bracky and the other warriors, who had become a mess.

And most of all, there was no way Balzak would let go of them.

Cu Chulainn realized that this plot had been set up by the Tyrant Bress. Not having expected that he could lay a hand like this in Midgard was his carelessness.

He had some grudges against Tae Ho. Although he might not be able to catch the other warriors, he would catch Tae Ho however he could.

Tae Ho also thought the same. So he rather chose to take this situation in.

'If Notung takes Bracky and escapes...'

Tae Ho would buy time for them. He would take his attention so that everyone else could escape.

Tae Ho thought quickly. The situation was the worst right now.

He couldn't call Rolo anymore.

Although he still had a Summoning Rock left to summon Adenmaha, she couldn't fight anymore.

Using Gae Bolg, which had expended all of its strength to defeat the Kraken, was impossible.

Balzak stood up with good leg and then gripped the whip.

Tae Ho breathed out and then decided.

“Heda.”

He called her in a low voice. He felt like he gained strength with just that. Tae Ho smiled faintly and Cu Chulainn realized what he was about to do.

...What Ragnar had forbidden him to.

The usage of Erin’s power, saying that it was still too early for him.

‘Geas.’

The one that had planted the seed of the geas to Tae Ho was Cu Chulainn. Because of that, he gulped out a groan.

A geas was a two-edged sword. One had to take the risk of having a big restriction in order to obtain a strong power.

Tae Ho activated the seed of the geas. He had made the first geas after Erin got destroyed.

Balzak noticed the change. He hurriedly swung his whip as he felt danger instinctively.

Tae Ho moved his body and then activated the geas and kicked the air.

The whip swept the ground. Balzak’s surroundings had changed to become an open field, rather than a forest.

Cu Chulainn felt anxious. What had Tae Ho sworn? Did he have the power to defeat the giant in front of him in his hands?

And at some point, when Tae Ho kicked the air once again Cu Chulainn got to know what it was.

‘Tae Ho?!’

Tae Ho had certainly used the geas. However, Tae Ho's basic capabilities hadn't changed. There was only one thing that had changed.

The total amount of the power of a God.

Idun's strength, which covered Tae Ho's entire body!

Notung looked at Tae Ho. Even Olmar, who was running while carrying Siri, turned to look back.

It was a strong power of a God, which was difficult to feel in Midgard. It seemed like the power of a God was a few times greater than what he could usually use.

Cu Chulainn knew what geas Tae Ho had set up. Because of that he couldn't understand the current situation.

Tae Ho amplified the power of a God for a moment. However, he had instead put on the restriction of being unable to use the power of a God for fifteen days.

This thing wasn't a proper geas. A pledge for the geas had to be set and strength for life could be obtained, unless one went against that pledge.

Tae Ho's geas was a condition. It was a strength that worked temporarily and was an abnormal geas, since the restriction was already decided.

The warriors of Erin didn't use this kind of geas. Because for them, the geas was a means to improve their capabilities as warriors. What they needed was a strength to accompany them at any time.

But Tae Ho was different.

He thought differently. A temporary strength with a condition could also be useful for Tae Ho.

Because Tae Ho was a warrior of Valhalla before being a warrior of Erin.

What Tae Ho had wasn't only the geas!

...The reason he put a restriction in his power of a God.

It was the reason why he restricted it to only the strength of a God instead of what he would obtain through the geas.

Balzak looked at Tae Ho. Tae Ho also glared at him and kicked the air once. Instead of transforming into a hawk, he gathered all of the power of a God to one place.

What Ragnar had shown him.

He still couldn't catch up to him. But at least, he could watch in the same direction as him.

The strength of the warriors of Valhalla.

Their story that would remain as a legend, surpassing the anecdotes!

[Legend Ranked Saga: Idun's Warrior]

A blinding golden light emanated from Tae Ho's entire body.

< Episode 22 – Saga (8) > End

Episode 23/Chapter 1: Saga (1)

When Tae Ho defeated the kraken and the sea monsters he obtained a new slot for his saga.

However, he didn't use it and saved it.

Before going out to the battle to recapture Kataron, Tae Ho had obtained a new saga when the other warriors had also received one. However that wasn't obtained after using the new slot. It was a saga that was formed naturally just like what happened with the 'warrior that rides on valkyries'.

Idun's warrior.

It was the new saga Tae Ho obtained after relating with the geass. At the same time it was the warrior of Idun, Tae Ho's saga, that was made with the things that had happened after he entered to Valhalla as the base, and not the stories of the dragon knight Kalsted.

Tae Ho's geass was really abnormal. But that wasn't the only reason why the greatest warrior of Erin, Cuchulainn, was bewildered.

It would amplify the amount of power of a God temporarily but it wouldn't let you use it for 15 days after that.

He didn't think if that kind of geass could operate properly. Because if it operated properly that would also be a problem.

What would happen if the geass was forcefully activated every time he utilized the power of a God?

Cuchulainn's worries made sense. Because of that Tae Ho was also worried about the same problem.

How was it that he connected the saga and a geass?

How did he make it into a new saga?

The geass would activate every time he used 'Idun's warrior'.

He would create a new power by combining the powers of Asgard and Erin, the saga and the geass.

Golden light started to emanate from Tae Ho's body. The moment the light shone brightly, it took the attention of everyone and Tae Ho breathed out a long breath. He sensed the changes occurring in him.

The effects of 'Idun's warrior' didn't simply stop at making his body shine. His general battle strength had been greatly amplified. He could also handle more power freely.

Tae Ho closed his eyes for a moment. He could feel Idun, and Heda's blessing that remained on his lips cleared his head.

'My warrior, Tae Ho.'

He could hear Idun's voice. Tae Ho smiled faintly and then opened his eyes and glared at his enemy.

He was using this saga for the first time.

He didn't know exactly for how long he could maintain it or how strong it was.

Yet Tae Ho knew.

He could do it.

He was able to do it.

The sharp senses that awakened every time he stood at the turning point of victory and defeat told him that. It told him the path.

Let's go.

Tae Ho told to himself and kicked the ground. And then, everything that had stopped returned to normal.

Kwagak!

Balzak pulled on a tree that was near him and threw it. Tae Ho looked at that thing that was flying like an arrow. He didn't dodge

it and ran straight towards it. The sharply attuned senses were telling him the path and the huge tree passed next to Tae Ho and got stuck in the ground.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Balzak fired more trees in consecution. However not even one hit him. The trees that got stuck or crashed in the ground exploded. Fragments of trees spread behind Tae Ho.

The distance kept getting shorter. Tae Ho thought while charging towards Balzak.

He thought of the most effective way of battle to face the enemy that was injured in front of him.

The same strategy he used in the 6th selection of the national team.

‘Keep attacking the same spot!’

Tae Ho increased his speed by a notch. It was only for a moment but Balzak lost track of Tae Ho. Tae Ho, who moved to Balzak’s side along the traces of the golden light, could feel Balzak’s gaze. At that moment, he changed the direction of his charge that was like a thunderbolt and leaped up. He kicked the air in consecution and reached the place he had set up as his objective in an instant.

Balzak’s knee was still recovering.

Balzak couldn’t react to the sudden changes in Tae Ho’s movement. The Burst lance appeared in Tae Ho’s hands and he stabbed it towards Balzak’s knee without hesitation.

It was an attack with all his weight behind it. The Burst lance was embedded deep in the wound, and Balzak struggled in the terrible pain.

However Tae Ho’s attacks hadn’t ended yet. Even while Balzak was struggling, Tae Ho grabbed the lance tighter and added the power of a God into it.

‘Full burst!’

Bang!

The wound exploded. The knee, which was half broken thanks to Bracky’s attack, couldn’t endure it anymore. The bones turned to dust and the muscles got cut off. He couldn’t sustain his leg anymore with just torn skin.

Balzak screamed once again. At the same time, the torn off leg fell to the ground. Tae Ho used the moment red blood started to flow out to create some distance between them by kicking the air. Cuchulainn warned him.

‘Block!’

The whip Balzak had swung randomly charged towards Tae Ho like a snake that was alive. It was the power of the magic that was filled with malice.

It was impossible to dodge the whip now that he had already changed directions once in the air. Because of that Cuchulainn had ordered him to block it however he could.

Tae Ho thought that Cuchulainn’s decision was right. However, he didn’t cover himself with the power of a God like a barrier. he didn’t fear the malice that he felt in his back.

Because Tae Ho wasn’t alone.

Tae Ho wasn’t the only one fighting!

[Saga: I am their shield]

Notung looked at Tae Ho. And he didn’t stand far to observe him anymore. He appeared behind Tae Ho the moment he activated his saga to cross space. He raised his shield to block Balzak’s attack.

The shield broke. However, Notung didn’t. He sealed Balzak’s malice with the power of Heimdal and then laughed and sat on the ground.

Tae Ho landed. A huge harpoon flew from far away and hit

Balzak, that only had his upper body raised. It was Harabal, whom had entrusted Ingrid and king Ivar to the warriors of Kataron.

The harpoon that had the power of Njord behind it pierced through Balzak's malice. Balzak, that had his shoulder pierced by the harpoon, ground his teeth and glared at Harabal. He tried to befall a strong curse on Harabal to the point he wasn't even able to breathe now that he had spent some strength to execute the attack he had done.

Harabal received Balzak's eyes and laughed like a man. He didn't struggle to dodge the curse or block it.

He was the same as Tae Ho.

He also knew.

That the one that had returned wasn't only him.

[Saga: He's the son of a God that has returned]

"Thoo~rrr!"

Bracky, who had received a fatal wound, let out a roar and stood up. It was Bracky's saga that returned his body to the best state once a day.

He made a decision as soon as he saw Balzak and Tae Ho. No, rather than having judged it, his genius-like senses had activated on its own.

"Tae Ho!"

Bracky yelled and swung his hammer. He released all the strength he had once again.

[Saga: Thunder enters his hammer]

Lightning that was bigger and stronger than the ones he had made until now fell down the sky. But it wasn't towards Balzak. Bracky's hammer was pointing at Tae Ho.

'You receive it now.'

He felt like he could hear Bracky's voice. Tae Ho extended his hands towards the lightning falling down at him.

[Saga: The one that controls lightning and gale]

Bracky's lightning didn't harm Tae Ho and it rather remained in his hands. It combined with the lightning Tae Ho had created and became a bigger and stronger lightning bolt.

Tae Ho swung his hands. He threw the lightning that had the power of Thor behind it towards him.

Balzak hurriedly turned his eyes. He released all the magic he had gathered to curse Harabal. He blocked the lightning falling down on him with an invisible wall.

Kwagang!

A loud explosion erupted. It was the sound made by the lightning that exploded when it collided with the wall. However, the lightning that was covered with Thor's power, didn't completely disappear. Balzak blocked the lightning while dripping cold sweat and Tae Ho added more strength towards the lightning.

It was a close fight. Just like Tae Ho added more strength to the lightning, Balzak also added more strength to his evil eyes.

Bracky let out a curse while panting and raised his head unconsciously. That was the same for Notung and Harabal.

[Saga: She's a beautiful and proud flower that bloomed on the battlefield]

Siri, who was being carried by Olmar, breathed roughly and activated the power of her saga. Olmar also lowered his head to look at Siri. It was the same for king Ivar and the warriors that were uneasy looking at the breathtaking battle of the warriors and the giant.

Balzak also turned his eyes. At that moment, the magic of the eyes that lost their objective broke. The lightning that had the

power of Thor behind it hit Balzak's chest!

Balzak couldn't even scream. No, the thunder erased Balzak's scream.

His chest exploded, it got torn and burnt. A burning smell was felt with the smell of blood.

However, Balzak didn't die. White smoke surged from Balzak's chest.

He was using all his remaining magic power to heal the wound. And actually, his regenerative power was greatly amplified as the wound was closing quickly.

Notung pondered some more. He had to pour more attacks before he could completely recover — faster than what he could recover, to the point where he couldn't even recover.

Harabal also thought the same. And Olmar.

Tae Ho charged the ground and charged towards him. And when Siri saw his back she somehow knew what Tae Ho was going to do now.

Something more lethal than consecutive attacks.

Balzak threw dirt, trees, boulders towards Tae Ho, whatever he could grab. Those things that were thrown with his strength were really threatening.

Tae Ho focused the power of a God to one spot. But he still didn't add any to his defenses. After passing through the rain of attacks he closed the distance between him and Balzak in an instant.

Balzak looked at Tae Ho. He was barehanded. He didn't even grab the Unknown sword piece that had only the hilt or use his saga to make some equipment.

What? Just what is he going to do?

Balzak swung his arm. But Tae Ho dodged it this time too. He rather rode his arm and extended his arm towards Balzak.

Balzak was strong. His regenerative power that was amplified with all the magic power he had was at a marvelous level. Although only mere seconds had passed, close to half of his wound had closed.

That was why Tae Ho was satisfied. He used all his strength just like Balzak did. He amplified Balzak's regenerative strength with Idun's power.

Golden light shone on the place Tae Ho's hands touched and the wound closed in an instant. But it didn't end with just that. The regeneration rather started to ruin his body. It didn't stop at curing his body but it destroyed it.

A bigger wound remained in Balzak's chest, that seemed to have returned to normal. No, it was hard to even call it a wound. His body itself was breaking down.

Balzak couldn't understand the current situation. So instead of stopping his regeneration he chose to pour more magic power into it. And obviously enough, the crumbling rate increased.

Cuchulainn was really impressed. Tae Ho went for the next action. He threw himself towards the huge heart that could be seen between the broken chest of Balzak. After he stabbed him with the Burst lance, he released all of Idun's strength he had remaining.

There was a shiny light. It was a beautiful golden light that made you forget about the loud sound.

Balzak fell along with his last cry. The winter tree forest shook when the giant fell and the fomoires that were as shrewd as their owner fled quickly. The Tyrant Bress, that was looking at the battlefield through the eyes of the fomoires, clenched his fists and roared.

“Thor.”

One of the warriors of Kataron that had witnessed the fight that would only appear in mythologies said casually.

Because he saw a lightning that defeated the giant.

The other warriors also said the same word. And then, the small mumble became a big cheer.

“Thor!”

“Thor!”

“God of thunder!”

But that yell was soon refuted back. And the first one was none other than Thor’s warrior.

“Glory to the warrior of Idun.” Bracky said. He hit his chest twice and expressed his manners. He looked at Idun’s warrior that was standing on top of the giant.

It was the same for the other warriors. They looked at the golden light covering Tae Ho that was starting to dissipate and hit their chests. They praised his accomplishments while calling the name of Idun.

“Oh Idun.”

Helga said while gathering her hands. Valkyrie Ingrid told her thoughts to king Ivar with a frail voice and then he raised his sword and yelled.

“For Idun! For Idun’s warrior! For the great warriors of Valhalla!”

It was the initiation of the king. The warriors of Kataron got perplexed but then remembered the golden light. They also raised their voices like the king.

“For Idun!”

“For Idun’s warrior!”

As the warriors that were close to a thousand yelled, that sound was like a storm of thunder. They clearly remembered the feat the one that received Idun’s blessing accomplished. They engraved a

new legend in their hearts.

[Synchro rate: 39%]

The runes that surged up from Balzak's corpse became rain and poured down. More than twenty attributes of runes entered Tae Ho's body.

'You did well.'

Cuchulainn praised him shortly. It was simple but that wasn't to disparage Tae Ho's feat, it was because he had really done well. He was so impressed that he couldn't think of any other words.

Tae Ho closed his eyes. He released 'Idun's warrior' and the restriction of the geass started. He could feel the power of a God disappear quickly.

Cuchulainn decided to talk about the geass slowly at a later time. What a warrior that had accomplished a great feat needed wasn't a scolding but plenty of rest and praise.

But Tae Ho let out a sigh filled with relief and exhaustion while standing on top of Balzak instead of fainting. He really wanted to faint but even though the power of a God had disappeared, Idun's blessing was still in good shape. No, it wasn't only that. Although it may have been just his feeling, he felt like Idun's blessing had become stronger.

"We won."

Tae Ho said shortly and then turned to the direction where king Ivar and the warriors of Kataron were claiming and cheering Idun's name and then raised his fist.

"For Idun."

And for Heda.

Tae Ho made a smile unconsciously and sat on the ground. Although he couldn't faint, he made himself comfortable and closed his eyes.

&

Time passed quickly. Several hours passed after the fight with the giant.

The warriors of Valhalla decided to take a rest in the castle of Kataron after finishing their search. Even though all of them were wounded, they took turns to guard in case fomoires appeared.

And how much more had passed?

Tae Ho, that was sleeping in a really comfortable position in a bed king Ivar had given him, raised his head. It was because Ingrid had appeared after opening the door.

“Ingrid?”

The one that received the biggest wound in his group was none other than Ingrid. Looking that she was walking around like that, was she already recovered?

She answered with the same business-like expression as always when Tae Ho called for her.

“Warrior Tae Ho, it’s a meeting.”

Meeting.

And then Tae Ho realized. That he was in a dream right now.

The walls and floor made of stone disappeared and wide plains appeared. An open sky faced Tae Ho instead of the closed room.

“Hello again?”

Tae Ho smiled at the greeting from the imitating Heda, and Idun appeared where Ingrid was standing and looked at her warrior while smiling brightly.

The second meeting with the Goddess started. There would be a huge commotion if the warriors of Valhalla knew of this.

< Episode 23 – Idun’s warrior (1) > End

Episode 23/Chapter 2: Saga (2)

Idun was graceful and beautiful as usual. She extended her arms and put on a warm smile filled with affection. Although he couldn't see her face well because of the light he could still know that. No, he could feel it.

Idun, spoke gently as she let out a sigh of relief and said, "My warrior Tae Ho. It's nice to see you so healthy."

"I heard about the battle from Adenmaha. And saw it myself from the middle."

"You saw it yourself?"

Idun nodded as Tae Ho unconsciously asked in return.

"Right, Tae Ho. It's because of that marvelous strength you used. Didn't you also hear my voice?"

Mythology ranked saga, Idun's warrior.

He felt like he could know. The voice he heard in the middle of the battle wasn't a hallucination.

"Yes, I heard. I also felt your power."

"Right, I also felt you Tae Ho."

It was beyond simply transmitting power. The abundant power of a God had made that possible.

"Are Adenmaha and Rolo okay?" Tae Ho asked hurriedly as if he just remembered. He was worried about Adenmaha that returned completely exhausted but was also worried about Rolo that had returned while being completely petrified. Adenmaha was a strong sea serpent and a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann but Rolo was just a gryphon.

But of course, he wasn't an ordinary one. It had a head so good to the point it made you think that it was an intellectual animal and also had a physical body that far surpassed the normal gryphons.

Yet, he couldn't help but be worried.

Idun slightly dropped his shoulders at Tae Ho's question and said softly as if telling him to calm down.

"Adenmaha was so exhausted she would need to rest for a few days. But don't worry as she isn't greatly hurt. Rolo also suffered a bit of injury from the fall."

It didn't seem like she was lying to comfort him. Tae Ho then dropped his shoulders as if he had relaxed.

"I'm glad."

"Right, it is. Also....Adenmaha is a really nice girl. She worries about you a lot."

"She's a good lady."

Although she snorted or acted spoiled in front of him, she still did her best for Tae Ho at all times.

'I feel sorry for her.'

He had treated her too roughly recently. He thought about giving her a small gift and thanking words the next time he met her.

While Tae Ho was still thinking about Adenmaha, Idun just looked at him without saying anything. Her eyes were filled with affection and worry.

"My warrior Tae Ho. I saw the strength you showed in the battle. It was a new strength created by.....combining the strength of Asgard and Erin. Ragnar was also impressed."

Idun caressed Tae Ho's cheeks and said. Tae Ho was bewildered at her suddenly touching his cheek but then concentrated on her words.

"Ragnar did?"

"Yeah, I was also surprised."

The geass Tae Ho had used was close to pushing it. No one from

Erin used a geass like Tae Ho did. No, they couldn't in the first place.

The reason it worked for him was simple.

It was because the myth rank saga 'Idun's warrior' was a combination of his saga and the geass. It was the result of combining two strengths.

'Perhaps it may be because Tae Ho didn't belong to Asgard nor Erin.'

Those were the words Ragnar had said after hearing about 'Idun's warrior'. And Idun also thought that might have been the case.

He was able to handle the two strengths harmoniously as he didn't belong to either side. And they had a special spot just like Ragnar had said previously.

The reason why Tae Ho came to Valhalla wasn't simply coincidence but there may have been another reason behind it. His fate may be connected with the thread of fate made by the three sisters.

Idun shook her head. It wasn't that she denied the thought she had. Because whether it was fate or coincidence that he entered Idun's legion, he was still led to it. Tae Ho was the most precious warrior for Idun.

Idun organized her thoughts by taking a breath and spoke to Tae Ho again.

"It was certainly a surprising power. But the price it comes with is also big. Later on Cuchulainn or Ragnar will tell you in more detail, but it will be better not to use it that frequently."

The restriction of Tae Ho's geass was limited. Using a normal geass as an example, it was secured so that you would get punished after breaking your pledge. So although it had gotten outside the grasp of being a normal geass, there was no way it would only

function well.

In addition, the price of not being able to use the power of a God for fifteen days wasn't light.

Tae Ho was a warrior. That meant that he was someone that had to fight and would get deployed to the battlefield at any time. Decreasing their forces by fifteen days wasn't something they could do easily.

But of course, as the price was high as the effects he could obtain through 'Idun's warrior' was also big.

He could defeat a strong opponent because he used 'Idun's warrior'.

'Idun's warrior' was a double-edged sword. And the performance of these kinds of weapons changed depending on the user.

Adequate techniques at adequate times.

Tae Ho remembered a phrase he used to hear when he was a pro gamer and nodded heavily.

"Yes, I will take it into account."

"Right, I believe in you."

Idun took off her hands from Tae Ho's cheeks and then continued speaking with a worried tone.

"I investigated about the Tyrant Bress. He's a really stubborn guy. It would seem like he won't show himself but....There's a possibility he may keep attacking you."

In Bress's position, he had worked for nothing twice. In addition, the resentment and rage Bress felt towards Tae Ho was bigger than he had imagined.

"It won't be easy for a giant of Jotunheim to appear like before. Ragnar said that Bress must have spent quite a big force for this so he won't launch an attack immediately. Also....Valhalla won't also stay still. As Bress is also a big enemy of Asgard, we are planning to

track him down in this opportunity.

Bress showed the tail he was hiding to attack Tae Ho. In addition, Midgard was a special land for Asgard. You wouldn't know if he had acted in Svartalfheim but since the fomiores appeared in the middle of Midgard, Asgard wouldn't forgive his actions.

Even if they couldn't find Bress immediately it would still have some effect. Because he would be hiding all the time. He wouldn't even have the courage to touch Tae Ho.

“Only.... there's a high probability for the giants to show interest in Midgard because of what happened. That's why reinforcements will be sent from Valhalla.”

“Reinforcements?”

“Right, as we can't send a big army to Midgard we decided to send an additional Valkyrie and some veteran warriors. You will be able to meet them in about two days.”

It seemed like not even Idun knew exactly who they were going to be since she didn't mention any names.

‘It isn't Heda.’

Then will it be Rasgrid or Reginleif? Or Gandur.

Or perhaps a completely new Valkyrie.

When Tae Ho was concentrating on the Valkyries rather than the warriors. Idun put on a gentle smile and changed subjects to bring out a joyous story.

“My warrior Tae Ho, you have been working hard in Midgard. My influence in the mortal world has multiplied by a few times.”

“Already?”

Tae Ho asked back reflexively. He was working hard but it hadn't even been ten days.

Even if the reaction was fast, it was too fast.

Idun flinched at Tae Ho's question and then checked her surroundings and approached Tae Ho. As if whispering to him, she said in a low voice, "Um....It's embarrassing to say this but I will tell you just because it's you. In the first place, my influence is too small so it's easy to notice it even if it increases by a bit."

Tae Ho still couldn't see properly because of the light but he was certain. Idun's cheeks and ears were red due to embarrassment. He didn't know if he could say this to a Goddess but her uneasy side was just too cute.

"I will work harder."

Idun put on a complicated smile when Tae Ho spoke but then nodded.

"Thank you. But still you should rest at times. I'm worried about what kind of reward I should give you if you raise that many achievements. Do you know how long I have been thinking before you came here? But of course, it was a really fun thinking."

The mounting set was already coming to an end too.

Tae Ho smirked at her mumbling that seemed to be a complaint and then expressed his manners a bit more excessively.

"I will receive it with a happy heart regardless of what it is."

"It's more burdensome if you speak like that."

"I believe that you will pick it well."

Idun giggled at Tae Ho's answer and then put on a serious expression.

"But Tae Ho, my warrior, I realized something when watching your fight directly."

"You realized something?"

"Yeah, you called Heda's name a lot."

"Uh....."

He did do that a lot. Because he got strength whenever he called out her name.

As Tae Ho dodged her eyes and dimmed her words Idun opened her eyes sharply and then spoke while imitating Heda.

“So you really did. My warrior Tae Ho doesn’t call my name but calls Heda’s name when he’s in danger to gain strength. So that was the reason.”

“Id, Idun-nim?”

“I’m joking. A joke.”

“But your eyes are scary.”

Idun just smiled evilly at Tae Ho pointing that out and then crossed her arms and said.

“Well, I don’t actually care but Heda was really satisfied. That’s enough. Isn’t that like that for you too? Am I wrong?”

Just what answer did he have to give right now?

But fortunately Idun didn’t tease him too much.

“It’s really a joke so don’t worry. Whoever you call, it’s enough for me if that gives you strength.”

The important thing was that Tae Ho had returned safely.

Idun spoke with a gentle voice and then changed subjects.

“You absorbed quite a lot of attribute runes this time. Ragnar said that you should expect classes soon since he’s going to start a new lesson.”

The amount of attribute runes Tae Ho had gathered until now amounted to thirty.

The conditions to become a superior ranked warrior wasn’t only the mythology ranked saga so it was now time to start an earnest class about attributes.

As Tae Ho nodded Idun raised her head to look at the sky.

“My precious warrior Tae Ho, it’s unfortunate but it seems like it’s already time to return.”

Happy times always passed quickly.

Tae Ho hit his chest lightly and lowered his posture to express his etiquette and Idun placed her lips on his forehead and blessed him.

“Let my blessing accompany you.”

A faint and warm golden light covered Tae Ho.

&

Tae Ho opened his eyes in a good mood. It seemed like it was thanks to Idun’s blessing that his body felt refreshed just like when you just took a bath.

‘You woke up? It’s already sunset, Princess Helga came four times to see if you were awake.’ Cuchulainn said immediately. When he looked out the window the sun was really setting. It seemed like he had slept for quite a long time after the meeting had ended.

Tae Ho thought about Helga for a moment. As the princess of Kataron, she was a beauty and in addition held a really good will towards Idun. Because of that she was the strongest candidate to become the most important existence in creating the national religion in Kataron.

‘It seems like the latter is more important than the former.’

“Ey, how can that be? Before that, why did she come?”

‘I don’t know exactly but it seems like it’s because of the banquet. Because the warriors of Valhalla that were supposed to be stars were all injured so they couldn’t celebrate victory properly. She would probably speak about the plague and how they got rid of it at the celebratory banquet.’

It was an understandable reasoning. Actually, excluding Bracky, that had completely recovered through the effects of his saga, and

Harabal that only suffered minor injuries all the other warriors were lying on the bed.

“Is Captain Siri fine...?”

‘Don’t worry. She already came once when you were sleeping. Although she did seem a bit dispirited it seems like she’s fine. She rather looked prettier than normal.’

Tae Ho thought of another thing instead of asking how being safe and having become prettier was related.

‘Is it the effects of a new saga?’

Siri’s new saga, which even made the enemies turn to look at her.

Bracky’s saga was like that too and all the new sagas that were created in Midgard seemed to be quite useful.

“Ah, you woke up.”

Helga entered the room at that time. She, who was wearing a blue dress instead of armor, looked like a princess from a fairytale.

‘She really is a princess. A royal princess.’

Cuchulainn spoke as if he had read Tae Ho’s thoughts and then Helga started to speak. It was related to the celebratory banquet just like Cuchulainn had expected.

“Then I will be waiting for you.”

Helga expressed her manners gracefully and left the room. As it was a small kingdom to begin with, no one had followed her back. Tae Ho washed himself with the warm water that was brought by an apprentice female knight and then went to the banquet Helga had told him about.

“Idun’s warrior!”

“Idun’s warrior!”

As soon as he entered the banquet hall, the warriors raised their cups and yelled. After calmly looking at the place he didn’t only see

Bracky and Harabal but also saw Siri, Notung, etc seated in the seats of honor.

Tae Ho wasn't someone to neglect them, as were calling out Idun's name. He was about to wave his hand widely and answer.

But it was at that moment. Tae Ho unconsciously turned his eyes. He didn't wave his hand widely, he didn't even do it properly.

That was because something other than that had caught his attention. In addition, the Unknown sword piece that was hanging in his waist had started to vibrate.

'Why did that appear here?' Cuchulainn spoke in a bewildered voice as if he were reading Tae Ho's thoughts out loud.

Tae Ho's eyes landed on it. Something that was well adorned in the middle of the banquet.

Rainbow colored letters entered Tae Ho's eyes.

< Episode 23 – Idun's warrior (2) > End

Episode 23/Chapter 3: Saga (3)

The castle of Kataron was a simple building built with rocks and trees. However, only the center of the hall was different from the other structures.

A tree surged in the middle of the hall. It wasn't a dead stump but a tree that was alive. In addition, the surprising thing was the shape of that tree.

The tree that was rooted solidly on the ground started to split into three starting from the height of an adult human.

It was a really big and flashy sword. Taking into account the part that was stuck, the sword seemed to be about 1.5 meters long and was also red in color, and the tree that wasn't only one-colored had started degrading the closer it was to the hilt.

The black guard drew a clear cross shape along the blade and there was a big red jewel carved in the pommel at the tip of the hilt.

There were empty spaces in the tree so you could clearly see the shape of the sword but it had such a marvelous structure that if you wanted to pull out the sword, the tree might disturb you.

As Tae Ho's eyes gathered on the sword, King Ivar put on a satisfied expression and the warriors that were already in the hall started laughing.

Bracky raised his cup of beer and said, "He certainly looks at that sword first. It really is eye-catching, right? King Ivar said that it was a precious and peculiar sword that had great magic power. It may be true as Ingrid didn't refute him and just nodded. But unfortunately, it's stuck like that in the tree. In addition, it's impossible to cut down the tree to take it out. I stamped it with my axe to test it but it was true. The blade didn't even get stuck in it. Based on the words of King Ivar, the tree would open up on its own

to the one that has the rights, but it didn't react to us at all. That's why we made a bet if you were able to....is it opening?"

Bracky, who was voicing his long explanation, put on a surprised face and blinked. It was the same for the other warriors.. King Ivar stood up from his seat and gulped some air.

The tree was opening up just like Bracky had said. The tree that was twisted up started to loosen up on its own and as it spread out, and the lodged blade completely showed up.

[It embraces a fragment of Gae Bolg]

[Liberatus]

The rainbow-colored letters were really clear. In addition, the description really bothered him. Was Gae Bolg's fragment embedded in a part of that sword?

Tae Ho slowly approached the sword and extended his hand. And then, the jewel in the pommel started to shine brightly as if telling him to pull it out quickly.

King Ivar, who had just seen the sword stuck in the tree, gulped dry saliva several times. Helga's eyes shone, and the warriors of Kataron waited for the moment for the sword to be pulled out.

'Don't stop and pull it out quickly.'

Cuchulainn urged while everyone else was nervous. Tae Ho was putting on a serious expression to match the atmosphere and then grabbed the grip of the sword after smiling.

The sword was lightly pulled out.

King Ivar let out an exclamation after looking at the sword that seemed to be white.

The reactions of the warriors of Valhalla were all different. There were some that exclaimed while cursing and some were putting on teary faces.

The reason was simple.

It was because Siri, who was putting on a triumphant expression, extended her hands to all of them.

The warriors that seemed to have bet if Tae Ho would be able to pull it out or not took out some items and handed it to Siri. Looking at the situation, it seemed like only Siri had betted on Tae Ho.

Tae Ho laughed in spite of himself at that vivid look and then focused on the sword again. You could tell that it was good even at first glance but he couldn't use it like this.

'Place the fragment of Gae Bolg on it.' Cuchulainn said. Tae Ho took out the piece of Gae Bolg from Unnir and placed it near the sword. And then, something surprising happened once again.

The sheath of Liberatus split in two. It didn't break like a part of a machine but it split up softly as if only the center part had gotten liquefied. And as expected, a part of a white spear appeared from that split area.

"Ohh."

"Ohhhh!"

The warriors of Kataron raised their voices as if they had seen something really marvelous. And that yell reached a peak when the fragments of Gae Bolg assembled themselves.

It was surprising enough for the sword that was trapped for a long time to be unsealed, but for it to have a part of another equipment in it was another thing. In addition, the one that had unsealed it already had the other fragments.

What had happened could become a story with just this. The wandering minstrels that followed King Ivar and made up stories and songs started to write something hurriedly. It was to clearly remember the scene they had seen today.

[The incomplete Gae Bolg (3/5)]

As three of the five fragments gathered, it became longer than an average sword. In addition, the strength from Gae Bolg was different. It felt like the enraged beast had calmed down.

‘Good. The flow of magic power became more stable because you obtained the handle. It will be more helpful in handling Gae Bolg.’

It was just like he had said. Until now, the usage of Gae Bolg was like barely hanging on the back of a riding beast. But now, he would be able to ride on it with quite a stable posture.

‘To even compare the usage of a weapon with riding. That’s so like you, it made me speechless.’

Tae Ho just listened to Cuchulainn’s words with one ear and then put back Gae Bolg in Unnir. It was because he didn’t only have business with Gae Bolg.

“Liberatus.”

Tae Ho called the name of the sword in a low voice. After taking out the fragment of Gae Bolg, the color of the letters changed but it was still white gold. It seemed like the sword itself was a special weapon.

‘I feel a strong seal from it. It’s not something that could be made by a normal blacksmith or magician.’

Even Cuchulainn couldn’t feel Gae Bolg before standing right in front of it.

Tae Ho looked at Liberatus with the ‘eyes of the dragon’. Just like Cuchulainn said, it was a sword that had a marvelous strength and had the power to seal.

‘It will be quite useful.’

He thought of several methods in his head. They were methods that would bewilder Cuchulainn if he heard them but the important thing was that it was useful.

Tae Ho nodded and also put Liberatus inside of Unnir. As it was

all a natural action, everyone just looked still at him.

‘This, your stealing skills are really natural.’

As Cuchulainn criticized him, Tae Ho raised his head and looked at King Ivar. But fortunately he had an impressed expression again.

“I’m deeply impressed. Mr. Paul’s words were right.”

Grief appeared in the eyes of King Ivar. As Tae Ho just stayed still instead of asking, King Ivar got a hold of himself and said hurriedly, “Mr. Paul.....No, father Paul is the person that built Kataron along with Grim. He was a magician with marvelous powers but he just set up this city and then left after leaving behind this red sword. He just said that someone righteous would be able to retrieve it.”

‘Ask him if that Paul was the one that made the sword.’

“Is Paul the one that made this sword?”

The one that listened to Cuchulainn’s request wasn’t Tae Ho but Bracky. There was no way he had heard Cuchulainn’s words, it was purely curiousness.

King Ivar nodded immediately.

“He was a really skilled person. If he didn’t leave and instead stayed with us, Kataron would be controlling all of Kalic Sea.”

Looking that he emphasized those words, it seemed like he had thought about it frequently.

‘Paul..... It just feels like a fake name. Having hidden the fragment of Gae Bolg with the sword is also suspicious. He may be a survivor of Erin.’

Someone righteous will someday take the sword with his hands.

The words he had left behind also weren’t normal. It was hard to think that he left it saying that someone that possessed the fragments of Gae Bolg would appear.

“Did he leave? You don’t know where he lives?”

Bracky also scratched the itchy part. King Ivar put on a regretful expression and nodded.

“I have searched a few times but couldn’t find him. It has already been twenty years since he left Kataron.”

The magician and blacksmith that may be survivors of Erin.

Tae Ho was also interested in it but it wasn’t something he could intervene in. Tae Ho approached King Ivar to solve the ownership rights.

“King Ivar, will you receive this for the sword?”

What Tae Ho took out wasn’t only the golden bar of Valhalla. It was a sculpture of Idun that Ragnar had made out of boredom. It was a small sculpture that was a big than his palms, but the strength it held wasn’t small. It was made with holy ash tree and was blessed by Idun directly after Tae Ho had requested it from her.

‘It’s also good to use it as propaganda.’

Tae Ho handed over the sculpture of Idun while maintaining a serious expression. At first, King Ivar was putting on a complicated expression but it changed the moment he got hold of the structure. It was because he felt a holy power in the sculpture.

“It is a sculpture of Idun-nim that repels diseases and cures injuries. It will be able to become a treasure for Kataron.”

“Ohh...Idun-nim’s.....”

The warriors of Kataron started to have special feelings towards Idun after the battle in the winter tree forest. All of them wanted to see the sculpture.

With a soft expression, King Ivar said, “Thank you. And there’s no need for you to think about the sword. The ownerless item has just found its owner.”

King Ivar wasn't uselessly greedy. It may be because he didn't have the guts to negotiate with the warriors of the Gods but his thoughts were purer than that.

"I'm grateful as you think like that."

Tae Ho patted the shoulders of King Ivar a few times and went with the warriors of Valhalla. Bracky asked as soon as Tae Ho approached, "How did you do that? And what's that spear?"

"It opened up on its own as I approached it. And the spear is something I originally had."

It was all true but the explanation was lacking. When Bracky was about to ask more in depth, Siri butted in.

"Let's concentrate on the banquet for now. You are able to talk about that later."

She was someone that knew about Gae Bolg and Cuchulainn.

As Siri stepped in Bracky started to hesitate but then nodded and stepped back. It seemed like Bracky listened to Siri's words better than before.

'It's because beauties are a treasure of the world.'

The banquet resumed as Cuchulainn gave a weird answer.

King Ivar praised the military prowess of the warriors of Valhalla and he showed an especially excited look when he explained about Tae Ho and Siri. And that was the same for the warriors of Valhalla.

'They are more excited with Siri than you.'

"Well, they are men."

Tae Ho said in a low voice and Cuchulain snickered.

In the first place, the warriors of Valhalla were all cool in the eyes of the humans of Midgard. As Siri was already a beauty, she would be seen as the prettiest woman that shone in their eyes. But in

addition to this, she acquired a new saga that even made the enemies turn to look at her. For the warriors of Kataron, she was a beauty of fantasies that was hard to meet even in their dreams.

“For Ullr.”

As Siri waved her hand and spoke in a low voice as if answering the cheers of the warriors, the warriors yelled even more enthusiastically.

“For Ullr!”

“For Ullr!”

“For the beautiful warrior of Ullr!”

The atmosphere heated up in an instant. Tae Ho looked at the reaction of Siri that was not like her and she said with a bold face while her ear had turned red.

“Well, I’m also a warrior of Ullr’s legion.”

It was really confusing as she stayed in Idun’s residence for a long time, but she still belonged to Ullr’s legion.

Tae Ho flinched at the appearance of a strong competitor but the other warriors laughed and enjoyed it.

After the alcohol started to take effect, King Ivar started to talk about his plans.

Hella’s curse was a magical disease. It was difficult to lower the infection rate before destroying the strong magical factor originating it, but if you removed it the danger rate would lower to the level where only ghouls or normal zombies appeared.

But of course, you couldn’t easily see zombies or ghouls. However, they could only relax a bit as they were comparing it to Hella’s curse.

King Ivar finished the presentation about making his kingdom stronger while restoring Kataron as the base, and then the banquet turned out to be a drinking bout once again. The warriors of

Kataron wanted to mix some words with the warriors of Valhalla but unfortunately the warriors of Valhalla had things to discuss among themselves.

Ingrid expressed her manners to king Ivar and then led the warriors of Valhalla to a separate room.

“It’s about the expeditions that will come next.”

Ingrid’s words were short and clear as always.

The two fragments of Garmr’s soul, including the one they had acquired, was pointing to a single direction. It seemed like another fragment was not too far away from them so they had to keep up with the expedition.

Although, their consumption in this battle was big and there was also the possibility of the giants and fomiores entering the fray.

They judged that it was impossible to keep the expedition with just this force and requested Valhalla for reinforcements.

Some of the warriors of Valhalla put on complicated faces when they heard that reinforcements would be sent. They were the warriors that couldn’t perform well in the battle against Balzak.

They didn’t look at the warriors that achieved merits with jealousy. Because that wasn’t what a warrior of Valhalla would do.

They were blaming themselves for being overpowered and being powerless.

Ingrid didn’t say any words to those warriors. It wasn’t because she wasn’t disinterested. It was because she believed in them.

If they had climbed to become intermediate ranked, then they knew well what they had to do. There was no need to interfere with warriors that were already mature.

And actually, the warriors of Valhalla soon returned to their usual faces. And rather there were some that had more determined faces than before. If there was something they lacked in this battle,

they could just compensate for it in the next battle. There were no other words that didn't fit the warriors of Valhalla like discouragement and despair.

As the atmosphere turned to normal again Bracky raised his hand like usual and asked, "Who are the reinforcements?"

In an expedition, a Valkyrie would naturally be added as their leader. It wasn't that there was no possibility of only sending warriors as they already had Ingrid but thinking about it normally, there was a possibility for a new Valkyrie to come.

What legion would the Valkyrie that will come belong to? And how many warriors of which legion will come? Were they also intermediate ranked?

Ingrid faced Bracky's eyes that were filled with curiousness and opened her mouth to answer. But when she looked at Tae Ho, she put a playful smile that didn't suit her and said.

"You will know after two days. So it will be a secret until then."

"Ingrid?"

Bracky asked with a bewildered face but Ingrid closed her mouth as if there was nothing else to discuss and opened the door.

"Let's leave it here. Rest well."

Just who was coming for her to act like that?

The night deepened while Tae Ho and Siri looked at each other.

&

The night in Midgard was deeper and darker than Asgard.

Today it was darker than usual.

Loki stood at the center of the winter tree forest that was devastated, as if proving the confrontation against the giants, and looked at the sky. The night didn't even have a moon but that was why you could see the stars more clearly.

Loki looked at the sea that held countless stars that could fall at any moment and then lowered his gaze. Things were flowing differently to what he had imagined.

But of course, the big picture didn't change. The flow he wanted was maintained.

What had gone wrong was the speed.

He thought that they would still be battling the sea monsters but they had already taken care of that and had also solved the case of the winter tree forest.

“Idun's warrior.”

The one that could be considered as the cause.

Loki looked at the direction where Kataron was and put on a faint smile.

It was a cold smile that seemed to be fake, just like the God of Lies.

< Episode 23 – Idun's warrior (3) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 1: The Shinsoo's of Earth (1)

The warriors of Valhalla decided to stay in Kataron until reinforcements would arrive from Asgard.

And it was obvious to say this but King Ivar and his retainers welcomed them with both hands.

After they were notified about the reinforcements were coming, Tae Ho gathered Siri and Ingrid to talk about his situation after thinking about it for a long time.

“So you aren’t able to use the power of a God for fifteen days right?” Ingrid asked with a really serious face. Lowering her voice calmly in this situation was too much like her.

“Yes, now it’s 13 days and a few hours.”

Tae Ho laughed awkwardly and replied and Ingrid fell in her thoughts while shutting her mouth and Siri nodded as if she knew how it turned out like this.

“Well. I was wondering what had happened as your power increased by several folds in an instant.”

That day Tae Ho had used a power of a God was several times more powerful than what he usually used.

Compared to Ingrid, Siri knew that Tae Ho had geass seed. Because of that, she took it in faster than Ingrid.

Tae Ho didn’t speak about the geass and Ingrid also didn’t ask him about the cause.

The important fact for Ingrid, that got to lead the warriors in Midgard, was that Tae Ho wasn’t able to use the power of a God for a time.

The myth ranked Idun’s saga was certainly strong. However it

had the weakness of not being able to use the power of a God for fifteen days after that.

It was obvious to say this but it was better to not tell others about the weakness of his technique. Regardless of that, the reason why he told the both of them was because he needed to.

It wasn't that Tae Ho was weak to the point he became a commoner just because he couldn't use the power of a God. His physique, which was strengthened by the accumulating runes remained, and the usage of rune magic that was engraved in it also remained the same.

Although he couldn't strengthen himself with the power of a God, Tae Ho still remained a strong warrior.

However, just like Ragnar had said before, the power of a God was also the power of permission. If enemies that you could only face with the power of a God appeared, then the current Tae Ho wouldn't be able to do anything.

If no one knew of this then an unexpected accident may occur. And Tae Ho wouldn't be the only one to get swept up in that accident. All the warriors would also be swept up.

Knowing the capabilities and the strengths of your allies was a really important thing.

Because of that Tae Ho decided to only reveal his secret to Ingrid, who was the current leader, and to Siri, the comrade he trusted the most.

Ingrid nodded slowly.

“Well. If possible it would be good to keep it as a secret. I understand. I will remember it. Also.....”

Ingrid paused for a moment and put on an awkward smile and then looked at Tae Ho fixedly and said, “Thank you for trusting me.”

Because it would have been hard to reveal his secret willingly.

Tae Ho smiled brightly and answered, “It’s because it’s you Ingrid.”

“That reason puts me in a good mood.”

If it was Gandur or Reginleif, they would just have laughed at it but Ingrid just drew a smile. It was a smile that was so like her and it was a good one to see.

But it didn’t last long. She closed her eyes for a moment and then put on a serious face again.

“Warrior Tae Ho, honestly speaking I want to send you back to Valhalla immediately. But coming and going to Asgard from Midgard isn’t an easy thing. Taking the souls of the great warriors and going to Valhalla is a different problem.”

The warriors of Valhalla had received a new body in Asgard. The situation was different with the Valkyries that had half dematerialized to take the souls or the dead ones that were in soul form.

In addition, if you returned to Asgard it wouldn’t be easy to come down to Midgard again.

“I hope you are careful for the time being, understood?”

“I understand.”

Tae Ho also answered with a serious expression.

Ingrid was making things more convenient for Tae Ho. Although it was hard to come and go, it wasn’t that it was impossible.

A long expedition like this one in Midgard wasn’t common. Ingrid was worried about Tae Ho but she didn’t want to take away his opportunity to spread Idun’s name and create a new saga.

“Right, I will also believe in you.”

Ingrid finished speaking in a low voice and kissed Tae Ho’s

forehead to give him a blessing.

‘The collection of blessings from Valkyries increased.’

Cuchulainn, that was silent until now, said as if teasing and Tae Ho didn’t refute him.

“Then I will return.”

Ingrid also gave a blessing to Siri and then put on the same business-like expression and left the room.

Siri just looked at her back leaving the room and then looked at Tae Ho and said, “I’m saying this just in case, but.”

“But?”

“Keep it a secret from Bracky. Rumors will spread in all of Midgard.”

It seemed like Siri had suffered because of him and thus she was really serious. Because of that Tae Ho laughed unconsciously and nodded.

&

As rumors that Kataron had been seized back spread, the evacuees that were spread started to gather.

But the evacuees weren’t the only ones that had gathered.

Warriors from various places gathered. Among them, there were kings and their guards that had a force comparable to Kataron.

Because the warriors of Valhalla and a Valkyrie were staying in Kataron.

The rumor that started in the island of King Sven coincided with the rumors that started in Kataron and Katren. The warriors of Kataron kept repeating the miracles they saw and new legends started to come out of the mouths of the people.

A moving forest and the warriors that fought against it.

Idun’s warrior that defeated a giant.

It has been three days after taking back Kataron. More people were gathered in Kataron than before Hella's curse had spread. It was because rumors that the Valkyrie will hold a ritual were going around.

King Ivar piled up a big offering in front of the royal castle, in the middle of Kataron. The ceremony held by king Sven was flashy but the ceremony king Ivar prepared was even more flashier.

“It's a bit burdensome.”

Ingrid stood in front of the door that led to the offering and mumbled in a low voice. There were big fires at her sides and an altar made of wood between that. The altar seemed to be at least 10 meters high.

The warriors of Valhalla followed Ingrid's back. The people that gathered near the altar let out impressed voices and observed the ceremony.

Thousands of eyes gathered in Ingrid. The ceremony started after the warriors of Valhalla stopped in the center of the altar and only Ingrid climbed to the highest floor. As they yelled the names of the Gods and prayed, a reaction occurred in the sky.

“It's a rainbow stair!”

“Bifrost!”

“Ohh! Odin!”

Breathless exclamations came out from everywhere. It was obvious as they saw the sky splitting up and rainbow stairs spread out. But that wasn't all. There were people coming down the stairs.

The one at the front was a beautiful Valkyrie. Four warriors that were completely armed followed her.

‘Rasgrid!’

He hadn't seen her for such a long time. It seemed like Rasgrid

also recognized Tae Ho as they exchanged gazes for a while.

“Rasgrid.”

“Ingrid.”

The two Valkyries exchanged short greetings and then hit their chests to express etiquette. The crowd shut their mouths and gulped dry saliva by the scene that would only be seen in legends.

The warriors that came with her all belonged to Odin’s legion. One of them greeted the warriors below the altar with his eyes and then yelled when he saw Tae Ho.

“Ohh! So you are the one that rode on the Ice Princess....No, the warrior that rides on Valkyries!”

As a veteran warrior that had a white beard laughed, the other warriors of Idun’s legion also showed interest in Tae Ho.

And that interest also spread to the ones that were looking.

“A warrior that rode on a Valkyrie?”

The people looked at each other and spoke to each other. Then, the warriors that were at the place started yelling as if they were having fun.

“The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

Bracky had already spoken about him a lot.

Tae Ho would have tried to calm down the situation normally but he decided to just take it in this time. He wouldn’t be able to do anything even if he stopped them and he already had a saga. If stories spread and got strengthened, then the saga would also get strengthened.

“Ohh! The warrior that rode on a Valkyrie!”

“The warrior that rides on Valkyries!”

The people that were near the altar yelled excitedly. Their eyes, that were looking at Tae Ho, were filled with respect.

“I also heard that you defeated a giant. I’m happy as we will be able to fight together.”

“I’m also happy.”

Tae Ho hit his chest and then glanced at Rasgrid. She was looking at him with a slightly resigned face.

“Are you done?”

“We are done.”

The warriors of Idun’s legion scratched the back of their heads and then followed behind Rasgrid again. Just looking at them it seemed like an intelligent grand daughter and shameless grandparents.

Ingrid showed a smile towards that Rasgrid and finished the ceremony. The rainbow stair disappeared and Rasgrid and the warriors of Odin’s legion expressed their manners towards King Ivar.

King Ivar had a really satisfied expression. It was because he was facing the Valkyrie and the warriors of Valhalla but also because Kataron’s fame would spread everywhere. In addition, the fame of King Ivar himself would get higher.

As the warriors and king Ivar entered the palace again, several bards started to sing about the tales of the warriors. The warriors of Kataron talked about the things they had witnessed themselves and not long after that the city started to get filled with stories about the warriors of Valhalla.

And about an hour after that.

Rasgrid revealed that their first objective in this objective was to gather information about the third fragment of Garmr’s soul and chasing the tracks of the fomioires and after that she called Tae Ho and Siri separately. It was because there was something important she had to discuss with them.

“I’m happy as both of you seem healthy. I heard that you raised quite a lot of achievements.”

“Thank you.”

Rasgrid and Siri already had connections from before Tae Ho entered Valhalla and they smiled while looking at each other.

Rasgrid took a deep breath and then said while looking at Tae Ho.

“Warrior Tae Ho, do you remember that I said that I would repay you?”

Tae Ho tilted his head as if he didn’t know what she was talking about but then remembered what it was about. He had certainly heard something similar when he was at Svartalfheim.

“I’ve decided to repay you now. It’s something Ragnar Lodbrok requested for me to do.”

Although he only stayed in Idun’s residence and had retired, he still belonged to Odin’s legion.

“I heard that you have accumulated quite a lot of attribute runes. Ragnar requested me to teach you the basics of the attributes.”

Earth, wind, water, fire, thunder, light, darkness, life, death.

Although he had gathered the nine attributes of runes, Tae Ho still hadn’t used them properly.

“It can already display some effect just by possessing them. But if you want to use them properly you have to learn about attributes.”

The ones that had thunder attribute runes could strengthen the power of their thunder or lessen the damage coming from thunder attributed attacks.

In Tae Ho’s case, he had Idun’s strength that had the power of life and had several sagas that could handle thunder and wind, so if he learnt about attributes then he would be able to greatly increase his fighting prowess.

“The time I can teach you is short. But you will certainly get some achievements as I’m the one who will teach you directly. Get ready for it.”

Rasgrid smiled coldly. It was a really fearsome expression.

Cuchulainn snickered and said, ‘There seems to be bones in her words. But cheer up. Even if it’s hard, it will be much better than the master’s classes.’

His words weren’t wrong at all.

&

Rasgrid’s classes were difficult. After only listening to Ragnar’s free classes, it was like he was suddenly receiving hardcore Sparta-like classes.

Ingrid decided to be in charge of finding Garmr’s soul fragment, and they decided to be on standby before getting clear clues about Garmr’s soul fragment so Rasgrid had a lot of time.

“Starting from tomorrow I will teach you from morning to night. I will leave you with energy to spare so don’t worry.”

She, who was frying Tae Ho and Siri until late at night spoke like that and stepped away, and Siri had become tattered after being squeezed out all the attributes for several continued hours. She returned to her room with an exhausted face.

Tae Ho also returned to the room and washed himself up before lying down on his bed sleeping.

Yet Tae Ho couldn’t sleep that easily.

“Hello again?”

Idun appeared in his dreams. He was accustomed to it as it was already the third meeting. He also thought of the days when Heda came to meet him everyday.

“You have a really exhausted face. Did something happen? It seemed like I gained more followers today.....”

As Idun asked with a worried voice, Tae Ho just laughed and shook his head. Although it wasn't that it had no relation at all, it was just a separate case.

Tae Ho fixed his expression and said, "I'm fine. Is it a meeting today again?"

Whatever the case, a meeting with Idun was just as fun as a meeting with Heda.

However, she put on an awkward smile and shook her head.

"That's not the case. There's someone else that said that she has business with you."

"Someone.....else?"

Was it Heda?

As he asked with a voice filled with expectation, Idun started to laugh and stepped back.

"That's not the case. Now, come out."

As Idun spoke, someone new appeared above the plains. She was a woman as beautiful as Heda, but it wasn't her.

It was a woman with long black hair, and she was covering herself with the fur of a black beast and she had cat-like eyes.

"Idun's warrior Tae Ho, I heard the story. So you got attacked by the Tyrant Bress?"

Scathach went down to business immediately. Although she was still resting by sleeping, it seemed like her consciousness was already awake. As soon as she heard that Tae Ho was attacked by the Tyrant Bress, she had stepped up because she couldn't leave her benefactor in danger. Because the real reason why Tae Ho was resented by Bress was because of Scathach herself.

"You may get attacked by the fomioires again in Midgard. And I heard that you aren't able to use the power of a God right now. Because of that I decided to hurry a bit."

Just what was she going to hurry at?

He did have a vague idea however. Normally he would welcome it, but the situation was a bit different now.

“I will teach you the power of Erin, and the power of Tuatha De Danann. I hope you understand even if the classes are harsh as we don’t have that much time.”

The maybe became true. Tae Ho flinched and Idun, who was standing behind, clenched her fist as if telling him to cheer up.

“Let’s start immediately.”

Scathach approached Tae Ho and he smiled while crying inwardly.

&

‘To have personal lessons at night and morning by beauties. I’m jealous.’

Cuchulainn laughed but Tae Ho couldn’t laugh with him.

Rasgrid’s lessons were hard, and Scathach’s lessons were even harder.

It seemed like Ingrid had told Rasgrid that it was fine if he made him train all day as he wasn’t included in the main force for not being able to use the strength of God. Because of that, compared to Siri who had strength left to fight, Tae Ho had to squeeze out all his strength.

In addition, Scathach’s lessons started at night.

As Scathach’s lessons happened in his dreams, it was closer to being a mental training rather than physical training. Because of that he didn’t spend stamina but the mental strength that was consumed was overwhelming.

If the power of the Milesians was an ability to strengthen your body and fight directly, then the power of Tuatha De Danann was closer to a mystical magic.

After about one week since Tae Ho started the classes with the two people.

Tae Ho passed the days wondering if it wouldn't be faster to die at the hands of the two people rather than dying against the giants or fomiores and then a rain of hope fell down.

It was a notice that came from the north.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (1) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 2: The Shinsoo's of Earth (2)

The world of the giants, Jotunheim had several guys that claimed themselves to be the King.

However the ones that could be called the real King and had the strength and a force to back it up could only be counted on one hand.

The King that built up the strongest force among the other Kings.

The magician King Utgard Loki, rolled his fingers while leaning on the wooden throne. He lightly patted the armrest of the throne and looked at the four giants expressing etiquette in front of him.

They were originally five but they were now four.

The empty seat among the five fingers still hadn't been filled up and the magician King wasn't planning to fill it up hurriedly.

The giant of the Night, Abalt, was silent. The giant of the Beasts, Ort, saved his words. In the end, the one that opened his mouth was the giant of the Sea, Grund.

“A fragment of Garmr's soul was found in Midgard.”

The death of Balzak, which had fallen over the sweet words of the Tyrant Bress, wasn't for nothing. The giants obtained a lot of information they had been missing.

The giants hadn't looked in Midgard and the reason was the same as Asgard's. The number of the traces of the Great War were so few in Midgard that the probabilities of a soul fragment being there was also low.

In addition, it wasn't a land the giants could approach easily.

The day Erin had been destroyed, the king of Gods, Odin, who could be described as the root of Asgard, set up a big barrier to

protect Midgard. It was to evade the destruction Erin had faced.

After the barrier had been set up, the Gods of Asgard couldn't come and go to Asgard as freely as before. Deploying a large army also became more difficult.

However, that was the same for the enemies of Asgard. As it was a really large barrier, an opening could only be created. So it was possible to hide in Midgard little by little through the small holes but the number of giants that could come and go like this was limited. It couldn't be known if they were weak creatures like Fomoires, but for a giant, which was among the five fingers, to hide was something impossible.

“The warriors of Valhalla are the ones that killed Balzak.”

There was no appreciation in Balzak doing what he wanted and dying because of that. He was merely an impetuous guy that aimed for the seat of the five fingers, even without knowing his place.

But the warriors that defeated Balzak were different. They had acquired two fragments of Garmr's soul in a short time.

And the places where the fragments were discovered were close to each other.

A few months had passed since no progress had been made in the search in Svartalfheim, Alfheim, and the surrounding territories of Asgard.

Perhaps Midgard was the place with the most fragments.

Just like Asgard had deployed warriors, maybe they should also do the same.

At Grund's careful advice Utgard Loki nodded slowly. He hit the armrest of the throne a few more times and then closed his eyes and said, “Balgad.”

“Tell me, my King.”

Balgad, the giant of Earth, who was also one of the five fingers,

raised his head. The magician King rolled his fingers again and said, “I will entrust the task of Midgard to you. Only, don’t be in a hurry. I don’t want to lose you, followed by Harad.”

The giant of Strength, Harad.

His last death was really heroic but looking at it from the side, it was really a dog’s death.

He ignored the orders of the King and died by the hands of Thor for delaying. It was a carelessness that couldn’t be excused.

But regardless of that, the magician King regretted Harad’s death. His death hadn’t been included in the calculations of the magician King.

Balgad, who was the biggest among the giants, had a body made of rocks and dirt. He nodded heavily and took in the warning of the King and then came up with a request.

“My King, am I able to use Sigil in this case?”

The other fingers showed a reaction before the magician King. The giant of the Sea, Grund, frowned and the giant of the Night, Abalt, looked at Balgad. Ort, the giant of Beasts, just laughed soundlessly.

Sigil, the murderer of the same race.

He was a sinner that hadn’t only massacre his comrades to raise evil deeds but he also didn’t know his place and even stood up against the magician King.

The reason why the magician King didn’t kill him and just imprisoned him wasn’t to just give him a long pain. It was to use him someday.

“I will allow it.”

“Thank you.”

The giant of the Earth, Balgad, expressed his gratitude to the magician King. Grund, the giant of the Sea, also had complaints on

this decision but he didn't raise an objection towards the King. The giant of Beasts, Ort, just found it to be fun and the giant of the Night, Abalt, stayed silent.

Balgad stood from his place. He, who was the biggest among the five fingers, turned around along with a faint smile.

&

King Ivar gave a room to each warrior of Valhalla. Because of that, Tae Ho could sit on the bed of his room and have a conversation with Adenmaha one on one.

“Calling me right after what happened yesterday isn't a bit too much?”

“You are my only delight. It's to survive every day.”

As Tae Ho spoke with a voice as if he was dying, Adenmaha laughed as if it was absurd and then crossed her arms again.

“You can also call Rolo.”

“I wanted to see you.”

First, compared to Rolo, you could converse with her, she was cute, pretty, good and most of all, could transform into a human so she wouldn't cause trouble inside the room.

If he called Rolo, it would be obvious that the room would become a mess.

As Tae Ho spoke casually, Adenmaha flinched but then snorted again.

“You won't get anything by doing that.”

“Why is there nothing? There is.”

As Tae Ho extended his hand, Adenmaha frowned and then took out a letter from a pocket.

“Here, a letter of consolation.”

It was a letter written by Heda. As she had written again after a

day there wasn't much content in it, but he regained strength when thinking that there was someone that wrote a letter for him.

‘Soldiers don’t go crazy over letters for nothing.’

Tae Ho started to read the letter with an expression that was much better than before and then Adenmaha smacked her lips and asked carefully, “Master...nim. Is it that harsh?”

“It is.” Tae Ho answered immediately.

Adenmaha checked the dark circles that were below Tae Ho’s eyes and asked again, “You said that it was attribute training right? How do you train for that?”

“It’s basically like training the power of a God. You just manifest an attribute and endure it like that. The difference with Ragnar should be that Rasgrid pushes you to your limit...”

Ragnar was a really intellectual and excellent teacher, because he knew how to control the speed of the training. But Rasgrid was different. She just pushed him to his limit, as if she was quenching.

“Did you have some progress?”

“If there was none I would have been sad.” He answered with a pathetic face but not even Tae Ho himself knew about the progress. As he merely squeezed out everything he had, he didn’t have the time to test it.

‘But I still had some progress.’

First, the time he could squeeze it out was longer than before. Didn’t it get longer because he had something to squeeze out?

While Tae Ho was making a sad calculation, Adenmaha, that now had a compassionate face, asked again.

“And you said that you trained with Scathach at night, right?”

“That’s even har... Now that I see, did the two of them know each other?”

“A bit. She was a famous woman.”

She was the Queen of the Land of Darkness and at the same time a strong witch that had gathered several mystical powers. In addition, she was the teacher of the strongest warrior, Cu Chulainn.

“And you weren’t famous, Adenmaha?” Tae Ho asked thoughtlessly this time as well. Whatever the case, Adenmaha was also a Goddess.

But Adenmaha flinched once again and replied while turning her eyes away as if she had become enraged.

“Men that ask too deeply aren’t popular.”

“Oh, so you weren’t famous. So that was the case.”

As Tae Ho spoke while imitating Heda, Adenmaha got enraged again. Tae Ho laughed as magnanimously as Bracky and then dropped his body and said, “Anyways, that’s also hard. Receiving the power of Tuatha De Danann isn’t easy.”

Rather, the attribute training was the easy part. It was because he was just increasing the amount, like when he increased the power of a God.

However, the power of Tuatha De Danann was different. It didn’t stop at strengthening his mental strength but as Scathach was transmitting him with several magic and mystics, he had to study.

While Tae Ho let out a cry, Adenmaha snorted with a rather proud face.

“Of course. Don’t look down on Tuatha De Danann.”

“Now that I see, can’t I learn from you? You are also a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann.”

Scathach wasn’t a Tuatha De Danann. Although the comparison was a bit excessive, Adenmaha was a native and Scathach was a foreigner that had studied their culture.

However Adenmaha wore a troubled face at Tae Ho's question.

"Mm, it's not that I can't...ugh, just learn from that witch."

"Well, so that was the case. I'm sorry for asking something impossible."

If Adenmaha was a commoner A, then Scathach was a foreigner researcher that had a master's degree.

"I want to return."

"Right, thank you for today too."

Tae Ho took out a Summoning Rock and was about to stand from his bed. But then Adenmaha seemed to hesitate for a moment and then pushed down Tae Ho again and placed her lips on his forehead.

"Adenmaha?"

A soft, warm feeling spread from his forehead. As Tae Ho blinked, Adenmaha shrugged her shoulders, as if hiding her embarrassment.

"It's also a blessing from a Goddess. Cheer up. I heard from Rolo that master likes these things."

"It seems like there was a misleading statement in his words but thanks anyways. No, now that you did it, won't you do it again? Wait, I will ride on you."

'Right, what you gather is the blessing of Valkyries.' Cu Chulainn, who had been silent, said casually and Adenmaha pushed back Tae Ho, who was trying to get on her back, with all her strength.

"What are you doing!"

It seemed like a joke but it still needed proper punishment. And Siri, who had arrived at the right time, looked at Tae Ho falling down in his bed and frowned.

“That was kind of unsightly to see.”

“Captain Siri?”

Tae Ho hurriedly got up and turned to look at her. Siri and Adenmaha shared a greeting with their eyes and then turned to look at Tae Ho again. She drew the same smile as before and said, “Be happy Tae Ho. We are being dispatched.”

Siri was also receiving classes from Rasgrid.

Tae Ho stood up from his bed at the ray of hope.

&

There was a big mountain and a forest at the far north of Kataron that was called the Holy Land. It was a place famous for having several hot springs with good effects but what was more famous than that were the two Shinsoos.

The notice that came from the north was related to the Holy Land. It seemed like the beasts in the Holy Land started to get more ferocious and recently, several monsters started to appear from it.

As Garmr’s soul fragment was also pointing towards the north, Ingrid decided to leave Kataron and head to the Holy Land.

‘Anyways, this is still good.’

Going out on expeditions meant that they would be moving and he wouldn’t be able to move while moving.

No, honestly speaking, it wasn’t that it was impossible but whatever the case, he was sure he would do less of that.

‘At first glance it seems like your mind has rotten but...I understand you, as I have been observing for the past week.’

Scathach’s lessons had been added on top of Rasgrid’s.

While Cu Chulainn was comforting him, the warriors of Valhalla shared their farewell with King Ivar and his subordinates. Tae Ho

gave a blessing to Helga, who would become a loyal follower of Idun and gifted her with a bar of gold from Valhalla.

“We will leave now.”

“Wait a moment, Valkyrie Ingrid. We have prepared something for all of you.”

King Ivar spoke and then clapped his hands. Then two big carriages and several war horses appeared from a far place.

“It’s a small gift for you for having rescued Kataron. You said that you were still repairing the ship, so you couldn’t use it properly right?”

“Thank you for your consideration, King Ivar. Let Odin’s blessing be with you.”

Ingrid hit her chest and then blessed King Ivar. The warriors of Valhalla also put on happy smiles because their legs wouldn’t hurt.

But it was different for Tae Ho and Siri.

A carriage! A damn carriage!

“How good. You will be able to keep training on the road.”

Rasgrid looked at Tae Ho and Siri and smiled brightly. It seemed as if it was because they had become closer or she had changed, since the impression she gave was quite different from when they had seen her in Black Fortress.

In the end Tae Ho and Siri had to focus on training in a corner of the carriage.

And how much time had passed...

As night came, Siri was able to be freed from the training and could sleep comfortably.

But Tae Ho’s case was also different this time.

“Is that so? You are moving to the north? I understand, so let’s start the classes.”

It didn't matter whether it was his dream or it was travelling.

While Scathach was urging him to resume the training with a casual face, Tae Ho rolled his eyes and looked towards the golden apple tree. It seemed like maintaining the divine message took quite the toll on her since Idun, who was snoozing, raised her head and then waved her fist. Although he couldn't see her lips, it seemed like she had roughly said to cheer up.

‘A ray of hope, my ass.’

Four days passed by from the schedule which was no different from before and the warriors of Valhalla reached the great city in the north, Radetza.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (2) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 3: The Shinsoo's of Earth (3)

The curious people called the city of Radetza adjacent to the holy land a city that was fated to become a great city.

The reason was for three simple overlapping factors:

First, the huge amount of crops that was harvested in the wide fields near Radetza.

Second, it was the perfect location to connect the cities in the coast of the Kalic sea and the inland cities.

Third, the safety that the strongest force among the nearby nations gave.

In addition to these three points, as the city was close to the land that was hailed as the holy land, if people and supplies didn't gather, then that would be even weirder.

The group that reached Ratedza, that was three times bigger than Kataron, was welcomed hospitably due to the king Harpdan bringing his guards to greet them personally.

The warriors of Valhalla were overjoyed at the welcoming of the people of Radetza, but Ingrid and Rasgrid felt a bit troubled.

‘This kind of expedition is a first.’

The expeditions the two Valkyries experienced in Midgard until now finished in a short time. As most of them ended in a day or two, compared to the days they had spent in the island of King Sven, you could say that it was comparatively long.

But it had already been fifteen days since they arrived in Midgard.

Not only were rumors about the warriors of Valhalla spreading far but people were gathering to see them.

This wasn't necessarily a bad thing, as it was an opportunity to increase the prestige of the Gods and strengthen the sagas of the warriors. But they couldn't help but feel uneasy, as the place the Valkyries and the warriors of Valhalla hold is not on Midgard but Asgard.

King Harpdan invited the warriors to his castle and then served hospitably. As he was someone that was closer to King Catil than King Ivar of Kataron, the synastry between the warriors wasn't that good but in the first place, the situation was different.

It seemed like problems in the holy land could also trouble the country of King Harpdan, as he was really earnest in sharing information.

The first time a change took place was fifteen days before. The people that came and went to the holy land started to get attacked by the beasts. That wasn't taken too much into account but three days after that, monsters rather than beasts started to attack and the villages near the holy land got destroyed.

There were also damages in the roads and the farms and King Harpdan couldn't easily decide if he should enter the holy land to attack.

There were two reasons for that.

Firstly, they didn't know how many monsters there would be and secondly, they were unsure because of the Shinsoos of the earth.

There were two shinsoos living in the holy land. Based on the legends, they were beasts that were born with an excellent lineage, just like the fine horse of Odin, Sleipnir. They couldn't only speak in human words but also possessed magical powers.

The holy land was no different than the land of the shinsoos. King Harpdan didn't want to clash against the Shinsoos, that were no different to powerful monsters, head on.

'Could the biggest reason they didn't fight the rumors about the

warriors of Valhalla?’

Ingrid precisely grasped the third reason King Harpdan didn’t mention. As the warriors of Valhalla had come down to Midgard to get rid of the monsters he had judged that it was far better to ask them to solve this matter.

Ingrid nodded slowly after listening to all the story. Rasgrid exchanged a glance with Ingrid and then agreed in silence. The one that was leading this expedition was Ingrid so she was the one to take the final decision.

“I understand. We will enter the place called holy land.”

“Thank you.”

Harpdan smiled satisfactorily and opened up a banquet to welcome the warriors.

“Master, you aren’t going to the banquet?”

Adenmaha looked at the direction that music was heard from and asked. It had been a long time since the sun had set but the heat of the banquet didn’t seem like it would cool down anytime soon.

Tae Ho sat on the bed King Harpdan prepared and shook his head.

“I have been there until now. I just returned a bit earlier. I want to rest a bit.”

This morning, the classes with Rasgrid ended. No, more accurately, it had stopped to his advantage. As they reached the destination to accomplish their third task, Tae Ho needed to stay in top shape to prepare for all cases.

Because of that, Tae Ho wanted to go to sleep for 24 hours as soon as he was freed from Rasgrid in 12 days but the banquet held his feet back. After all, even though it was hard and painful, he couldn’t miss the banquet.

‘That’s a really thorough promotional mentality.’

Cuchulainn mumbled as if it was absurd.

But he couldn't do anything about that. Because the banquet was the perfect place to patronize something.

“But still, you were great on having got out of it in the middle.”

Adenmaha also mumbled as if it was absurd but then put on a vague relieved face.

“But master, if you sleep the lessons with Scathach will start anyways.”

Tae Ho flinched at Adenmaha's sharp words and then answered while dripping cold sweat.

“N, no. There's no way the divine message of Idun-nim can last for 24 hours. Ugh, but the lessons will still start as soon as I go to sleep right....?”

“Why are you asking me when you already know the answer?”

Cuchulainn laughed and said. Adenmaha looked at Tae Ho that had drooped his shoulders and clicked her tongue and then took out Heda's letter from her pocket.

“Here, master's cure all.”

“Thank you. I really only have you.”

“You do know how to speak well.”

It seemed like she didn't dislike that, that she snorted a bit and sat next to Tae Ho and took a peek on the letter. But the contents of the letter were shorter than before.

“Did something happen to Heda?”

“She's dozing off even in the afternoon, maybe because recharging the summoning rocks every day is harsh on her.”

“Mm, I will have to control myself.”

As he was calling Adenmaha everyday, she had to at least recharge one summoning rock everyday. Even if it was the

Valkyrie Heda, it was easy for her to get exhausted.

“But master, Heda was also worried but how long do you have until you are able to use the power of a God again?”

“About tomorrow in the afternoon, so less than a day.”

He had defeated Balzak in the afternoon.

“It’s almost up.”

“Yeah. I’m glad as the time passed without much happening.”

‘Don’t drop your guard, it doesn’t finish until it truly finishes.’

Cuchulainn said with a harsh voice. Even though he had less than a day left, looking at it by the sides, he still had a day left. Compared to the life and death battles, where each second was precious, it was an eternally long time.

Tae Ho thought that Cuchulainn’s warning was right and nodded and after that put back Heda’s letter.

“I should go to sleep. Thanks today too.”

Tae Ho showed a smile towards Adenmaha and then took out a summoning rock. And then Adenmaha looked at the summoning rock and said.

“I can also charge it with my own magic power so don’t save it and use it whenever you need to. Understand? Don’t get hurt in battle for saving it.....Why is your face like that?”

“Well, I’m thankful that Adenmaha is worrying about me.”

As Tae Ho put on a smile as if he had seen something warm, Adenmaha frowned and snorted.

“It’s because it’s too troublesome to search for another master. It’s not that I’m worried about master.”

“What a textbook reply.”

‘You really can’t lie.’

As Tae Ho and Cuchulainn laughed and spoke, Adenmaha pouted and used the summoning rock Tae Ho was holding to return.

Cuchulainn laughed once again and said to Tae Ho.

‘Anyways, the restriction time will soon end. Don’t drop your guard and sleep. You have to go meet master.’

Telling him not to drop his guard but also telling him to go to sleep sounded a bit weird but those weren’t incorrect words. Tae Ho lied on the bed and closed his eyes.

&

The night passed and morning came.

Time flowed along the sun that was getting higher and when the sun was reaching its peak, the one that was looking at the sky took a deep breath.

“The sun feels nice today.”

Spoke a man who was smiling brightly. He was a man that was a head taller than normal people but thought of himself to be small, and the ones around them also thought the same.

Because the man wasn’t a human but a giant.

Sinner Sigil. The killer of the same race that had massacred hundreds of his race in the Great War. The crazy bastard that didn’t know his place and tried to stand up to the magician king.

His hair, that was black and blue like the night, became an ash gray color because of the long prison life. But he didn’t mind that even a little and enjoyed the sunlight.

And there was someone facing that Sigil with uneasy eyes. He wasn’t a giant but a fomoire. Korga, who was the father of Midak that had died by the hands of Tae Ho and an underling of the Tyrant Bress, was in this place to mediate the negotiation between the giant of earth Balgad and Bress.

Korga’s task was simple. Support Sigil. Help him do what he

wants to do.

The two people were standing in the middle of the holy lands. And on Sigi's back, there was a huge hog that used to be called the Shinsoo of Earth. The creature, that had its limbs crushed, was just breathing roughly without even being able to move on the huge magic circle.

Sigil laughed once again as he spoke,

"He was a nice opponent to warm up. I really liked that it was able to take some punches. You said that it was because Garmr's soul fragment is embedded in it right? What an unfortunate dog bastard, if it wanted to die it should have died peacefully. You are suffering even after having been crushed to death."

Garmr's soul fragment, that resembled a black jewel, was stuck in the forehead of the hog. Sigil turned around and forcefully pulled out the fragment. The hog Shinsoo let out a terrible cry but he didn't mind that.

"But you fomiores are also quite something. Having brought me to Midgard without any making any sound was impressive but your information net is also excellent. No, I was surprised in your numbers. Although you are weak fleas, for so many of you to be in Midgard is impressive. Isn't Bress also hiding in Midgard? There is a saying that the place below the lamp is the darkest."

They were words that were spoken as light as a kid but Korga flinched unconsciously. Sigil's shining eyes made him uneasy.

"Well, what can I do? Let's speak about business."

Sigil smiled thinly. You could only express his smile like that. He turned around to sit down and then moved his head.

"Take your underlings and attack the humans city. Balgad's underlings will also help you. It's nothing hard. You just have to clash with them head on."

There were many that eyed on the great city of Radetza. Because

of that, King Harpdan had strong knights under his command to protect the city.

“Vikings are bastards that worry on how they die rather than when, so if you face them head on they will come to greet you. Will they stay still when Valkyries are watching? It should be the same for the warriors of Valhalla. Valhalla is the place where those kinds of Vikings gather. They are the same. A big and flashy battle will occur.”

Sigi's eyes were yellow. Korga evaded his eyes that were as long like a cat and asked,

“Are you also going?”

“No, i'm different. When you clash in the front with a bang, I will enter the city stealthily to massacre the defenseless humans to my heart's content. It will be fun. I will also be able to accumulate many evil deeds and their force will also disperse.”

They wouldn't be able to leave Sigil alone in the city doing what he pleased.

He had already caught the Shinsoo and acquired Garmr's soul fragment. However Balgad wanted something beyond that and that was the same for Sigil.

“I like battling. But I like fighting battles that I can win. I like to kill rather than dying. That's why I will fight a battle that I can win. I will rip their forces, tear them off and keep tearing them to kill them one by one.”

Sigil hadn't prepared only one thing. He turned around to look at the Shinsoo that was groaning in its back.

“I like Balgad. That bastard is the ring leader that imprisoned me a hundred years ago so I will someday tear him off but I like him right now as he's the giant of the earth. That's why I was able to prepare a really fun thing.”

The magic circle that was covering the Shinsoo wasn't only to

seal its movements. It was a much stronger magic circle that could do something beyond that.

The place that the magic circle was spread was also peculiar. Sigi,¹ who had peculiar evil eyes that could see through all things had decided on this place.

“The bastards of Valhalla won’t be able to ignore this. No, this is a really big thing. Even if they win against you, that will surely fight moderately, and even if they are somehow able to stop me from going crazy in the city, if they can’t block this then it’s their defeat. So they will only be able to disperse their forces. But that still won’t be able to block it. This is that kind of item.”

Korga couldn’t ask what it was. He just wanted to get far away from Sigil, who was making him feel uneasy.

Suddenly, it seemed like Sigil had read the thoughts of that Korga when he stood up from where he was sitting. He looked at the sky and said casually.

“It’s time.”

“Time?”

As Korga asked unconsciously, Sigil put on a bright smile and turned to look at the hog Shinsoo and said.

“The time for the friend of this guy, that couldn’t finish off its friend that had gone crazy because of Garmr’s soul fragment and that believes that it escaped with its own strength, to run wild against the warriors of Valhalla.”

A surprise attack wasn’t always the right thing. There was a need to notify the warriors of Valhalla about the factor that would make them feel nervous and that will disperse their forces.

Sigil took a deep breath. He closed his eyes and opened them again.

“Get ready to attack. Don’t waste any more time and go. It’s now

the time to fight.”

Sigil didn't wait for Korga's answer and walked away. Korga could only follow him back.

&

A Shinsoo that had the shape of a black cow ran. When it reached the city of Radetza despite being a bloody mess, the sound of a horn trumpet that notified the attack of an enemy was heard.

The Shinsoo fell in front of Ingrid and started to tell her about the things it had seen.

The warriors of Radetza, that had become inspired by the warriors of Valhalla, didn't even wait for the orders of the king and went to the front lines. Hundreds and thousands of fomoires were charging towards the castle.

Rasgrid took some of the warriors of Valhalla and went to the front lines. Valkyrie Ingrid didn't listen to the words of the Shinsoo half heartedly. She groaned when she heard that the giant who had suppressed the hog Shinsoo was planning something big in the holy lands.

They also had to deploy warriors to the holy land. As they had the flying pirate ship that had finished repairing itself, they would be able to fly over the front lines and go to the holy lands.

Ingrid selected the warriors that would go to the holy land. She got on the flying ship first to lead the warriors.

The flying ship started to fly.

The warriors of Radetza looked at the fomoires that were flocking over and blew their horn trumpets.

King Harpdan didn't go out to battle. Korga just looked at the battlefield while standing on the rear so that he could escape at any time but Rasgrid noticed the existence of Korga, who was standing on the back lines.

While all of that was happening.

The soldiers that were guarding the gates of Radetza urged on the ones that had escaped. As the front lines of the battle and Radetza weren't that far away they had to close the gates.

One in the group that entered the gates hurriedly looked behind towards his back. He heard the sound of a horn trumpet being heard from far away and looked at the flying ship flying on the sky.

He smiled brightly and turned around once again to walk deeper into the city.

While the battle against the knights of Radetza and the fompires started, Sigil, the killer of the same race, crossed the gates.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (3) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 4: The Shinsoo's of Earth (4)

Sigil was starving for evil deeds.

Maybe it was because he was imprisoned for a hundred years that Radetza was a tasty feast for him.

But he was patient. Because he had to instill a big fear in order to raise evil deeds the most effectively.

He was planning on entering the center of the city. When the battle intensified and the warriors in the battlefield were praying for victory, that was when he was planning to sentence death on everyone in Radetza. As dogs and pigs believed that they were safe, they would cry more loudly in front of a butchering knife.

Sigil smacked his lips several times in that short moment when he crossed the gates. He endured the urge to extend his hand and rip off every one that passed next to him.

And he finally passed the gates. The complete view of the great city of Radetza welcomed him. And at that moment Sigil hurriedly turned around and exerted some strength.

Kwagang!

Thunder fell from the sky. Precisely speaking, it was a huge arrow. The thing that was close to a javelin fell down precisely aiming for Sigil's head and Sigil could barely push back the javelin by a hairsbreadth.

The javelin got stuck in the ground and a loud sound exploded. There were sparks in it and right after that the second arrow flew towards him.

It was a terrifyingly precise aim. The ones that were near the gates let out bewildered noises at the first explosion made by the first javelin. There were some that looked around without

knowing what had happened.

Sigil didn't mind them. He just looked at the arrows flying towards him. There was a flying pirate ship beyond the feather of the arrow.

How?

He just moved his hand instead of asking. He grabbed the arrow that was moving following his head. He turned his body like that and threw the arrow in the direction it came from.

Imagining the expression his enemies would put at the unexpected counter-attack made him feel joy. Sigil clenched and loosened his hands that had turned numb because of the thunder and breathed out. He released his rage because his plans had gone astray.

The ground exploded. A radius of 30 meters around Sigil exploded and everything got destroyed. The gates broke and the ones that were on top of the gates burst out and died.

The tens of people that gathered to pass the gates had died in an instant. Silence came first and then screams were heard. Sigil let out a smile at the fear that poured down. The action just now was the greatest insult to the ones that had fired arrows towards him.

Come. Right, come.

Just how many will come? How many of you will come down to stop me?

Siri, that was on top of the flying ship, gulped down dry saliva. She, that had fired arrows by combining strengths with Tae Ho, was at a loss for words at the terrible scene that occurred below.

'You weren't wrong. If he had entered the center of the city, a more terrible thing would have happened. You did nothing wrong.'

Cuchulainn said. And Siri and Tae Ho agreed with his words but

it was hard to recognize it.

When the flying ship passed above the gates.

Tae Ho casually looked down the gates and discovered a red word among the white words. When someone that had a name that was written in a more clear red than Balzak appeared, Tae Ho could only make one decision.

Bracky parried away the arrow that returned. He, that was glaring as if he would jump down at any moment, turned to look at Ingrid.

Six of the eight warriors that had originally come to Midgard were following Ingrid in the flying ship. As for the other two and the four warriors of Odin's legion, they had followed Valkyrie Rasgrid and went to the front lines.

Bracky's question was clear. Who will stay here?

There was no time to think. Ingrid ordered immediately.

"Bracky, Harabal, and Notung will stop him from the front. Siri and Olmar, keep him in check on top of the flying ship."

She left five of six warriors and also left them with the flying ship.

But it wasn't enough. The strength he had displayed on the ground wasn't normal. Even though they were hundreds of meters high in the air they felt like all the hair in their bodies stood up.

Ingrid couldn't stay herself. She had to go to remove the danger of the holy land the Shinsoo had spoken about. The Shinsoo couldn't precisely say what it was but it was certain that it was a magical power. Because of that Ingrid had to be the one to go.

Siri turned to look at Tae Ho but she didn't say her opinion. Bracky glared at the ground once again and then started to swing his hammer to gather thunder as if he couldn't endure it anymore. Notung and Harabla also looked at the ground and took on fighting

stances.

Ingrid turned to look at Tae Ho. He nodded immediately and took out a summoning rock. He was planning to call Rolo to go with Ingrid.

However, Ingrid grabbed the hand of Tae Ho. She shook her head and said while smiling bitterly.

“So the time has finally come.”

There was a need to lessen time as much as they dispersed their forces. They had to resolve the thing in the holy land as fast as they could and had to come back to help Bracky’s group.

Ingrid took out a dragon wing coat from the air. It was the item Rasgrid had given her before going out to the front lines.

There was no more time to waste. Ingrid wore the dragon wing coat and recited the chant. She transformed into a golden dragon as if following her golden hair. Although it was a bit smaller than the white dragon Rasgrid had transformed into, her wings were rather bigger.

“Let’s go warrior Tae Ho.”

Tae Ho also didn’t waste time. He hurriedly rode on Ingrid and activated his saga.

“Go warriors!”

Ingrid flew from the ship after yelling, Olmar moved the ship to the surface of the ground and Bracky fired thunderbolts towards Sigil and jumped down.

Notung and Harabal also left the ship. Siri looked at the huge catapult that was installed in the pirate ship and then looked behind her for the last time. Ingrid, that was carrying Tae Ho on her back, was flying at an unbelievable speed.

[Saga: The one that controls dragons]

[Saga: The warrior that rides on Valkyries]

Ingrid trembled while flying at a high speed and got shocked. It wasn't only because she was sharing senses with Tae Ho.

[Valkyrie Leader: Ingrid]

The power of Idun was added to her, who was a Valkyrie of Njord. It promoted her to a higher rank.

“How surprising.”

Ingrid said in a low voice and Tae Ho started to think about another thing.

What will happen to Heda, that was already a Valkyrie of Idun, if she was added with Idun's strength? Will she also become a Valkyrie leader? Or will she become something beyond that?

Thunder fell down. It was the signal that the fight between Sigil and Bracky had started. Ingrid turned all the power she had obtained to flying. She flew towards the holy land like a blade crossing the land.

Sigil saw that while blocking Bracky's hammer and smiled. Because he knew very well that it was pointless. It wasn't something that one Valkyrie and one warrior could solve.

‘And it's the same for this place.’

To merely send five intermediate ranked warriors.

Bracky swung his hammer once again with all his strength. Sigil didn't dodge it and faced it head on.

Thunder exploded it and Sigil's chest also exploded.

However, Sigil didn't die. He didn't even step back, he just stood there.

It was a thrilling pain. Sigil realized that he was alive even though his flesh was crushed, his bones broke and the veins exploded. He laughed magnanimously and swung his fist towards Bracky.

Bracky bounced back. He reflexively threw his body back the moment the attack connected, but it was still meaningless. The fist that had all of Sigil's strength behind was that powerful.

Bracky clashed against the remains of the broken gate. The moment Sigil put back his fist, the wound that was on his chest had already healed.

“He's a regenerator! Use the power of a God!”

Harabal yelled and Sigil smiled once again. He clenched his fists roughly as if telling them to try.

Harabal and Notung charged at the same time and Siri pulled the trigger from a distant place.

A rough wind blew. Tae Ho looked down the ground. The fomiores and the warriors were still battling on the front lines. Rasgrid looked at Ingrid, that had transformed into a golden dragon, and frowned. The loud sound and the sound of thunder she had heard from far away weren't a mistake.

But she couldn't pull the warriors away easily. The reason why the front lines were maintained was because the warriors of Valhalla were there.

The fomiores that were at the front lines were certainly weak but that was compared to the standard of the warriors of Valhalla. The fomiores were really wicked and overwhelming monsters for the warriors of Midgard.

They had to hurry. Rasgrid unsheathed her sword and glared at the rear of the line. Korga, that was leading the fomiores, noticed the gaze of Rasgrid.

He had the same nature as the Tyrant Bress. He placed countless underlings in front of him as if telling her to come if she wished.

Rasgrid charged towards him and two warriors of Odin's legion chased her back. Ingrid continued to fly and passed the front lines.

The black cow, that was a Shinsoo of the earth, had said. There was an overwhelming amount of strength concentrated in the center of the holy land, that was the place where Loki and Thor had adventured together. It had said that the giant was planning to use the hog Shinsoo that had turned crazy to plot something and the Shinsoo was no different to a part of the holy land. That's why the Shinsoo could know that the entire holy land had fallen in fear.

The black cow spoke again. If they weren't able to stop it, it would be the end. That he got a premonition that could only be explained in that way.

Ingrid hurried even more. When they entered the forest, that could be said to be the entrance, Tae Ho activated the eyes of the dragon one more time. He glared towards the center of the holy land.

He could see a Shinsoo that was dying and a huge and powerful magic circle.

The knowledge of Tuatha De Danann told him that. That there were techniques of the fomoiries in that.

Ingrid also noticed that there were techniques of the giants used on it.

There were some fomoiries around as if guarding it, but rather than facing Ingrid they just escaped. Because of that Ingrid was able to save time and hurriedly landed in front of the magic circle.

The hog Shinsoo was actually cut out from its breath. It was actually alive because it was needed as a part of the magic circle in order to activate.

How much time had passed since flying to this place? Ingrid hurriedly turned back to a Valkyrie and glared at the magic circle. Tae Ho also used the 'eyes of the dragon' and checked the center of the magic circle.

And at some point they realized. Even Cuchulainn let out a

shocked voice.

The card Sigil had prepared.

Just as if they had promised.

The ground started to shake.

&

Sigil punched Notung's face. He grabbed his shoulder and arm and pulled it. It forcefully tore off his arm as if tearing the leg of a well roasted chicken.

Notung couldn't hold back screaming. Harabal yelled and charged towards that Sigil, and Sigil swung Notung's arm towards Harabal.

Notung, Harabal, and Bracky, that were facing Sigil head on, were a mess. In addition, Bracky had already used the 'son of the God that has returned'.

But of course, Sigil wasn't fine either. His fighting method, that could be called to be self-destructive, spent a lot of energy. He always sought the most effective way but he became a wild beast the moment he fought.

The ground shook from far away and Sigil laughed. The Valkyrie must have reached the magic circle by now and should feel the most extreme of despair. There was nothing she could do but could feel what was going to happen.

Sigil surged up into the air. He kicked Siri's arrow flying towards him and then jumped towards the flying ship. He was like a cannonball flying to the sky.

Siri fired her second arrow hurriedly and Siri grabbed that once again and landed on the flying ship.

"Hi."

Sigil said while smiling and Siri and Olmar moved at the same time.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo’s of Earth (4) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 5: The Shinsoo's of Earth (5)

The front lines that were being held by Rasgrid and Korga turned to become the central focus. The warriors of Valhalla and Radetza charged forward while having their morale increased by Rasgrid, and Korga gathered the fomoires and formed a solid and square shield.

While the small scaled fights kept repeating, the battle between Rasgrid and Korga shook the earth and the two of them thought the same thing. The first one to curse was Korga.

He realized what was that Sigil had prepared and also understood why he had told the fomoires to fight on the front lines.

He was a murderer that had even killed his own race to accumulate evil deeds. He wouldn't even see the fomoires, that were of a different race than him, as a meal.

Rasgrid fell in chaos. It was because she knew what was going to happen in the holy lands.

But what could she do? Did she have to tell the warriors to escape now? But if they did so, they would get caught by the fomoires. It was obvious they would suffer tremendous damage.

When she raised her head she saw Korga fleeing but Rasgrid couldn't do the same as him. She gritted her teeth and ordered to push back the fomoires.

She believed in Ingrid and Tae Ho and continued fighting.

&

The flying pirate ship fell. Olmar trembled while being stuck in the broken mast and Siri was collapsed on the ground. Sigil stepped on that Siri and put strength in his leg. He crushed Siri's abdomen and laughed.

However, Siri and Olmar didn't die like that. Sigil lost his left arm, in addition, his wounds weren't regenerating like before.

But he still looked at Bracky and Harabal, who were charging towards him, with a relaxed face. Notung, that had also lost one arm, was slow on running because he became limp.

But Sigil was prepared.

The holy lands had a main vein. He planted a vessel that was filled with the power of the giant of Earth Balgad deep in that vein and set up a magic circle using the Shinsoo of Earth as the catalyst.

The principle was simple. He would explode the vein to sweep up the surroundings and create a great earthquake.

It was obvious for the front lines but Radetza itself would collapse. It was fun to even enjoy how many would die.

By now, the Valkyrie would try to do anything and struggle to solve it. If that Valkyrie was quite experienced and intelligent she may somehow be able to remove the magic circle.

But Sigil didn't worry about that. It wasn't because he recognized Ingrid.

Because there was no time. They were completely lacking on time.

Sigil wasn't dumb. The reason he chose this time to attack wasn't only because he wanted to see a massacre in broad light.

Plenty of time had passed after installing the magic circle.

As the ground had started to shake, it had now entered the early phases.

Sigil closed his eyes even though the enraged Bracky was charging towards him. He listened to the groan coming from Siri that was under his feet and looked at a far place. The people that prayed looking at the warriors of Valhalla and believed that they would protect them.

The death that they wouldn't have imagined.

"It's the best."

Sigil opened his eyes. He kicked Siri towards Bracky and then threw a punch towards him that reflexively grabbed her.

And at that moment, the earth shook for the second time.

&

Ingrid breathed roughly. She read the structure of the magic circle and realized that the great earthquake would occur on the third time the ground shook.

If they measured the time, they didn't even have 5 minutes left. If Ingrid hadn't flown herself after becoming a dragon, then they would have faced the great earthquake as soon as they arrived.

However, Ingrid felt powerlessness. They were lacking on time. There was nothing they could do immediately.

Tae Ho didn't explain anything to Ingrid. He just glared at the magic circle with his 'eyes of the dragon'. He understood the structure of the magic circle, precisely speaking the great bomb Sigil had prepared, with the knowledge of Tuatha De Danann he had learned.

It was a really simple structure. It was just exploding the vessel that contained Balgad's power deep in the ground. Balgad's vessel was the key to create the earthquake.

Tae Ho closed his eyes. He breathed deeply and then smiled bitterly. It was crazy even though he thought of it but it was the only method.

'Gordius's knot.'

If he just untied it he could have become the king of Asia but the knot was too complicated and tied up tightly.

King Alexander decided to completely cut the knot to solve this challenge.

It was similar. It was crude the only method.

Tae Ho placed his hands on Ingrid's shoulder and then said. Ingrid put on a dumbfounded face and looked back at Tae Ho but there was no time to stay like that.

Ingrid turned into a dragon again. Tae Ho rode on her and Ingrid, that had become a Valkyrie leader, surged up to the sky.

They weren't escaping from the earthquake. She, who had surged high, took a great turn. She started to fly like falling to the ground and sent all of her magic power and strength to Tae Ho through the 'one that controls dragons'.

Tae Ho breathed deeply. He looked at the ground that was approaching them and pulled on Liberatus, that he received from king Ivar and activated his sagas in consecution.

[Saga: The charge of the warrior is like a storm]

[Saga: The one that controls gale and thunderbolts]

The reason they had surged up high to the sky was to gather wind and lightning. If they flew faster, they could gather a stronger wind and lightning.

Tae Ho used his attributes to finish up the wind and lightning. He concentrated his strength on Liberatus and activated another attribute. It was none other than the attribute of death.

Activating three attributes at the same time wasn't something to be compared to juggling with three balls. However, Rasgrid's hard training had its effect. Because his body remembered instead of his head. That was the reason Tae Ho could activate three attributes at the same time.

'Concentrate. Don't lose the moment.'

Cuchulainn said and Tae Ho looked at the center of the magic circle. He then threw Liberatus to the ground, that was now close to them.

The gale and lightning tore up the magic circle. Libertus, that was holding Ingrid's magic, fired off an incredible amount of magic power. She negated the magic contained in the breaking magic circle with a greater magic and erased it.

Liberatus got stuck deep in the ground. But that was all. It couldn't reach Balgad's vessel.

But Tae Ho still had one more card. The moment he threw Liberatus he took a great turn and clenched his fist when Ingrid started to fly up again. He activated the real strength of Liberatus, the power to liberate.

The reason why Tae Ho activated the death attribute and the reason why he used Liberatus!

The blades of Liberatus opened up and then Gae Bolg got fired from it. It had already left Tae Ho's hands but the magic and attributes recorded in Liberatus activated Gae Bolg.

‘Kill everything.’

Balgad's vessel, the magic circle, and the strength of the earthquake itself!

Three of five fragments were gathered.

In addition, the power of Tuatha De Danann was added. And although faint, the attribute of death and the charge of Ingrid, that had transformed into a Valkyrie, was also added.

The curse of death got activated from Gae Bolg. The deadly curse got spread in the earth just like Cuchulainn wanted and just like Tae Ho ordered.

The earth cried and the sound it made was a soundless one. Balgad's vessel got destroyed and the power that was inside of it got extinguished. The vein, that reacted due to the strong power of death, created an earthquake but that was merely a small one. It merely shook the holy lands a little.

Tae Ho cheered. Ingrid, that had depleted her magic power, landed almost as if crashing down but she also put on a smile.

And at the same time.

Korga, that looked towards the holy lands, frowned. Rasgrid put on a smile as if she knew that they would be able to do it this time too.

And that enraged Sigil. He heard the third earth shaking that was a bit sloppier and realized that something was wrong.

It was a perfect plan. Although he took a detour in the middle the plan was proceeding like normal. But everything crumbled in the end.

Sigil didn't look at the warriors of Valhalla anymore. He started to run towards the holy land like crazy. He would first kill the Valkyrie and the warrior no matter what they did. And would create the great earthquake however he could.

Notung and Harabal couldn't give chase to Sigil and collapsed. However, Bracky gritted his teeth and rose up. Siri vomited blood and then activated her saga. She transformed into a wolf and turned to look at Bracky.

Sigil charged forward and Siri and Bracky chased him back.

Ingrid, that had depleted all her magic and stamina, couldn't fight anymore. She was now leaning on the hog Shinsoo that had now died completely and Tae Ho felt Sigil's existence charging towards them fiercely.

He called Adenmaha and Rolo by using a summoning rock. He took Ingrid on Rolo's back and then said to Adenmaha.

"If things don't go as expected, flee."

Adenmaha transformed into a woman instead of replying and looked at the direction where Sigil was charging from. She wanted to step forward to try to buy a little bit more of time.

However, Sigil was a step ahead of her. Sigil, looked at Tae Ho and Adenmaha when he reached the entrance of the morest. He looked at Ingrid riding on Rolo's back that was escaping from far away.

“Bastard!”

Sigil roared and Bracky yelled more loudly behind him.

Lightning fell down. Siri collapsed out of exhaustion and couldn't move anymore. She transformed into a human again and started to sweat out like rain, and Bracky charged towards Sigil, that got hit by the lightning.

Bracky was also exhausted. He was already at his limit but he still swung his hammer towards Sigil. He extended his arm to grab his leg the moment he got hit by Sigil's fist and fell.

Sigil kicked Bracky. He breathed out roughly and glared at Tae Ho. Sigil released all of his strength and sneered at Siri and Bracky as if provoking Tae Ho.

Stupid warriors of Valhalla.

Trying to hang on looks so pitiful. It's so funny that they would be facing the death of one of their allies and the great earthquake after having chased him all the way here.

Bracky laid on the floor and didn't move. He had already lost consciousness. Siri gritted her teeth and gulped dry saliva. She looked at Sigil's back and smiled.

Because their actions weren't meaningless.

The short time Bracky had bought was really precious.

The sky turned dark as if it would rain at any moment. It was when midday was approaching.

Just like that day.

Just like when he fought against Balzak in the winter tree forest.

Sigil charged towards Tae Ho and Tae Ho didn't wait for him anymore.

[Synchro rate: 41%]

The accomplishment he had made by stopping the earthquake. In addition, the saga that got strengthened.

It was time. A white blade surged up from the Unknown sword piece. Tae Ho charged towards Sigil and activated his saga.

[Legendary ranked saga: Idun's warrior]

A light as bright as the morning glory shone. And at that moment Tae Ho could feel it.

That 'Idun's warrior' had transformed.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (5) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 6: The Shinsoo's of Earth (6)

'Idun's warrior' Tae Ho had first made was a combination of his saga and the geass.

He could activate a legendary ranked saga that amplified the amount of his power of a God by close to three times but instead, he couldn't use the power of a God for 15 days.

But it was different this time. He could feel it the moment he activated 'Idun's warrior'.

The restriction of 15 days disappeared. However, the amount of power of a God was still tripled and he could activate a legendary ranked saga.

There were several reasons for this.

It was normal for the geass to disappear the moment he got a restriction. Because receiving a restriction meant that he would soon break the pledge.

However, Tae Ho's geass didn't disappear completely. It became one with his saga just like Tae Ho wanted at the beginning. It melted in his saga.

The driving force that allowed him to activate 'Idun's warrior' was Kalsted's strength and the saga 'Idun's warrior'.

The moment he reached 40% Tae Ho's body and soul reached a new boundary as if he was shedding skin.

Everyone from Asgard and Midgard that saw Tae Ho's battles held 'Idun's warrior' in their mouths. Idun's warrior was now like Tae Ho's nickname.

Tae Ho's basic capabilities increased. His saga got strengthened.

And the result for that was the current Tae Ho.

Golden light got emanated from Tae Ho's entire body and he could feel another difference.

It wasn't only because his basic capabilities had strengthened. Even though he was injecting the same amount of power of a God, he could feel that he was better than before.

‘My warrior Tae Ho.’

Idun's voice was heard clearly. It was just like he was with Idun. He felt like Idun's hands were overlapping with his.

It was a really warm light. Tae Ho looked at the front and saw Sigil's contorted face. Tae Ho mumbled Heda's name and charged forward.

There was no loud sound but he was fast. Even though he charged towards Sigil head on, Sigil ended up losing sight of him.

Tae Ho realized it the moment he crossed that distance. It was something he knew through the experiences of the past months.

It wasn't that he could execute 40% of Kalsted's strength just because the synchro rate had reached 40%.

Because Kalsted's strength was the result of his physical abilities, the countless completed skills, items, and Tae Ho's influence. Only when all those things were added could he execute a transcendent strength.

He still couldn't reach to Kalsted's power. He had merely reached a fourth of his strength but even so, there was still something Tae Ho could do.

Because the one that had made the strongest Kalsted was Tae Ho himself!

Tae Ho understood Kalsted's swordsmanship better and received his techniques. He charged towards Sigil like an enraged dragon.

He was at the left of Sigil. Sigil, that had his left arm cut off, couldn't react immediately. Because of that, the moment Sigil

realized that Tae Ho was going to charge towards him he pulled back and tried to put Tae Ho on the front again.

It happened like he predicted. Tae Ho increased his speed even more and disappeared from Sigil's sight, that was trying to put Tae Ho in front of him, once again.

It was also the left this time and Sigil realized that. However, that was trying to put Tae Ho in front of him's attack was faster. The white sword Tae Ho was wielding slashed Tae Ho's waist and at that moment Tae Ho swung his left arm from below. His posture was that of throwing a dagger.

[Saga: Warrior's equipment]

He wielded two weapons at the same time. The dagger Tae Ho threw stabbed Sigil's chest, that got slashed in his waist and was falling back. But Tae Ho didn't end it there and held a new weapon with his left hand.

The dagger that was stuck in Sigil's chest didn't disappear. The dagger, Bloody Mary, that had a bleeding effect continued to do its task while being stuck in Sigil's chest.

The 'warrior's equipment' also got stronger. He could now operate several weapons at the same time.

Sigil cried and swung his fist. It was an overwhelming strength and speed. Even though he created a distance of a fist he felt like all the hair of his body was raising.

Tae Ho saw with the 'eyes of the dragon'. He looked at Sigil's name and his weaknesses. They were weaknesses he couldn't see when he was at the gates of Radetza.

It wasn't only because Tae Ho got stronger through 'Idun's warrior'.

The warriors of Valhalla.

They were the wounds made by each one of them. The weak

points. Their battle exhausted Sigil.

Kagagagagagang!

The gale in the sword sped up. The weapons Tae Ho was holding with his two hands hacked Sigil without stopping. Tae Ho concentrated and concentrated once again after stopping breathing. He stabbed his weapons in each and every weakness of Sigil.

The number of weapons he could currently make was five.

Excluding the one he was wielding with his right hand, four daggers got stuck in Sigil. The moment Tae Ho clenched his fist, it acted in concert and created a strong curse.

Sigil cried. The four daggers exploded at the same time and several shards of blades tore up Sigil's insides.

Tae Ho let out a breath and then realized that it was too early. Sigil roared like a beast and swung his fist towards Tae Ho. Sigil's attack, that seemed like it split the air, exploded in front of his eyes.

He parried back with his left arm. Sigil's fist, that got its trajectory distorted, hit the air and a thunderous sound was heard. Tae Ho's left arm got twisted in a vague trajectory and didn't move. Tae Ho swung his fist that was gripping the swords and hit Sigil's sides. Sigil let out a groan but didn't fall back. He swung his head and tried to headbutt Tae Ho.

Tae Ho couldn't dodge it completely. The attack that held magic power behind it pushed Tae Ho far away.

Sigil cursed out. He looked at his right arm that had become a mess and activated his regenerative power. Right then, the dagger Tae Ho threw struck his right arm once again.

Sigil tried to ignore it. He tried to push away the dagger with the explosive regeneration characteristic of regenerators. However, the dagger shone at that moment. The power of life strengthened

Sigil's regeneration.

Sigil was different to Balzak. He sensed danger instinctively and tore off his right arm by his own. It was possible because the power of a God held in the dagger was an amplification. The time needed to amplify the regenerative power and kill Sigil was longer than Balzak's.

Sigil's right arm fell to the ground. He charged towards Tae Ho instead of looking at his half-destroyed arm. Although he had lost his two arms, he still had his two legs and his teeth.

Tae Ho moved quickly once again but Sigil didn't miss him completely. He read his movements in an instant and grasped the direction Tae Ho was moving to. He executed a kick that had an overwhelming strength behind it.

But Tae Ho also saw that. The wind pressure made by the kick was like a storm. Tae Ho concentrated even more. He lowered his posture and dodged Sigil's kick. He then surged up and slashed Sigil's chest.

Sigil vomited blood but he also didn't fall back this time. He laughed with a face having become bloody. His yellow eyes goggled out.

Sigil was enraged. He resented the hundred years he was imprisoned.

For him to stop the great earthquake and push him to this point.

Sigil could feel the eyes of the giant of earth, Balgad. He looked at Tae Ho that was glaring at him and was preparing to launch the final attack.

Not yet. You are still far away warrior of Valhalla.

Sigil spat out blood. He laughed once again and released all his evil deeds. He awakened the full strength that he had gathered by slaughtering his own race.

“Master!”

Adenmaha yelled. Tae Ho, that was preparing his attack, reacted immediately. He dodged the evil deeds that were expanding as if exploding out of Sigil and moved like thunder.

It was a red and dense aura. That aura tried to take the shape of a giant.

The giant that had dyed his hands with the blood of his own race.

Sigil was at its center. Although the giant still hadn't manifested completely, it emanated an unbelievable strength.

The torso of the giant that had surged up the forest was seen well even from the battlefield. The warriors and the fomoires forgot about the fight and turned to look at the holy land because of the chill that gave them the evil deeds.

Sigil laughed. The giant cried tears of blood and looked at Tae Ho. But Tae Ho didn't stupidly wait for his transformation to end. He also didn't get overwhelmed by Sigil's evil deeds.

It was still incomplete. He had an opening.

So he would slash it. Now that he had dropped his guard by having burst out in laughter before it got complete.

He gripped his sword.

It was the first unique ranked weapon Kaslted had obtained.

Sword of light. A simple but strong weapon that transformed the power of the user into a blade.

It was epic ranked right now. He could do things that not even Kalsted could do.

‘My warrior Tae Ho.’

He could hear Idun's voice. She grabbed on Tae Ho's hands, that was holding the grip of the sword.

Her warmth was transmitted to him. The power of a God

overflowed. He could feel her love.

Let's go.

Tae Ho surged up. He didn't save his strength and poured all of it to the Sword of light. A golden light shone greatly and everyone that was looking at Sigil turned to look at Tae Ho.

Tae Ho swung his sword. At that moment a blade of golden light surged up from the cross shaped sword of light.

That thing was really huge. It kept becoming longer even while swinging it. It became thicker.

A huge sword that was longer than ten meters, or perhaps more than twenty meters.

Sigil fired his evil deeds but Idun's power protected Tae Ho. The sword Tae Ho swung slashed the body of the huge and red giant.

The evil deeds scattered. The thing split up before completing itself and then crumbled down and scattered.

Sigil roared and Tae Ho kicked the air. He transformed the Sword of light into the Burst lance and stabbed Sigil's chest.

Bang!

Sigil and Tae Ho became one and crashed on the ground. The first that touched the ground was Sigil. He glared at Tae Ho with eyes full of veins and cursed him.

Tae Ho didn't hear that as Idun protected him. Heda's blessing protected Tae Ho.

Full burst.

The last attack.

Sigil's body exploded. Red light surged up from the broken body and then it split up into several lights and scattered towards the warriors of Valhalla.

Tae Ho received the baptism of runes and extended his arms.

Golden light appeared from Tae Ho's body. The voice of Idun that he could hear clearly became even more clear.

[Synchro rate: 43%]

The new saga that was added to that. The stories of Tae Ho and Kalsted that became one and created one more story.

[Saga: Giant slayer]

In Black Fortress, Svartalfheim, in the winter tree forest and right in this place.

Tae Ho turned to look at Siri and Bracky. Although Siri was breathing roughly while lying down, Bracky was laughing while groaning and was enjoying it.

“Are you okay?”

She had originally come to help him.

There was no opening to butt in Tae Ho's and Sigil's fight. So Adenmaha became a spectator from beginning to end and sat in front of Tae Ho and asked.

Tae Ho pinched on Adenmaha's cheek with his right arm that could be said that was fine and said in a low voice.

“Let me borrow your strength.”

So that he could finish it properly.

Adenmaha looked at Sigil's fragments and didn't see anything to finish it up. Tae Ho explained things to her that was tilting her head, and Adenmaha put on a difficult face but then laughed as if she couldn't do anything about it. She fulfilled Tae Ho's wish.

The red and huge evil giant got cut off by the Sword of light.

Korga and the fomoiros started to flee and Rasgrid controlled the warriors of Radetza along the warriors of Valhalla and started to chase after fomoiros recklessly. Because of that, the warriors of Radetza that remained on the battlefield could see it.

The huge apple tree made with golden light that surged up in the place where the evil giant was at and the symbols of Valhalla that were above it.

Rasgrid blinked unconsciously. The warriors of Odin's legion burst out of laughter.

Because they could clearly know with just that. Just who was the one that had slain the evil giant with the Sword of light, who was the one that removed the uneasiness felt from the holy lands.

“Idun's warrior.”

“For Idun.”

“For Idun.”

“For the warriors of Valhalla!”

The warriors of Radetza said and that soon became a big cheer that filled the battlefield.

“Are you satisfied now?”

Adenmaha turned to look at the battlefield and Tae Ho nodded at her question. He lied down on the ground and smiled.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (6) > End

Episode 24/Chapter 7: The Shinsoo's of Earth (7)

Sigil got taken care by Tae Ho. Korga fled and the knights of Radetza succeeded in defending Radetza. They could also stop the destruction of the holy lands and the surrounding lands.

But it wasn't that there were no damages. The damages the warriors of Valhalla suffered was especially severe.

Olmar, that was pierced in the mast, was right about to die. Even though he was a warrior of Valhalla that had a superhuman physique, in the end, his body was still made of flesh and blood. He would only die after suffering a lethal blow.

If Tae Ho had arrived a little later and if he wasn't a warrior of Idun that handled the power of life, it was certain that Olmar's fate wouldn't have been the same.

"I saw Valhalla for a moment."

Olmar mumbled with an almost dead face. Tae Ho pushed all his power into his wound and turned to look behind him. The Valkyries were roaming the battlefield with a half spiritual body as if retrieving the dead warriors. Although they couldn't be seen by the eyes of humans, the warriors of Valhalla could see them.

"It's still too early to become a steel warrior."

Notung approached while limping and smirked. When the warriors of Valhalla died, their souls would become one with the steel dolls made by the dwarves and would turn to become steel warriors.

"Yeah. Thanks."

Olmar expressed his thanks and then fell asleep after smiling without strength.

Although Olmar was the only one that was on the verge of death,

the other ones weren't safe either.

Notung lost one arm. Harabal got hit in his chest by a heavy blow and couldn't breathe properly because of that and as Siri had her insides messed up and had even forced herself to run, she started to vomit up blood consecutively.

The one that could be said that was fine was Bracky but you could see that he was also really exhausted.

Garmr's soul fragment couldn't be discovered. Although they read a trace of the fragment from the corpse of the Shinsoo through the two fragments that Ingrid possessed, it really was just a trace.

It was unfortunate but perhaps an obvious thing. Because this time, the giants were various steps ahead of them. Just looking at this situation they could say that they had succeeded things beyond their expectations.

"You have done well warrior Tae Ho. You should also go to rest now."

Tae Ho was already lying down even without having Ingrid telling him that. The warriors of Valhalla that returned with Rasgrid moved Tae Ho and the others to the lodging.

There was no divine message maybe because he was so exhausted he couldn't even dream or perhaps Idun was being considerate of him. Tae Ho could enjoy a long and deep sleep.

And the next afternoon.

Tae Ho barely rose from his bed and smiled bitterly in the emergency room where the warriors of Valhalla were at.

Siri dropped her body with a strengthless face and Notung and Harabal were still asleep. Only Bracky was fine as he could use the 'son of the God that has returned' because one day has passed. He tore a well roasted chicken leg and checked on Olmar's state.

Bracky heard Tae Ho waking up and then asked after checking on him.

“So you woke up. Are you able to walk?”

“If you give me a chicken leg.”

Tae Ho glanced at the big tray Bracky was holding and said. Bracky laughed and approached Tae Ho’s bed.

“I will also give you a cup of alcohol.”

Looking that he was offering alcohol to a patient, Bracky was also an exemplary warrior of Valhalla. Tae Ho, that has already completely become a warrior of Valhalla, ate the chicken legs recklessly and drank alcohol. They both tasted as honey.

And Siri, that was looking at the two of them, said with a dead voice.

“Eat outside, outside.....”

And don’t emanate the smell.

She wanted to eat something but didn’t have the strength to eat. It seemed like gulping was hard as her insides were rotten.

Tae Ho and Bracky got out of the lodging with a sorry face.

And how long had passed since they sat down in the hall and ate the chicken legs? Bracky finished eating with sucking his fingers and looked at Tae Ho and asked.

“Looking at how you eat, it seems like you are fine. Then let’s go to a place with me.”

“Where?”

There was a high possibility for there to be a banquet as it was the day after the victory.

As Tae Ho looked at him with slightly expecting eyes, Bracky smirked and said.

“Valkyrie Rasgrid said that she was going to give an offering.

Um....what was it? Did she say that it was to soothe the soul of the Shinsoo and purify the holy lands? It will start in a little bit.”

“Let’s go together.”

He was moderately full. It would be good to go to sleep again but he couldn’t miss Rasgrid’s ceremony. There was the reason that he couldn’t miss Rasgrid wearing a dress but there was another proper reason.

“Idun’s warrior.”

“Oh, so that person is the one.”

“Bracky is also there.”

“For Idun.”

“For Thor.”

Just like expected, almost all of the warriors were gathered at the place. No, it wasn’t merely that. Almost all citizens of Radetza, be it men and women, were gathered in the holy lands and greeted them.

Because for them, Rasgrid’s ceremony was an event they wouldn’t be able to see in their lives again.

Tae Ho answered with a smile and waved his hand towards the ones that were looking at him with moved expressions.

“Let Idun’s blessing accompany you.”

As he spoke like that with a gentle face, the people got moved even more and held Idun’s name in their mouths. If there was something like a belief gage, it would have already been filled.

Bracky looked at Tae Ho and the people of Radetza with an absurd face. Tae Ho heard his soundless laugh and looked up at Bracky.

“Why?”

“It’s nothing. I just remembered of the enlisting officer of Skald’s

knights.”

That friend also sold stuff really well.

There were really comfortable things if he hung out with Bracky, that was easily spottable thanks to his big body. As the sea of people split up with just having Bracky walk in the front, it wasn't that hard to walk up to the altar.

“Did you come?”

King Harpdan greeted Tae Ho and Bracky while smiling. Next to him were the warriors of Valhalla that had arrived first.

It seemed like some of them didn't see Harpdan in a good light as he just stepped back in some of the fights but it was different for Bracky. Because the king had a role for himself. The king that only fought on the front lines wasn't the only good king.

In the first place, Tae Ho didn't even think much about the king having to fight on the front lines so he just received the greeting of king Harpdan like Bracky. And then king Harpdan seemed to have sensed the cold eyes of the warriors of Valhalla that he got really happy and offered them to take a seat.

Rasgrid's offering started.

She, who was wearing a white dress, was really beautiful and resembled a Goddess.

The warriors of Radetza focused on each and every movement of her hands. It was also a special case for Rasgrid to wear a dress that the warriors of Valhalla also opened their eyes widely as if they couldn't miss a single moment. Especially the warriors of Odin's legion showed colorful expressions as if they were grandfathers that have come to look at their granddaughters in a festival.

Rasgrid burned down the corpse of the hog Shinsoo. She purified the body that got dirtied by Garmr's soul fragment and the work of the giants and stepped to stop the soul of the Shinsoo to become an evil one.

Bracky's nose twitched as if he was expecting the smell of pork meat roasting, but unfortunately enough all of the smoke and smell rose to the sky.

The cry of the hog was heard in all the holy lands as if answering to the purified soul.

Rasgrid sang with a gentle face. It was the song that soothed the souls of the warriors and led them to Valhalla.

“It's a Valkyrie.”

“A Valkyrie!”

“Ohh Odin!”

The warriors of Radetza yelled. It was because the sky opened up and half spiritualized Valkyries came down to retrieve the souls.

As Rasgrid's short but thick offering ended, the remaining cow Shinsoo expressed its thanks. It turned to look at the warriors of Valhalla and Rasgrid, that were seated in the upper seats and said.

‘If you need my help come to me at any time. I will certainly go running towards you to give you the little strength I have.’

The name of the black cow was Rousseau.

Bracky and the other warriors just nodded as if casually accepting it but Tae Ho engraved its name firmly on his head.

And on that night.

Rasgrid and Ingrid gathered the warriors of Valhalla. The meeting took place in the lodging of the warriors as if being considerate of the warriors that couldn't move properly yet.

Ingrid said without hitting around the bush.

“Valhalla decided to deploy the warriors in Midgard for a while longer. However, the warriors are currently really exhausted. Because of that, an order came down saying that the warriors that first came down with me should return to Valhalla.”

Simply said, it was an exchange.

“We are planning to give an offering to call Bifrost three days later. Until then, you are free to rest.”

Rasgrid added.

They were all actually exhausted and it seemed like they had plenty of benefits they had gained in Midgard that none of them had complaints and just nodded. Siri had a somewhat relieved expression.

‘Now that I see, her expression was rather bad when she came down right?’

Did she have several bad memories of Midgard?

Tae Ho just turned his eyes instead of asking recklessly or imagining things by himself. If it’s something he had to know, then Siri would tell him first.

The three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Rasgrid wore the armor of Valkyries along with Ingrid and started the offering. As the fire in the altar became so big it could touch the sky, a rainbow stair fell from the sky.

“For Valhalla.”

“For the saviors of Radetza.”

“Ohh Odin.”

“For Idun.”

Several voices were heard. They were all excited.

Tae Ho, that was climbing the stairs with Siri, waved his hand towards the people of Radetza that were cheering them fervently. And then he opened his eyes widely and looked at a place.

“For Idun.”

Not being able to hear the low and gentle voice in the middle of the cheering was the normal thing, but he could hear that. As he

exchanged glances with Helga, that was calling the name of Idun, she started to blush and put on a brighter smile. The familiar warriors of Kataron were next to her.

When will he come here again?

Tae Ho waved his hand towards the good junior he would get someday, but that would be good to face her the later possible and looked at his front again. He climbed to Valhalla while being led by Ingrid.

&

“It’s been a while, a really long while.”

As they reached the hall of Valhalla, Bracky put on a fresh face and said. Although the expedition lasted for less than a month, the sensation it gave was different perhaps because it was in Midgard.

“You have done well. I heard that there was a banquet prepared so enjoy it to your hearts contents.”

Ingrid said with her business like face but her eyes and voice were quite soft.

The warriors of Valhalla nodded with an accustomed face. Because it was a really obvious thing for them to participate in a banquet after an expedition.

But there were always exceptions.

Tae Ho looked towards the wharf instead of thinking of enjoying himself in the night banquet. He could see Heda just like he expected, waiting for him.

“Tae Ho.”

“Heda.”

“I’m also here.”

Adenmaha said behind Heda. He didn’t call Heda after Sigil’s battle as he was really exhausted and was focusing on resting.

Tae Ho participated in all the night banquets after an expedition when he was an inferior ranked warrior but after he became an intermediate ranked warrior he never participated in it.

Maybe it was because of Murphy's law that every time he returned, something urgent occurred. The most recent example was Scathach. Because taking her and returning to Idun's legion was the top priority. The situation wasn't one that he could participate and slowly enjoy the night banquet.

Tae Ho breathed deeply and looked at Heda. It was really nice to see her maybe because they saw each other in a month. He wanted to return quickly and tell her the remaining story and also eat the food made by her.

However, it was when he was about to move towards Heda.

"Hey, hey."

Bracky grabbed on Tae Ho's neck. He then pulled him towards him and said in a low voice.

"You aren't planning on returning like that, right?"

"He shouldn't."

"Nope."

"Will he?"

"That's nonsense."

The warriors said in a low voice with Notung having started it. Their eyes all weren't normal and Siri just laughed soundlessly.

It seemed like he would get stabbed if he didn't participate in the banquet.

'Well, we all suffered together.'

Tae Ho made a gesture with his hand towards Bracky as if telling him to calm down and then approached Heda.

"Um, Heda?"

As he said rather sloppily, Heda turned to look at the warriors of Valhalla and nodded as if she understood.

“Interaction with the other warriors is also important. I will come later.”

The Valkyrie Heda could participate in a night banquet whenever she wanted but it was different for Adenmaha. He couldn't just leave her standing on the wharf so she had to return along with Heda for now.

It seemed like they had become obstacles unexpectedly that Heda appeased the dispirited Adenmaha and returned to the dock.

Bracky placed his big arm on Tae Ho's shoulders that was looking at the two people leaving regretful eyes.

“Now, let's go. It's your first time on a banquet for intermediate ranked warriors, right?”

“The class is different compared to the inferior rank.”

“If there's another expedition that would return today, they will join us.”

“Is that the only thing? In this banquet, every warrior or Valkyrie that is on their day off can participate. Starting from the intermediate rank, not only Valkyries of other legions participate but shieldmaidens are also seen frequently.”

The warriors of Valhalla talked as if they were in a good mood.

And just like they said, the night banquet for an intermediate ranked warrior was special.

When they reached the banquet after being led by Ingrid, several warriors were already drinking among themselves.

Tae Ho thought that the banquet for the inferior ranked warriors was already amazing but the banquet for the intermediate ranked warriors was beyond that. There were more kinds of food and the decorations were also flashy.

“Ohh, so Bjorn is over there.”

Bracky found Bjorn, that seemed like he would be at all the places, and said. Bjorn also seemed to have recognized the group that he raised his cup high.

It was then.

There was someone approaching the group.

It wasn't a warrior but a Valkyrie. She, that had long black hair was beautiful and confident like a Valkyrie should. Each and every step of hers was filled with energy.

It was a Valkyrie they saw for the first time. It seemed like that was also the case for Bracky and the others that they blinked and looked at the Valkyrie with expecting eyes.

But the one the Valkyrie had business with wasn't Bracky, Notung, Harabal nor Siri.

The black haired Valkyrie shared a greeting with Ingrid and then approached her and smiled.

“Warrior, do you remember me? I told you that I would be waiting in the night banquet.”

Just who was her?

Tae Ho tilted his head but then opened his eyes widely. She wasn't a Valkyrie he saw for the first time. He had certainly seen her before.

“Do you remember now?”

Tae Ho nodded. He could only do so.

Because it was her. The first Valkyrie Tae Ho faced since being born and the one that led him to Valhalla.

“I'm Valkyrie Hildegarde. The ones close to me call me Hilde.”

She smiled brightly and then hugged Tae Ho.

< Episode 24 – The Shinsoo's of Earth (7) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 1: Paul's sword (1)

What Tae Ho felt at Hildegarde's fervent hug was that it hurt.

She, who was wearing an armor that covered her chest and shoulders with an especially hard material, wasn't muddy. She put more strength in her arms embracing Tae Ho once and then stepped back.

Valkyrie Hildegarde.

The one that had brought Tae Ho to Valhalla.

She had black hair and a blue armor that suited her well. Her cheerfulness, that was a bit different to Reginleif, could be felt in her expression and her small movements.

Tae Ho breathed in for now. As he calmed down his surprised heart he became rather composed.

When he first entered Valhalla, he really wanted to meet the Valkyrie that was now in front of him. Where was this place, why had he come to Valhalla, and how was the situation turning? He didn't want to ask about one or two things.

But it was different now.

The questions he had were almost fully answered.

This place was Valhalla, where the souls of the great warriors gathered at. The warriors of Valhalla were the warriors that protected Asgard and the nine realms from the giants and demons.

It was a rather strange thing that Tae Ho, that wasn't from Midgard, got brought here but even so it wasn't unprecedented.

And based on the experiences he had accumulated until now, there were almost no probabilities for the Valkyrie in front of him to hold all the answers. Because it wasn't that she had brought him out of her own will.

But still, Tae Ho asked her once and heard the answer he had

expected.

“That was also the first time I brought someone from another world.”

The method the Valkyries gathered souls was simple. They would wait on the battlefield they were designated and if some warriors died over there she would bring the ones she judged as being righteous to enter Valhalla or fitted the requisites, or just let them be.

“The thing that decides on which battlefield we have to be is the Celestial sphere the king of Gods Odin and the Goddess of magic Freya made together.”

In other words, it meant that it was decided by a machine and wasn't willed by someone.

But of course, there may be the possibility for someone to have manipulated the machine, but that was really difficult and unnecessary. There was no one that would benefit from having brought Tae Ho to Valhalla.

‘Well, if there was should it be Idun?’

Cuchulainn said and Tae Ho ignored him.

Hildegarde kept speaking.

“Anyways, I'm really glad for us to have met like this. I belong to Freya's legion.”

“Freya's legion?”

The Goddess of love and beauty Freya.

Tae Ho had seen warriors from almost all the legions but he had never seen a warrior that belonged to Freya's legion.

As Tae Ho put on a surprised face, Siri that was next to him, said in a low voice.

“Almost all of the Valkyries that retrieve the souls of the warriors

belong to Odin's or Freya's legion."

The reason was simple. Odin and Freya were the ones that made Valhalla.

"I thought that you would become an intermediate ranked warrior in a short time. Because you had the quality to do so. Take pride in yourself as you are the first soul I led."

Hildegarde laughed as she was really proud of herself and then asked while tilting her head.

"But you belong to Idun's legion?"

"Yes."

"How marvelous. It has been a really, really long while since a new warrior entered Idun's legion. It must have been a dozen years...no, the first time since the Great War. I obviously thought that you would enter Odin's or Freya's legion."

The two things piqued his interest.

He did know that there were scarce newcomer warriors in Idun's legion but for him to be the first since the Great War. There was a possibility for Hildegarde to be misinformed but whatever the case, it seemed like it was true that it has been a dozen years.

"When the souls don't have any particular God they served, the promising ones usually go to Odin's or Freya's legion. I could have never imagined that you would go to Idun's legion. I was planning to teach you the path of the warrior myself if you came to Freya's legion."

'Was it really a plot of Idun?'

Tae Ho ignored Cuchulainn's words once again and pointed at the empty table.

"Why don't we sit down?"

"That would be good."

Hildegarde laughed and took the lead and Tae Ho followed her back. Bracky and the warriors were looking at Tae Ho, that had attained a place to have alcohol with the Valkyrie, with taciturn eyes and then scattered. And he didn't know why but Siri followed him.

“It's for surveillance.”

He didn't know for whom or for what it was but Tae Ho didn't refute for now.

The time with Hildegarde wasn't as long as he thought. Hildegarde wanted to listen to things related to Idun's legion and the world Tae Ho originally used to live but she didn't have the time to do so. She received a sudden call from Freya's legion and stood up from her seat after emptying her glass.

“Valkyries at the front lines are always the busiest. I will wait for the day we stand on the same battlefield.”

Hildegarde smiled brightly and then placed her lips on Tae Ho's forehead.

“Let Freya's blessing accompany you.”

‘One more blessing from a Valkyrie has been added. A smile appears on the face of the Valkyrie collector Tae Ho.’

Cuchulainn was saying a lot of nonsense today. Tae Ho also ignored him this time and then expressed etiquette towards Hildegarde by hitting his chest.

He didn't know if it was inevitable or a coincidence but Heda returned not too long after Hildegarde left. As the warriors of Valhalla had all scattered and were drinking among themselves, Tae Ho chose to return quickly.

“I will return in a while. See you later.”

Siri waved her hand while sitting down and Tae Ho moved to the dock with Heda. He was just looking at Heda's back, that was

preparing the wooden boat as usual, and said casually.

“Um, Heda.”

“Yes?”

“I heard that it has been tens of years since a warrior entered Idun’s legion.”

Heda flinched. Tae Ho laughed unconsciously and started to tell her about the meeting he had with Hildegarde. And then Heda pouted her lips and said.

“I acted a bit calm. It’s embarrassing to act excited.”

She did bring Tae Ho to Idun’s legion as if nothing had happened but actually, Heda was really excited that day. No, she was nervous. She even offered him a cigarette she didn’t even smoke.

Actually, it was something she could only say it now but she was glad that Tae Ho said he wouldn’t smoke it. She did have it in case a new warrior entered but she hadn’t actually used it. There was also the probability of it having turned bad because of how long it was there.

Tae Ho just looked at Heda refuting back and put on a smile and said.

“So that was the case. You were pressing it down. You forced yourself to act calm.”

Heda flushed. She looked at Tae Ho with resentful eyes and then pouted again.

“I, I can act a bit tough.”

In addition, Tae Ho was really bewildered on that day. If Heda was also bewildered then Tae Ho’s uneasiness would have become bigger.

Tae Ho also knew that truth really well. Because of that he just laughed instead of teasing her.

‘How far you go is always important.’

While Cuchulainn unexpectedly said some helping words, time flowed fast and they could soon see the residence right in front of them. Adenmaha, that had the shape of a sea serpent, greeted Tae Ho and Heda.

“You came?”

A sea serpent that was just pouting its head on a misty lake was something really scary, but as it was Adenmaha they were talking about they didn’t think of that at all.

Heda tied up the wooden boat and then said.

“Go greet Idun-nim.”

Because the first thing you had to do when you returned to the residence was to greet Idun.

‘She’s sulking. You won’t be able to receive her blessing for quite a while.’

Tae Ho placed Gae Bolg in Unnir to block Cuchulainn’s teasing voice and walked towards the shrine. As soon as he opened the door, a green field spread in front of them.

“My warrior Tae Ho.”

It was Idun, that was the same as always. As soon as Tae Ho expressed his manners Idun said again.

“I’m glad that you are healthy.”

“It’s thanks to your blessing.”

Idun smiled brightly at Tae Ho’s answer and then extended her hand to raise him up.

“My warrior Tae Ho. I have many things I want to show you. Thanks to you, my believers in Midgard increased by a lot. In addition, you should also see this. A shrine was built up.”

As Idun waved her hand lightly, two circle scenes appeared in the

air.

“It’s my shrine. I’m able to see it like this.”

King Sven and his advisor Ube was seen in the first scene. The two people had built up several shrines of Idun in several places of the island, just like they promised Tae Ho.

In the second scene, they could see Helga praying. It was Idun’s shrine that king Ivar had set up.

“Warriors holding me in their hearts have increased. Will you listen to their voices?”

As Idun spoke excitedly, Tae Ho also got as excited as her. As he nodded fervently, Idun laughed and waved her hand again. The voices of the warriors were heard in another scene.

“Oh valiant and beautiful Idun, give me strength and courage.”

“I heard the story of Idun’s legion that’s filled with beautiful Valkyries. I also want to go there.”

“I saw the flying pirate ship. For only a part of the treasures that Idun has to be that much. It’s really incredible. I’m sure it’s a great army even in Valhalla.”

“Ragnar said that you sold a lot of stuff.”

The last one was Idun. While Tae Ho cleared his throat another voice was heard again. It was the voice of a woman this time.

“I want to meet Idun’s warrior that came from Valhalla again.”

It was the princess of Kataron, Helga. She was drawing an image of Tae Ho in her head that has rescued her and her siblings.

“Hmm, so that’s the case.”

Idun said with a vague voice. Although he couldn’t see her because of the light, he was sure that her eyes were sharp right now.

While Tae Ho was still perplexed, Idun waved her hand to erase

all the scenes.

“It is a really amazing achievement to the point I had to think really hard about what reward I should give you. So won’t you wait for a moment? I will soon prepare something suitable for your achievement.”

How can he say no in this situation? As Tae Ho answered that he would, Idun nodded slowly.

“We have many things to talk about. Although you did have an audience with me I couldn’t talk to you as you were always training. We have to talk about ‘Idun’s warrior’ that has transformed but I think it would be better to speak to Ragnar and Scathach about that.”

Because it was related to a saga and a geass.

Idun finished speaking and grabbed on Tae Ho’s hands. It was really warm and soft. It was the same sensation he got when he connected with Idun when he used ‘Idun’s warrior’.

“But.....my warrior Tae Ho.”

Idun paused and said. When Tae Ho looked at her Idun slightly closed the distance between Tae Ho and said.

“You called Heda’s name in the decisive moment this time too.”

The name Tae Ho called before swinging the Sword of light wasn’t Idun’s but Heda’s name.

As Tae Ho flinched, Idun let go of Tae Ho’s hands and turned in a circle.

“So that was the case. You called out Heda’s name even though you were connected with me. That was what happened.”

Although she was imitating Heda, it felt like there were blades in her words.

As Tae Ho struggled without being able to answer anything, Idun giggled as if it was all a joke.

“Just like I told you before, the most important thing is that you returned safely. So don’t worry too much. But....call out my name at times too. I’m rather disappointed. Understand?”

How will he not call her when the Goddess tells him like that? It was weird to say that he would but he decided to answer something first.

“I will also call Idun-nim’s name from now on.”

“Right, that’s something a playboy would say.”

By now, he became certain that she was teasing him.

Idun giggled this time too and then calmed down her breathing and fixed her expression and looked at Tae Ho.

“My warrior Tae Ho. You have done really well. I’m really proud of you.”

They were just some words instead of a material reward, but Tae Ho could feel a sense of accomplishment fill his heart.

Although it wasn’t that the number of warriors increased in Idun’s legion or there was a noticeable change, but he felt rewarded based on his efforts.

“Let my blessing accompany you.”

Idun placed her lips on Tae Ho’s forehead.

&

The next morning, Tae Ho got greatly satisfied after eating the meal Heda prepared in a really long time. Heda also had a fresh expression as if her sulkiness had all disappeared in a day.

As Ragnar was outside of the residence as he had some business to take care of, Tae Ho decided to first speak it with Scathach.

Although he did have Cuchulainn, he had other things to ask aside of the geass.

Scathach’s body was still asleep, but her consciousness was

awake. Because of that, she could send her soul outside of her body and communicate with the people in the residence.

Compared to Rolo, that didn't particularly care if his owner returned safely, Adenmaha certainly had a cute side in her. When she heard that Tae Ho would be going to Scathach, she transformed into the shape of a Goddess and followed Tae Ho's back.

Scathach's lodging was a building made of stones that were located in a corner of Idun's residence. Just looking at it made you think of a shrine and Scathach's asleep body was inside of that.

"The power of Idun nim is strong."

Adenmaha said while passing the entrance of the shrine. It was because of the blessings she had given her several times to protect her. Perhaps, the number of blessings would be bigger than the number of Idun's shrines.

As Adenmaha touched her neck as if it was stifling, Tae Ho grabbed her hands and activate the 'one that controls dragons' to strengthen her control. Only then did Adenmaha nod as if it was much better.

Although the difference in their status as Goddesses was clear and Adenmaha was a Goddess of another world, she could only feel a bit of rejection towards the power of Idun but thanks to Tae Ho all of that rejection had disappeared.

As Tae Ho grabbed on Adenmaha's hands and entered a deep place, he could see Scathach's body lying on an altar and next to her, the soul of Scathach that was half transparent.

"So you came Tae Ho. I was worried because the speed of the classes slowed down."

Tae Ho flinched unconsciously and Adenmaha burst out of laughter.

"It's important for the classes to be constant. As you have already

started to learn about the power of Tuatha De Danann, you should keep on progressing.”

‘Those are right words.’

He couldn’t ignore Cuchulainn’s words this time maybe because they really were right words.

Tae Ho cleared his throat a few times to change the atmosphere and then spoke to Scathach.

“Master, I have some things I want to ask you.”

“If it’s about the power you used, Idun-nim was also greatly worried about you. But looking at how calm Cuchulainn is, it seems like it’s not that big of a problem.”

Because the after-effects of the geass or the restrictions had disappeared. Cuchulainn recommended talking about the legend ranked saga ‘Idun’s warrior’ having strengthened and its restriction having disappeared was closer to the boundary of the saga rather than the geass, so they should talk about it when Ragnar returned.

Because of that Tae Ho said something apart of ‘Idun’s warrior’.

“It’s an item I found in Midgard.”

What Tae Ho took out from Unnir was Liberatus.

The treasure of the kingdom of Kataron, that held a fragment of Gae Bolg. Cuchulainn guessed that the one that made Liberatus was someone that could handle the power of Erin.

“It really isn’t an ordinary item. This object was made with the techniques of Erin. It’s the handiwork of someone that’s skilled in the techniques of Tuatha De Danann and also the Milesians. No, it’s not only that. If we are talking about the technique that made this object.....then it seems like it rivals mine.”

There was no way a human that was born in Midgard possessed those abilities. It was certainly a survivor of Erin.

‘Are you talking that his skills rival yours, teacher?’

Scathach nodded as Cuchulainn asked in a surprised voice.

“The reason I was able to make Gae Bolg is that I was the queen of the land of darkness. It won’t be easy even for me to make something like this.”

Scathach was one of the great witches of high status even in Erin. Although her abilities in crafting a weapon were limited, there weren’t many that had skills that were comparable to hers.

“Unfortunately enough, I can’t check whose work this is from. But fortunately, the one that made this left a clue.”

“A clue?”

“Right. There’s a message magic left in the part of the hilt, that’s not related to the operation of the sword.”

If it was a message magic, then it was highly probable for it to be a clue. Something like telling them his location or something similar.

Tae Ho admired and turned to look at Adenmaha.

“What?”

“Well, I was wondering why you didn’t know.”

She should also be a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann.

“You didn’t show it to me!”

“Ah, I didn’t.”

Tae Ho understood and turned to look at Scathach again, and she looked at Adenmaha that had inflated her cheeks and laughed. She then extended her hand towards Liberatus.

“I will activate it then.”

The magic of Tuatha De Danann.

A stream of light appeared from Liberatus and the message magic

got activated.

< Episode 25 – Paul’s sword (1) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 2: Paul's sword (2)

That place was the front line to protect the world.

The boundary between Asgard and the world known as Erin.

You could see a fragment of the destroyed world from beyond the blue sky. The destroyed continents, dried up rivers, and the corpses of the living beings that could be seen on that planet weren't as romantic as a floating island.

Stars fell down the night sky and a huge path of fire, that seemed to be a sun, could be seen from far away. It was the fire of Muspelheim, the fire that burnt down Erin.

Although a hundred years have passed since the Great War, the fire didn't weaken at all. It rather grew bigger and closed the distance with Asgard.

Ragnar Lodbrok.

The great viking king stood in a fortress made of steel and looked in front of him. The perpetual was close to him, different from the fire that was burning down a planet. It was the blizzard made by the Frost giants that came from Jotunheim.

The magician king Utgard Loki wasn't the only giant king. The king of the Frost giants, Harmarti, possessed an army so big it was difficult to even count them. Although a hundred years have passed, no one knew the complete force Harmarti had.

Ragnar closed his eyes for a moment and leaned his ear on the sound of the horn trumpet. The sound, that was heard close by, came from the warriors of Valhalla.

The ones protecting the front lines of Asgard were the warriors above the intermediate rank. If they weren't there, then Harmarti and his army would have charged over Asgard like hail covering the coast.

Ragnar opened his eyes and turned to look at the top of the fortress. Countless steel warriors were standing on top of it as if they were part of the fortress.

Most of them were lowest ranked or inferior ranked warriors that had lost their lives. However no one in the front lines ignored them. Because they were the real fortress protecting Asgard. They were the great warriors that rose up after shaking off death.

Ragnar breathed out. He looked at the white steam coming out from his mouth and turned around. Thor was standing on that place even though the sound of thunder wasn't heard.

“Ragnar Lodbrok.”

“Greetings to the God of thunder.”

Ragnar hit his chest twice. Thor also did the same and then stood next to Ragnar.

“It's a regretful scene.”

Thor said. His eyes were roaming on the distant fragments of Erin.

Thor remembered the destruction of Erin. Because he saw it burn with his own eyes. He was there when Erin got destroyed.

The scene of a planet burning down and disappearing couldn't be expressed by words. Thor couldn't forget the misery he felt until now.

Ragnar was also there. Because of that he knew what meaning the destruction of Erin had for Thor. Thor's pain didn't stop at the destruction of Erin.

When Loki betrayed Asgard, he chose the side of the giants while leaving behind his brother Thor and Asgard.

Ragnar smiled bitterly. It was more heartbreaking than tears.

The misery continued even after the destruction of Erin. Because the Great War occurred. There were countless deaths in that war.

Ragnar remembered the tragedy that occurred in Idun's legion. He couldn't forget the back of the woman shedding tears in front of a pile of corpses.

He breathed out again. It was intentional. Thor and Ragnar put aside the past and looked at the present.

"Is the warrior from that time doing good?"

"If you are talking about Tae Ho, yes, he is doing well."

"I heard he was famous."

"Yes, he will become strong."

Ragnar answered immediately. Thor looked at Ragnar as if it was unexpected and then put on a smile.

"For the unparalleled Ragnar to say that. It's been a really long while since I saw that."

"Because he's someone that will become that big."

It wasn't only because of the saga Tae Ho had. It was the conclusion that Ragnar, that had seen countless warriors and was a great warrior himself, had come to.

Ragnar's two eyes resembled a wolf. Thor erased his smile for a moment and looked at Ragnar. He took a deep breath and nodded.

"Well, it may be obvious as he's the disciple of none other than Ragnar Lodbrok. I will be waiting for the day to fight on the same battlefield as him."

Thor was always sincere. Ragnar answered with a smile. Talking about Tae Ho in detail was unnecessary right now.

"Thor, great God of thunder. I will be returning now."

He had already finished his business. The reason why he stayed until now was to say his farewell to Thor.

Thor put on a regretful face but he didn't hold him back. He lightly patted on Ragnar's shoulder to express his affection for him

and then fixed his posture. Ragnar also fixed his posture and expressed etiquette.

“For Asgard and the nine realms.”

“For Asgard and the nine realms.”

Ragnar turned around. Thor looked at his back for a moment and then also turned around and looked at the direction where the giants were standing at. He looked at the remnants of Erin.

&

“Is this all?”

“I think so.”

Adenmaha looked at the message that appeared in the air and frowned, and Scathach nodded calmly.

There was no voice or words left in the message of Liberatus. There was only a map.

“Uh....Nidavellir?”

The world of the dwarves.

As Adenmaha mumbled while looking at the map, Tae Ho asked once again.

“Do you know what that is?”

“Somewhat? I think it’s something like a treasure map.”

There was a specific location marked on the magical message. Tae Ho nodded and Scathach opened her mouth.

“The place located on the map is a place that not even the dwarves go frequently. It’s a good place to hide something....or hide from someone.”

Her words held credibility as it came from one who previously hid on Nidavellir.

“A treasure map. It makes me excited.”

Adenmaha put on the eyes of a dreaming girl and said. It seemed like she unexpectedly liked these things.

‘There may really be a treasure there. Perhaps, the one called Paul may have another fragment of Gae Bolg. And if there’s a legacy from Erin it’s also right for you to have it, as you are the successor of Erin.’

Cuchulainn said calmly. Tae Ho, that was just listening silently, raised his hand and asked.

“Um, it’s kind of sudden but can I ask a question?”

‘What is it?’

“Is that successor of Erin thing a formalized position?”

Cuchulainn had always told him that Erin’s legacies belong to you, the successor of Erin.

Tae Ho just heard those words as ‘they are all ownerless items now so it’s obvious for you, that is somewhat related, to have it.’ But now that he heard it, it seemed like it had a meaning beyond that.

Cuchulainn called Scathach instead of answering immediately.

‘Master.’

“Right, I will teach you.”

Scathach could listen to Cuchulainn’s voice even though she wasn’t placing her hand on Gae Bolg. As Scathach waved her hand, Cuchulainn appeared next to Tae Ho that was taking a similar shape as her.

“It’s more comfortable to speak now. Well, to answer you, that’s right. The successor of Erin is a seat that is chosen fairly.”

Cuchulainn walked and stood next to Scathach. As both of them were really good looking, they were seen as a rather suitable couple.

“Erin’s destruction came really suddenly but it wasn’t that we didn’t have time. The kings of Erin prepared a successor of Erin in case Erin got destroyed. Because they needed someone to lead the survivors and raise Erin some day.”

Simply said, it was an inheritor. It was commonly seen in wars.

“But it wasn’t all the kings in Erin that agreed to this. It was agreed upon by the strongest forces representing Erin.”

Cuchulainn spoke up till then and extended his fist so that the back of his hand could be seen.

“Tae Ho, extend your fist.”

Tae Ho also extended his fist. And then a flashy sentence made of light appeared on top of the back of Tae Ho’s hand.

“It’s the message of light that proves that you are the successor of Erin. It’s something I originally had.”

It was a sentence that moved to Tae Ho’s hands the day Cuchulainn and Tae Ho had a conversation for the first time.

“That sentence contains the writings of several kings. Master, can I ask you to do it?”

“Okay.”

Scathach moved her hand again and then the sentence that was on Tae Ho’s hand appeared in the air ten times bigger.

Cuchulainn pointed at several parts of the sentence and said.

“The sentence of the God of light Lugh, the king of the Tuatha De Danann, the owner of the Red branch knights and my lord Conchobar mac Nessa and the leader of the Fianna knights Fionn mac Cumhaill, the sentence of Miev the wicked woman of rarity, and the sentence of master, the queen of the land of darkness.”

Tae Ho didn’t know well but it was different for Adenmaha. She opened her mouth unconsciously and admired. It was because they really were the kings that represented Erin just like Cuchulainn

had said.

In addition it wasn't the end. Cuchulainn pointed at the last sentence and said.

"It's the sentence of King Arthur, the leader of the knights of the round table and the king of Camelot."

"King Arthur?!"

As Tae Ho raised his voice unconsciously Cuchulainn tilted his head.

"Right, do you know him?"

"Well, a bit."

There was a high possibility for King Arthur to be different to what he knew just like the north european mythology he knew was different from Asgard. But his heart beat excitedly. King Arthur was a legendary king even Tae Ho knew through games, novels, movies, etc.

Cuchulainn continued explaining.

"I'm not the only one that received the sentence of light. But i was the only one that remained alive among the ones that received it. And Tae Ho, you received that from me. So you are the real successor of Erin."

"If the one that made Liberatus is a successor of Erin, he will recognize the validity of that sentence of yours."

Scathach added. Tae Ho turned to look at Adenmaha after nodding.

"Do you know what it is?"

"I can feel a strong authority from it. There's even the sentence of the God of light, the king of the Tuatha De Danann in it."

"Is it."

The race of the Tuatha De Danann was composed by Gods. As

Adenmaha was a citizen of the Tuatha De Danann, it was obvious to feel some authority in the sentence of the God of light Lugh.

With the same reasoning, if the one that made Liberatus belonged to a force of one that set up the message, then there was a high probability he would recognize Tae Ho's authority. Because Erin was a world where the authority of the king was recognized, compared to the world Tae Ho lived in.

"You are on your days off anyways because of the expedition, right? Let's go find the maker of Liberatus or the legacies of Erin."

"It's a treasure hunt."

Adenmaha's eyes shone again at Cuchulainn's words.

Scathach laughed at that and continued speaking to Tae Ho.

"That's a good idea. But there's something you need to prepare before that."

It wasn't preparing for a treasure hunt like Adenmaha thought.

"Tae Ho, you should know because you faced it yourself but Bress is a stubborn guy. You don't know when he will attack you again. So we have to prepare for that."

He had already attacked Tae Ho twice in Midgard. In addition as he had failed the two times, his resentful feelings must have grown bigger.

"The mystical powers of the Tuatha De Danann isn't something you can learn in a short time. In addition there are many cases that I'm not with you, Tae Ho. We can't keep bothering Idun-nim for this either."

Sending down divine messages every day and maintaining for a long time wasn't a normal heavy labor.

"The introduction has been long. I will tell you the conclusion. Give Adenmaha to me."

Scathach said and Tae Ho blinked. After a moment of silence

Adenmaha got a hold of herself and yelled surprised.

“Wha, what are you talking about! Ah, there’s no need to speak politely. What are you talking about you witch!”

Just how did she come to the conclusion to give Adenmaha to her based on what they were talking about until now?

Scathach looked at the angry Adenmaha and looked at Tae Ho and explained.

“Adenmaha may be immature and weak but she’s still a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann. I will transmit the mystical powers of Tuatha De Danann to her. She will have a lot of time to study as she remains in the residence and compared to you Tae Ho, that has to learn several things at the same time, Adenmaha just has to learn the mystical powers. As she already has the basics she will be fast on learning.”

Simply said it was a division of labor. Adenmaha was a part of Tae Ho’s family and he could call her whenever he wanted.

“Tae Ho, you should keep slowly learning the mystical powers like you are doing right now. I will teach Adenmaha and then she can teach you later.”

“I understand. I will leave Adenmaha in your care.”

“Right.”

“Hey, the one that will be learning is me.”

As Adenmaha, the one they were talking about, got excluded she spoke with an ugly face but Tae Ho just lightly swung his fist.

“Fighting.”

Adenmaha’s eyes became sharper. Scathach laughed at that but she soon fixed her expression and said.

“Tae Ho, I still haven’t finished speaking.”

Scathach turned to look at Cuchulainn that was right next to her

and said.

“Cuchulainn, I barely know what you are thinking about. But in my opinion, I think that it’s time.”

“I also think the same. And I think that I roughly know his aptitude.”

“Right, it’s enough with that. Start transmitting him the power.”

They were speaking without the concerned party once again. Tae Ho, that was listening, asked.

“Transmission of the power....Are you talking about the geass?”

Because he learnt that Erin’s power that was comparable to Asgard’s was the geass.

But Cuchulainn and Scathach shook their heads almost at the same time.

“It’s not the geass.”

Just like Asgard didn’t only have the saga, Erin also didn’t only have the geass.

Cuchulainn was observing Tae Ho and waiting for the right time just like what his conversation with Scathach said. And he judged that it was the right time.

“I needed a bit of time after observing how you fight and making a decision. Because you are a warrior of Valhalla before being a warrior of Erin. If you learn several powers, you may not be able to digest it all and will rather become weaker. But it is now time. This will also help you on understanding the attributes you are learning right now.”

What Cuchulainn first promised.

The heritage of the strong human race that defeated the Tuatha De Danann and the fomoirs and reigned supreme in Erin.

“It’s the power of the Milesians.”

A new sentence of light appeared in Cuchulainn's fist.

< Episode 25 – Paul's sword (2) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 3: Paul's sword (3)

There were several stories recorded in the 'book of Erin's invasions' that was used to record the history of Erin.

It was because there were that many leading species that led Erin's history.

In the first place, the name of 'Erin's invasions' in the history book was proof of that.

The first ones to start Erin's history were a race of people that were known as the Van. This organization, that had a Goddess called Cessair as its leader, could have set up a culture of its own, however, its reign didn't last long.

The reason for that was the appearance of the fompires.

The king of the fompires, Cichol, spread a strong plague and put the Van's on the brink of death but also invaded Erin directly and didn't leave anyone alive.

But even the era when the fompires reigned supreme couldn't last long.

The second group of people that appeared in Erin, the Partholon, were different to the Van's. They rather succeeded in launching a surprise attack on the fompires and succeeded on defeated Cichol, the king of the fompires, after a long war.

After they chased away the fompires from Erin they became the second rulers of Erin. But the final and strongest curse king Cichol left harassed them without stop. In the end, the Partholons couldn't endure the curse of Cichol and Erin became an ownerless land once again.

The third group to rule Erin was a group called as the Nemed. However, they were defeated in their fourth great war against the fompires and all the people of their race became enslaved to the fompires.

After that, the ancestors of the ones that had fled of the tyranny of the fomoires had returned once again and they were the Fir-holg and Tuatha De Danann.

Tuatha De danann, that had driven out the Fir-holgs that had established some force after the fomoires, started a large scale war against the fomoires that were a long time enemy of Erin.

And in that war, Lugh the king of Gods defeated the king of fomoires Balor and attained victory.

It was now the time of peace.

However, Tuatha De Danann got faced with a new challenge.

It was the appearance of the Milesians, a strong race of humans.

The Milesians drove the Tuatha De Danann away and reigned Erin. The Tuatha De Danann fled to the underground world and the Milesians, that got to dominate Erin completely, defeated the fomoires that were invading intermittently and opened the gates to a new era.

“The Milesians and the Tuatha De Danann aren’t complete enemies. They fought at times but also cooperated with each other.”

Cuchulainn finished his long explanation and let out a long sigh. Tae Ho, that became a spectator, let out a sigh of admiration.

“Uh, it’s somewhat complicated. It’s this side also the same?”

Tae Ho, that was crouching down, turned around and asked. It wasn’t Heda but Adenmaha, that arrived just when the story was about to start.

Heda quickly shook her head.

“Not at all. The Aesir fought against the Vanir and the Aesir won, and that’s the end. Ah, additionally the relationship between the Aesir and the Vanir isn’t bad right now. Freya-nim and Freyr-nim are of the Banha race.”

“It’s so like Valhalla. How simple.”

As Tae Ho nodded with a satisfied face, Heda smiled brightly. On the other hand, Cuchulainn put on an absurd expression and continued speaking.

“Anyways, what I just told you is the basic history of Erin. As you are the successor of Erin you should study more later.”

“Mm, so anyways. The last ones to dominate Erin were the Milesians right?”

“Right, it’s somewhat sad but you should at least remember that clearly.”

There was a sense of excellence showing in the face of Cuchulainn, that had started to act as a teacher, that he wasn’t accustomed to. Scathach, that was looking at the sides, said.

“Just like Cuchulainn explained, the Tuatha De Danann and the Milesians could coexist together. There’s also a time that the Goddess of war, Morrigan, court shipped Cuchulainn.”

Scathach said ‘isn’t that right?’ in a low voice and turned to look at him. Cuchulainn cleared his throat at her eyes that were shining vaguely.

“Hm hm.”

Cuchulainn was a man with a lot of lovers.

Scathach drew a sly smile and then looked at Tae Ho again.

“Because of that the Tuatha De Danann and the Milesians shared many things among them. You can know just by looking at Adenmaha, that was a Tuatha De Danann, use a geass. The geass was a power of all of Erin.”

In addition, even the fomoirs used it. Although it was only a part of it, compared to the Tuatha De Danann and the Milesians.

Cuchulainn raised his fist that had the sentence of light and said.

“What I will transmit to you now is the power of the Milesians. I’m telling you just in case but there are some that mastered the power of the Milesians just like how master mastered the power of the Tuatha De Danann.”

“Right.”

Cuchulainn had started to speak a lot, maybe because he started to explain a lot of things at once. He smacked his lips once and said casually.

“I will say it briefly. Simply said, the power of the Milesians is the communication with the tools.”

Tae Ho tilted his head as he had heard something completely unexpected. Cuchulainn lightly clenched his fist as if he was satisfied and then continued explaining.

“The tool in your hands.....in your case or mine it should be a weapon. The Milesians handled their weapons better than any other race through the communication with their tools.”

Because handling a tool was the strength of a human.

“I’m not talking about conversing with your weapon. It’s understanding it and sharing feelings with it. Then, you will be able to do things like this.”

Cuchulainn paused for a moment and then spread his palm near his waist. And then, the sword that was sheathed in his waist got out of its own and got held by Cuchulainn.

“This is the basic stage. You could say that it’s the level that the weapon answers the call of its owner. Um, it’s similar to raising a dog. A dog comes running to you when you call it, right?”

“It’s somewhat cheap but easy to explain.”

Adenmaha said in a low voice. Cuchulainn kept speaking when Tae Ho and Heda were nodding.

“If you are able to reach the peak and listen to the voice of the

sword, you will be able to do more things. You won't only be able to hold your strength in your sword more effectively but will be able to bring out a strength beyond what your sword can originally unleash."

This was the reason why Cuchulainn had said that it would help on his attribute training. If you used the power of the Milesian, you would be able to unleash anything much stronger, be it an attribute or the power of a God.

"And if you go a step higher than this...."

Cuchulainn put down the dagger he was holding but it didn't fall to the ground. It spun around Cuchulainn and then followed the movements of his hands and moved in the air.

"You will be able to control it this freely in a short distance."

"Just like being with a hunting dog?"

"That's a good comparison, I like it."

Cuchulainn smirked and flicked his finger. And then, the dagger returned to its sheath as if being sucked into it.

"But there's a limit on handling weapons that have no real connection to you or had a short interaction like this dagger. The companion of a warrior is his weapon, so the real power of the Milesians will unleash only when one finds a real companion. For me, it's Gae Bolg."

The weapon Cuchulainn named right now was made with Scathach's magic. In the first place, being able to face Tae Ho face to face like this was thanks to Scathach's power.

If Cuchulainn was alive, then all the fragments of Gae Bolg would have gathered if he just called for it.

Tae Ho, that was listening to Cuchulainn's explanation while sitting down, raised his hand and asked.

"Can't you control several at once?"

Not one sword, but several swords.

Cuchulainn put on an absurd face and answered.

“Hey, didn’t I tell you about the companions? How can you think of something that playboyish as soon as you listen to my explanation?”

“Cuchulainn, I don’t think it’s something you should be saying.”

Because Cuchulainn himself was a playboy that had several lovers.

Cuchulainn got greatly bewildered at Scathach’s low refuting and then cleared his throat.

“Hm hm. Anyways, it’s not that it’s impossible but it’s really hard. If you want to control it freely, you need the connection that has accumulated for a long time.”

The warriors didn’t use as many weapons as one thought. Because if you were a warrior for a long time, a weapon you got accustomed to would appear.

There were really few warriors be it in Erin or Asgard that changed their equipment every time they got a bit stronger.

But it was different for Tae Ho. The dragon knight Kalsted changed his equipment every time he reached a certain level in Dark Age. And all those weapons had their respective stories with him.

Cuchulainn actually knew that truth to a certain extent. And he thought that if it was Tae Ho, he may really be able to control several weapons at the same time.

But he still shook his head. Just like there was only one love Cuchulainn couldn’t forget, there was only one true companion for a warrior.

“The power of the Milesians doesn’t just stop at handling weapons. Becoming one with the weapon and going past the

boundary is the real peak. And there's only one weapon that you will be able to do that with. A real companion you will spend your life with, a weapon you won't drop even at the last moment. Don't you also have a weapon like that?"

Cuchulainn had Gae Bolg.

His enemy and Executioner, Fergus mac Roich, had Caladbolg.

Tae Ho nodded unconsciously. Because he thought of only one sword, no, remembered in his heart the moment he heard the story.

Dragon Sword Astellone.

The last piece that completed the strongest dragon knight Kalsted in Dark Age.

The final sword that was recorded in the 'warrior's equipment'.

Cuchulainn laughed in a good mood.

"The thing that will be your root is the saga, not the geass. But the power of the Milesians will be of great help to you. It won't even disturb with the saga. I assure you that it will rather increase the good effects."

Cuchulainn extended his fist towards Tae Ho. Tae Ho also extended his fist as if he understood what Cuchulainn wanted. The fists of the two people touched and then a new message of light appear on the back of Tae Ho's hands – the sentence of the Milesians.

&

Ragnar returned to Idun's residence after two days.

And as soon as he returned he inspected Tae Ho's saga.

"So the seed of the geass really disappeared. But it's not that it disappeared completely. You should also feel it but it melted in your saga."

Up to this point, it was as Tae Ho felt it.

Ragnar placed his hand on Tae Ho's shoulders and said.

“Tae Ho, the saga is a realization of a story. The strength you executed with the help of the geass became your legend. On top of this, the power of a God was added and the strength of the saga that was once more strengthened became bigger. Your new saga ‘Idun’s warrior’....is really a miracle like saga that was made by these things overlapping themselves.”

Every time Tae Ho used ‘Idun’s warrior’ he could connect with Idun directly. It was a peculiar type of saga that even Ragnar heard for the first time.

“But it’s not certain that it will occur once again. I’m also in doubt if you will be able to use another geass as an expedient. The most important thing of all is that you violated the geass because you received a restriction.”

Cuchulainn had also said something similar.

For a warrior of Erin to violate a geass was a really incredible thing. The reason why Cuchulainn got shocked when Tae Ho used the restriction as a premise was because of that.

“The power of the Milesians is good. It also suits well with the saga and power you have and has no after effects. Actually, if possible, I would like to master it myself.”

The ones that could acquire the power of the Milesians were the warriors of Erin.

If Tae Ho wasn’t a successor of Erin he wouldn’t have been able to learn it.

“I did well on requesting Rasgrid. Your base on the attributes is really well set up.”

“I’m glad.”

Tae Ho said sincerely.

And then Ragnar read the painful days of lessons Tae Ho had to face and laughed.

“For now it will be the same just like when you first used the power of a God. Operate the attributes a little bit every day. It is important to get accustomed to the point you are able to use it even though you aren’t that conscious of it.”

Ragnar finished his lessons by picking the main points and direction like always. His teaching method was completely different to Rasgrid, that directed all the directions perfectly.

“Well, I will end the nagging here. You are going to Nidavellir?”

“Yes, I’m planning to find the person that made Liberatus.”

“Hm, it’s certainly worthwhile to go.”

Ragnar had already heard the story related to Liberatus from Heda. If it really was a survivor of Erin, and in addition was a skilled person comparable to Scathach, it would surely be of help to Tae Ho and also to Idun’s legion.

“Only....I or Heda won’t be able to go with you as it’s outside of Asgard. Although you have Adenmaha I’m still uneasy. Go with good comrades.”

“Captain Siri?”

“Not only her. This expedition was quite big and you had performed great so all of the comrades that returned with you must have received days off similar to you. Find guys that will go with you from them. The camaraderie accumulated in the battlefield is thicker than blood so you will certainly be able to find someone who will accompany you.”

Tae Ho nodded at Ragnar’s words. Although it hadn’t been a month, the memories from Midgard were ones he wouldn’t be able to forget.

Someone to accompany him to Nidavelir.

A reliable ally he would be able to entrust his back to.

“It seems like you have thought of someone.”

Ragnar said while smiling and Tae Ho nodded.

< Episode 25 – Paul’s sword (3) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 4: Paul's sword (4)

A day had passed.

After crossing the door of space and arriving Nidavellir, Tae Ho took a deep breath and placed down the person he was carrying on his back. He was so big and tall that his feet were dragging even when Tae Ho was carrying him.

“Bracky, Bracky. We arrived. Wake up.”

He shook him quite strongly but he didn't show signs of waking up. Siri, that had accompanied Tae Ho, grabbed the bottle of water she was carrying.

The effect was immediate. As soon as she poured it on his face, Bracky opened his eyes and woke up.

“Huk! Where are we?”

Bracky only rose up his upper body and asked. It was a dark, cold and moist place.

Tae Ho let out a sigh as if he knew this would happen.

“Nidavellir. You told me you were going together with us.”

“I did?”

“Yes, yesterday at the bar in Anaheim.”

Although he was really drunk.

Bracky put on a thinking face at Tae Ho's words but it only lasted for a moment. Wondering about useless things like this wasn't his style.

“Um, well, I guess I did.”

Because Tae Ho wouldn't have lied to him.

Whether he was drunk or not, Bracky was the type to go by with words.

“Hey, Siri. You are also pretty today.”

Bracky smiled and said. Siri laughed in spite of herself and then nodded and hit her chest.

“Bracky, thanks for coming in your days off.”

“Hmph, endless adventures is a basic thing for the king of vikings. I will always welcome an adventure in a new world. So where did you say this was?”

If he hadn't said that last sentence he would have been so cool.

Siri let out a sigh inwardly and then glanced at her surroundings and said.

“Nidavellir, the world of the dwarves.”

“Oh, then this is the world deep underground that I only heard in stories. I don't know about the surface, but this is the first time I came underground.”

Bracky seemed to have understood the scenery as he was told that he was underground.

Svartalfheim, that had a ceiling of branches was dark, but it wasn't comparable to Nidavellir that was underground. If it wasn't for the lights made by the rune magic of Tae Ho, then they wouldn't even be able to see in front of them.

Siri breathed the cold air that resembled the air of winter and then breathed out white steam and said.

“It's also our first time. In addition.....”

“In addition?”

“I don't know about moving alone for a moment in the expeditions, but it's the first time I came to a place this far without a Valkyrie.”

The group that came to this expedition were Siri, Tae Ho, and Bracky. There was no Valkyrie that would lead them.

“Oh, that’s true. I’m getting a bit uneasy.”

It was also the first time Bracky moved without a Valkyrie. Tae Ho smirked as if soothing Bracky’s uneasiness.

“There’s no Valkyrie but we have captain Siri, so don’t worry.”

“That’s also true.”

“I can’t understand you guys.”

The one that understood and laughed was Bracky and the one that frowned was Siri.

Bracky just laughed magnanimously instead of explaining and then rose up completely.

“But what are we going to do here? I must have agreed even before asking what we were going to do, right?”

He was right. Bracky had agreed as soon as they told him to accompany them.

Tae Ho smiled bitterly when he remembered that he said some cheesy words like ‘if it’s with you guys don’t even mention Niflheim, I will even go to the palace of Hela as many times you want’ after that and then opened the mouth of Unnir. It was to take out Liberatus.

“You remember that this was on the palace of Kataron, right?”

“Right, it was a really painful experience for me.”

Because he fell into debt for having lost to Siri.

Bracky dropped his shoulders as if he got depressed. If it wasn’t for that bet he could be playing and enjoying more in Anaheim.

Tae Ho felt that he would get even more depressed if he just left him alone so he said quickly.

“Anyways, the Paul that is said to have made this sword left a map in it. And that’s why we came here.”

“Oh. I understand. Having left a map is telling you that you

should find him. Just like how a woman sends you a smile.”

Bracky laughed and winked towards Siri, and she received that with a taciturn face.

“Let’s go.”

Because the place the map was pointing was quite far from this place.

Tae Ho’s group decided to move closer to a river that flowed next to them instead of visiting the dwarf village that was near the space door. It was a river made with all the underwater gathered but it was as cold as ice.

As Tae Ho took out Scuabtuinne from Unnir and threw it, the boat that was the size of a toy became as soon as a real boat.

Tae Ho then summoned Adenmaha. There were two reasons why he called her through the summoning rock instead of traveling together. First, Adenmaha was studying with Scathach and the other one was that he could recall her if they were in an urgent situation.

Tae Ho had saved Adenmaha and Rolo by returning them when they were in danger in the battles in Midgard. Being able to break away from the battlefield whenever you wanted was a really strong point.

Scuabtuinne was a boat that could navigate by itself and although Bracky was an experienced sailor, this was a river of Nidavellir he experienced for the first time. If they were with Adenmaha, that could control water, then they could relax even if they sailed in an unfamiliar place.

“How creepy.”

Even if that wasn’t the case Nidavellir was already cold, but as the river was also cold the chill was quite something. In addition, as their surroundings were completely black they felt that it was colder.

“Shall I lighten it a bit more?”

Tae Ho looked at the ball of light he had made with his rune magic and then Adenmaha, that was next to him, grabbed his hands.

“Don’t.”

“Why?”

At Tae Ho’s question, Adenmaha flinched for a moment and then checked her surroundings and whispered in his ear.

“I think it will be scarier if we can see with more clarity.”

Because she didn’t know what was in the darkness. And in the underground, there were plenty of terrible looking bugs.

Although she whispered quietly, as their surroundings were really quiet Siri and Bracky ended up hearing what she said. Siri had her mouth shut but it seemed like she agreed with her.

But the darkness was also threatening. Because they may be something observing them from a place they couldn’t see.

Because of that Tae Ho first activated the ‘eyes of the dragon’. Even if he couldn’t see, he was able to discern the color of the words.

And a few seconds later.

Tae Ho smiled lamentingly and gulped dry saliva and Adenmaha asked hurriedly with a pale face.

“Why? Can you see something? Are there any strange things?”

It seemed like she was quite surprised that her use of polite words was really natural. Tae Ho smiled once again and then erased the things he had seen from his mind. There were an overwhelming number of bugs on the floor and also on the ceiling and walls.

“Uh, yes. Let’s lighten it a bit more.”

To the point where they couldn’t see the ceiling.

Siri slightly increased the speed of Scuabtuinne while Adenmaha shrieked and put on a teary face.

&

Although moving through the river was quite creepy, it was really comfortable. Tae Ho's group arrived their destination in only two days and went towards the village marked on the map after retrieving Scuabtuinne.

Nidavellir was a place you could describe as an artificial subterranean place. The place where the ceiling was low was merely 2 meters high but on the places where it was high, it reached tens of meters.

The floor, walls, and ceiling were stones that were hard and smooth at the same time and as sunlight didn't enter this place everything around them was cold.

The dwarf village that was built on a place that was ten meters high, had its front blocked with a big wall of stones. You could feel the remnants of humans in their surroundings, but the biggest difference was the existence of light.

The jewels carved in the ceiling emanated faint light like the moon or the stars in the night. Thanks to that they could clearly see around them even without the help of the ball of light.

“Beautiful.”

Siri looked at the jewels carved in the ceiling and said with a loud voice in front of the gates of the village.

“We are warriors of Valhalla. There's something we want to ask.”

It was because she sensed that there were dwarves beyond the wall. After that, one dwarf extended his head over the walls and said quickly after checking on Siri, Tae Ho, and Bracky.

“Wait a moment. The elder will come soon.”

His eyes were doubting if they really were warriors of Valhalla but Siri just received his gaze without discomfort.

And after a bit of time passed the gates opened up and a dwarf with a cool white beard and several young dwarves with good bodies appeared.

“I am the elder of this village Gordon. Why have you come to this place warriors of Valhalla?”

The dwarf elder, Gordo, spoke in an alert tone but it didn't seem like he was avoiding Tae Ho's group. They felt like they were going through some procedures.

“We are intermediate ranked warriors of Valhalla Siri, Bracky, and Tae Ho.”

Siri hit her chest twice and then went straight to the point.

“We came to this place looking for the one called Paul. Do you know about him?”

“Can you tell me why you have come to look for him?”

Gordon asked immediately. Siri turned to look at Tae Ho and he took out Liberatus from Unnir.

“It's a sword made by Paul. There was a map on it and this place showed up.”

It wasn't only Gordon but the other dwarves that were with him also showed interest in Liberatus. It seemed like they had a way to recognize it just like how only masters could, but several of them let out marks of exclamation even though they saw it from afar.

“So that's the case. It seems like the story will become long, do you mind if we change places?”

“This is your land so we will follow your will.”

At Siri's answer, Gordon and the dwarves let out satisfied smiles. It seemed like they were happy that Siri respected them.

“She’s as reliable as a Valkyrie.”

Bracky mumbled in a low voice and the dwarves started to lead them. There were several houses that were slipperily connected with each other and they resembled a stalactite and rocks that were chiseled with water drops for a long time.

The house of the elder Gordon was especially big, and the inside of it was as bright as the morning thanks to the big jewel that was stuck in the ceiling.

“We like it a bit darker but it should be suitable for you.”

“Thank you for your consideration.”

Gordon nodded a few times at Siri’s answer and then offered the group a seat. As the chairs of the dwarves were really small, the group had to sit on the ground with a cushion.

Gordon said immediately.

“It’s already been 30 years since Paul visited this village. I’m talking about the time when I only had two wrinkles on my forehead.”

It hadn’t been 20 years since Paul set up Kataron so there may be more places he visited in that time.

Gordon closed his eyes as if he was remembering the past.

“He casually appeared one day and defeated a demon that had pushed the village to the brink of annihilation. He was a man with a lot of skills. He helped the recovery of the village through the use of several magics and mystical powers and when the village got stabilized he disappeared suddenly, just like when he first appeared.”

It was similar to Kataron. Because of that, Tae Ho waited for Gordon’s words and Gordon said the words Tae Ho was waiting for.

“But he didn’t leave alone. He stuck a sword made with a girder

on the place he defeated the demon and disappeared.”

“Ohh! Girder!”

Bracky let out an exclamation right then. Gordon’s eyes widened and said.

“Oh, you know about the girder? Certainly, intermediate ranked warriors of Valhalla. How knowledgeable!”

Looking at Gordon’s face it seemed like he was really surprised. But Siri and Tae Ho put on embarrassed expressions and Bracky gave out the answer Tae Ho was expecting.

“No, I don’t. What’s a girder?”

“I’m saying this just in case, but not all the warriors of Valhalla are like this.”

Siri said in a low voice but it was doubtful if her words were convincing enough.

Gordon answered with an astringent face.

“The girder is a mystical and magical metal. Objects made with girder can save magic power or life power in it and can suppress it.”

“Is this sword also made with a girder?”

Tae Ho extended Liberatus again. And then Gordon sniffed and said.

“Well, I do smell girder in it.”

Tae Ho also sniffed but just decided that he was right. As the attributes of all races were different, he thought that there was something only dwarves could smell.

Siri asked Gordon again.

“Can you tell us the place the sword is at?”

Based on the story until now, it was an object comparable to the village’s treasure.

And fortunately, Gordon nodded.

“I will. In the first place, Paul left a map for this place for a reason. In addition, aren’t you warriors of Valhalla? You are the most reliable existences in Asgard.”

Gordon left the village.

The place where the sword was at wasn’t that far away from the village. After walking for about thirty minutes with Gordon’s slow steps, a place that was much bigger than what they saw until now appeared, and there was a big boulder surging in the middle of the place like a mountain.

‘Rainbow colored words.’

He could see rainbow colored words on top of the sword stuck in the boulder. When he got closer to it he could see that it was much bigger than Liberatus.

‘Rather than a sword, it looks like a club.’

Tae Ho agreed at Cuchulainn’s words. It was a weapon that should rather be called as a lance for lance charging.

[Liberatus’s prototype]

Tae Ho read the rainbow colored words inwardly and approached the boulder. But Bracky stepped ahead of him and said.

“Can I try first?”

It seemed like he remembered what happened in Kataron. Tae Ho hesitated for a moment but then nodded.

“As you wish.”

“I will pull it out this time.”

Bracky smirked, then ran and grabbed the sword with his two hands. Cuchulainn clicked his tongue at that.

‘That’s pointless. No one aside of Erin’s successor will be able to pull it out.’

It was when he spoke like that. Although the sword didn't get pulled out, it did move a bit and the boulder trembled. It was the overwhelming strength of Bracky.

“Kuhoh.”

But he still couldn't pull it out. As Bracky panted and stepped back, Cuchulainn got relieved and Tae Ho hurriedly stepped in front.

“I will try now.”

As Bracky panted and nodded, Tae Ho grabbed the hilt of the sword. And then the sentence of the Milesians appeared on top of Tae Ho's hand and it got pulled out easily.

“Kugh! I almost had it!”

“I don't think that's the case.”

Siri said in a low voice next to Bracky and Tae Ho checked the sword he had pulled out. It was so big that the blade seemed to be 2 meters long.

‘It has the same structure as Liberatus. There's an object hidden inside of it.’

It was the same as Kataron. The rainbow colored words must belong to the item inside of it rather than this sword.

What could be inside?

Could it also be a fragment of Gae Bolg?

Tae Ho started to recite the release chant he learned from Scathach. And then the sword split in two and the weapon inside of it showed up.

It was a really peculiar looking sword. The sword with a dull color had a triangular shape that became narrow as it reached the peak and there was one more handle you could grab on next to the hilt just like an oar of a boat.

Cuchulainn took a breath and couldn't say anything for a moment. It wasn't because he also saw the rainbow-colored words like Tae Ho.

It was because he knew the name of this sword. He even faced it several times.

‘Caladbolg.’

The sword of Cuchulainn's enemy and killer, Fergus mac Roich.

A solid thunderbolt and a strong attack that can even destroy mountains.

The day Erin got destroyed Fergus mac Roich lost his life. His sword and all his things disappeared under the fire of Sutr.

The Unknown sword piece vibrated. Tae Ho took a deep breath and grabbed Caladbolg. The sentence of the Milesians shone once again and Tae Ho could feel it.

It was real. This sword was really Caladbolg, the sword the hero Fergus mac Roich used.

Siri gulped dry saliva unconsciously. Gordon let out sighs of admiration several times and Bracky turned to look at the ground.

A vibration could be felt. It was small at first but it became bigger. The ground even started to split up.

Bracky rose from his place and grabbed Gordon and held him in his side with one arm.

It wasn't a normal earthquake. The vibration was only occurring in this place and not the entire ground.

Tae Ho, that was looking at the sword, raised his head. A sentence made of light appeared on top of the rainbow colored words. It was a sentence that everyone could read.

The one that has the qualifications, I will ask you to finish what I couldn't.

I hope you arrive before the seal disappears.

Finish.

What he couldn't do so.

“He's coming! He's coming! It's coming!”

Gordon yelled with a scared voice. Siri could sense it. Paul couldn't completely defeat the demon. He had just sealed it up.

And in this moment, the seal was undone. Because the sword, that was the key to the seal, was pulled out.

The ground shook and the demon pierced the split ground and showed up. It was a huge serpent that had a body of stones. Just looking at the part that had risen to the surface, it seemed to be much bigger than Adenmaha.

It glared down at the group with its red eyes. Gordon screamed and Siri let out a calm breath and pulled out her sword. Braky laughed and then held his hammer.

Tae Ho put back the prototype of Liberatus in Unnir and then gripped Caladbolg. It was speaking to him through the sentence of the Milesians. How he had to use it, what he had to do to bring out its real power.

[Saga: The one that controls gale and thunder]

The thunder that appeared on Tae Ho's hands got transmitted to Caladbolg. It covered the sword and exploded.

Caladbolg, the sword of thunder.

The sound of thunder announced the start of the fight.

< Episode 25 – Paul's sword (4) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 5: Paul's sword (5)

Even though it was wide, they were still underground. The sound of thunder, that was heard from the tip of the sword, soon filled the place. That explosive ringing was stronger than the thunder from the surface.

The dwarf Gordon was absent minded. The sea serpent, that was rising up while roaring, also looked at Tae Ho with surprised eyes.

It was the same for Bracky and Siri. They, that had taken their battle stances, looked at the exploding thunder coming from Tae Ho's hands and put on expressions of joy and surprise.

But it was different for Cuchulainn. He yelled urgently rather than being happy.

‘Use Idun's warrior! Remove Caladbolg!’

Caladbolg wasn't a normal weapon. It was one of the strongest magic weapons in Erin that was comparable to Gae Bolg or Claiomh Solais, the sword of Nuada.

There was a time in the past that Fergus mac Roich, the enemy of Cuchulainn, destroyed the peak of a mountain with an attack of Caladbolg.

Just looking at the strongest blow, Caladbolg was said to be the best in Erin.

But Caladbolg required an incredible amount of magic power to execute that one blow.

Because of that not anyone could use it. If someone that lacked the abilities used it, then they may get their magic power, stamina and life power sucked dry by it and die as a result.

Caladbolg, that awakened thanks to Tae Ho's thunder, craved for Tae Ho's magic power as if it was a beast that had starved for a long time. It seemed like it would eat down Tae Ho in an instant.

Tae Ho gritted his teeth and activated 'Idun's warrior'. Tae Ho's entire body started to shine in golden light and the power of a God got greatly amplified, and at that moment Caladbolg stopped absorbing magic power for a moment.

'It's impossible to execute all its strength. Use the sentence of the Milesians. You have to control Caladbolg at a suitable level.'

Fergus mac Roich was a strong warrior that could stand shoulder to shoulder with Cuchulainn. Even though Tae Ho had gotten a lot stronger, he hadn't reached that level yet.

The sentence of the Milesians shone in the back of Tae Ho's hands. He calmed down Caladbolg, that was endlessly seeking for magic power. He made it satisfied at a suitably full state.

It wasn't an easy thing. Having calmed down Caladbolg spent an incredible amount of magic power and stamina in mere seconds. If it wasn't for 'Idun's warrior' that his power of a God was amplified, he would have died even before he fought against his enemy.

'It's enough to battle with just the strength that has been recharged. Don't feed it anymore and fight like this.'

Nervousness and relief was felt from Cuchulainn's voice. Tae Ho gulped dry saliva and then looked at the serpent and its surroundings.

A few seconds after the thunder exploded.

It was a long time for Tae Ho but it was short for everyone else. The serpent roared again and then the sound of steps was heard from far away. The serpent had called for the monsters near this place and were gathering.

Siri raised her crossbow instead of her sword. Bracky placed down Gordon in the rock that had Caladbolg stuck in it and then gripped his hammer tightly.

'Tae Ho?'

Right then, Idun's voice was heard. It was thanks to the connection that was created with her just like when he used 'Idun's warrior' in Midgard.

But it was a bit different this time. He could listen to Idun's voice more clearly. It didn't feel like it was just a connection but that she really was next to him.

There were two reasons for this. Compared to Midgard, that was protected with the great barrier spread by Odin and Freya, there were particularly no obstacles from Nidavellir and Asgard. So the connection with Idun would naturally strengthen.

The other reason was the growth of Tae Ho and the strengthening of his saga. The farther the name of Idun spread and the stronger the belief of the people towards Idun got, 'Idun's warrior' also got stronger at the same time. The propaganda Tae Ho had done in Midgard was useful by many meanings.

Cuchulainn also felt Idun. But the most important thing was the fight in front of them.

'Tae Ho, it's a battle against a serpent. Can't you capture it like before?'

As serpents were a race of dragons.

Cuchulainn asked when he thought of him having captured Adenmaha and then Tae Ho looked at the serpent with the 'eyes of the dragon'. The information that was necessary right now appeared below the clear red words.

[Nameless rock serpent]

[Dragon race]

[Evil]

[Possesses evil eyes]

Just like Cuchulainn had said, there was a probability for the 'one that controls dragons' to work on it. Idun asked when Tae Ho

noded.

‘My warrior Tae Ho. So is it a male or a female?’

‘She really is a Goddess. She asked the most important thing right off the bait.’

You didn’t know if Cuchulainn was being serious or was joking but he said with a rather serious tone. Tae Ho answered quickly at the rather pitiful question.

“A male!”

‘Right, i’m glad.’

‘Of course you are.’

Cuchulainn ended up laughing in the end. He had just told him to concentrate so what was he doing?

But the leisure only lasted for a moment. Siri, that didn’t know of the conversation occurring in Tae Ho’s head, yelled hurriedly.

“Tae Ho! They are approaching from the sides! Hurry up!”

It seemed like she had thought of a similar thing when she realized that it was a serpent.

Siri moved to the boulder that Gordon was at and kept firing arrows. The arrows that held the power of a God flew beyond the darkness and pierced the heads or chests of the monsters. They were bug monsters that Adenmaha would have screamed if she saw them.

Just looking at them individually, they weren’t a match to Tae Ho’s group but quality couldn’t amount to numbers. They had to finish it up quickly before being surrounded.

“Bracky!”

Tae Ho charged forward while yelling. Bracky understood what Tae Ho was requesting and then followed his back after smiling bitterly.

Tae Ho and Bracky ran in a line. The rock serpent had the shape of a snake, compared to Adenmaha that was more similar to a normal dragon.

The rock serpent swung its body towards Tae Ho and Bracky instead of extending its head towards them. And then, the ground surged up as if a wave was created from the sea and charged towards Tae Ho and Bracky.

As it was an attack resembling an earthquake, it wasn't wise to dodge it while having their feet on the ground. Tae Ho kicked the air to jump over the dirt and rocks charging towards him and Bracky showed great agility regardless of his big body and jumped over the rocks in consecution. He had really jumped over the wave of dirt and rocks.

But the attack of the serpent didn't end yet. It was rather the start. The monster executed its second attack right after Tae Ho and Bracky jumped over the wave of dirt as the first attack was just to warm up. Flames erupted from its open mouth.

It was a fire breath, that was the representative of breaths.

It wasn't easy to dodge the fire breath as they were in the middle of the air because they jumped to dodge the wave of dirt. Because of that Tae Ho charged forward and swung Caladbolg widely. He fired the condensed thunder and split the fire breath from the front.

Babang!

The white thunder tore the flames. The serpent got surprised at the thunder that exploded right in front of it and shrunk for a moment and Tae Ho and Bracky used that moment to close the distance even more.

It was short. The distance between them was almost nonexistent. Cuchulainn yelled.

'The evil eyes!'

The serpent quickly changed the direction of its head and glared at Tae Ho and Bracky. His red eyes flashed and executed the power of the evil eyes. It was the power to petrify the ones that reflected on its eyes, just like the basilisks.

The standard way was to endure it with the power of a God but Tae Ho sought another method. It was a method he had prepared since he realized that it had evil eyes.

[Saga: Warrior's equipment]

Tae Ho raised his left arm, that was holding Caladbolg. And then a smooth and huge shield appeared on top of his left arm.

Mirror shield. It was a shield that reflected yourself. It was a necessary item to face Medusa, that was an event boss in Dark Age, and had the power to reflect the several kinds of evil eyes.

It wasn't the 'warrior's sword' but the 'warrior's equipment'. There were several protective items in the saga that progressed without stop.

But only, for the case of the armors, the strength of the stories it had was weaker compared to the weapons so there were fewer kinds recorded but for special equipment that had abilities like the Mirror shield, they were all registered without missing one.

The petrification curse attacked Tae Ho and Bracky. However Tae Ho jumped up at the exact angle and got in the path of its eyes and Bracky. He also didn't forget to hide himself on the overly big shield.

The serpent looked at himself being reflected on the Mirror shield. It seemed like it had some resistance towards it as it possessed evil eyes itself that it didn't get completely petrified and merely flinched for a moment but it was enough with that much time. Tae Ho landed on the ground and Bracky surged up from behind him.

“Tho-R!”

Bracky let out a roar and swung his hammer. As he released all the condensed power of Thor in an instant, Bracky's attack didn't simply become a blow. The moment he hit its chin, an incredible thunder swept its head.

“Kuha!”

Bracky landed on the ground and let out a satisfied voice. The serpent couldn't endure the shock and then hit the ground with its head and a loud sound was heard.

This was it. Thor's warrior was Bracky himself. Although Tae Ho could fire off thunder and lightning, he wasn't a warrior of Thor but Idun's.

While Bracky was feeling a sense of satisfaction, Tae Ho hurriedly moved his feet and climbed on top of the rock serpent. And right then the serpent raised its head again. It seemed like electricity didn't work on it well as it was made of rocks or he could take punches really well but it recovered much quicker than expected.

“Bracky! Dodge!”

Siri yelled from far away. She was grabbing on Gordon's neck with one hand facing the monsters gathering from the sides.

Bracky rolled on the ground as soon as Siri warned him. A fire breath poured down on the place he was just standing. It was so strong it could melt the ground.

‘Are you able to do it?’

Tae Ho stabbed Caladbolg on the neck of the serpent to create a supporting stand instead of replying and then moved his feet and hands quickly. He created a space to install the ‘Beast's saddle’ and hung the suppression reins on its neck.

It would have been perfect if he also hung the Hunter's rope but it seemed like it would be impossible. Tae Ho placed his hands on top of the neck of the serpent that was starting to struggle and

then activated his saga.

[Saga: The one that controls dragons]

The rock serpent reacted at the saga but it didn't fall that easily. It trembled a bit and then fended off the controlling power.

‘Is it impossible?!’

Cuchulainn asked hurriedly and Tae Ho transmitted his thought instead of answering.

It wasn't because the rock serpent was stronger than Adenmaha or had a stronger will. In the first place, the situation with the both of them was different.

Adenmaha already had an owner and in addition she really hated him. Because of that deep in her heart she was longing for a new owner.

In the other hand, the rock serpent was a free body. It had never been controlled by someone.

It was obvious that the level of resisting it was different.

However Tae Ho's saga also wasn't normal. He could control anything if it was of the dragon race. But he needed to go through a process to do that.

‘There's no business on easy things.’

Idun said something scary in a gentle way. Cuchulainn burst out of laughter in that moment and Tae Ho judged that her words were right. Idun was always right just like Heda.

The rock serpent struggled. It was to shake off Tae Ho. At first the rock serpent just shook its body like a bull in a rodeo match but then started to move towards the wall. It was planning to crush Tae Ho by slamming him on the wall.

Tae Ho took a breath and looked at the battlefield. Thanks to the aftershock and the small earthquakes created by the serpent struggling, half of the monsters that charged towards Siri got

cleaned up.

Siri was still moving quickly and massacring the monsters. She was fleeing at first to protect Gordon but now it felt like she was hunting the monsters.

Tae Ho looked at Bracky. He made eye contact with Tae Ho while charging on the shaking ground and smiled bitterly as if he couldn't do anything about it. Bracky had continued to gather Thor's power after the first attack he had launched.

Babang!

The rock serpent started to slam itself against the wall but it was all pointless. Tae Ho moved to its side instead of behind its neck and dodged the attacks. Although the shock and the vibrations were great, the strength in Tae Ho's grip also wasn't normal.

It was the limit of the snake. Shaking off someone on top of yourself wasn't an easy thing.

The rock serpent slammed two more times and then raised its head as if it had judged that anymore than that was impossible. It was a movement to dig in the ground.

But right then Bracky finished his preparations. It roared greatly as if to take the attention of the rock serpent and then fired lightning towards the ceiling.

There was a time difference between his actions and his roar. The roar was a signal and Tae Ho pulled out Caladbolg to throw it and activated two powers at the same time.

The sentence of the Milesians.

[Saga: The one that handles gale and lightning]

Caladbolg flew towards the ceiling. But it wasn't merely flying. The thunder that originated from Tae Ho's hands got connected with the hilt of Caladbolg.

And Bracky's thunder reached it. The thunder that was filled

with Thor's power got transmitted to Caladbolg.

Bababang!

Caladbolg exploded out once again. The overwhelming sound of thunder flew from a high place to a low place. Everyone inside of the cave couldn't help but turn to look at the strong light and sound that was created.

The rock serpent looked at Caladbolg and then realized what was going to happen soon.

The serpent moved. It was to dig in the ground. However Tae Ho was faster than it. He controlled Caladbolg with the thunder that was still connected to it.

From the sky to the ground.

The real lightning of the God would fall down!

Kwagagang!

Caladbolg, that fell down from the ceiling, hit the head of the rock serpent that had thrown itself towards the ground. The electricity spread from its head to all its body and also spread on the ground.

The rock serpent couldn't even scream. The shock of being hit in its head was already incredible but it was more obvious as its entire body was covered with electricity.

The serpent dropped its body on the ground. Cuchulainn yelled.

'Good! It is breathing! You succeeded on controlling your strength!'

It wasn't dead yet but it was clearly weakened. Tae Ho added his power of a God onto it as if giving it first aid. And then the serpent flinched and trembled.

At that moment, Tae Ho fired lightning once more from his hand. It was an attack that was weak, as it hadn't even gathered strength, but it was a shock that was hard to endure for the current

rock serpent.

The serpent dropped its body once again. Tae Ho checked on how much power of a God he had left and then transmitted Idun's power onto it to make it conscious.

‘Right, you are doing well. Erase all his will to resist. You should clearly let it know that you are stronger than it. It's similar to taming wild horses.’

‘You, you really are evil.’

Idun let out a really surprised voice but even so didn't retrieve her blessing from Tae Ho.

And at the fifth time.

The rock serpent, that repeated being unconscious and recovering, didn't resist to Tae Ho anymore. He naturally received the ‘one that controls dragons’.

[Nameless rock serpent]

Tae Ho got satisfied at his name that had turned green and then released ‘Idun's warrior’ and slightly dropped his body.

When he looked at his surroundings he saw Bracky and Siri looking at him absurdly.

“Cruel bastard. You should have killed it in one blow.”

“Uh....mm, well. He must have done that because there's something to gain out of it. I will think of it like that.”

They were Bracky and Siri respectively.

Tae Ho inserted all the remaining power of a God into the rock serpent and then called Adenmaha with the summoning rock. The ‘one that controls dragons’ had worked to a certain extent but it seemed like they still lacked interaction that it was impossible to communicate with the rock serpent clearly.

“Translate for me.”

Adenmaha, that was a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann, was an existence on another level and even lived on a different place but the two of them were still serpents.

Adenmaha blinked as she got summoned suddenly and then grasped the situation. She looked at the weak rock serpent that was panting and then asked Tae Ho. It was a question that went straight to the point.

“Is it male or female?”

‘Well, it seems like she is also a Goddess.’

Tae Ho put on a lukewarm expression and told her the answer while Cuchulainn admired.

< Episode 25 – Paul’s sword (5) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 6: Paul's sword (6)

Jotunheim was an immeasurably vast land of giants. Within that land, where the icy wind blew, the giants observed Asgard and the nine realms. Rather, they observed Asgard and the nine realms now that Erin was destroyed.

Almost a century had passed since the Great War had drawn to a close.

Like the Gods of Asgard and the warriors of Valhalla who were sometimes absent from the front lines, the same could be said about the giants of Jotunheim.

While the one named Utgard Loki, the Magician King, bore the strongest force in Jotunheim, the being who both commanded the giant kings and held an army of giants at the front lines was none other than the Warrior King, Harmarti, king of the frost giants.

The role Harmarti held was one of diversion. While the Warrior King led the giants to the front lines and distracted the forces of Valhalla, Utgard Loki took care of things in places elsewhere. Such was the demise of Erin.

In addition, the military might of the giants did not end with Jotunheim.

The giants controlled Muspelheim under the reign of Surtr, the strongest giant king. They had the titans, sworn enemies of Olympus, and the forces under King Bahngo that were currently attacking the temple were not to be underestimated either.

The fomiores, that took part in the destruction of Erin, were also allied with Jotunheim.

Deploying these forces in the rear, controlling their leaders, and scheming of new methods to invade Asgard with were the roles of the Magician King.

Balgad, the Giant of Earth and one of the Five Fingers of Utgard

Loki, expressed etiquette in front of him.

Despite his most recent task given by the Magician King having gone excellently, Balgad's mood was sour.

Sigil, the killer of his own race, had died earlier than he'd anticipated.

It was a miserable death. He, who could once massacre hundreds of giants and warriors of Valhalla alike, had lost his life to a few mere intermediate-ranked warriors of Valhalla. Although he was weakened from his extended time in prison, the truth was still difficult to accept.

"You have done well, Balgad."

The Magician King said in a low voice. Balgad, whose thoughts still lingered on Sigil, bowed to answer the words of his master.

"Sigil has received the punishment he long deserved. You have retrieved Garmr's soul fragment, and I'm satisfied with your efforts. You have done well."

"Thank you, my king."

The words of the Magician King weren't wrong. Balgad had succeeded regarding his task, for the ones that had retrieved the third soul fragment were among Balgad's underlings.

The Five Fingers showed different reactions at the compliment given by the Magician King.

Grund, the Giant of the Sea, appeared satisfied that Sigil, who he had despised, was dead, and he beamed at Balgad with a soft expression. Ort, the Giant of Beasts, let out his usual, silent laughter.

The Giant of the Night, Avalt, was silent; although it wasn't because he was envious of Balgad's success. His thoughts were simply elsewhere.

The Magician King continued speaking.

“I believe there will be many more fragments in Midgard. I have already grasped the location of these new fragments through the ones we have in our possession.”

As the Magician King waved his hand, a map of Midgard appeared in front of the five fingers. A location that was presumed to hold one of Garmr’s soul fragments also appeared to be where the humans held a strong military presence, even in Midgard.

“I will also entrust this task to the Giant of Earth. Will you be able to do it, Balgad?”

“I will follow your will, my king.”

The Giant of Earth, Balgad, placed his hand on his chest and responded with a loyal countenance. The Magician King proceeded immediately.

“There is a possibility for the hunting dogs of Valhalla to smell what we are planning, and a large battle may be unavoidable. No... It won’t be bad to instigate a real fight.”

The eyes of the Giant of Beasts, Ort, became sharp. The Magician King didn’t offer any further explanation, but the Five Fingers understood his meaning.

He was hoping for a large-scale conflict to occur in Midgard. As it were, the giants couldn’t help but operate with restricted movements within that land that Odin and Freya had spread a great barrier over.

However, the same held true for Asgard and Valhalla. Even though they had already discovered three soul fragments, the forces that remained in Midgard were naught but one or two Valkyries and about ten intermediate-ranked warriors.

Just what kind of big battle was the Magician King referring to? Could it be the biggest battle they could produce with restricted movements, or a catastrophe-like battle that would sweep up the humans in Midgard?

No matter the context, it was a good decision. Balgad was planning to realize the wishes of his king in full this time around. He also wasn't planning on letting go of Garmr's soul fragment.

Grund, the Giant of the Sea, offered some encouraging words, but Ort, the Giant of Beasts, revealed a look of displeasure.

Avalt, the Giant of the Night, also held several doubts regarding notions related to his thoughts about Garmr's soul fragments.

However, Avalt didn't open his mouth recklessly. If their king was being deliberately vague, then he must have felt it necessary to do so. After all, the one before them was none other than the Magician King, Utgard Loki.

"Keep searching in Asgard. Even if you aren't able to find any fragments, you will be able to blind Asgard's eyes."

The Magician King finished speaking. The Giant of the Night, Avalt, found further doubt with what the Magician King last said, but he still refrained from opening his mouth.

The Giant of Earth, Balgad, looked at the map of Midgard. As he stared, a new image of war slowly blossomed within his mind.

—

"Um, so he simply said he was living well in his land, but the dwarves invaded and a battle occurred?"

Bracky snorted from his seat upon a boulder. Siri paused before continuing with a low voice.

"Rather than invading, their zones of life must have overlapped just like how when a village expands and friction between the beasts increases."

It was a situation that commonly occurred when forests were cleared.

Gordon seemed emboldened by Siri's words, and he offered his opinion in a loud voice.

“We just moved looking for a new mine, and Nidavellir is the land of us dwarves anyway. Do you know how many dwarves died at its hands? It’s just an evil demon.”

Although it was a bit extreme, his words sounded typical for a dwarf.

Nevertheless, Adenmaha still responded curtly while crossing her arms.

“This guy said that there was a mine of girders in the land he slept in and that the dwarves attacked him several times aiming for it.”

In other words, the dwarves were reaping the consequences of their actions.

As Adenmaha glanced at him, Bracky looked at Gordon with a ‘ho’ing’ sound. Siri also put on a face that implied it was difficult to side with him, and Gordon snorted before continuing.

“What about us dwarves wanting a mine? Water flowing in both high and low places is obviously optimal. To us, the mines are like what water sources or clean air are to humans.”

Although it was easy to forget, the dwarves were indeed the fairies of the ground. Because of that, their standards of living weren’t all that similar to the humans.

The dwarven race consisted entirely of males. From that notion, the logic behind their flourishing didn’t stem from their active crossbreeding. There were some dwarves that were born that way, but they were very much a minority.

Put simply, most of them were born in the mines.

It wasn’t really a proper way to describe it, but they were literally born from the earth.

At times, peculiar rocks or metals that emanated mystical light were found in the mines inhabited by dwarves. Surprisingly

enough, those rocks and metals were dwarven infants.

As time elapsed, the rock and metal would begin taking the shape of a dwarf like a sculpture, and these sculptures would eventually transform to become real dwarves.

Earth fairies that were born in mines.

Because of that, Gordon's words weren't wrong. New mines were a necessity for the dwarves to maintain their race.

Although Tae Ho's group couldn't know this, Bracky nodded as if he roughly understood.

"Well, I kind of understand. Fighting of this nature generally doesn't happen because someone wishes for it to be so, and your argument isn't particularly bad either. It's unavoidable if dwarves want to eat and live."

The humans of Midgard fought among themselves every day. If it was a fight against a huge serpent that has peacefully occupied a mine, then it became easy to understand it emotionally.

"Mm."

Although Bracky voiced his approval, it seemed he wanted to receive a bow in return, so Gordon put on a vague expression.

Instead of reigniting the fire on an issue that had finished moderately, Tae Ho decided to alter the course of conversation with Adenmaha.

"Adenmaha, why don't you ask him if he's able to live outside of this place?"

"Do you want to take him to Idun's residence too?"

"The return path will be rough, but I guess I might have to."

Adenmaha could barely fit in the flying pirate ship, but the rock serpent was twice as big as her. It would be really troublesome if he wanted to take him to Idun's residence.

Even so, he couldn't just leave the serpent here. In order to use a summoning rock, one needed summons that lived in a magical area for it to become its base, but Tae Ho's magical area was at Idun's residence.

Releasing the rock serpent would be a different story, but if he wanted to use it as a summon, he had to return back to Idun's residence with it.

"Hm, wait a moment."

Adenmaha nodded as if she understood and then let out a voice that really didn't suit the look of a beautiful Goddess.

"Grr. Grr, grrrrr!"

Could the sound of a growling beast really be as such? The noises seemed like they were quite systemized, however, and the rock serpent let out a similar sound.

Bracky stared at Adenmaha as if it were more marvelous each time he saw it, and Tae Ho and Siri forced their laughter.

Soon, Adenmaha finished her conversation with the rock serpent, and she spoke to Tae Ho with slightly flushed ears.

"Uh... He's not a normal serpent. Well, you may know with how he looks, but should I say that he's closer to being a magical creature? He can live in other places, but he needs energy to eat. As the residence is filled with power of Idun-nim, won't that be enough? Until now, it seems that he was depending on the girder mine."

The rock serpent, its body covered in rocks, was certainly a strange-looking creature to call normal.

'I was wondering how I should feed it, but there won't be any problem then.'

When measuring it from head to tail, the rock serpent was at least a dozen meters in length. If he fed it normally, then Idun's residence would most certainly become bankrupt.

“But can’t he transform like you?”

If he could become small like Adenmaha, then there wouldn’t be any problems regarding moving and eating. Everything would become simpler.

However, Adenmaha shook her head bluntly.

“Hey, you might forget this often, but I’m also a Goddess. Not all serpents can be like me.”

Adenmaha had been a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann before becoming a sea serpent. Just by appearance alone, one could tell she wasn’t someone that couldn’t be compared to a mere rock serpent.

“Anyways, I feel it will work out somehow as the residence is quite big. I also don’t see him as really being the active type.”

To begin with, if he really was the active type, the serpent wouldn’t have been able to make a nest and live a dormant life underground. Even if it was wide, that was only within the standards of humans. It was a really narrow place for a rock serpent.

“Good. Then can you roughly transmit to him what we spoke of until now?”

“I understand, so don’t laugh.”

Adenmaha opened her eyes sharply and then started to converse with the rock serpent. As she started ‘grr-ing’ this time too, the rock serpent did the same. Suddenly, Adenmaha burst out laughing.

“Did they speak of something fun?”

Bracky asked with wide eyes. Adenmaha covered her mouth with her hand and let out a graceful laugh, and she shrugged her shoulders before replying.

“Uh, well, he said that we will serve me as his noonim. This big

guy also has a cute side like Rolo.”

“Did you have that kind of relationship with Rolo?”

The one that blinked and asked was Siri, and Adenmaha nodded this time too.

“Rolo is quite intelligent. I’m teaching him how to swim nowadays, but it’s really cute that he’s able to swim well.”

‘A swimming gryphon... How marvelous.’

Tae Ho was more amazed at Adenmaha teaching Rolo how to swim. Was she teaching him through the shape of a sea serpent or the shape of a Goddess?

“Anyways, tell him to rest today, and also tell him that we will leave tomorrow so he should prepare himself.”

“I understand.”

Adenmaha resumed growling. Tae Ho managed to contain his amusement and then turned to look at Gordon.

“Elder.”

“It’s really regretful that you will be leaving tomorrow, but what can I do as the path you have chosen is really busy? I’ve decided-I will open a party even if it lasts for a day! Enjoy yourselves, and then go your own path.”

Gordon laughed and said quickly.

Bracky also laughed at his words and opened his eyes sharply.

“A party is good, but don’t you have something like a treasure? We saved your lives and also plucked out the tooth that was bothering you.”

Siri gulped down the words ‘we were the ones that risked ourselves’ and closed her eyes to hide her expression. Gordon let out a soft groaning sound.

“Mm, I don’t have anything that’s good, but I will prepare

something suitable.”

‘As expected of a dwarf; you should poke first and then see their reaction.’

While Cuchulainn complimented Bracky’s decisiveness, Tae Ho offered a question to Gordon.

“Can’t I have more clues about Paul?”

“Mm.....I think that his sword was the greatest clue, but something more may come out after searching the village. I will look around for the time being.”

It was Caladbolg, after a fragment of Caladbolg.

He didn’t know who this person called Paul was, but there was the possibility for him to have more legacies of Erin. No... In the first place, if he’s someone that had these kind of treasures, he had to meet him as Erin’s successor!

Tae Ho put back Caladbolg in Unnir and then took out the prototype of Liberatus.

“Adenmaha, do you want to take a look at this?”

There was a possibility for it to contain magic of the Tuatha De Danann.

Adenmaha’s face grew nervous at Tae Ho’s request before she spread her shoulders and nodded. It was because she remembered what she had spoken of with Scathach.

Adenmaha easily placed the awkwardly large, heavy Liberatus prototype on the ground and then curled up to check it thoroughly. A long period of time followed, so much so that Bracky had begun falling asleep.

“I found it!”

Adenmaha abruptly stood up from her place and shouted with a triumphant face.

“There’s a message magic.”

It was also in the hilt.

Tae Ho glanced at Gordon for a moment and made a gesture with his eyes. Adenmaha curled up again and placed her hands atop the hilt.

She activated the message magic.

< Episode 25 – Paul’s sword (6) > End

Episode 25/Chapter 7: Paul's sword (7)

The day Erin was destroyed, the fomoires believed that they had finally won the long war.

They were half wrong and half right.

They had won the war, but Erin was lost forever. For the fomoires, Erin was much more than another land they had to destroy and burn down. Just as it was for the Tuatha De Danann and the Milesians, Erin was their homeland.

As recorded in the Invasion of Erin, the ownership of Erin had changed several times throughout history, and the fomoires that fought against each successive invader grew more detached as time progressed.

Once Great King Cichol took over, their pure blood became mixed with several races and a hybrid generation of fomoires was born into the world.

As a result, several kings grew to reign among the fomoires. Bress the Tyrant was hailed as the strongest amongst them, but he wasn't alone in vying for such a title.

About a century after the destruction of Erin, Bress was faced against innumerable challenges. His denizens, filled with emptiness after losing Erin, required a sense of purpose Bress could not provide, and he had to suppress the rebels that felt that they were just being used by the giants of Jotunheim. During this period, there were many fomoire kings that aimed for his seat.

It could be said that Bress the Tyrant didn't have a particularly good spot among the fomoire kings.

He was a crossbreed, a being born from the fomoire king and a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann. He was someone who climbed to the throne of the Tuatha De Danann, and with his origins as such, everyone, from the fomoire kings to even the common fomoires,

looked down upon him with disapproval.

As a result, Bress the Tyrant protected his seat by suppressing his opposition with force.

He, who always had enemies at his throat, was forced to become an unyielding king.

Bress the Tyrant's gaze penetrated into the distance as he leaned his body upon the unreasonably gargantuan wooden throne. By this point, between the fomoires that criticised, betrayed and schemed against him, he had already ruled for close to a hundred years.

His eyes and ears had grown clearer than anyone else's, and it had been a long time since he had last sensed a disturbing element below ground.

The king was beginning to weaken.

No... He had already grown weak.

He couldn't secure Scathach, one of the few existences that could provide the satiety the fomoires required. He had deployed a vast number of fomoires, but his forces were defeated to the point of even losing Midak, one of his prime underlings. Even Adenmaha, a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann that he kept as a trophy, had been stolen away from him.

But his failures didn't end there.

The surprise attack of the giant, Balzak, ended in defeat. Bress lost a substantial number of fomoires before being seized by the Magician King, Utgard Loki, for his scheming in using Balzak.

Korga's leading of a large army of fomoires and cooperation with Sigil in the attack of Radetza were due to this very reason.

The fomoires did not perceive this war in a good light, for they had been subjected to the same humiliation of being used by the giants as when Erin was destroyed.

To make matters worse, they had even lost that battle. Korga had returned safely, but countless fomiores had died a dog's death in the battle against Valhalla and the giant.

The repeated failures had made the king weak, or the ones aiming for his throne thought as much anyway.

They desired victory and a new trophy. They needed to show the excellence of the king in front of everyone.

And the thing they needed to do that...

Bress the Tyrant curled himself up on his throne. He observed Midgard using the mystical powers of the Tuatha De Danann he'd inherited from his mother.

One might wonder the cause for all these failures.

It was all because Idun's warrior had arrived.

—

The King of Gods, Odin, raised his head.

He had made a decision while still being curled up in front of Mimir's lake.

A force had remained behind in Midgard to seek out the remaining soul fragments. If one considered the reason for the Great Barrier's existence, then it would be clear that for the warriors of Valhalla to stay in Midgard for a prolonged period, it would be dangerous; however, the present circumstances were abnormal.

They had already destroyed three soul fragments in Asgard. As they had retrieved two of them this time around, a third of the fragments were now in the hands of Asgard. It was estimated that there were 13 or 14 fragments in total.

“Is it not time yet?”

He said in a deep voice before peering at the head of Mimir with his uncovered eye. There was deep exhaustion apparent in the gaze

of the King of Gods.

Mimir's head offered Odin the answer with an even deeper voice.

Odin nodded. From his seat, he sent flying Munin who had been perched upon his shoulder.

“Go. Fly to Valhalla.”

Send them the new order...

Odin could see something beyond Munin's wings. Through the eyes of the crow, Hugin, he looked down on Midgard,.

As the God of War, he could foresee another battle.

—

As Adenmaha caressed the hilt of the prototype of Liberatus with her long, slender fingers, the magic message spread into the air above. Like before, it was also a map.

“Is it Midgard? It looks... close to the Draconic Straits. It's the place where the Skald Knights are based at.”

Bracky offered these words while touching his beard. There was a hint of grief in his eyes.

“A legacy of Erin is also at a place like that?”

Siri inquired in a solemn voice. As Tae Ho turned to look at Adenmaha, she gingerly tapped the hilt and exclaimed.

“Wait a moment! There are a few more magical messages this time! This map isn't the only thing.”

It seemed like she was preoccupied with her magic, for her polite words came both forcefully and naturally. Tae Ho patiently waited for her to finish, and a new magic message soon spread next to the map.

It wasn't a map nor a string of words. Surprisingly, what appeared was nothing other than a holographic image of a man.

The man was particularly tall and wore a black robe with a

longsword tied to his waist.

The gazes of everyone quickly shifted to this bizarre sight, and the man from within the message opened his mouth as if he had been waiting for their attention.

[If you are seeing this message, then that means that you are either Erin's successor or mighty enough to break my magic.]

[Well, it's good whichever you are, for you have the right to become a king regardless. Honestly speaking... I only hope that you aren't a fomoire.]

There were various, mixed emotions apparent in his voice. A bitter smile crested his lips containing motes of despair, ill temperament, and grief.

The man's shoulders sagged. He then sat nearby and continued speaking.

[You should have already guessed, but I'm a survivor from Erin.]

[I'm a really weak, old, and frail survivor.]

Despite his somber words, the voice of the man was healthy. He was tall and his back wasn't bent, but the group watching the message appeared to have been enchanted by his words. They all seemed to acknowledge that he was indeed an old man.

[I lost everything the day Erin got destroyed. By the time I pulled myself together, tens of years had already passed since its destruction. The unending feelings of emptiness and pain... I wanted to end my life. I couldn't forgive myself for having survived alone, but in the end, I couldn't do it. I decided to dedicate my life to remembrance... so that there could still be someone left to remember that day. To remember that we didn't lose everything. That we still had one thing. The last business I have... is with you.]

[I don't know when you will see this message. Perhaps you may be watching this with me at your side, embarrassed of your eyes

looking upon me, or perhaps it may be after I'm dead, and I've long since become dust. There are several other cases...]

[Bah! The words are increasing incessantly. Please understand, it's merely a useless habit of this old man. Perhaps, it may be an illness that came from my job.]

The man smirked. Although the robe obscured his face, they clearly felt his soundless smirk.

[I am currently gathering the legacies of Erin, and I shall hide them in places throughout the world after putting them inside the protectors I've made. My reasoning is simple, for only the ones with your qualifications may unlock them. Since I don't know when and where you will appear, won't my chances increase if I scatter them everywhere? Hah!]

[If I have to list another reason... then it would be security. It's the wisdom of not filling all your eggs in the same basket. Ah! Of course, you won't be able to do anything about the difficulty that poses. Who knows, though? I may be next to you, grumbling about why I scattered them like this, leading the way.]

Bracky, who was fixated like the rest, laughed unconsciously. Although this old man was a person who appeared very old and exhausted, he had a vaguely pleasant aura.

[Come to Midgard. The spot marked on this map is a shelter I made there long ago. Once I finish gathering the legacies, I will reside at that place. Although I won't be there if I can't finish my task, I'll at least leave behind some legacies and clues on how to find me to soothe you, so don't worry.]

[Time is almost up. I don't know who you are, but I will pray that we can one day meet. Having said that... I will also pray that you are a beautiful girl or woman.]

[Luck accompany you!]

[PD: I like black haired girls but it's not that I dislike golden hair.]

The man released a post-data log and then took off the robe he was wearing. Just as he'd said, his appearance was that of an old man with a white beard. His big, clear eyes winked as if asking how his last joke was, and he smirked before dissipating.

“What a funny old man.”

Bracky smirked as if imitating the old man in the message and laughed. Siri also seemed to have taken interest in him.

It was different for Adenmaha, however. Upon the old man's revealing of himself, her eyes had widened to become bigger than even his, and her breath had caught in her throat.

The reason behind this was simple.

It was because she knew the old man. She knew quite well as to who he was and what kind of person he was.

It was the same for Cuchulainn.

Cuchulainn also gulped down his surprise and proceeded to let out a magnanimous laugh.

He then called out the old man's name.

—

The old man was accustomed to the night because he was a crossbreed between an incubus and a human. The origin of his magical strength was only within the realm of dreams.

The old man had roamed for a very long time, and unfortunately enough, his wandering hadn't ended yet.

He had roamed several planets. Not only Nidavellir, but also Svartalfheim, Vanaheim and even Asgard.

During his travels, in addition to having discovered several legacies of Erin, he had also acquired several legacies that were as strong as Caladbolg; however, he still hadn't uncovered the object he had designated as his real objective.

His last task.

The last order his king had given him.

The only sword he aspired to deliver unto Erin's successor.

'Merlin. My magician... The one that leads the path to the king...'

When he closed his eyes, he almost felt like he could still hear the voice of his king. He envisioned the curvature of the beautiful sword that was once laid in his hands.

"Where are you at?"

Excalibur.

The great sword of liberation.

The god sword of the fairies.

The man called Paul, the great magician of Camelot, Merlin, kept walking.

He was now in Midgard.

< Episode 25 – Paul's sword (7) > End

Episode 26/Chapter 1: The land of fierce battles (1)

Camelot.

The legendary country said to be founded by King Arthur.

In Erin, however, this country was far more than a legend.

Camelot, King Arthur, and the Knights of the Round Table had once existed.

“My God. It’s Merlin!”

“Is he a famous guy?”

As Adenmaha exclaimed, Bracky tilted his head and asked in confusion. Being a Midgardian, it was the first time he’d heard the name.

Adenmaha smacked her lips, calmed her breathing, and replied in a condescending tone.

“Of course. Should I say that it’s none other than Merlin? Even the witches Morgan le Fay and Vivian were below him. If I had to pick the strongest magician in Erin, he would surely be one of the candidates.”

Bracky was more bothered at Adenmaha’s impoliteness rather than the weight her words carried, but he let it slide. It was because Adenmaha seemed to be noticeably excited.

“So he was alive... I thought that he’d died when Camelot was destroyed.”

Gauging from how she spoke, it seemed as if she held some personal fascination toward Merlin and Camelot.

“Cuchulainn, did King Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table perish?”

‘Probably. The Knights of the Round Table were once part of the

Red Branch Knights I created. One of the knights, Bedevier, claimed that he'd witnessed Arthur's death.'

Cuchulainn's words were bitter and he grew quiet for a time. It wasn't only from recalling King Arthur's demise, for the death of the original owner of Caladbolg, Fergus mac Roich, also lay heavily in his mind.

The day Erin was destroyed, Fergus mac Roich had fought valiantly without regard for his life. The very reason the Red Branch had any survivors at all was owed to his sacrifice.

However, the Red Branch Knights were still annihilated during the Great War.

From Cuchulainn's position, bitterness was a natural response.

'It seems that I will need to explain it to your comrades as well. Give Gae Bolg to Adenmaha, and tell her to transmit to them my story.'

Cuchulainn's voice grew bright as if wanting to shake off the bitter feeling from before, and he waited patiently for Gae Bolg to reach Adenmaha's hands.

This was because while Siri knew of Cuchulainn's existence, Bracky and Gordon did not, and by extension, weren't aware of Gae Bolg's secret.

Nothing good could come from increasing the number of people that knew of his secret, so it was best to announce it through Adenmaha, one already known to be a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann.

'There were three groups of knights that represented Erin. I belonged to the Red Branch Knights. Another group were the Fianna of Fionn mac Cumhail, and the last were King Arthur's Knights of the Round Table.'

Adenmaha began to convey Cuchulainn's words. It was the first time Tae Ho had heard this, so he tilted his ear as Adenmaha

elaborated further.

‘The number of knights in the Round Table was small, but each one of them was strong. When compared to Valhalla, even the weakest were equivalent to superior-rank warriors. King Arthur was a strong and wise king. He established Camelot, and although its beauty and prosperity stimulated the greed of several people, not one ever dared to challenge Arthur and his knights for it.’

Strictly speaking, King Arthur also belonged to Erin, but the boundary of civilities between Cuchulainn and King Arthur was different. Because of that, the former could judge the latter rather objectively.

‘Merlin was both the advisor and mentor of King Arthur. He’s a strong druid, magician, and a profoundly wise man all at once. He’s also possesses a genealogy different from the Tuatha De Danann.’

“Uh... In other words, you’re saying that he’s a really, really incredible old man.”

As Cuchulainn finished speaking through Adenmaha’s mouth, Bracky scratched his chin and remarked. Cuchulainn nodded inside of Gae Bolg upon returning to Tae Ho’s hands.

‘Right. If he can become your ally, he will surely be of great assistance.’

“Uh, but isn’t it weird? He was that great of a magician, but he could merely seal that guy.”

Bracky pointed at the rock serpent that was splayed over the ground. While it was certainly a strong demon, when compared to Merlin’s supposed power, there was a great difference.

The serpent seemed to have understood Bracky’s words, and it started to growl while Adenmaha translated for them.

“Apparently, this guy was originally much stronger but grew weaker the longer he slept. He even starved for close to ten years.

How sad!”

As Adenmaha caressed the nose of the rock serpent, it closed its eyes. Its expression seemed to be quite somber, perhaps because of the story she told.

Cuchulainn spoke up again.

‘There’s indeed a possibility that, just like master, Merlin’s body isn’t in a normal state. Having survived from that day in Erin certainly isn’t an easy thing to accomplish.’

It was hazardous to the point that even Cuchulainn couldn’t escape in a perfect state.

‘But Merlin’s real worth isn’t his strength as a magician. It’s the endless knowledge in his mind, both mystical powers and the acumen of a wise man.’

Merlin was someone searching for Erin’s successor.

He didn’t specify his final task, but Cuchulainn had some notion as to what it was: the order given by King Arthur to aid Erin’s successor.

Ergo, Merlin would help Tae Ho.

Tae Ho would become a magician.

‘Hey, doesn’t it seem like you’re the happiest right now?’

Even happier than when Cuchulainn and Scathach joined him.

It was unavoidable, for compared to them, Merlin was someone Tae Ho knew of well. His reaction would obviously be different.

‘Wouldn’t he also be able to wield Excalibur?’

If one spoke of Merlin, they must also talk about King Arthur, and if one mentioned him, it was impossible to avoid the subject of Excalibur.

‘I see now. There was a fable that the scabbard of Excalibur was made of pure liquid.’

Although he couldn't remember clearly, he recalled briefly seeing that in a game once.

Excalibur and its sheath... The several other legacies Merlin would have gathered.

While Tae Ho imagined the weaponry the Knights of the Round Table must have used, Cuchulainn let out a small laughter.

'It's almost like a small version of Erin.'

Erin was no more. It had been utterly obliterated, but its survivors were now slowly gathering in one spot.

'There's Adenmaha, a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann; my master, the queen of the Land of Darkness; and I, a warrior of the Milesians. We also have you, the successor of Erin. If Merlin, the great magician of Camelot, is also added... It really will have become a small Erin.'

Cuchulainn had dreamt of rebuilding the Red Branch Knights several times, but what he truly wished for wasn't merely rebuilding it. Reestablishing the soul Erin was his true aspiration.

It seemed that there was still a long path ahead, but he now felt closer to the end than ever before.

Tae Ho wondered how to approach Cuchulainn, who had fallen deeply into his thoughts, and then said in a really low voice.

"Um, it is still Idun-nim's residence."

Her residence was not a suitable place to rebuild the Erin which Cuchulainn desired.

His words shattered the mood, but Cuchulainn laughed rather brightly and then spoke with more strength.

'Right. That's why everything will be solved if you seduce Idun, for we are creating a new Erin within Asgard! Cheer up, Tae Ho, successor of Erin. The fate of Erin rests upon your shoulders. You must seduce Idun! Ah, if I was alive I would have done it myself.'

Tae Ho was baffled by his words, but they were inevitably bullshit.

Of course, Cuchulainn must have seen it as a joke too.

“It would be nice if I can meet him soon. Merlin, I mean.”

‘Yeah.’

The remainder of their trip was quite peaceful. The group enjoyed a party in Gordon’s village, and they returned to Idun’s residence after exploring the surroundings of Nidavellir a little bit more.

A few days later....

A new order was passed unto Tae Ho as he trained beneath Ragnar and Cuchulainn.

It was an order to prepare for the second expedition to Midgard.

—

This was something he’d heard upon his return. Rumors foretold that the scale of the expedition to Midgard was expanding, so he had already begun planning for it.

Tae Ho soon finished all his preparations. Heda stood before him, fixing his clothes. Upon finishing, she spoke in a low voice.

“Greet Idun-nim well. When you’re done, come behind the shrine. Alone. Understand?”

“Yes, of course.”

Tae Ho smiled and Heda gathered her lips. After changing the location of her blessings, she had started to provide them when they were alone.

“How good, how good.”

Upon Ragnar’s face sat the smile of a father and eyes glowing with warmth, although the same couldn’t be said for the other members of the family. As Adenmaha and Rolo shot glances their

way, Tae Ho opened the door into the shrine.

“Tae Ho. My warrior.”

A short while after he entered, the surroundings began to change. A vast landscape of plains materialized, and Idun revealed herself in their midst. She smiled at Tae Ho, who had gone down on his knee in her presence, and proceeded to take out the items she had prepared beforehand one by one.

“Firstly, here are the sculptures you requested. I have blessed them plenty.”

They were the sculptures of Idun that Ragnar had created. There were ten of them, and just like Idun had said, Tae Ho felt a holy power radiating from within each one. They almost gave him the impression that he was gazing upon Idun herself, as Ragnar’s sculpting skills weren’t average in the slightest.

“Thank you. I will find a proper area to use them.”

Simply erecting a shrine wasn’t enough. Tae Ho had to first have an object so that believers would gather.

“Right. Cheer up!”

Idun giggled as if Tae Ho was cute before unveiling the second item she had prepared.

“Take this. As you will soon be traveling to Midgard, I prepared it specially for you.”

What Idun had produced was a handkerchief that covered a few pieces of a golden apple. Even without the use of the ‘Eyes of the Dragon’, he could sense that the power they held wasn’t simple.

“They came from one of the best apples of our recent harvest. As they’re the best of the best, please keep them as a secret between us.”

Idun concluded and winked at him. He couldn’t clearly see her through the light, but he could undoubtedly feel it.

Tae Ho nobly received the pieces of a golden apple and then spoke in a tone interwoven with worry.

“Um, but is it really okay for you to give me this?”

There was a reason why she had said to keep it a secret.

Still, as if to unburden his soul, Idun spread her shoulders in a gentle manner.

“I’m merely giving an apple to one of my warriors. What could anyone say? I can just say that one less top-quality apple ripened this time around, so don’t worry too much. Also...”

Idun paused for a moment before continuing while caressing Tae Ho’s cheeks.

“My warrior is the most precious thing to me.”

Her voice and hand were brimming with affection. Tae Ho felt choked, and he then inwardly vowed to increase the number of Shrines of Idun by a large margin.

But it was then that Tae Ho said something which he only but unconsciously remembered.

“Uh.... What about my senior warriors...?”

Tae Ho wasn’t the only warrior in Idun’s legion.

It wasn’t that some facade was broken because Tae Ho wasn’t the only one Idun treasured. He simply recalled his seniors that he hadn’t yet been able to meet.

They, who used a separate residence, were all superior-ranked or above. Wasn’t it time to meet them?

“Here. I still have things to give you.”

Idun removed her hands from Tae Ho’s cheek. It seemed that she hadn’t heard what Tae Ho said in a low voice. That, or she had pretended not to have heard him. She then gave him a piece of paper while smiling.

“A summoning ticket for Heda?”

“That’s right. She said that it was difficult meeting in Midgard. If you use that, Heda will become capable of being summoned, even if it’s only once. Think of it as being similar to using a summoning rock to call Adenmaha. Of course, the process for that is much more difficult.”

Whatever the case, the importance lay in him now being capable of getting Heda to meet him in Midgard.

As Heda couldn’t even converse in his dreams like Idun, it was an incredibly useful item for Tae Ho.

“And here. This is my final gift.”

“Again?”

Idun nodded as Tae Ho asked apprehensively.

“You have achieved as much. For the first time, a shrine dedicated only to me has made an appearance in the mortal world; more importantly, however, I simply want to keep gifting you items if it brings you happiness.”

What Idun revealed was a fishing net.

It wasn’t like the net Tae Ho stole from Midak. What Idun gave him didn’t have a blue color, but instead it bore words under a white-gold color.

[Njord’s Net]

It was a divine object of Njord, the God of the Sea. The power he’d obtained from Ingrid’s blessing began seeping into the net and soon filled it entirely.

“It’s a net I received from Njord. Tae Ho, I know you like catching and riding wild beasts. If you have this net, capturing them will be much easier.”

If he threw it, the net’s size would increase tenfold, and it even had the ability to suppress the strength of what it caught.

Just like Idun had stated, it was a divine object that really fit Tae Ho's tastes.

"Thank you. I will fish plenty of people with this."

"Ah, I should have also prepared a fishing rod."

Tae Ho and Idun joked between each other before Idun fixed her posture. Tae Ho understood the meaning of her subtle gesture and kneeled down to accept her blessing.

"May my blessing accompany you."

The blessing ended like always, and Tae Ho went behind the shrine to meet Heda. He then received the second blessing.

—

The structure of the expedition traveling to Midgard was different than last time.

While it was largely identical for Tae Ho, Bracky, Siri and Harabal, the same couldn't be said for the other warriors.

Notung had lost an arm and had replaced his missing appendage with an artificial steel arm, but he wasn't fully accustomed to it. Olmar still found it difficult to walk since his injuries hadn't healed completely.

In truth, any warrior of Valhalla would be honored to participate in an expedition to Midgard, and normally, the members of an expedition would swap out constantly. Tae Ho and his group were a special case.

Nevertheless, there were also five more warriors that were chosen to accompany Tae Ho's group. They all belonged to different legions and almost seemed to have been waiting for this opportunity.

The leading Valkyrie was still Ingrid of Njord's legion, but unlike before, there was also one additional Valkyrie in tow.

"I'm Kaldea, a Valkyrie of Hermodr's legion. Please treat me

well.”

She was thinner than the other Valkyries but also appeared more agile. She bore the characteristic liveliness of Hermodr’s legion and had hair that looked to have been smelted from gold.

When considering the number of warriors that would have volunteered for the expedition, the inclusion of another Valkyrie was a bit unusual, but Valhalla would have surely planned it all out.

Tae Ho and the warriors hit their chests twice and expressed etiquette towards Kaldea.

At the end of Asgard, on the highest peak of the fortress that Heimdal protected, the rainbow stairs of the Bifrost connected to Midgard spread out endlessly.

Tae Ho and the rest of the expedition followed Ingrid and began ascending the staircase.

Far above the heads of those warriors, the crow Munin watched on with a silent gaze.

Episode 26/Chapter 2: The land of fierce battles (2)

The place where the Bifrost extended to wasn't Kataron or Radetza.

The rainbow stairs had linked to a beautiful island in the middle of a lake. The lake was huge, large enough to be mistaken for a sea.

“Warriors, I welcome you.”

The one awaiting their arrival the end of the staircase was none other than Valkyrie Rasgrid. Just like Ingrid, she was clad in proper, ceremonial robes. Behind her were the warriors of Valhalla alongside some people wearing clothes hewn from the fur of animals.

“Valkyrie Rasgrid, I thank you for coming to greet us.”

Ingrid hit her chest, and Rasgrid did the same.

“For Asgard, and for the Nine Realms.”

As the two Valkyries smiled, their eyes almost level, the warriors of Valhalla behind Rasgrid greeted Tae Ho's group using their own formalities.

“This is the temple of Elidi Lake. I once visited here when I was alive. They came to ask if I was really the son of Thor.”

Bracky looked at his surroundings and spoke with a voice filled with grief and reminiscence. As Tae Ho nodded, unsure of what he meant, Siri whispered in a low voice from beside him.

“This is what you call Pantheon. It's a temple that worships several Gods of Asgard simultaneously. It's one of the famous places of Midgard.”

Tae Ho immediately understood. It seemed like the ones wearing fur clothes were devout worshipers.

Rasgrid finished her greeting with Ingrid and then approached Tae Ho and Siri with a strange smile.

“You came as well. Now we’re finally able to resume our lessons again.”

Tae Ho and Siri flinched at the same time. Her word were spoken in a voice that didn’t suit the nickname of ‘Ice Princess’.

“Half of that is a joke.”

It would have been far better as a complete joke.

While Tae Ho and Siri dodged her eyes, Rasgrid scanned the sky above the warriors and then spoke, her face turning serious.

“This place is currently gathering information regarding Garmr’s soul fragment. As the state of things go, Garmr’s soul fragment was found in another location. Humans from several regions of Midgard are providing us their assistance.”

Be it on land or water, Elidi Lake was a well-developed, highly trafficked area.

In addition, because of their Asgardian origins, both the warriors of Valhalla and the Valkyries couldn’t stay in the villages or towns of Midgard forever. Staying for short periods was acceptable, but a long-term stay necessitated changing location to the temple.

“You should rest for now.”

Rasgrid offered these words before leaving, and the worshipers wearing fur clothes approached and led them to their lodgings. As in Radetza, there was a room prepared for each warrior.

Although Tae Ho’s room wasn’t large, it was nice and comfortable. It was not what one might expect from a room in a temple.

Tae Ho took out his luggage and went outside. It appeared that their arrival had been at a later hour, for the sun had already begun to set. The warriors already emerged from their rooms were

sitting around a bonfire and enjoying a steady supply of alcohol and food.

“What are you talking about?”

As he sat down next to Siri, one warrior raised his mug carved from a horn and replied.

“About why we are fighting-”

“Although the answer is already set.”

As the two warriors spoke out at almost the same time, they turned to look at one another in surprise. In unison, they hit their chests twice as if having promised beforehand and yelled.

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms!”

A clear laughter followed suit.

For Asgard and the Nine Realms. To safeguard Midgard and the rest from the giants.

The warriors were as fresh and bright as always. Tae Ho also laughed unconsciously and glanced at Siri beside him. Her white cheeks had grown rosy by the fire, and she was smiling brightly.

“You seem to be in a good mood.”

As he spoke in a soft voice, Siri nodded in response.

“Working alongside the warriors of Valhalla is always a joyous situation. I think I’ve told you this already....but I’m a warrior of Valhalla and am really enjoying my current lifestyle. I fight to become stronger for the sake of everyone and to protect my comrades... There’s no envy or jealousy here. We all treasure one another. It’s a wonderful thing.”

He had heard before in the secluded place one could refer to as a trace of the Great War.

The voice of Siri that contained her true feelings was really quiet, but the warriors of Valhalla heard her nevertheless. They stopped

their laughter and all opened their eyes widely.

“Huk! Siri! So you like us!”

“And we didn’t even know that!”

“We too-No, I too like you, Siri! Get in my arms! I’ve got a hug with your name on it!”

The one that opened his arms was Bracky. Siri donned the same cold eyes she wore on the battlefield and responded.

“I’m starting to dislike you more now.”

Bracky deflated like a balloon and the warriors of Valhalla burst out laughing again.

One of the warriors emptied his mug and spoke up.

“It’s right that we’re fighting for Asgard and the Nine Realms, but I also fight to become stronger. It’s quite an amazing thing that you can become stronger every time you fight, isn’t that right?”

The warriors agreed and then another, red-faced one stood up and said-

“You know, I’m planning to confess to the Valkyrie of my legion after this expedition.”

“Um, right... Okay. Cheer up! Don’t despair. Valkyries aren’t the only girls in the world. A good day will come soon enough.”

The warriors nodded half heartedly and cheered him up.

And how many more mugs did they drink?

After Tae Ho was drunk to the point of feeling content, he returned to his room and leaned against his bed.

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms...”

It was the motto of the warriors, the reason why they fought.

Tae Ho also felt the same, for the place in which Tae Ho was born was also included among the Nine Realms.

No, that wasn't all.

Midgard. The warriors of Valhalla. Siri and Bracky. Everyone that's staying at Idun's residence.

Heda and Idun...

The notion of protecting the world was a really difficult one to grasp. Tae Ho hadn't stood on the front lines of Asgard which Ragnar had spoken of. In his mind, it wasn't easy to even comprehend that he was helping to protect Asgard and the Nine Realms.

Will that day come?

Will he stand at the epicenter of a battlefield to protect Asgard and the Nine Realms?

Tae Ho envisioned beautiful thoughts as he closed his eyes and fell into a deep sleep.

After an indeterminate amount of time....

"Tae Ho, wake up."

There were hands shaking him. Tae Ho opened his eyes like a warrior on instinct, prepared to fight at a moment's notice.

"Captain Siri?"

He saw Siri that was slightly red because of the alcohol, but her face was as serious as ever.

She expressed her words quickly and quietly.

"We've been summoned. Rasgrid has something to tell us."

"At this time?"

"It's not only us. She wanted all the warriors roused so hurry up. The others should already be gathered."

The warriors of Valhalla had continued their feast after Tae Ho had retired. It was understandable for them to have already gathered.

Tae Ho hastily rose and followed Siri into the hallway. Strangely, the warriors had gathered in Rasgrid's quarters instead of the hall.

Rasgrid's room was twice as large as those of the other warriors, but it felt extremely cramped with three Valkyries and ten warriors amassed inside. As Tae Ho and Siri stood pressed against the door, Rasgrid nodded while facing the group.

"You've all gathered."

Her way of speaking was akin to her attitude on the battlefield, and Ingrid's face was stiffer than usual. Kaldea was the only one smiling brightly. Rasgrid opened her mouth again.

"Valkyrie Kaldea of Hermodr's legion came after receiving a secret order."

Rasgrid turned to look at Kaldea. There was a crow perched upon Kaldea's shoulders.

She breathed in deeply before continuing.

"The objective for this expedition isn't only to search for Garmr's soul fragment. There's another, more hidden objective."

Normally, a single Valkyrie was enough to lead an expedition. There was obviously a reason regarding why Kaldea was included when Ingrid was already the commander.

"I will need to explain a bit. I presume you all know about the great barrier covering Midgard?"

The warriors all nodded or replied 'yes' to Rasgrid's question. Tae Ho had also heard the story from Ragnar.

The magical barrier covering Midgard was created by Odin and Freya.

The reason the giants couldn't attack Midgard and concentrated their forces on the front lines was due to the barrier.

Rasgrid nodded.

“Right. As you know, the great barrier is meant to protect Midgard from our enemies; unfortunately enough, however, it’s not a perfect defense. The reason even people from Asgard can pass freely is thanks to one of primary the weaknesses of the barrier.”

As Midgard was too huge, there were undoubtedly openings in the great barrier. They couldn’t stop a small number from coming and going through that small hole.

Even so, it became harder to cross the barrier the stronger one was. Because of that, the defenders could protect effectively against the strong giants, but weaker monsters could still sneak by.

“During the last expedition, a great number of fomoiros appeared even alongside a strong giant. Originally, this is something that shouldn’t be possible.”

Kaldea’s word were valid. Even with a flaw in the barrier, the events that transpired during the last expedition went beyond that.

“It’s not that a problem exists within the barrier. With this knowledge, the Gods all arrived to a single conclusion, and Heimdal found the cause.”

Shockingly, there were fomoiros hidden in Midgard. Whether they had infiltrated before the barrier’s erection or slowly snuck in over the years, their actions couldn’t be forgiven.

“The objective for this expedition is as follows: to destroy the fomoiro base and drive them out of Midgard.”

If the warriors displayed any large-scale movement, the fomoiros would notice them. What they needed was a perfect surprise attack.

“We aren’t the only ones participating in this offensive. We can be said to be the corps d’elite.”

“When the battle starts, I will call in reinforcements from Asgard. The scope of this expedition isn’t at all minute. It will

become a large-scale engagement.”

Kaldea said this after Rasgrid had finished. She was still smiling brightly, but her eyes gave a different impression. It sounded simple, but the reinforcements she’d spoken of wouldn’t end at just calling ten people.

“We will move tomorrow. They should already be aware of our movements, and because of that, we will approach them at various time intervals.”

There were three Valkyries. It was plenty to fool their eyes.

Kaldea finished speaking with a smirk. Bracky and the warriors seemed to have gotten excited at the notion of fighting, so much so that they clenched their fists and nodded greatly.

Cuchulainn was also excited, for the fomiores were old enemies of Erin. In addition, they had pressured Scathach and aimed for Tae Ho. They were enemies that needed defeating.

‘Asgard also acts when they have to. I suppose it’s time to cut ties with Bress.’

Cuchulainn smiled like a man and spoke. Tae Ho just nodded in reply.

Rasgrid let out a long sigh. She turned to look at Ingrid and Kaldea that were next to her and then hit her chest twice and said.

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms!”

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms!”

The warriors bellowed in unison.

The crow that stood upon the shoulder of Valkyrie Kaldea gazed at the warriors silently.

—

King Ivar of Kataron walked hurriedly towards the hall of the royal castle. His hair was disheveled as if he had just woken and his

clothes were unkempt. Most unbefitting for a king, he was also barefooted.

Still, King Ivar sped on, unperturbed by his appearance. When he reached the hall, his face contorted to match that of a young child's and yelled.

“Paul!”

“Ivar. It's been a long while.”

His tone was one usually heard when speaking to a child rather than a king. The nearby knights and servants frowned in surprise, but it was different for King Ivar. In response, he just beamed an elated smile.

They hadn't met in twenty years, but Paul's appearance was the same as in his memories. He was wearing the same dark robe, and his clear, bright eyes were etched brilliantly unto his wrinkled face.

King Ivar felt vaguely relieved by Paul's image, one that seemed to have ignored the passage of time.

Paul was, after all, a mythical being, and Ivar would have been more surprised had he seemed any older and weaker.

Paul stood at the center of the hall in a place where the furnishings had disappeared and only the decorations remained.

“Ivar, there's someone that pulled out Liberatus.”

So that was the reason for his return to Kataron. King Ivar felt slightly disappointed, but he quickly smiled once again. Helga, who had reached the hall even faster than King Ivar, spoke with a voice full of excitement.

“Idun's warrior retrieved the sword.”

He was the famous among the ones that came down to Midgard.

Even the fame of Bracky, a former member of the Skald Knights who had returned from death, couldn't match his.

The one that is loved by the beautiful and graceful Goddess of Life. The one recognized by Thor and handles lightning and thunder.

But that wasn't all.

The warrior that rides upon Valkyries, the Giant Slayer, Destroyer of the Winter Tree Forest, etcetera. He had too many nicknames.

And Paul added one more name to the list.

“Erin's successor.”

The one destined to inherit Camelot's will.

Paul, otherwise known as the Great Magician of Camelot, Merlin, forced himself to calm down. King Ivar and Helga spoke to him about the warriors of Valhalla and told him that they were gathered in the temple of Elidi Lake.

“But Idun's warrior has returned to Valhalla.”

Helga, who had been spouting words non-stop like a chicken, put on a dark face as she concluded with that statement. After all, she had seen Idun's warrior return to Valhalla with her own two eyes.

But Merlin simply shook his head. He knew.

Idun's warrior was in Midgard. He didn't only have Liberatus, either.

“I will have to hurry.”

There was quite a distance between Kataron and Elidi Lake.

He muttered under his breath and tapped the sword that was hanging from his waist. It was only half of a broken weapon, but it was an exceptionally precious item for him.

Caliburn, the Sword of Selection.

It was the only legacy of King Arthur he was able to retrieve.

Without even waiting for the sun to rise, Merlin turned around

and rushed toward the direction of Elidi Lake.

< Episode 26 – The land of fierce battles (2) > End

Episode 26/Chapter 3: The land of fierce battles (3)

The rising sun at the temple of Elidi Lake seemed faster than usual, or the intensive operation of mobilizing the warriors made everyone think so, anyway.

“Ingrid, Kaldea, and I will each lead a team of warriors.”

The three groups would divide and reach the objective through independent routes after leaving Elidi Lake. This was in order to both successively trick the fomoires and to search for Garmr’s soul fragment simultaneously.

Due to their prior experiences with one another, Tae Ho, Bracky, Siri and, Harabal were all assigned to the same team. Warriors of Odin’s legion formed the backbone of the two remaining teams, and the rest of the warriors were merged in evenly.

The one leading Tae Ho’s group was Valkyrie Ingrid. Tae Ho felt saddened but also fortunate to be separated from Rasgrid after merely a day.

‘But you should still train earnestly. Ragnar set up a schedule for you, right?’

Tae Ho lacked the time to fully digest all the tactics he had learned. Even so, he knew he couldn’t slack off in training even through such a major expedition.

The priests of Elidi Lake weren’t even aware of the warriors’ plans to assault the base of the fomoires, and due to this, some hoped to accompany the warriors that were going out to “check for changes”. Despite knowing the situation, Rasgrid still allowed several priests and wandering warriors to accompany them.

Tae Ho’s group decided to unleash his flying pirate ship. Just unveiling it alone was rather eye catching, and it obviously wasn’t suitable for stealth attacks. Instead, the team decided upon its

usage for the opposing reason.

“There’s a high possibility that the fomiores will fixate their attention on the flying ship rather than the individual movement of the warriors at ground level. To put it differently, we might just be able to fool the eyes of our enemies with a simple, eye-catching display.”

It was like an assassin causing a scene in order to sneak around an enemy.

“Our task is to grab the attention of the fomiores. Because of that, our team’s path is the longest, and our members are outfitted with the flashiest gear we have.”

By this point, the warriors of Valhalla had already proven themselves in Midgard three times over.

It truly wasn’t excessive to say that Tae Ho’s showmanship and patronages had allowed his title of Idun’s Warrior to spread all throughout Midgard.

Bracky, who was already famous in life, had become even more so after death as a warrior of Valhalla.

The Valkyries aside, Siri was the only woman among the warriors’ expedition to Midgard. Her presence alone was outstanding, but her performance brought her status to another level. To state that there were a great number of warriors that wanted to meet her wasn’t a lie.

“What about me, Ingrid?”

Ingrid pondered Harabal’s question before turning to Siri.

“Striking the fomiores here is vital, but we need to approach the task with a rather relaxed attitude. Siri, as a veteran, you should understand. A patient hunter is always successful.”

Bracky laughed soundlessly at her ignoring Harabal, while Harabal’s expression warped into a frown.

“I’m actually feeling quite sad. I was also rather famous in my village.”

His claim was believable, for otherwise he wouldn’t have come to Valhalla.

Ingrid gave a sympathetic look while Harabal grumbled and then pouted her lips slightly.

“You proved your worth during the last expedition. Each and every one of you are heroes of Valhalla, and it’s truly an honor to fight alongside you. It’s a prideful thing, really.”

Ingrid spoke and then glanced at Harabal. Her words were frank, but her attitude was sincere. Harabal scratched his head and smiled, and Siri began laughing.

For now, Ingrid had only briefed everyone on the name of their final destination. It seemed that Kaldea would inform them of the remaining details before any decisive actions were taken.

“If something goes wrong, prioritize your lives. The Valkyries that come and go from Midgard to retrieve the souls of warriors will find you.”

After the short conference was over, the warriors embarked on their free ride. Of course, there was nothing in particular that they could do, as their route was predetermined upon a flying ship.

The sun had begun setting. As Tae Ho stared into the horizon, Cuchulainn interrupted his thoughts without warning.

‘I’m just asking, but when are you going to use that summoning ticket?’

“Heda’s summoning ticket?”

‘Right. The one you got from Idun.’

The ticket that could summon Heda anywhere even if but for a moment.

Tae Ho checked his bosom and pulled out the ticket. Its paper-

like appearance was simple aside from the several complicated runes glowing on its surface.

“I was thinking....”

‘Yes?’

“I was thinking it might be good to use in the middle of a battle, right?”

Heda was also a powerful Valkyrie. Although he had never seen her fight, Siri, who’d fought with her, had said that she wasn’t at all inferior to Rasgrid.

He would fight along Heda.

He thought that it was savage but also quite romantic, although it could only be so between a warrior of Valhalla and a Valkyrie.

Cuchulainn let out a sigh as Tae Ho revealed an excited smile.

‘Hey, hey. Do you really have to force the woman you like to stand on a battlefield to feel satisfied? My heart clenches just from imagining my master in such a place.’

All romanticizing aside, a battlefield was still a battlefield. It was a horrible place where lives were taken without a moment’s notice.

Unable to think of a comeback, Tae Ho flinched and smacked his lips. Now that he’d thought about it, he wouldn’t want Heda anywhere near a place like that. Still, since he only had one opportunity, he couldn’t completely ignore the benefits they would gain by having her at their side in a battle.

‘Idun-nim also said that it’s a meeting ticket, not a ‘participating ticket’. Think well on how you shall use it.’

Although he had criticized and even decided Tae Ho’s answer for him, it wasn’t that Cuchulainn was forcing him.

Tae Ho organized his thoughts for a moment before returning the ticket to his pocket. He then took out a summoning rock as if trying to appraise it.

‘You are going to call Adenmaha?’

“There are many things we have to give each other.”

After the last battle, Scathach had strengthened her senses to keep the fomiores in check, and as Ragnar was also bothered by this expedition, they had decided to keep in contact regularly.

‘So it’s a chicken instead of a turkey.’

Tae Ho ignored the proverb Cuchulainn had learned from anyone’s best guess and channeled his magic power into the summoning rock.

Adenmaha slowly appeared in front of Tae Ho with a leisurely expression. It was probably because he had told her beforehand that he would call her at night.

“Ohh! The warrior has had a Valkyrie meet him!”

The wandering warriors also present on the main deck looked at Adenmaha with shining eyes. It seemed that Bracky had shared many stories with them.

“I’m not a Valkyrie.”

Adenmaha snorted while assuming a prim posture, but it seemed like she’d enjoyed their flattery.

Bracky laughed at that, and then Ingrid suddenly approached Tae Ho.

“Warrior Tae Ho, it’s a meeting then.”

“Yes?”

A meeting? Here? With who? From where?

As Tae Ho blinked rapidly, Ingrid cleared her throat and then gestured at herself.

“I’m a real Valkyrie, so isn’t it fine?”

She smirked, having seemingly just cracked a joke.

Tae Ho's face turned awkward as if he didn't know how to answer, and Ingrid grew even more embarrassed as her joke had failed to land.

Bracky and Harabal laughed until their sides hurt seeing this, and Siri turned around to hide her red face.

‘Anyways, a Valkyrie really did come meet you.’

Because Ingrid was a real Valkyrie like she had said.

While Adenmaha clicked her tongue, Bracky began explaining things with a face molten from laughter. It was the story of ‘the warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him’ that he had both heard and now seen for himself.

Now that he'd seen it, that nickname certainly had a lot of truth behind it. It had more history than ‘the warrior that rides on Valkyries’.

Tae Ho closed his eyes to avoid the awkwardness and recalled one of his earlier meetings with Heda.

Heda, who sought out Tae Ho during his first expedition.

Who greeted him awkwardly before two thousand warriors of Valhalla.

A smile appeared on his face by its own volition. Those memories were invaluable to the point where he felt warmth just thinking about them.

And it was at that moment-

“Huh? It got created.”

Tae Ho blurted this out unconsciously, and Bracky and Harabal turned their heads reflexively. Siri also turned to look at Tae Ho with eyes that had become bloodshot from laughing too hard.

“Re-really?!”

Tae Ho nodded at Adenmaha's question. Although the subject

was absent, everyone understood what he was talking about.

A saga. The story of a legendary warrior.

[Saga: The Warrior That had a Valkyrie Meet Him]

‘Are all legends dead?’

Cuchulainn spoke in an absurd, incredulous manner, but that attitude dissipated only a moment later. He also began concentrating like the ones around them, for he was also curious.

Just what could the effects of this saga be?

Tae Ho activated his saga, and the previously vague atmosphere changed in an instant.

—

The distance between Kataron and Elidi Lake wasn’t thin.

Merlin had left Kataron in the middle of the night, taken a fast ship, and even increased its speed further by creating wind with his magic, but it still wasn’t a distance he could cover in a single night.

Merlin felt a bit of anxiety, and it wasn’t only due to the long path ahead of him.

Idun’s warrior was moving. Merlin was sure he’d already left Elidi Lake.

“Are you able to track him?”

Helga, who was tagging along on the ship King Ivar had provided, inquired. The most trusted warrior of King Ivar, Bultan, was also with them.

“It’s... possible.”

Merlin left a vague answer and looked in the direction of Elidi Lake.

To begin with, Merlin hadn’t decided upon Elidi Lake because the warriors of Valhalla were gathered there. It was because he was

certain that Idun's warrior was in Midgard.

Merlin could feel the existences of the Liberatuses. He felt the prototype Liberatus in Midgard, one that should be in Nidavellir, while the Liberatus he'd left behind in Kataron showed him a more systematic direction.

But something had happened, for the signals were weak and irregular.

There could be several reasons for this. The Liberatuses could be damaged, or perhaps Idun's warrior had stored them inside a strong magical device.

Whatever the case, it was hard to chase after Idun's warrior because the signals were too weak.

"Can't do anything about it."

Merlin's face was serious, and he grumbled and sighed before grabbing Caliburn at his waist.

Caliburn, the Sword of Selection.

King Arthur had once pulled out this sword, proving his qualification as a king.

The Liberatuses Merlin made were mere copies of Caliburn. If he applied the power of the real Caliburn, he could temporarily boost the signal of the Liberatuses.

Merlin, whose father was an incubus, had his magic power strengthened the deeper the night was. He closed his eyes and began reciting a chant as he channeled magic power to the sword's hilt.

Caliburn started to glow, and the glow quickly became as bright as the morning star.

Helga and Bultan looked on excitedly in anticipation, but their eyes suddenly widened.

They then expressed themselves with simple smiles and soft

exclamations.

However Merlin just grew surprised instead of smiling. It was because Caliburn's light was far stronger than he had expected.

How?

Merlin gulped dry saliva. He thought of a reason which made him shudder. He unconsciously inserted more magic power into Caliburn.

The night sky above Elidi Lake disappeared. The warm, bright light of Caliburn had driven away the darkness in an instant.

Helga and Bultan exclaimed louder than before, and all those present in the region gazed at the light with awe in their eyes.

Finally, Merlin smiled. It was a sincere expression.

Caliburn's light.

The glory of Camelot that was said to have disappeared.

The Liberatuses had reacted. Merlin memorized the precise direction of the two Liberatuses' signals, and he set sail towards them immediately.

At about the same time, in a distant place where the light of Caliburn couldn't be seen—

Someone else felt the glory of Camelot.

< Episode 26 – The land of fierce battles (3) > End

Episode 26/Chapter 4: The land of fierce battles (4)

The day of Erin's destruction also marked the demise of Camelot.

On that day, all of the countries within to Erin, the Land of Darkness included, had been destroyed under the firestorms of Surtr.

Where the king could not protect his country and citizens, the knights had also failed to protect their king.

They had all vanished into smoke and ashes.

Or had they?

There had, in fact, been survivors amidst the dust.

One survivor, to be precise.

—

Tae Ho blinked.

Adenmaha and Siri did as well, and it was no exception for Ingrid, Bracky and Harabal either.

“He....da?”

Tae Ho's voice was faint. It was precisely due to the woman that had materialized before them after he'd activated his saga.

The helmet and armor decorated in wings.

The pristine, ruby-shaded hair.

In the eyes of everyone present, it was unmistakably Heda; however, Tae Ho was quick to realize that the Heda in front of him wasn't the one he knew. Although her smile was unusual for one having been summoned so unexpectedly, Tae Ho was sure for a different reason.

[Valkyrie One]

[Idun's Valkyrie – Heda]

Through his vision, these green-glowing words calmly floated above the head of the fake Heda.

Cuchulainn had also realized that this Heda was a fake through a different method. It was easy to miss with all the similarities, but the aura she emanated was assuredly weaker than Heda's. Calling it a sloppy doppelganger wouldn't be an understatement.

'So it's a summon... No, shouldn't it be called a guardian angel?'

The Heda in front of them was a recreation, one formed by the saga.

Ingrid realized the truth after Cuchulainn.

From a different perspective, it wasn't uncommon for one to form weapons by using a saga. Ingrid recalled the story of a top-ranked warrior that had once summoned an army using the power of his saga during the Great War.

Still, it was hard to accept the present situation with one's head.

Ingrid smacked her lips and then explained her understanding to the other warriors.

This was a saga that could summon a Valkyrie.

Ingrid further convinced herself upon explaining it to the rest.

A saga's origin was derived from the story behind it.

However, it seemed the significance of Tae Ho's saga lay with him meeting a Valkyrie, not the actual identity of the Valkyrie herself.

The very reason that he'd summoned a guardian angel instead of a real Valkyrie was testament to this notion.

On the other hand, Tae Ho peered at the green words atop the fake Heda with a doubtful expression.

'Why is she called Valkyrie One?'

If there was a 'one', wouldn't there also be a 'two'?

Tae Ho concentrated his mind upon the newly formed saga. His understanding of his own story, one that had begun transcending into legendary status, soon unleashed itself thereafter.

[Valkyrie Two]

[Njord's Valkyrie – Ingrid]

Without warning, a new Valkyrie appeared alongside the fake Heda. Ingrid, who had been in the middle of an explanation, suddenly looked as though her eyes would pop out of their sockets. Harabal and the rest also revealed shocked expressions.

'My God! Are you making a squad of Valkyries?'

Cuchulainn shouted in disbelief as the fake Valkyrie's dazzling smile held a stark contrast to the real Ingrid's face.

The warrior that had a Valkyrie meet him.

Supposedly, the number of Valkyries he could register were nine.

At the same time, he hypothesized that the number of summonable Valkyries would increase as he grew stronger. Still...

'She definitely doesn't resemble Heda.'

The copies of Heda and Ingrid were half transparent like ghosts, and their auras were far too weak.

'The number of meetings and blessings.... or affection.... Anyway, are those variables in all this?'

He suddenly understood why he wasn't able to summon Rasgrid or Gandur. Neither of them had ever arose to meet him.

"Warrior Tae Ho, what is this?"

Ingrid's eyes were glued to her doppelganger, and she spoke in a disorientated voice. Based on the glint in her eyes, she had already comprehended her question, but she seemed unwilling to accept her conclusion.

It wasn't just her. Bracky and Harabal were also pleading for an explanation with earnest eyes, so Tae Ho decided to elaborate.

It was a saga that could create lesser copies of the Valkyries whom he had a connection with.

He could summon a maximum of nine Valkyries, and it was even possible to summon several at once.

“Good Lord.”

Harabal looked at the fake Heda and Ingrid with an absent-minded face. Beside him, Bracky's spirit had been clearly moved.

“Valkyrie Master!”

It was a funny title that Bracky abruptly blurted out from nowhere, but it really kind of suited Tae Ho. Bracky was clearly growing ecstatic from his own idea, and he swung his fist and exclaimed.

“Right! Tae Ho, from now on, you are the Valkyrie Master! You shall embark on a journey to gather all the Valkyries of Valhalla...kuk!

“I-I'm sorry! It happened on reflex.”

Ingrid had tripped Bracky by grabbing his ankles and promptly apologized in a bewildered voice. Gauging from her attitude, she seemed to have acted purely out of habit.

“It...is amazing on several levels.”

Siri remarked, her eyes lukewarm. Adenmaha then asked a question while pinching the cheeks of the fake Heda.

“Can't you summon me as well?”

“You said you weren't a Valkyrie.”

“That's right, but.....”

Adenmaha paused, and her face inexplicably bristled as she stepped back.

Siri smirked at Adenmaha before turning toward Tae Ho.

“Do they have battle capabilities?”

“Yes, probably.”

Heda’s copy had the fastest rate of recreation. He wanted to test her battle prowess and examine her capacity for self control.

“I’m jealous.”

“I also want to make them....”

Harabal and Bracky couldn’t help but moan and reveal their honest opinions. The remaining warriors of the mortal world also held visages of utmost respect.

But it at that moment-

“Master?!”

Adenmaha’s sourness vanished, and she cried out in alarm. Without warning, a strong light had erupted from Unnir which hung at Tae Ho’s waist.

There was more. Inexplicably, Tae Ho felt the Unknown sword piece begin vibrating violently in its holster. It was the same sensation he’d felt upon first discovering Gae Bolg.

Tae Ho hurriedly unsheathed the mouth of Unnir and realized that the Liberatuses within were, quite shockingly, bursting with energy.

Ingrid grabbed her sword reflexively, but Adenmaha quickly stopped her.

“Stop! It’s the power of Erin. It’s not an enemy!”

The aura was incredibly bright. It was an energy that seemed capable of eradicating all the darkness throughout the world. A strange feeling overcame the group.

It didn’t last long, though. After a moment, the light faded away and the Liberatuses reverted to their previous states.

‘Merlin.’

Cuchulainn remarked. Adenmaha feverishly nodded as if she’d somehow heard him and spoke out.

“I’m sure it’s Merlin, since he was the one that made those Liberatuses. Master.....nim, he must have realized that someone had retrieved the Liberatus from Kataron. Right! I’m sure that must be it. Merlin-He’s coming to find you, master!”

Her words were a mess from excitement, but everyone understood her meaning well enough.

Cuchulainn also agreed.

‘It’s just as Adenmaha said. Merlin is undoubtedly searching for you.’

Ingrid tilted her head in confusion, and Siri took her aside to briefly explain what had transpired in Nidavellir. Appreciation soon became apparent on the former’s face.

Tae Ho took a deep breath and unsummoned the two Valkyrie doppelgangers. He grabbed his Liberatus and calmed his excitement, although it wasn’t an easy thing to accomplish.

It was Merlin! None other than Camelot’s Merlin! Of all people, he was someone currently rushing towards them to meet him.

Tae Ho peered into the Liberatus, and his eyes gleamed with anticipation.

—

The knights of Camelot had failed to protect their king.

The Knights of the Round Table, the guardian protectors of Camelot, were not exempt from this statement.

On the day of Erin’s destruction, the majority of the Knights of the Round Table were utterly defeated, struck down alongside their king.

As for the few that barely managed to escape, their continued efforts to protect Asgard were short lived.

They, who had been deprived of their king, their people, and even the kingdom they'd sworn to defend, continued fighting as the Red Branch Knights did without regard for their own lives. In their grief, they soon fell one after another during the final battles of the long war.

Thus, the remaining souls of the Knights of the Round Table were extinguished.

Following their demise, the last vestiges of knights eventually all but vanished from the world.

But the truth was different, for one yet remained.

There was a single, lone knight who had survived, and the spirit of Camelot prevailed, burning fiercely from within his soul.

—

Tae Ho's group had decided to postpone the continuation of their journey.

This was because they had realized how close Merlin was, as the Liberatus's light had grown very bright and intense.

Bracky, who was knowledgeable on the geography of Midgard, proposed that there was a great possibility of Merlin having traveled through a water canal connecting to Kataron.

As the direction Adenmaha had sensed was of the same, approximate direction as Kataron, Bracky's guess had a high reliability.

Realizing this, Ingrid did not delay in sending crows to notify Rasgrid and Kaldea of their postponement. She then sent another crow towards Kataron to analyze the situation.

By the third day, Ingrid became certain of Merlin's imminent arrival; although, it wasn't due to any response from the crow.

Over the past few days, Liberatus had become akin to a compass, shining brilliantly in a specific direction and almost seeming to pulse with an increasing luminosity.

There was no beating around the bush. Merlin's arrival was nigh.

There was a high probability for their paths to overlap, so Tae Ho's group didn't make any rash movements. They remained close to the river and waited patiently for Merlin.

Finally, on their fifth day of awaiting Merlin's arrival—

Ingrid's crow reported the appearance of an old man on a ship.

—

The lone knight's feelings for Camelot had been stronger than all others'.

Because of his love, each day following Erin's destruction had been brutally carved into his soul.

Because of his misery, he did not neglect to notice the light which seemed capable of burning away all the darkness of the world. He couldn't.

Because of his passion, the knight advanced day and night to reclaim the glory of Camelot once more.

—

Far above them, a dark crow pierced silently through the air. Normally, it would've been quite hard to spot a soaring crow in the black of night, but that wasn't the case for Merlin. For him, the darkness was as clear as any day.

Merlin's smile was bright as he lightly shook his staff. The wind that hadn't ceased for five days grew severalfold to increase the speed of their vessel even more.

"I can see a ship!"

Bultan shouted. Helga clung to the mast and peered into the

distance. A bright smile rivaling Merlin's appeared on her face, for she strongly remembered the flying pirate ship that had once sailed through Kataron.

“Idun's warrior-nim!”

Helga waved her hand and laughed. Bultan shook his head as if her actions interfered with his pride as a warrior, and Merlin also chuckled before taking his pipe. While he'd long lost the ability to express joy as Helga did, he was truly very excited.

Erin's successor.

Who could he be? Where did he receive such a title?

Judging by both Helga's words and those of the warriors of Kataron, it seemed he wasn't a bad fellow. No, Merlin rather liked the man in fact.

Meanwhile, the flying pirate ship had also spotted them.

Merlin's mouth soon dropped open in surprise. It was because there was a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann beside the man presumed to be Idun's warrior.

She wasn't a strong Goddess capable of rivaling the chief Gods, but she was a proper Goddess of Tuatha De Danann nevertheless.

Merlin felt his face flush. His heart beat in such a way that it hadn't since Erin's annihilation.

It was precisely due to these emotions that he couldn't feel it properly.

By the time he'd noticed, it was already too late. Even the warriors of Valhalla had sensed it sooner.

“Helga!!”

Tae Ho's bellow shattered the mood like a clap of thunder. He kicked hard into the air and charged as Adenmaha roared and became a ferocious sea serpent. Bracky and Harabal exploded into movement, and Siri rammed bolts into her crossbow.

Helga whipped her head around far too late as, out of nowhere, a monstrous strike suddenly overwhelmed those onboard. To the consternation of everyone, the vicious attack cleanly bisected both the ship and river beneath it in a single, fluid motion. The assailant, whomever he was, contained a horrifying level of power.

The doomed ship began its death throes as Helga swallowed a scream, staggering heavily from being caught off guard.

Their aggressor; he was one who'd long since melded into the darkness.

One who now appeared to channel the very night itself.

He was adorned in jet-black armor with a helmet that obscured his entire face; however, Merlin knew immediately his identity.

How could he not, for the sword he brandished was proof enough by itself.

The knight easily deflected Siri's oncoming missile and landed on the ground, promptly swinging his sword a second time.

Merlin, whose eyes brimmed with tears, tore open his mouth and swore in anguish.

He cried out the knight's name in a voice of savagery. A voice consumed by rage and grief amidst a myriad of other emotions.

—

The lone knight's deeds had been forgotten by most.

He'd sided with the giants on the day of Erin's destruction. He'd raised the treasure sword, Clarent and struck down King Arthur.

Perhaps most infamously, he had been the first and final Knight of the Round Table to betray Camelot.

The knight's name...was Mordred.

< Episode 26 – The land of fierce battles (4) > End

Episode 27/Chapter 1: The sword of selection

(1)

Darkness gushed from the tip of Mordred's sword. Merlin roared, raising his staff to unleash his mighty power. Both the stream of darkness and wave of magic power collided above the ruined ship, causing its two halves to shake violently.

Merlin couldn't believe the scene before his eyes. He wanted to deny it.

"You wicked traitor!"

—

On the day of Erin's annihilation, the walls of Camelot had been breached with ease. To the great dismay of the defenders, there had been a spy, a traitor, hidden among their ranks. Their inner turmoil had swept over Camelot before their battle against the giants had even begun.

Too many people had lost their lives for nothing.

The knights, prepared to valiantly face their enemies with pride, were caught unaware of the unjust sword piercing them from behind.

The same held true even for King Arthur.

Even after so long, Merlin still felt his blood flowing backward when he recalled the scene from that day.

Mordred had pierced the chest of King Arthur with his Treasure Sword, Clarent. He'd dealt the king a mortal wound that left him without the ability to fight.

If that hadn't happened....

If the terrible flames of an inner conflict hadn't engulfed Camelot....

Erin's destruction may have been preventable. No. Even if that were untrue, its path to ruin would still have been far altered.

As it had happened, King Arthur had perished.

Gawain, the noblest of all knights, had been fated no differently.

It was the same for Lancelot, K, Galahad, Tristan, Bedevere....

To name each one was a miserable process. The Knights of the Round Table had all died wretched deaths.

For Mordred, the cause of all these terrible deeds, to be alive.

For the man that shattered Camelot and Erin into pieces to be alive!

Merlin couldn't contain his resentful feelings. His current state was far unbecoming that of a wise, old man's.

Mordred did nothing to avoid Merlin's curse-like rage. He cursed out against the one who hated him to the core.

"God damn your vile words! I am no betrayer. I am the one that fought to protect Camelot until the very end!"

He yelled like a beast and poured more strength into Clarent. As he did so, the dark energy surrounding the sword spread out to envelope the entire area. Pitch-black knights grew from the long-spread shadow to stand alongside Mordred. They were dozens of them. They were the traitorous knights that had revolted against Camelot under Mordred's leadership.

Merlin faltered. The nightmarish scene before him was too reminiscent of that day long ago, and he staggered in surprise. The strength of his legs grew weak, and he found himself unable to even stand properly.

Mordred grimaced, his gaze coldly fixated upon the great magician. It seemed that with Erin and Camelot gone, the only one now left to hear his story was Merlin.

"I only wanted to protect Camelot. I didn't betray anything."

Joy and sorrow dominated Mordred's words. He continued in a tone raw with emotion.

“That battle was unwinnable! The giants' forces were too strong, and even if we'd faced them head on, defeat was only inevitable. I had to negotiate with them. I had to! To protect Camelot, to preserve it, I stabbed Father while shedding tears of blood. Yes, I stabbed King Arthur! I stopped him from burning down everything through pointless resistance and opened the gates. I only wanted to protect Camelot!”

His actions were incomparably foolish, and Mordred had long since realized that. The fomoires had burnt down Camelot and broken their promise. No, even the fomoires that'd pacted with Mordred couldn't realize their goals in the end.

The Giant of Fire, Surtr, had burned Erin into oblivion. The Camelot Mordred had vied to protect, even at the cost of betraying his own father, was transformed into nothing but ashes.

Mordred still couldn't admit his fault, however. That the truth that his betrayal was for naught. That the actions he'd taken to protect Camelot had ensured its destruction instead of preventing it.

That realization could crush one's soul. The moment Mordred admitted his mistake, he would degrade to become the traitor of Erin that Merlin believed him to be.

“I wanted to protect Camelot... I'm the one that should be called its protector! Are you aware of my grief from having stabbed Father's chest? Do you know how strong my love towards Camelot was that I'd go so far to protect it?!”

He howled. It was a burst of emotions that not even Mordred himself could control after almost a century of resentment.

Mordred pleaded for Merlin to understand him, to accept that he wasn't wrong, and that his actions had been justified. He hoped

that Merlin would comfort him and say that it was not him who was evil but the giants instead.

Deep down, Mordred knew that this was a foolish dream. It was impossible, but he couldn't help it.

His desire was the scream of a tortured soul begging for relief.

Perhaps that explained why he'd chased after Camelot's glory like a madman. Rather than aspiring to return Camelot's glory once again, he may have only wished from a kindred survivor of Camelot to hear that his actions weren't wrong.

Merlin panted. It felt like all his strength was being sucked from his body. Mordred was completely crazy. He'd become a raving lunatic, broken under a mountain of guilt.

Mordred cried under his helmet. He had followed the fomiores to Midgard and lived for close to a hundred years like a corpse. He yelled towards Merlin once again.

"I'm asking if you know! About my feelings! My grief!"

"I don't know, you bastard. I don't even want to!"

The one that responded was Bracky. He swung his hammer and lightning promptly erupted toward the specters of Camelot. He then glared at Mordred.

He'd heard the general outline of the story while charging over.

Bracky could roughly imagine what the guy had done and what his motives were in doing so.

It was a stupid thing. If he'd really wanted to protect Camelot, he should have fought until the end like his brothers. He had vowed to defend all that was good from evil.

So was the path of a knight, and the warriors of Valhalla held similar beliefs.

Bracky didn't spout these things needlessly. He instead focused on Mordred and contemplated how he could beat him.

They were in the midst of a battle, after all. He didn't want to share a heartfelt conversation with someone that wasn't even a beauty but a bastard wearing some twisted, black armor.

Lightning arced. A miniature thunderclap was heard as a specter of Camelot perished under the deadly attack.

Mordred stared at Bracky with a cold indifference, and many specters of Camelot began charging in his direction.

Bracky did not waver as he readied his hammer. Siri and Harabal, who'd arrived a beat later, stood at Bracky's flank. Together, they faced down the incoming specters.

'He might be crazy, but his level of power is astonishing. Remember, even the weakest of the Knights of the Round Table were at least of the superior rank.'

Cuchulainn spoke hastily. Tae Ho activated both 'Idun's Warrior' and 'Warrior's Equipment' together at the same time. The power of Caladbolg was tremendous, and due to its awkward shape, it was difficult to handle in close range.

The magic sword Vein Blade, which he'd obtained upon defeating the degenerate hero, Ra Chrysa, appeared atop the Unknown sword piece. Together, they formed a powerful aura.

He immediately charged through the path Bracky and Harabal had opened. He closed on Mordred in an instant and heaved his sword forward.

As the two swords collided, there was no sound akin to the clashing of sharp metal. The malice emanated by Clarent didn't only swallow the noise, however. It also began rapidly consuming the magic power of the Vein Blade.

Mordred's gaze pierced into Tae Ho with burning eyes. He applied his massive strength in an attempt to finish Tae Ho off with a single move.

Tae Ho narrowed his eyes. Through the sentence of the

Milesians, he applied to the Vein Blade the power of a God. It contested against Clarent's antipathy and defended against Mordred's attack.

The two swordsmen began exchanging blows. As they fought, countless afterimages of deadly blades whipped the surrounding air into a frenzy.

Bracky and Harabal couldn't help Tae Ho. The specters of Camelot aside, the skills being displayed by both Tae Ho and Mordred were too far beyond their abilities to match. Siri, while desperately wishing to aid Tae Ho, also had to grind her teeth and battle the specters instead.

Like Cuchulainn, Adenmaha knew well enough the power a Knight of the Round Table could wield. Because of that, she'd concentrated her attention on dealing with the specters from the start. She spewed out ice breath to prevent them from approaching the river, while Valkyrie Ingrid rescued the wandering warriors and people of Kataron that had fallen into the river. Her actions were desperate as the current was strong and the water was freezing.

"Tae Ho!"

Siri charged a bolt into her crossbow and cried out in horror. It was because Tae Ho's sword had shattered under Mordred's onslaught.

Tae Ho quickly reformed the Vein Blade, but the problem still existed.

The strength of Clarent was simply too strong. Overwhelmingly strong.

He could barely endure it even with the amplifying power of Idun.

There was another, more serious problem. The real, clear difference between them.

Tae Ho finally understood the sheer power of the Knights of the Round Table.

The contrast between their swordsmanship was like a candle to the sun.

Until now, the enemies he had faced were very much bestial in nature. The giants used their natural-born power and agility and didn't need proper techniques or martial arts.

Mordred was different. Even though he'd long since degenerated and betrayed Camelot, he was still a Knight of the Round Table.

Mordred's sword suppressed Tae Ho without mercy. He couldn't fight like he had against the giants. He faced Mordred with his physical abilities that were amplified by 'Idun's warrior', but it was not enough.

The limit was clear.

'Fall back! Buy some distance first!'

Cuchulainn screamed in his ear, and Tae Ho attempted to create some space by detonating the power of Idun; however, Mordred didn't permit him that. Claret spun in blinding fashion to block Tae Ho's sword and squeezed Idun's power with its hatred. While Mordred couldn't stop the explosion, controlling the direction was easy enough.

Tae Ho stumbled as the blast shot off in a weird direction. As his defense broke, Ingrid intervened at the last second. She swung her harpoon-like sword and slashed at Mordred's waist, but Mordred blocked her attack far too easily.

"It's light."

Mordred smiled gently and spoke in a soft tone. As he did, the Treasure Sword, Clarent, emanated an all-encompassing malice with the intention of completely swallowing Ingrid. Ingrid attempted to pull back her sword and dodge the wave of energy, but it was impossible. The two weapons were stuck together, and

by the time she abandoned her sword, the malice had already reached her.

Ingrid grimaced before crying out in agony. Tae Ho roared and charged towards Mordred, but the latter saw through Tae Ho's strike as if it were child's play. He swung Clarent without hesitation.

Vein Blade was shattered once again, and the tip of Clarent carved deeply into Tae Ho's shoulder.

It wasn't a simple wound. The moment the blade touched his flesh, Tae Ho felt a pain beyond imagination. It was the effect of the malice that Clarent contained.

Idun's power surged forth to protect Tae Ho. It single-handedly stopped Tae Ho's mind from breaking.

Treasure Sword Clarent.

A sword that symbolized the royal throne of a species that resided beyond Erin.

Mordred wasn't one to get drunk on a momentary success. Despite his apparent madness, he was still a Knight of the Round Table. He swung Clarent quickly and tried to sever the heads of both Ingrid and Tae Ho.

However, Bracky didn't let him do that. He'd fired bolts of lightning without a second thought. The aftershock may have harmed Ingrid and Tae Ho, but there was no room to consider such repercussions.

Mordred changed the direction of his sword. He destroyed the lightning using the hatred within Clarent.

Cuchulainn felt frustrated. The combined power of Mordred and Clarent was too strong. A peerless warrior had gotten hold of a magical sword.

In order to fight on even ground, a sword comparable to Clarent

was necessary. Regardless of the consequences, they had to unveil Caladbolg.

It was at that moment—

Merlin, who'd by now landed on the riverside, placed his hand on a sword instead of a staff. He, a great magician of Camelot, had judged that Clarent had been strengthened a few times over. The specters of Camelot were responsible for this.

One couldn't see everything with only their eyes. Thousands of specters resided within Clarent. They were the souls of the ones who'd died when Camelot had been destroyed.

Merlin had to liberate them, and there was only but one thing capable of doing so.

It was the sword that symbolized the true King of Camelot.

The legendary sword which King Arthur had pulled from a stone.

Merlin sent magic power flooding into Caliburn. Camelot's glory revealed itself.

Mordred felt it immediately. He kicked off the ground and closed in on Merlin without a second thought.

Surprisingly, Merlin turned away from him. Upon seeing his actions, Merlin finished applying magic power unto Caliburn and threw it away from Mordred.

‘Why?’

Mordred was bewildered; however, his instincts took the better of him. He stopped Clarent mid-swing and reached out to Caliburn.

Clarent released a joyful cry as Mordred revealed an expression of many mixed emotions under his helmet. He sheathed Clarent and grabbed onto Caliburn's sheath.

He expected to draw it and finally bear the true sword of Camelot.

Despite his best efforts, however, the sword refused to budge. It almost seemed that the sword and sheath had become one, and it didn't even rattle.

Merlin smiled, for he'd watched such a scene occur countless times before. No one could draw Caliburn without King Arthur's blessing.

Mordred roared in anguish. He let out resentful cries at Caliburn which lay quietly in his hands, and then a great malice burst from within him.

However, Caliburn was unmoved.

The reason for this was really quite simple.

It wasn't because Mordred had betrayed Camelot nor because he was a bastard that'd slain his own father and king.

It was something Merlin had long since realized.

Caliburn already had an owner. The Sword of Selection, Caliburn, had already selected its master after the death of king Arthur and the century that had followed.

The sheath Mordred was clutching suddenly melted, and so did the hilt Merlin had made for it.

The blade of Caliburn appeared while emanating a righteous aura of intense heat. It transformed into light within the hands of Mordred, who'd wanted to wield above all else, and then scattered.

It had disappeared.

No, that wasn't the case.

Mordred cried in grief which he could not contain and slowly turned around.

The particles of light were gathering in the hilt of the Unknown sword piece, forming the distinctive shape of a sword.

Sword of Liberation, Caliburn.

The sword which only obeyed the true King of Camelot.

By now, Tae Ho had also realized the sword's identity and the truth of its intention.

But it didn't stop at that.

The words which the Milesians had told him said so. Caliburn was speaking to him.

He thought of Heda's face, and he remembered the words she had told him.

Sword of Selection, Caliburn.

A sword that, by itself, could be considered a legend.

[Synchro rate: 45%]

Tae Ho inhaled deeply as he added the power of Idun to Caliburn. It then emanated a pure, white light.

He accepted the legend within the weapon, and thus he began a new saga.

[Legend-ranked Saga]

The sage foretelling the glory of Camelot which shone like the sun.

[King of Camelot]

Caliburn cried out in joy.

It had proclaimed the birth of a new king.

< Episode 27 – The sword of selection (1) > End

Episode 27/Chapter 2: The sword of selection (2)

Long ago, there had been a sword wedged within a stone.

It was said that whoever pulled out the sword would one day become king, but no one was able to do it.

No one, until a small and frail child appeared one day.

—

The origin of a saga is its legend.

There was a legend behind the Sword of Selection, a sword which only answered to its king.

Now, Tae Ho had drawn such a sword.

An image of a child pulling the sword from a rough boulder was displayed in his mind.

The first legend that he, a child who'd become a king, had created.

A pristine light emanated from Caliburn.

Tae Ho realized the light was identical to that which had shone as Arthur, King of Camelot, had drawn it for the first time.

It was Camelot's glory. Caliburn's glory, which reigned supreme like the sun.

Caliburn barred its teeth against Clarent's darkness which empowered the night, and the world shifted as broad daylight erupted to flip the murky atmosphere on its side.

The specters of Camelot who battled against Valhalla's warriors suddenly howled. They, who had rebelled to follow Mordred, greatly feared repeating the same mistakes as before.

Their evil aura was scattered. The black fog that enveloped the

specters was instantly eradicated in the presence of Caliburn's glory, and the chains which anchored their souls revealed themselves.

The chains broke. They broke and were pulverized into dust.

A flood of resentment was released as the chains were destroyed. The specters of Camelot cried and yelled as their century-long melancholy was finally put to an end.

‘Our king.’

The specters of Camelot vanished. They, whose souls had wandered purposely for close to a hundred years, had finally received the rest they deserved.

Mordred wouldn't do the same, however. He watched the emancipated specters disappear and roared like a cornered beast. His rage and hatred had reached a new level.

Clarent reacted to Mordred's violence. It released countless specters as if planning to erase the sun before it. The specters quickly coalesced to form the shape of a pitch-black wave.

The Treasure Sword, Clarent, had originally been a weapon that represented the throne of a race far beyond Erin's borders.

Long ago, King Arthur had claimed Clarent only after defeating its owner in battle.

Because of this, Clarent held a deep-rooted resentment towards both King Arthur and Camelot, and it was entirely possible that the union between Clarent and Mordred was due to the intense maliciousness both had.

Ingrid, who stood closest to Tae Ho, gazed intently at the wave of specters charging in their direction.

The simultaneous cries of countless, tortured souls was too terrible even for her to endure for long.

However, Ingrid didn't fear the oncoming wave, for she stood

alongside a powerful light which burned like the sun.

Like before, the specters composing the dark wave were unshackled from the binding magic, and the wave shook before shattering. Although the quantity of specters had been multiplied tenfold, the result was no different before Caliburn. The specters matched against the glory of Camelot evaporated like a stream of lies. The power of the sun crushed down upon the darkness and ushered the specters to their rightful places of rest.

Unlike before, something miraculous was happening.

Figures had begun forming alongside Tae Ho.

The warriors of Valhalla couldn't distinguish them, but it was different for Merlin. He couldn't stop his tears from falling.

The figures-no, the knights were those of the Knights of the Round Table.

Although they were only remnants, it was an incomparably beautiful sight. It seemed that, even after death, the souls of the Knights of the Round Table still remained to fight alongside the King of Camelot.

Upon witnessing this, Mordred howled once again. He couldn't endure it anymore.

He gazed at Tae Ho, and an image of his father appeared in his mind.

He recalled the moment in which he'd stabbed the chest of King Arthur with Clarent.

Clarent seethed and emanated a red and blackish light as Mordred roared and charged towards Tae Ho.

Tae Ho saw Mordred and calmly leaned his ear towards Caliburn's blade.

The light which Caliburn emanated was concentrated into a single point. Instead of blazing as the sun did, the light exploded

atop the blade's tip like a brilliant, white star.

Mordred slashed Clarent forward with all of his might.

Tae Ho made no attempt to dodge him. As he faced Mordred head on, Caliburn swung out to meet Clarent.

‘BOOM’

As the swords touched, a deafening explosion rocked heaven and earth.

Each sword was one befitting a king, but there was a decisive difference in status.

The ones wielding them were different.

One was a real successor of Erin whom Caliburn had selected.

The other was a rash usurper that had never been destined for kingship.

That was the quantifiable difference, and it had already decided the outcome of this fight.

Mordred saw in Tae Ho the image of King Arthur. He recalled Arthur's eyes as he'd pierced his chest, and a fissure in his soul that hadn't healed with time was reopened.

“Ahh.

“Ahhhhhhh!!”

Mordred dropped Clarent, and he pitifully fled from the proximity of both blades like a broken man. The witch's blood flowing through his veins activated speed magic in consecution.

Tae Ho didn't chase him, for Clarent stubbornly still released power despite having lost its wielder and pressed hard upon the glory of Camelot.

But such efforts were short lived. Instead of suppressing Clarent with brute force, Tae Ho opted for another option.

The knights' souls—they were there to guide Tae Ho along a better

path.

The white light of Caliburn and the red, blackish light of Clarent became entangled. As Clarent's aura slowly melted into its opponent's, Tae Ho found that the best word to describe the scene was 'purification'.

Camelot's glory grew weak, but it was no different for the energy of Clarent. Like an exhausted beast, Clarent grew still while Caliburn emanated a faint but steady light.

Tae Ho let out a long sigh. He dropped Caliburn and looked at his surroundings.

The area was growing dim, and the knights' souls appeared like white smoke on a black canvas.

As they faded, their clear voice rang out like when they'd taught him to purify Clarent.

"We will always accompany the true King of Camelot."

Their pledge was one that transcended even death itself.

They would remember the day they'd stood next to their king once again.

The souls of the Knights of the Round Table scattered. They fell into a deep slumber while hoping their king would call them again someday.

Tae Ho breathed out once more. Instead of sheathing Caliburn, he raised his head to stare at the figure before him. He'd almost forgotten that there was still someone he had to meet, and unlike the Knights of the Round Table, this old man was still very much alive.

The great magician, Merlin.

The one that had established Camelot with King Arthur. A living legend.

He laughed soundlessly with his wrinkled face and recalled the

moment when a small kid had pulled out a sword from a stone. It was a beautiful and precious memory.

‘Merlin. My magician. My friend.’

Merlin thought of King Arthur’s last moments and cried once again. It had been a very emotional day for him; however, his tears weren’t filled with just sadness.

He bowed slightly.

He remembered the final order and request of King Arthur and expressed his manners. He spoke the words he’d once believed he wouldn’t ever be able to speak again.

“The magician, Merlin, greets the king in his return.”

—

The night deepened.

Ingrid, who lay on a bed within the flying ship, spoke in a weak voice uncharacteristic of her usual, business-like demeanor.

“I’m sorry. I ended up showing you a weak side of mine.”

She hadn’t been able to withstand even a single blow from Mordred. She had ended up injured as the curse had weakened her body.

She felt a lot of self reproach, but perhaps it was an unavoidable thing. Mordred and Clarent had been that strong. If Tae Ho wasn’t aided by Idun and Caliburn, he wouldn’t have been a proper opponent either.

In addition, it hadn’t been long since Ingrid joined the ranks of the Valkyries. Compared to Rasgrid or Reginleif, she was just a newcomer.

Tae Ho felt at a loss of words. Should he commend her bravery or simply tell her that next time she’ll do better? Was it akin to comforting the juniors of his own team?

He'd blatantly ignored Cuchulainn's advice because it seemed like the words of a playboy wanting to seduce a weak girl by taking advantage of her.

In the end, Tae Ho let out some sloppy words of comfort, and Ingrid smiled in a way that wasn't like her before gesturing towards Tae Ho.

"Tae Ho, will you come a bit closer?"

As Tae Ho approached her, Ingrid grabbed ahold of his clothes to lower his head and pull him closer. She then placed her lips on his forehead.

"Let Njord's blessing accompany you."

He hadn't received her blessing in a long while.

As Tae Ho opened his eyes in surprise, Ingrid smiled and said.

"For your saga. What did you say you needed for it to be strengthened?"

For the moment, this was limit of her capabilities.

Ingrid's mouth grew neutral, but her eyes continued to smile. Tae Ho smiled at her.

"You should rest."

Ingrid nodded and soon thereafter fell into a deep sleep. The curse of Clarent was quite dangerous, but as the sword had already been purified before Camelot's glory, she would hopefully recover after a night's rest.

'Ingrid is also a Valkyrie.'

A valkyrie wasn't someone that did mere errands for their Gods. They were existences one could mistake as being Goddesses even if their stature was low just like how Adenmaha was a Goddess of Tuatha De Danann.

Tae Ho went outside after he'd closed the doors and approached

the warriors of Valhalla that were speaking among themselves by the fire.

Bracky was in the middle of a long explanation.

“So that guy was wracked by guilt and tried to rationalize his actions to protect his sanity. It’s something pretty commonly seen amongst traitors. No. Honestly speaking, you can see it almost anywhere. ‘I didn’t do anything wrong’, ‘I’m not a bad person’, ‘I just wanted to do the right thing’, or whatever. If they try hard enough, they end up believing their own lies and delusions as the truth. One could say it’s a kind of coping mechanism the mind uses.”

Bracky clicked his tongue as he concluded. He then put on a displeased face and inquired at his audience.

“Why are you looking at me with those eyes?”

“Well...contents aside, it’s honestly amazing that you can speak like this.”

They didn’t even know what he was talking about.

As Harabal scratched his chin, Bracky’s face grew dark and Siri laughed like usual.

“Tae Ho.”

Naturally, the first one to notice him was Siri. He slowly sat next to the warriors of Valhalla and asked.

“Where are the people from Kataron?”

“Most of them are asleep. It seemed like today’s events were quite traumatic for most of them. This lady here said that she was going to endure it, but...she eventually passed out too.”

Bracky gave Tae Ho a cup of hot water as he said this. The lady in question was Helga who lay covered by blankets next to Siri.

Siri gently stroked Helga’s hair while speaking to Tae Ho.

“Tae Ho, you should also get some rest. You’ve probably overworked yourself, right?”

“Yeah. Let’s talk more tomorrow instead.”

Harabal butted in. As there were many people performing nightly guard duty, there was no need for Tae Ho to continue exerting himself.

It seemed like Merlin was also exhausted after such an eventful day, not to mention the rest of his long journey, that he was also currently asleep.

“Right! If that guy shows up again, this Bracky-nim will defeat him, so please relax and go to sleep.”

Bracky, reliable as always, spoke up while hitting his chest.

“Then, I will entrust the night to you.”

“Right. Sleep well.”

King of Camelot or whatever aside, Tae Ho was still a comrade of Valhalla in Bracky’s eyes.

Tae Ho finished speaking with Bracky’s group and returned to the flying pirate ship to sleep. After all, one of the ship’s few cabins belonged to him.

King Arthur, Caliburn, Merlin...

The Knights of the Round Table...and Mordred.

Many things had happened in one day.

Tae Ho grabbed the Unknown sword piece—no, he grabbed Caliburn which had fused to the sword piece’s hilt, and mused over his newest saga.

The legend-ranked saga, King of Camelot.

It was a very special saga, especially in comparison to the ones he’d owned previously. It was similar to the ‘Immortal Warrior’ saga that could be said to be the root of Tae Ho’s legend, for it had

several smaller sagas inside of it.

‘Stop thinking about secondary things and go to sleep.’

Cuchulainn growled in a low voice. Tae Ho perceived his words as valid and decided to follow his advice from outside of battle.

‘Heda.’

As he closed his eyes from within the small cabin, he realized he wanted to see Heda again. He suppressed his urge to use the summoning ticket and opened his eyes to call her doppelganger to use it for practice.

But it was then-

“Hello again.”

Heda’s voice was inexplicably heard from above his head.

< Episode 27 – The sword of selection (2) > End

Episode 27/Chapter 3: The sword of selection (3)

Tae Ho thoughts were as followed-

He was in Midgard. The Valkyries couldn't easily come down to this place unless they partially dematerialized to retrieve the souls of their warriors.

Heda had once told him that she wouldn't be able to meet him through normal means.

Tae Ho hadn't actually activated the 'Warrior That had a Valkyrie Meet Him'.

The cabin's door hadn't been opened.

Taking into account all of the things listed above, Tae Ho came to the rational conclusion that the Heda above him was neither real nor fake but someone else entirely.

Because of that, Tae Ho hit his chest twice and expressed his manners.

"Idun's warrior greets the Goddess of Youth."

"You have good senses."

Heda gathered her brows and smiled as their surroundings began to distort. The cabin walls fell into a wide-set landscape of plains, and a great apple tree could be seen in the middle.

It was a divine message taking place in his dreams. It seemed like he was dreaming since he'd imagined calling Heda by using his saga.

Tae Ho let out a literal unconscious sigh. This was because, despite his best judgement, he still felt that there was a slight chance for her to really be Heda.

"Hey, aren't you too disappointed? I'm sad. You are my warrior, but you only look for Heda."

Idun returned to her original form and crossed her arms while grumbling. When she turned around, however, she seemed to be in quite a good mood.

Tae Ho opened and closed his mouth several times without knowing how to answer. To treat a Goddess well was a really excessive demand for Tae Ho, someone whose past life was one only spent on gaming.

As Tae Ho groaned inwardly, Idun shook her head at him.

“I’m joking! Stop groaning so much.”

Perhaps to relieve Tae Ho, Idun laughed a bit louder.

“But my warrior, I am curious about one thing. If you want to meet Heda that much, why don’t you use the summoning ticket? Heda was also curious regarding why you haven’t yet called her.”

It had already been a week since Tae Ho had arrived in Midgard. Was he saving the ticket because it was a single-use item?

Again, Tae Ho found it hard to answer. It was because he suddenly remembered the conversation he’d had with Cuchulainn.

“Hm... well, you should have your own thoughts. Just try to not to save it past the purpose of its use.”

Idun finished speaking and then sat on a wide boulder and patted at the seat next to her.

“Sit. There are things I want to hear of.”

Tae Ho humbly sat down. Even if Idun hadn’t requested so, he also had things to discuss with her.

Idun wondered for a moment as to what to mention first before finally speaking up.

“Um, right. Let’s speak about this first.”

Idun placed her hands on top of Tae Ho’s and held it before he could even react.

“Adenmaha said that you’ve found an interesting saga, right?”

The vagueness in her words was really quite apparent.

Tae Ho peered at Idun’s hands which rested upon his head and

then explained the new saga he'd learnt with a hint of nervousness.

He'd obviously chosen to discuss 'The Warrior That had a Valkyrie Meet Him' instead of 'King of Camelot'.

"Hm, so you can also make copies of other Valkyries and not just Heda?"

"Yes. It appears that the number of meetings and blessings....and the connection the Valkyrie has with me all influence a copy's capabilities as well."

After his battle with Mordred, Tae Ho had tested the performances of the fake Heda and the fake Ingrid, and the difference in their abilities was too apparent.

When concerning battle prowess alone, Heda's copy was almost ten times more powerful, and the precise movements and complicated orders they could execute were also unique.

Still, it wasn't that Ingrid's copy was useless. Rather, Heda was simply much more powerful. Like any valkyrie within his saga, Ingrid could definitely grow stronger.

'This very night, I also encountered a power-up scenario.'

It was slight, but his ties with Ingrid had grown firmer, and he had also received Njord's blessing.

'The maximum number I can register is nine, so the complete saga should let me summon nine real Valkyries, right?'

Thinking about the maximized saga, quite a good image formed in his mind.

'So far, I've met a total of seven Valkyries....and if I increase the number of Valkyries I know in addition to receiving their blessings quite frequently.....'

It was an exciting prospect. In addition, the 'Warrior's Equipment' saga was developing slowly but surely, and the amount

of equipment he could recreate was steadily increasing.

He would be able to summon the Valkyries as well as arm them with equipment made by the 'Warrior's Equipment'.

The majority of the dragon knight, Kalsted's equipment, had special powers so Tae Ho would be able to continuously attack through use of the synergy effects.

A smile grew apparent on his face just from thinking about it. Tae Ho spoke of his testing and planned ability usage with an inspired face. It was a really heated presentation.

To counteract Tae Ho's warm attitude, Idun's attitude grew surprisingly cold.

"That's the case then, yes? You want to go off and receive the blessings of other Valkyries that boldly. You will probably get blessed not only on the forehead. How good for you."

Although she'd merely imitated Heda's way of speaking, her words contained a real chill. As Tae Ho swallowed dryly, Idun giggled and continued.

"I'm just saying, Heda would speak like this. Well, it's a bit similar for me too....."

Idun's hands still rested on Tae Ho's head. She paused for a moment to remove them and then shrugged her shoulders.

"Still, I shouldn't do anything to prevent you from strengthening your abilities. Please, receive blessings from other Valkyries without hesitation."

Her tone had clearly contradicted her words.

The current Idun seemed to grow sulky more easily.

While Tae Ho perspired cold sweat, unsure of his next move, Idun fixed her posture and then snickered.

She didn't proclaim her words as a joke like usual.

She held a momentary pause, and she switched to another topic.

“My warrior Tae Ho, let’s stop talking about such light things and focus on the heavy matters.”

She was right. Much more important things had occurred in the span of a single day.

The Sword of Selection, Caliburn.

Mordred, a Knight of the Round Table, and the Treasure Sword, Clarent.

The meeting with the great magician of Camelot, Merlin.

And a new legendary ranked saga, ‘King of Camelot’.

Even after fusing with Tae Ho’s Unknown sword piece, Caliburn still held the shape of a hilt. If he were Tae Ho of the recent past, he would have struggled with several hypotheses, but now he had the sentence of the Milesians.

Caliburn’s appearance was deliberate, for it could now be combined with ‘Warrior’s Equipment’.

“It’s a really amazing coincidence. No-should I say it’s a stroke of good fortune?”

For the sword piece he’d collected in Svartalfheim to be a piece of Caliburn.

However, Idun shook her head. She thought of the story she’d heard from the three sisters and spoke.

“There’s no complete coincidence in the world. The power of fate drives every action in existence. I can only believe that your meeting with Caliburn was led by such a predestined force.”

Caliburn could almost be said to be a sword of fate. It was a sword that refused to yield to anyone unqualified to bear it.

Of course, one couldn’t completely exclude the factor of coincidence; however, Idun just thought of it as fate only acting

when necessary. The question regarding fate's existence would probably forever remain unanswered.

Tae Ho then continued to speak about the 'King of Camelot'.

It was a complex saga like the 'Immortal Warrior' that contained other, smaller sagas, although it used Caliburn as its base instead of Tae Ho himself.

It was quite an interesting story. Having translated Caliburn's legend into a saga meant that he could also make the powers of other equipment into sagas.

There were obvious limitations. He wouldn't be able to do create sagas from every piece of equipment. It only applied to legendary weapons like Caliburn.

Nevertheless, Tae Ho already had a few more weapons bearing that quality.

The spear of the one-hit/one-kill, Gae Bolg.

The thunder that could eradicate mountains, Caladbolg.

Tae Ho gave Idun an enthusiastic smile, and she warmly placed her hands atop Tae Ho's head again before remarking.

"It's a really incredible saga, but it's much more than just that. The kingship of Camelot is also very important."

Camelot didn't exist anymore.

It wasn't excessive to say that it was its throne was now one of a rogue king without any land or people.

Idun didn't view it in such a light. Even though Erin was now long destroyed, the seat of the successor of Erin had a meaning that transcended the slow decay of time. It was no different for the King of Camelot.

Camelot was, after all, a legend in itself. Despite its ruin, people still remained that followed its will.

As Tae Ho slowly nodded in understanding, Idun drew a faint smile.

She looked at Tae Ho with gentle eyes and then turned serious as she spoke about a more present topic.

“We need to discuss the fomoires next.”

The real objective for this expedition was the fomoires’ base’s destruction, to destroy the enemies that had dug deeply into Midgard.

At the time of Tae Ho’s initial departure, Idun didn’t have much information on the matter, but things were different now.

Each and every God of Asgard understood that there could be nothing to gain by leaving the Goddess of Youth, who had raised the tree of golden apples, in a foul mood for a long time.

“Odin has taken into account that your expedition may encounter the king of fomoires, Bress the Tyrant, in this battle. Although the advance party only consists of the ten of you, the final confrontation will consist of far greater numbers.”

Idun couldn’t know the precise scale or strategies at this time, but she was certain of one thing.

“This battle will be the biggest clash in Midgard since the establishment of the great barrier.”

Idun let out a sigh. She then grabbed Tae Ho’s hands and placed her lips on his forehead.

“Return safely, my warrior. That is all Heda and I truly wish for.”

A faint golden light spread from Tae Ho’s forehead to encompass his body. It was a blessing that contained Idun’s best wishes.

“May my blessing accompany you.”

Idun smiled in the light.

And Tae Ho closed his eyes slowly.

—
“Hey! I told you to rest well, but aren’t you resting too well?”

It was a gruff and sentimental voice. Tae Ho opened his eyes with a groggy feeling and squinted at the owner of the big hands that had shaken him.

“Bracky.”

“Saying that the sun is at its peak is pushing it, but it’s still pretty late in the morning. I came to wake you up because everyone was tired of waiting.”

It seemed like he’d really slept for a long time, and his body was quite stiff. Tae Ho stretched his sore body and shot a question in a pained voice.

“What about the others?”

“They are all awake. Actually, we wanted to let you sleep a bit more because of what happened yesterday.....There are people who are really excited to meet you. They were anxious wondering when you’d wake up, and I couldn’t keep watching them anymore so I came to get you.”

Tae Ho knew who he’d list before he even spoke.

His expression became filled with this thought and Bracky clicked his tongue.

“Mm, you’re the same as always. Is it really that exciting to meet an old man? Of course Princess Helga is quite cute and pretty.”

Tae Ho just defiantly smiled and didn’t reply.

The old man he would meet today was indeed very special.

The great magician of Camelot, Merlin.

A man whose existence could be called legendary as King Arthur’s.

Tae Ho took a deep breath and climbed out of his cabin. It wasn’t

hard to spot Merlin sitting quietly outside the flying pirate ship.

Merlin drew a gentle smile towards Tae Ho as he approached him. He lightly expressed etiquette before speaking.

“I think it’s important to bring the knowledge of my new Lord up to current events. Because of that, I will speak of the legacies of Erin I gathered first.”

Tae Ho blinked his eyes at Merlin’s unexpected words and gave him a happy nod.

He held back his giddiness with all his might.

< Episode 27 – The sword of selection (3) > End

Episode 27/Chapter 4: The sword of selection (4)

Merlin didn't rush getting to know Tae Ho's personality and human nature.

His logic was simple, for the Sword of Selection, Caliburn, had already chosen Tae Ho as its master.

Caliburn did not lend its power casually. Even if it were left to rust for millenia, Caliburn wasn't a sword to acknowledge someone without the proper qualifications.

It had been the same with King Arthur. Merlin wasn't disappointed to learn that Caliburn had chosen a small, frail child as its bearer. The sword's authority held such a weight.

He'd willingly offered his services as loyal advisor to the young lord because of the sword's decision. The only thing he'd worried over was the correct way to guide him.

As he reminisced, he realized the current situation held many similarities. He'd first grabbed the attention of the young king by talking about treasures and the obstacles he'd one day face.

Merlin put on a comfortable smile as spoke to Tae Ho, while Tae Ho seemed to struggle with keeping a cool attitude.

It wasn't really fair to compare King Arthur as a child to Tae Ho who'd already grown up, but it was an unavoidable comparison. To become immersed in one's memories was a privilege of the elderly.

Merlin closed his eyes slowly. In order to tell his story proper, he had to relive the painful memories before the good ones.

“There was an enormous battle on the day of Erin's destruction. From Asgard had come the God of Thunder with a great army to assist us, but they ended up arriving too late.”

As he announced Thor's title, Bracky appeared out of thin air to sit beside Tae Ho. Helga, who sat by Merlin, blinked her big, clear eyes at the sudden and unfamiliar story.

"King Arthur included, most of the Knights of the Round Table lost their lives in that battle. I managed to save myself, but it came with a price. After the magic I'd used to survive was unraveled, dozens of years had passed. The Great War had already ended in Asgard."

Merlin was being intentionally vague. In the first place, he'd meant to speak of Erin's legacies, not the deaths of King Arthur and his Knights of the Round Table.

Recalling that day was really painful and difficult for him.

Merlin remembered the final moment of King Arthur's life. He couldn't forget the back of the King as he charged into the enemy's ranks to buy time for the few survivors of Camelot to escape.

How was it that only he'd survived?

Why hadn't the magician of the king protected him better?

The answers were marks on his soul.

Merlin opened his eyes slowly and looked at Tae Ho while waiting to be criticized. He feared Tae Ho's response.

Tae Ho didn't say anything, although his expression was destitute. His eyes seemed to worry for Merlin's well being, but Merlin only smiled in response.

From beside Tae Ho, Bracky clicked his tongue and comfortingly patted the shoulder of Merlin as if his burdens were too heavy for an old man to bear.

Of course, it was still a rude action. Regardless of that, Merlin's appreciation for the warriors of Valhalla grew even more.

"After I woke, I started gathering the legacies of Erin."

It's annihilation had been too sudden. The Giant of Fire, Surtr,

destroyed everything without any thought of ruling Erin, so Merlin was powerless to prevent many legacies from entering the hands of the enemies or being completely destroyed altogether.

The first things he'd searched for were the relics belonging to King Arthur and the Knights of the Round Table.

"The Knights of the Round Table that survived Camelot that day still lost their lives in the Great War that followed. Knowing this, I went out to uncover the traces of the Great War that were left across the planets. Luckily enough, I was able to achieve something."

It wasn't easy searching for the legacies like the fomoires, but he was still a great magician of Camelot. There wasn't anyone in any world that knew more about magical weapons than him.

Arondight, the sword of Lancelot, the strongest Knight of the Round Table, fell into the hands of the fomoires. Fortunately enough, Merlin was still able to retrieve Gallatin, the sword of Gawain, Knight of the Sun. Gawain had possessed a power comparable to Lancelot's.

Gallatin, the twin sword of Excalibur, was one of the best weapons among the ones Merlin possessed.

Because of that, Merlin sealed it with his most powerful spell and hid it in a place the fomoires would never find it.

"Gallatin is in Vanaheim."

Vanaheim, the land of the Vanir.

Ingrid, who'd also joined the group, opened her eyes wide in surprise. It was a surprise knowing that a live human had entered Vanaheim. The Vanir race didn't even welcome the Aesir, the dominant race in Asgard.

"That's...understandable. The fomoires would never search for it there."

Vanaheim was a small world compared to the gargantuan Asgard. It was impossible for the fomiores from the elementals below ground. The elementals were subordinates of the Vanir and had sensitive eyes and ears.

“It’s not a distance we can cross in a mere moment.”

Harabal clicked his tongue as if it was unfortunate. As the present battle against the fomiores loomed before them, they couldn’t travel to Vanaheim on a whim.

‘I can understand why he planted those messages in the Liberatuses.’

Cuchulainn smiled bitterly and said. Tae Ho also remembered the words Merlin spoke in his message.

Merlin had concealed his resentment through jokes.

“Your eyes are too heated, so I will only speak of the legacies here in Midgard.”

Merlin discussed each legacy in Midgard with detail. Although they weren’t as strong as Gallatin, they were all magical weapons with profound origins.

Unfortunately, a problem lay in the vast distance between each of them.

“Do you have an illness? Some disease where you couldn’t relax unless you scattered them as far as possible?”

As Harabal asked with absurd eyes, Merlin snorted bitterly.

“It was the only way to ensure the path of Erin’s successor. Besides, I only scattered a part of them. Most of them are gathered in one particular spot.

Tae Ho was sure it was the place mentioned in the message within the prototype of Liberatus.

As Bracky mentioned the place which he barely remembered, Ingrid smiled with her eyes and said.

“If it’s that place, we will be able to pass through it during this mission.”

Their mission of destroying the fomoires’ base was a secret.

Even the warriors of Midgard and the believers that traveled with them didn’t know of their true objective. They believed that the warriors of Valhalla were only traveling to perhaps uncover any unexpected changes in Midgard.

As it was, Merlin had also been unaware of the real purpose of their mission.

‘We don’t particularly have the time to speak for long either.’

The first conversation they’d had since meeting had already become a treasured one.

As they concluded with the decision to visit Merlin’s hideout, Tae Ho opened his mouth hesitatingly.

“You don’t know anything about Excalibur?”

Excalibur, the sword of King Arthur.

It was the strongest God Sword that could be described as the pinnacle of Camelot, and it had been the sword that had defined King Arthur’s legend from beginning to end.

“Unfortunately, I haven’t found any traces of it.”

Merlin’s words were bitter.

It was obvious that Excalibur had been the legacy he’d sought after most.

The Sword of Selection which King Arthur had pulled from a stone and Excalibur the fairy God sword which he had received from the Fairy of the Lake were the two trademarks of King Arthur’s legend.

If the Fairy of the Lake still lived, Merlin could have asked for guidance regarding Excalibur, but the lake had disappeared with

Erin.

They could only pray for Excalibur not to have landed in the hands of the fomoirs or giants.

With Merlin's story of legacies concluded, Valkyrie Ingrid and the warriors of Valhalla were left to their own devices. It was finally time to resume their journey now that Merlin, who they had waited for, had joined them.

As Siri and Helga also left, Merlin also attempted to stand, but Tae Ho grabbed onto Merlin and took out something from Unnir and presented it to him.

It was nothing other than Gae Bolg.

Merlin stared at the almost-completed Gae Bolg with a look of utter surprise. He was confused as to why Tae Ho had held it out to him.

Tae Ho just waited without offering an explanation, and Merlin understood the moment he grabbed Gae Bolg.

'It's been a while, King's magician.'

It was Cuchulainn's voice.

Tae Ho made a gesture with his hands telling him to speak slowly, and he then walked off towards the flying ship, leaving the two alone. Merlin sat down once more and listened to Cuchulainn's story.

Cuchulainn told him of how Bedevere and the last Knights of the Round Table faced their ends.

Merlin just listened to him quietly as tears rolled down his face.

Cuchulainn then explained his current state, and he also elaborated on Scathach.

'Master is currently in the residence of Idun. You should have realized it already, but we also have Adenmaha, a Goddess of the Tuatha De Danann. If we add you, won't it really become a small

Erin?’

He cracked a joke at the last part.

However, Merlin felt grief and sadness at Cuchulainn’s words.

Erin’s successor.

The one that would inherit the entirety of what remained from Erin.

Merlin had been there when the Kings of Erin had gathered and created the decree. He knew what it meant to become the successor of Erin better than anyone else.

But Merlin wasn’t planning on demanding something from Tae Ho.

He didn’t even urge him to raise Camelot when they had to rebuild Erin once again.

It wasn’t the time for all that. Not yet.

The worlds were still at stake. The war was long from over.

The humans of Midgard just lived leisurely without care, but it was different outside the great barrier.

The Great War had merely been the start.

The giants would attack once again. One couldn’t know when the flames of war would arise just like Erin’s destruction had arrived all too suddenly.

The reconstruction of Erin and Camelot were things for after the war’s conclusion.

For now, it was more important to fight and stay alive.

‘So, you’re saying it’s not time for the magician to reign yet?’

Cuchulainn also agreed on this point, and because of that he and Scathach also hadn’t urged Tae Ho to rebuild Erin.

Merlin thought of when he’d built Camelot alongside King

Arthur. He didn't rush anything back then. The glory of Camelot had only begun to shine after King Arthur, who'd started as a small and frail kid, had grown up to become a reliable king.

The magician of the king wasn't someone who led the king. He was someone that protected the king.

‘Let's focus on the battle in before us for now.’

Cuchulainn spoke rather cheerfully and then began elaborating on the battle with the fomoirs that would occur in a few days time.

Approximately fifteen days after that—

The group hopped off the flying pirate ship and stealthily headed towards the place Merlin had specified.

Their destination was Kallav Ahim.

It was a human country within which the fomoirs had hidden themselves.

< Episode 27 – The sword of selection (4) > End

ED note: Fifteen days later?! Come on, guys!

Episode 28/Chapter 1: Great Attack (1)

Odin, the King of Gods, was sitting with his knees bent before him.

He sat there even though he knew it wasn't the time to be roaming Midgard as an old man.

Odin was always exhausted, and there were many burdens which weighed heavily upon his shoulders. As the King of Gods and leader of their hierarchy, he couldn't pass his troubles unto anyone else.

It was only before Mimir's Lake that he could unwind somewhat.

Odin didn't hide his grief here, but it wasn't only because he'd forbidden almost everyone else access to Mimir's Lake.

He had once hung himself to obtain wisdom in this place. As he had already revealed to the lake the miserable sight of his corpse being executed for nine days, he now simply had nothing else to hide.

Mimir's head gazed at the King of Gods.

Odin also faced Mimir's eyes while slowly moving his fingers. It was to grasp the threads of fate the three sisters had made.

A hundred years wasn't a short time, even for the Gods of Asgard. Even though their lifespans extended for millenia, a hundred year period wasn't easily ignored. Although such a period was a mere blink in the life of a God, their attitudes were founded upon their dealings with mortals.

A hundred years wasn't short at all.

That's why the hearts of these Gods had grown so profoundly.

A hundred years since the Great War.

A hundred years had already passed. It was long enough for the ones that had been absent from the front lines to have completely

forgotten.

But it was different for Odin. Even on the day when Thor's memory fades, the King of Gods must continue to reminisce.

A massive battle would soon erupt in Midgard.

When compared to the Great War, it was quite a small engagement; however, this was quite an ignorant perspective. If one changed their point of view, their opinion would also undergo a transformation.

There hadn't been any large battles since the Great Barrier's establishment in Midgard, and this upcoming battle would likely become the biggest in Midgard's recent history.

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms.”

Odin mumbled in a low voice and set his eyes upon a distant place. He looked down over Midgard through the crows Hugin and Munin, the ones who had replaced his only eye.

—

A crow flew.

Through the black of night, it wasn't easy to differentiate the crow from the sky.

Tae Ho's group hid in a small forest that had grown near Kalliv Ahim. It was almost time for them to regroup with Rasgrid and Kaldea.

Valkyrie Kaldea was traveling alone. The warriors of her party were busy fighting monsters who had appeared in another forest, one quite far away from Kalliv Ahim.

Although it wasn't related to Garmr's soul fragment, their actions were still useful. The fomiores observing the warriors hadn't yet realized their substitution for Kaldea.

The situation was similar with Rasgrid. The three veteran warriors of Odin's legion had charged her team in a different

direction.

The only Valkyrie to accompany them was Ingrid, who had brought along a certain bait that was their flying ship.

“The fomoires will realize our deception in a day or perhaps tomorrow’s afternoon at best.”

It was the same for Kaldea’s and Rasgrid’s sides. If they felt capable of fooling the fomoires for an extended period, they would have created substitutes and accompanied Tae Ho’s group instead.

This was why they’d initially divided into three teams; the fomoires were unaware that their base had been made a target.

The meeting spot of the Valkyries and warriors was within a small hut. The space each hulking warrior and Valkyrie took up made the hut seem ready to explode, but it was unavoidable.

Rasgrid spoke.

“As we’ve now gathered, it’s time everyone knows that the fomoires are indeed based within Kalliv Ahim-more specifically, they’ve fortified the keep of Kalliv Castle.”

The spot below a lamp was always the darkest.

After the Great War, before the Great Barrier was created, the fomoires who’d traveled to hide in Midgard followed the rule of disguising their presences within the forests.

Kalliv Ahim was unquestionably a human country. Most of the citizens were humans, but the fomoires had disguised themselves well.

“The majority of the fomoires are gathered in Kalliv Castle, most notably, their king and his circle of nobles. The ones that take human form are either hidden underground or in the remote places of Kalliv Ahim.”

Kalliv Ahim was a country that consisted of a single, large city, seven towns, and several villages. Knowing this, they’d decided to

infiltrate the castle. It could be said to be the core of Kalliv Ahim.

“You saw on the way in, right? Only a small number can travel through the Bifrost. That’s why I came here in person after tricking them.”

The Great Barrier was a shield which protected Midgard, but as it was made too hurriedly, there were many flaws, some of which were fatal. Such flaws were unavoidable, as it had been right after the Great War and Midgard was in dire straits.

“Rasgrid, Ingrid, and myself will make a ceremony. There’s nothing grandiose about it. You can just think of us as being targets easily spotted from Asgard.”

They would inform them of their coordinates, and Heimdal and Odin would promptly send reinforcements to their location.

Actually, the role of the three Valkyries didn’t end there. Accessing the core of the great magic which connected Asgard and Midgard was but one of their tasks, but further explanation was pointless.

“The ceremony won’t take long, but you’ll need a directive in the meantime, right? Your first task is to protect the three of us.”

Kaldea looked over the warriors as she spoke, and Rasgrid explained further.

“Fighting alongside the reinforcements is your second task. This order will take priority.”

In the first place, the reason they’d left behind so many warriors was to allow the others the opportunity for different orders while the ceremony took place.

Just like Kaldea had said, it was a simple task.

“The overview of tomorrow’s battle is up to here. Are there any questions?”

Siri raised her hand as Ingrid asked.

“Are the fomoires the only ones in the castle?”

It was the base of the fomoires, but Kalliv Ahim was still populated by humans. In addition, the influence the fomoires held was great from being treated as royalty and nobles.

Ingrid put on a pained expression as if a wound had been poked. Rasgrid answered in Ingrid’s stead.

“I will speak honestly. There may be innocent humans mixed among them, but there’s no way to differentiate them. It is cruel and merciless, but.....you must remember that we are warriors of Valhalla. The operation may be compromised if we try to pick out the fomoires from the humans. We would lose too many warriors, so Valhalla has judged their sacrifices as necessary.”

Siri’s face contorted, but she couldn’t refute Rasgrid’s words. One might know about two or three, but it was impossible to both tell each one of them apart and fight unimpededly at the same time.

The fomoires had lived among humans for a hundred years. There were certainly some which could mimic humans in their entirety. She couldn’t help but picture a warrior of Valhalla dying at the hands of a fomoiire disguised as a human.

“Our actions are in order to protect Midgard and countless lives. We must be capable of making sacrifices.”

Rasgrid spoke with a cold face as if to mask a bitter taste. She was playing the role of an anti-hero to lessen the burdens on the warriors of Valhalla, but she couldn’t help feeling pained by this strategy.

Bracky nodded with a heavy expression. Harabal frowned, but as he couldn’t do anything about it, he soon agreed as well. It seemed everyone had accepted the grim reality.

But it was then-

“So all we have to do is tell them apart from the humans, right?”

“...Tae Ho?”

Ingrid asked with round eyes and called out his name in surprise. As the eyes of everyone gathered on him, Tae Ho smiled bitterly and continued.

“I have an idea, although I’ll need a bit of help.”

Tae Ho finished speaking and then turned to look at Siri. Naturally, everyone else also turned to her.

“Uh...you are speaking about me?”

Tae Ho nodded at Siri’s awkward question. He took in a deep breath and said.

“There’s a possibility it will be quite difficult....and really painful. Are you okay with that?”

Given the context, if she refused, she wasn’t worthy of being a warrior of Valhalla. Siri gulped dryly and then pounded her chest twice.

“If it’s within my abilities, I’ll help to my limit.”

Tae Ho nodded at the expected answer. He then turned to Bracky whose eyes demanded an explanation, and Tae Ho began speaking.

—

The day was bright.

The sun was almost at its peak, the city was bustling with energy.

Tae Ho took in a deep breath from high in the sky. Rolo was grimacing in pain from maintaining a higher altitude than what he was accustomed to.

Of course, that wasn’t his only problem. Rolo, who usually only had to carry Tae Ho, had a total of three people on his back.

“Endure it a bit more. Adenmaha told me that she would prepare a feast.”

Despite Tae Ho’s attempt to sooth him, Rolo snorted as if he were

joking. Still, he couldn't help but look forward to such an offer and poured more strength into his wings.

Siri was seated in front of Tae Ho with a nervous face. Behind him, Merlin stood precariously as he looked through the sky once and then down below him. Like a beacon, Kalliv Castle was visible even from their extreme altitude.

“It seems like they’ve noticed.”

Tae Ho nodded and threw a question while grabbing Siri's waist tightly.

“Are you ready?”

“I am.”

Siri gave a short response. Tae Ho nodded once again and gave a signal to Merlin.

“Let's start.”

Merlin smiled and swung his staff while reciting some magic. Blinding light spewed from his staff and a big, flashy firework detonated above the skies of Kalliv.

The sudden display grabbed the attention of everyone below in an instant.

The people in the city surrounding the castle sharply angled their heads upwards to look, and the ones within Kalliv Castle emerged outside to do the same.

There could have been fomoires mixed in with them.

Even though she'd lost two guards of the ceremony, the reason Rasgrid had allowed this strategy wasn't only from the possibility of reducing unnecessary sacrifices. It was because Tae Ho would also be able to attract the attention of the fomoires while the ceremony was proceeding.

Merlin counted the numbers.

The ceremony was proceeding smoothly on the ground, and Tae Ho applied strength in his arms grasping Siri tightly and activated his saga.

[Saga: The Eyes of the Dragon Sees Through all Things]

In his eyes, the ground was suddenly covered with words.

Thousands, or perhaps tens of thousands.

He just focused on Kalliv Castle. Compared to the city, which had overwhelmingly more white letters, many words over the castle were red.

His eyes hurt, but Tae Ho concentrated even more. The magic Merlin had used allowed Tae Ho and Siri to share senses, and Siri looked down at the castle through Tae Ho's eyes. Siri then activated her own sagas.

[Saga: The Eyes of the Witch Chases after Several Targets at Once]

[Saga: The Arrow of the Witch Never Misses its Target]

Siri's right arm was primed like Nuada's silver arm. As she fingered the release of the giant bolt, five bolts of light were loaded at once.

The auras of the fomiores in the castle started to expand. Merlin's chanting became more feverish and Tae Ho's eyes quickly became bloodshot. Siri finally pulled the trigger, but she didn't stop with a single volley. She began firing continuously.

A rain of golden bolts pierced through the sky.

The bolts that poured down split and divided again and again. By the time they'd reached the ground, they had separated into many small pieces.

It was more than enough.

A red blot that seemed to have been applied with paint appeared on the foreheads of every person in Kalliv Castle.

Fortunately, Tae Ho was able to differentiate the humans from the fomoires with his saga.

He fired a dividing arrow of light with the silver arm of Nuada and a bow of the Tuatha De Danann.

Merlin then changed the property of the arrow with his magic.

And Siri—

Siri hit the hundreds of targets below with deadly precision.

After exhausting her crossbow's supply, Siri was almost completely drained of energy. Tae Ho held her tightly and kept glaring at the ground. The fomoires that had by now realized the situation were quickest to move. They couldn't understand the hundreds of bolts of light that had poured from the sky, but they clearly felt the deadly threat they posed.

The fomoires capable of flying flew up, and the strong fomoires released their strength. Fomoires also started to pour out from beneath the ground.

The real humans started to scream at the insane scene before them. Rolo looked at the hundreds of fomoires surging up towards them with an uneasy face, and Tae Ho held his breath once again.

The reason Merlin had counted their numbers wasn't for that.

It was to find the perfect opportunity.

Siri opened her eyes with difficulty and looked at the ground. Her eyes peered at a location other than the charging fomoires and the chaotic scene of Kalliv Castle beneath them.

It was the small forest. It was quite far away, but she could make it out due to having shared her senses with Tae Ho.

The clear green words above the forest spoke to her.

‘Look up to the sky.

‘The time has come.’

A torrent of light then surged up from the forest towards the heavens. The poor fomoiros were perplexed once more by the huge pillar of light that had surged up without warning. The ones speeding towards Tae Ho and Siri were also confused, and they also turned to look towards the forest.

Siri leaned back on Tae Ho's chest to gaze at the spectacle. A bright smile was revealed on her face.

Shapes began pouring down the light.

The several green words filled the region.

Merlin smiled.

Despite her exhaustion, Siri raised her hand to welcome them.

And Tae Ho unconsciously opened his mouth to utter.

“For Asgard and the Nine Realms.”

It was the true reason why the warriors of Valhalla fought.

As if answering his words, bellows and shouts echoed across the sky.

The war cries of numerous warriors were heard.

“My lower body feels weirrrrrd!”

“It's the same whenever I ride it!”

“Uhahaha! Valhalla! I am coming!”

It was like a rain of glittering steel.

The dozens of steel structures began their charge toward Kalliv Castle.

Their great attack had begun.

< Episode 28 – Great Attack (1) > End

Table of Contents

[Valhalla Saga](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Episode 1/Chapter 1: Immortal Warrior \(1\)](#)

[Episode 1/Chapter 2: Immortal Warrior \(2\)](#)

[Episode 2/Chapter 1: Legion \(1\)](#)

[Episode 2/Chapter 2: Legion \(2\)](#)

[Episode 2/Chapter 3: Legion \(3\)](#)

[Episode 2/Chapter 4: Legion \(4\)](#)

[Episode 3/Chapter 1: The dragon knight \(1\)](#)

[Episode 3/Chapter 2: The dragon knight \(2\)](#)

[Episode 3/Chapter 3: The dragon knight \(3\)](#)

[Episode 3/Chapter 4: The dragon knight \(4\)](#)

[Episode 3/Chapter 5: The dragon knight \(5\)](#)

[Episode 4/Chapter 1: Rain of Steel \(1\)](#)

[Episode 4/Chapter 2: Rain of Steel \(2\)](#)

[Episode 4/Chapter 3: Rain of Steel \(3\)](#)

[Episode 4/Chapter 4: Rain of Steel \(4\)](#)

[Episode 5/Chapter 1: Night Banquet \(1\)](#)

[Episode 5/Chapter 2: Night Banquet \(2\)](#)

[Episode 5/Chapter 3: Night Banquet \(3\)](#)

[Episode 6/Chapter 1: God's precious metal \(1\)](#)

[Episode 6/Chapter 2: God's precious metal \(2\)](#)

[Episode 6/Chapter 3: God's precious metal \(3\)](#)

[Episode 6/Chapter 4: God's precious metal \(4\)](#)

[Episode 7/Chapter 1: Valkyrie \(1\)](#)

[Episode 7/Chapter 2: Valkyrie \(2\)](#)

[Episode 7/Chapter 3: Valkyrie \(3\)](#)

[Episode 7/Chapter 4: Valkyrie \(4\)](#)

[Episode 7/Chapter 5: Valkyrie \(5\)](#)

[Episode 8/Chapter 1: Inferior ranked warrior \(1\)](#)

[Episode 8/Chapter 2: Inferior ranked warrior \(2\)](#)

[Episode 9/Chapter 1: Svartalfheim \(1\)](#)

[Episode 9/Chapter 2: Svartalfheim \(2\)](#)

[Episode 9/Chapter 3: Svartalfheim \(3\)](#)

[Episode 9/Chapter 4: Svartalfheim \(4\)](#)

[Episode 10/Chapter 1: Ragnar Lodbrok \(1\)](#)
[Episode 10/Chapter 2: Ragnar Lodbrok \(2\)](#)
[Episode 11/Chapter 1: Unknown Sword Piece \(1\)](#)
[Episode 11/Chapter 2: Unknown Sword Piece \(2\)](#)
[Episode 11/Chapter 3: Unknown Sword Piece \(3\)](#)
[Episode 12/Chapter 1: Roar of the dragon \(1\)](#)
[Episode 12/Chapter 2: Roar of the dragon \(2\)](#)
[Episode 13/Chapter 1: Traces of the Great War \(1\)](#)
[Episode 13/Chapter 2: Traces of the Great War \(2\)](#)
[Episode 13/Chapter 3: Traces of the Great War \(3\)](#)
[Episode 14/Chapter 1: Garmr's soul fragment \(1\)](#)
[Episode 14/Chapter 2: Garmr's soul fragment \(2\)](#)
[Episode 14/Chapter 3: Garmr's soul fragment \(3\)](#)
[Episode 15/Chapter 1: Alpha Male \(1\)](#)
[Episode 15/Chapter 2: Alpha Male \(2\)](#)
[Episode 16/Chapter 1: Legend \(1\)](#)
[Episode 16/Chapter 2: Legend \(2\)](#)
[Episode 16/Chapter 3: Legend \(3\)](#)
[Episode 16/Chapter 4: Legend \(4\)](#)
[Episode 17/Chapter 1: The God of Thunder \(1\)](#)
[Episode 17/Chapter 2: The God of Thunder \(2\)](#)
[Episode 18/Chapter 1: Anaheim \(1\)](#)
[Episode 18/Chapter 2: Anaheim \(2\)](#)
[Episode 19/Chapter 1: Intermediate Ranked Warrior \(1\)](#)
[Episode 19/Chapter 2: Intermediate Ranked Warrior \(2\)](#)
[Episode 19/Chapter 3: Intermediate Ranked Warrior \(3\)](#)
[Episode 19/Chapter 4: Intermediate Ranked Warrior \(4\)](#)
[Episode 20/Chapter 1: Scathach \(1\)](#)
[Episode 20/Chapter 2: Scathach \(2\)](#)
[Episode 21/Chapter 1: Midgard \(1\)](#)
[Episode 21/Chapter 2: Midgard \(2\)](#)
[Episode 21/Chapter 3: Midgard \(3\)](#)
[Episode 21/Chapter 4: Midgard \(4\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 1: Saga \(1\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 2: Saga \(2\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 3: Saga \(3\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 4: Saga \(4\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 5: Saga \(5\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 6: Saga \(6\)](#)

[Episode 22/Chapter 7: Saga \(7\)](#)
[Episode 22/Chapter 8: Saga \(8\)](#)
[Episode 23/Chapter 1: Saga \(1\)](#)
[Episode 23/Chapter 2: Saga \(2\)](#)
[Episode 23/Chapter 3: Saga \(3\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 1: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(1\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 2: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(2\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 3: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(3\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 4: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(4\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 5: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(5\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 6: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(6\)](#)
[Episode 24/Chapter 7: The Shinsoo's of Earth \(7\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 1: Paul's sword \(1\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 2: Paul's sword \(2\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 3: Paul's sword \(3\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 4: Paul's sword \(4\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 5: Paul's sword \(5\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 6: Paul's sword \(6\)](#)
[Episode 25/Chapter 7: Paul's sword \(7\)](#)
[Episode 26/Chapter 1: The land of fierce battles \(1\)](#)
[Episode 26/Chapter 2: The land of fierce battles \(2\)](#)
[Episode 26/Chapter 3: The land of fierce battles \(3\)](#)
[Episode 26/Chapter 4: The land of fierce battles \(4\)](#)
[Episode 27/Chapter 1: The sword of selection \(1\)](#)
[Episode 27/Chapter 2: The sword of selection \(2\)](#)
[Episode 27/Chapter 3: The sword of selection \(3\)](#)
[Episode 27/Chapter 4: The sword of selection \(4\)](#)
[Episode 28/Chapter 1: Great Attack \(1\)](#)